



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES

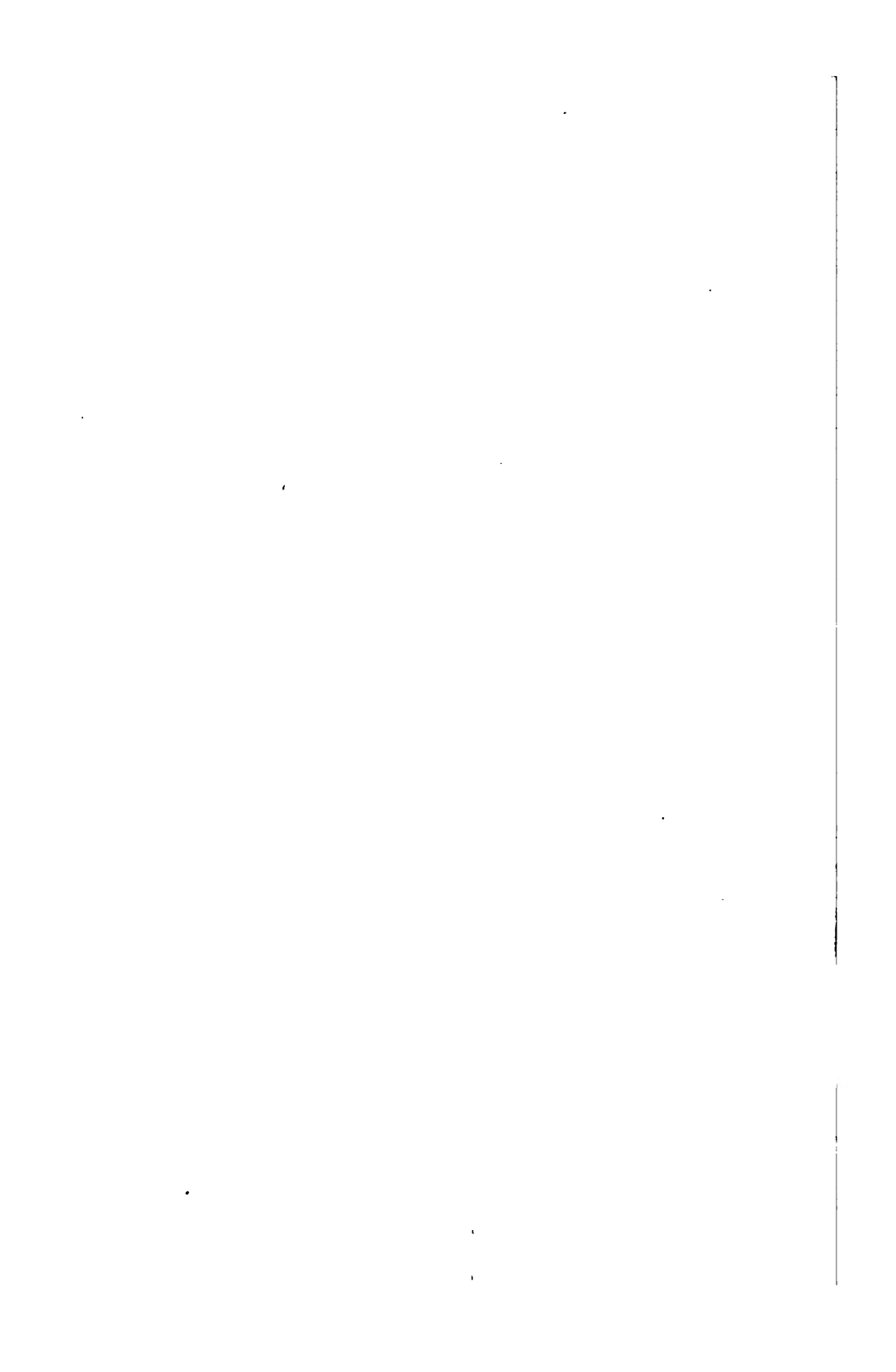


3 3433 07591643 1

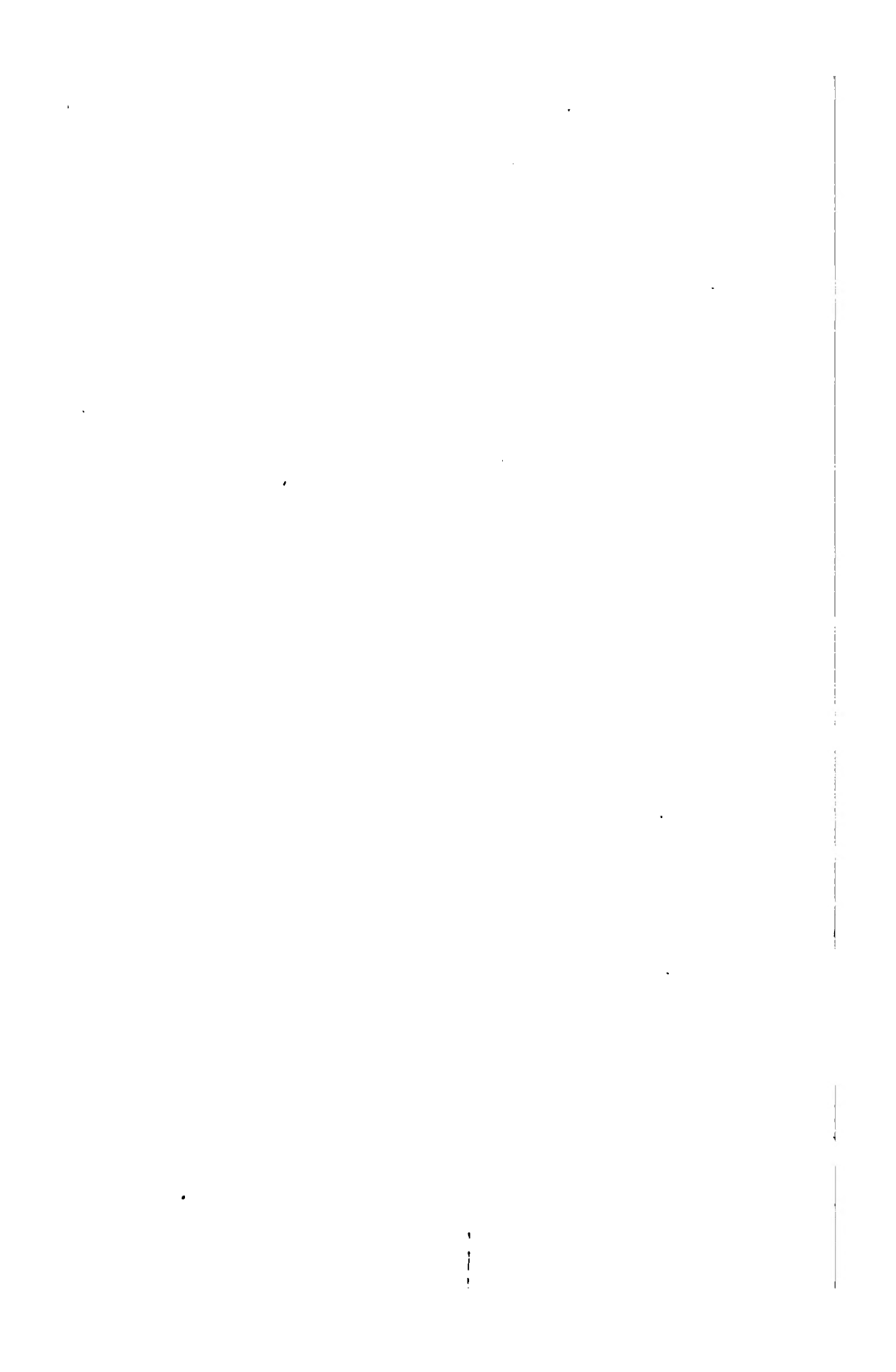


Page  
114













Filed

Jan 24/93

Francis M. Clark



French Language & Grammar

1. French Language & Grammar

Y. H. H. H.

Y. H. H. H.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

11 11 11 11 11  
6 11 11 11 11  
3, 11, 11

PINNEY AND ARNOULT'S

# FRENCH GRAMMAR,

A NEW METHOD, COMBINING BOTH

THE ORAL AND THEORETIC:

PARTICULARLY CALCULATED TO RENDER THE

SPEAKING OF FRENCH

EASY TO LEARNERS OF DIFFERENT AGES AND CAPACITIES.

WITH THE

PRONUNCIATION OF ALL THE WORDS,

AND

A LEXICON.

BY

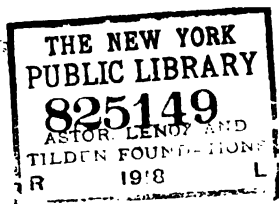
NORMAN PINNEY AND EMILE ARNOULT.

NEW YORK:

PUBLISHED BY MASON BROTHERS.

1861.

3.11.11



ENTERED, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1880, by

MASON BROTHERS,

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States, for the  
Southern District of New York.

JOHN F. TROW,  
PRINTER, STEREOTYPED, AND ELECTROTYPED,  
44, 46 & 50 Greene Street,  
New York.

NOT FOR  
CIRCULATION  
LIBRARY

## PREFACE.

---

THE superiority of the oral method for teaching the modern languages is now so generally understood, that little need be said in its favor. Years of experience have proved beyond all question that he who studies faithfully by this method, with a competent teacher, can, in no great length of time, not only translate the language which he studies, but can also write and speak it sufficiently for all necessary purposes,—a result which can seldom, if ever, be attained by the old methods. On this point, therefore, we need not dwell. But there are other characteristics of the present work on which more should be said.

It is now about twenty years since Ollendorff first published his improvement on Manesca's System. During this time various works have appeared on this method, which possess their merits and their use. But it is no disparagement to these to say that experience calls for important improvements in them all. Some, prepared chiefly for oral purposes, have had too much the character of mere phrase-books, lacking system and grammatical completeness. Others again have inclined to an opposite course, and have sacrificed much of oral ease and simplicity without attaining all that was to be desired in point of grammar.

It is to be borne in mind that the best grammar for the French learner is not the best grammar for the English, and that rules may be, and very often are, given, which, though perfectly correct, are absolutely detrimental to the learner. A rule, for instance, on a mere common phrase which is best learned by example, is worse than useless, as are, also, rules on those parts of the language where the French does not differ from the English, so that the unaided learner can not go wrong. Such rules, by presenting an appearance of difficulty where none exists, tend to confuse and perplex the learner, and to draw off his attention from things of real use. On the other hand, in those parts of the grammar where the languages differ, the rules and examples should be full. Too much pains can not be taken to present and illustrate



these with clearness. Now an ordinary French Grammar, written for the French, is deficient in both these respects. Three-fourths perhaps of such a work are occupied with matters on which the English learner needs no instruction, while the remainder, where he needs all help, is passed over with a brevity, which, though sufficient for the French, is entirely inadequate to his wants, and much, too, which is of vast importance to him is entirely omitted.

This is a subject which deserves to be well considered; for, we are apt at first to suppose that a French Grammar, which has reputation among the French, and is useful in their schools, must be good also for ours. But a little reflection shows us that this is by no means so. What the English learner chiefly needs is an explanation of the differences between the French language and his own. These must be clearly and carefully laid before him, and the rest he understands as a matter of course. Now these are precisely the points of which a foreign grammarian has no idea. They do not, and ought not to enter the mind of a Frenchman who is preparing a book for the schools of his own country. His sole object is to meet the wants of the French learner, and as these differ vastly from the wants of the English learner, his grammar of course contains much which the latter does not need, and omits no less that he does need.\* Hence, too, it is not strange that oral methods, though designed particularly for English learners, should have more or less of this character; that they should contain many rules which ought to be entirely omitted, while they pass over in silence equally much which is very necessary to the learner.

Here, then, is the first great advantage of the present work. Combining, as it does, the united care of experienced native teachers in both languages, it will be found, we think, to unite an accurate knowledge of the idioms and pronunciation of the French with a more perfect adaptation to the wants of the English learner. The lessons are comparatively short, the oral exercises easy, and very gradually progressive; all superfluous matter, which tends only to perplex the learner, has been carefully avoided, while the peculiar difficulties which the language presents to the English student have been still more carefully explained. As a grammatical treatise, the improvements made in the present work can not here be specified in detail; but it will be found, we believe, on trial, to contain not only much of the ordinary grammatical mat-

---

\* On this subject we quote from the preface of Dr. Arnould's Pronouncing Reader, in which he says: "American grammars are necessary to teach the theory of the language, and notwithstanding some inaccuracies (which ought to be mended in subsequent editions), we certainly prefer them for teaching Americans to any French grammars, written in Paris solely for native learners, and reprinted in New York for the use of American students. French grammarians do not know a word of English. Their books therefore can not contain the most necessary part, the corresponding idiomatic features of both languages. They give but one side of the subject. Hence it is that the worst American grammar, written for Americans, and containing the whole, is far more useful for teachers and scholars in American schools, than the best one-sided book published in Paris."

ter presented in an easier form, but many useful rules and much valuable instruction on the use of the language, given in no previous book.

Another important advantage of the present work consists in its method of teaching the pronunciation. This, it will be seen by examining the preliminary lessons and exercises, is united with the matter taught in a peculiar way. After the simple vowel and the consonant sounds have been given, the words and phrases which form the oral exercises are selected and introduced in such a way that all the vowel-sounds, and such of the consonants as require practice, are called into use one at a time, and made familiar by repetition, until the whole are learned. Thus, without the sacrifice of any time, and without retarding in the least the learner's progress in the acquisition of words, phrases, and grammatical principles, he is exercised in a systematic course of pronunciation in all its parts. It is not to be supposed that any marked pronunciation can at all supply the place of the oral teacher; but after the simple sounds have been given by the living voice, the annotation of each new word at the bottom of the page throughout the course, with its division into syllables and its silent letters, must be convenient to the teacher, and of much value to the learner.

Another advantage of the present work is its capability of abridgment without any sacrifice of grammatical system. The French language is studied among us by learners differing widely in age, talents, and attainments. Some, too, as children, who begin it young, have ample time for its acquirement. Others, as the students in our colleges and high-schools, can give but a brief period to the study. Now, no one book can be suited to all these various wants without the provision of longer and shorter courses. These accordingly are here provided in this way. At the end of each lesson, excepting a few of the first, are given a quantity of exercises termed *optional*, intended only for fuller practice on words and rules previously introduced. At the end, too, after the grammatical course is completed, is a series of lessons styled *supplementary*; while at the beginning, those called *preliminary* are designed merely to facilitate the pronunciation, and make the oral exercises more gradually progressive. By the omission, therefore, of any or all of these, at the discretion of the teacher, and according to the wants of the learner, the work may be abridged to the extent of one-half, or even more, without destroying its completeness as a grammar, or breaking the chain of its oral exercises.

The introduction of the optional exercises is attended, also, with this further advantage. It gives opportunity for the use of connected dialogues of some length, on the same subject, of which they will generally be found to consist. This serves not only to give more reality and interest to the dialogue, but to call more into exercise that class of words whose chief use is to show the relation of sentences to each other, and which can not be so well employed in those disconnected questions and answers which are given merely to make exercises on certain words, or to illustrate the application of particular rules.

The last advantage of this work which we shall specify, is the dictionary of

all the English words into French, given at the end. By the aid of this, the learner who has forgotten the French for any English word previously given, can recall it without resorting to the key. Learners in classes who chance from any cause to have lost a few lessons, may by the aid of this avoid falling behind their companions. And, as the place of introduction of each word is marked in it, it may serve as a complete verbal index when the book is to be consulted on the use of any term or phrase.

NORMAN PINNEY : EMILE ARNOULT.

N. B. Teachers can omit at discretion all that precedes page 65 ; as that which follows contains the entire grammar, and presupposes a knowledge of nothing which precedes, except the table of pronunciation, page 8.

In the marked pronunciation at the bottom of the pages, some words will be found marked differently from the general rule. These are not misprints, but anomalous cases, where French usage differs from the general analogy of the language.

# FRENCH GRAMMAR.

## ALPHABET.

A, a, . . . . .	ah.	N, n, . . . . .	en.
B, b, . . . . .	bay.	O, o, . . . . .	o.
C, c, . . . . .	say.	P, p, . . . . .	pay.
D, d, . . . . .	day.	Q, q, . . . . .	ku.
E, e, . . . . .	a.	R, r, . . . . .	air.
F, f, . . . . .	ef.	S, s, . . . . .	ess.
G, g, . . . . .	jay (zhay).	T, t, . . . . .	tay.
H, h, . . . . .	ash.	U, u, . . . . .	u.
I, i, . . . . .	e.	V, v, . . . . .	vay.
J, j, . . . . .	jee (zhee).	X, x, . . . . .	eeks.
K, k, . . . . .	kah.	Y, y, . . . . .	e-grek.
L, l, . . . . .	el.	Z, z, . . . . .	zed.
M, m, . . . . .	em.		

## ACCENTS, AND OTHER SIGNS.

There are three accents in French; the *acute* (*â*), the *grave* (*à*), and the *circumflex* (*ô*).

The *acute accent* is never placed over any vowel but *e*; as, *dé*. The *e* is then always sounded long at the end of words.

The *grave accent* is sometimes placed over *a, e, u*; as, *là, prêt, où*. Over *a* and *u* it marks no change; over *e* it marks a change of sound.

The *circumflex accent* is used over any vowel except *y*; as, *âge, ôte, épître, ôte, fête*. The vowel thus accented is long, with very few exceptions.

THE CEDILLA (*ç*) is placed under *c* before *a, o, u*, to give it the sound of *s*.

THE APOSTROPHE (') marks the elision of a final vowel before another vowel or silent *h*; as, *l'animal*, for *le animal*; *l'homme*, for *le homme*.

ELISION takes place in the following words: *ce, de, je, la, le, me, ne, que, des que, jusque, parce que, vu que*; also in *loreques, puisque, and quoique*, before *il, ils, elle, elles, en, on, un, une*; in *entre* and *presque* when compounded with other words, as *entr' aider, presque' ille*; in *quelque* before *un* and *autre*, as *quelqu' un*; in *et* before *il, ils*. *E* can be elided or not before *eux, elle*. *E* of *grande* is always elided in *grand' mère, grand' tante, grand' chambre, grand' chose, grand' croix, grand' messe*, and frequently in *grand' peine, grand' peur, grand' pitié*, and *grand' honte*, when not immediately preceded by an article or pronominal adjective.

*Ce, de, le*, suffer no elision before *oui, onze, huit*, and derivatives; as, *le oui, de huit à onze, ce onzième chapitre*.

DIAERESIS (¨) is placed over *e, i, u*, to indicate that the foregoing vowel is to be sounded separately; as, *ambiguë, laïque, Ésaü*.

THE HYPHEN (-) is used to connect words or syllables; as, *après-midi*.

## SIMPLE VOWEL SOUNDS.

		sounded as	a in <i>ah</i> , represented by		as
A	1	a,	a in <i>ah</i> ,	a, ea,	as
	2	ā,	a in <i>arm</i> ,	ā, a, ed,	"
	3	an, nasal,	en in <i>encore</i> ,	an, en, am, em, ean,	"
	4	e,*	u in <i>us</i> ,	e, ue, etc.	"
	5	e,†	e in <i>ebb</i> ,	e, ē, el, er, est, etc.	"
E	6	é,	a in <i>fate</i> ,	é, ai, ué, ey, er, etc.	"
	7	è,	ai in <i>air</i> ,	è, ea, ez, er, aie, etc.	"
	8	é,	e in <i>where</i> ,	é, ai, ué,	"
	9	eū,	u in <i>us</i> ,	eu, oeu, oei,	"
	10	eū,‡	eugh in <i>eughr</i> ,	eū, oeu, eue, eu,	"
I	11	eu (before r),	ir in <i>sir</i> ,	eu, oeu,	"
	12	i,	i in <i>pique</i> ,	ī, ui, y,	"
	13	i,	ee in <i>eel</i> ,	i, y, ie,	"
	14	in, nasal,	an in <i>anchor</i> ,	in, im, ain, ein, ym, yen,	"
	15	o,	o in <i>not</i> ,	o, oi,	"
O	16	o (before r),	aw in <i>awe</i> ,	o, au, co, ao,	"
	17	ó,	o in <i>no</i> ,	ó, au, eau,	"
	18	ou,	ou in <i>you</i> ,	ou, aoi, oū,	"
	19	oū,	oo in <i>mood</i> ,	oū, oue,	"
	20	oi,§	wa in <i>wash</i> ,	oi, oy, uoi, oie, ua,	"
U	21	on, nasal,	on in <i>wrong</i> ,	on, om, aon,	"
	22	u,	u in <i>queen</i> ,	u, eu,	"
	23	ū,	ū in <i>queen</i> ,	ū, ue, uie,	"
	24	un,‡ nasal,	uhng,	un, um, eun,	"

REMARK.—Y is generally sounded as i; between two vowels it is sounded as ī, forming two syllables. A cipher over e marks that it is entirely silent.

\* This sound is distinguished from eu by being pronounced like e in *the* before a consonant, as *the man*.

† E at the end of a word, at the end of a syllable after a single consonant, and in combinations, is often silent; as, *salé, gélera, no mé la*.

‡ E followed by a consonant in the same syllable, and é at the beginning or in the middle of a word, have commonly this sound.

§ Eū and un have no very near representative sounds in English, and require the especial instruction of the teacher.

¶ Oū has the nature of a compound sound made up of the 15 and 1. In several instances, also, the sounds marked above with different figures may consist of the same elements, differing only in quantity and combinations.

## SIMPLE SOUNDS ILLUSTRATED.

1	a,	la,	ma,	bal,	sa,	rat,	place,	orgeat.
2	bas,	gras,	mât,	tas,	âge,	âme,	hâte,	nageât.
3	an,	banc,	blanc,	en,	camp,	temps,	Jean,	tante.
4	je,	ce,	de,	le,	me,	que,	se,	ne.
5	est,	es, édit,	met,	net,	clocher,	papier,	chef,	bref.
6	blé,	clé,	dé,	gué,	j'ai,	Dey,	ranger,	chez.
7	mère,	père,	cher,	ces,	des,	mer,	Agnez,	craic.
8	blème,	même,	bête,	tête,	maître,	chaîne,	enquête,	d'être.
9	bleu,	peut,	neuf,	jeu,	bœuf,	œuf,	œil,	seul. Europe
10	jeûne,	ceux,	creux,	vœux,	bœufs,	œufs,	eux,	queue.
11	peur,	ardeur,	rigueur,	nageur,	mœurs,	tueur,	terreur,	meurs.
12	dix,	lis,	lit,	prix,	oui,	gui,	y,	il.
13	dime,	glte,	ile,	prie,	scie,	vie,	cocyte,	amie.
14	lin,	vin,	imbu,	pain,	saint,	sein,	nymphé,	moyen.
15	col,	bol,	pot,	notre,	oignon,	poignet,	mode,	noce.
16	fort,	l'or,	mort,	tort,	maure,	aurai,	George,	Sadné.
17	dôme,	môle,	nôtre,	faux,	l'eau,	duo,	vos,	gros.
18	bout,	fou,	coup,	aout,	où,	tout,	vous,	cou.
19	route,	boue,	foule,	loue,	roue,	coude,	ours,	soute.
20	bois,	dois,	roi,	toit,	loyal,	quoi,	noie,	quadrupède.
21	bon,	long,	rond,	oncle,	nom,	ombre,	taon,	ongle.
22	bu,	lu,	vu,	sur,	tu,	sut,	eu,	j'eus.
23	bue,	lue,	vue,	sûr,	mûr,	mûre,	plue,	juge.
24	un,	brun,	chacun,	humble,	parfum,	jeun,	défunt.	Huns.

## DIPHTHONGS.

ai as in mail.  
 ia " diacre.  
 ié " moitié.  
 iè " lumière.  
 iai " biais.  
 oi " loi.  
 eoi " villageois.  
 ouai " ouais.  
 oin " soin.  
 ouin " baragouin.  
 oui " Louis.  
 ue " écuelle.  
 io " pioche.

ien as in rien.  
 ien " patience.  
 ian " viande.  
 ieu " Dieu.  
 ion " occasion.  
 iou " chiourme.  
 oe " moelle.  
 ouan " louange.  
 ua " équateur.  
 oue " ouest.  
 ui " lui.  
 uin " juin.



## CONSONANT SOUNDS.

Consonants, when not silent, are pronounced as in English, with the following exceptions :

- C, before *a, o, u*, has the sound of *k*, as *cap, col, cuve*; before *e, i*, that of *s*, as *ceci*; *ç* is only used before *a, o, u*, and has the sound of *s*, as *ça, leçon, reçu*.
- D, F. At the end of a word, and preceding another word beginning with a vowel or silent *h*, *d* has the sound of *t*, and *f* of *v*; as, *grand ami, grand homme, neuf années*.
- G, before *e, i, y*, has the sound of *s* in *pleasure*, as *âge, gîte, gyps*; before *a, o, u*, and the liquids *l, n, r*, it has the hard sound, as *gant, gond, aigu*. When final, and followed by a word beginning with a vowel, it has the sound of *k*, as *rang élevé*. It generally forms a liquid sound with *n*. (See *liquid sounds*, below.)
- H is said to be aspirated in words which do not require or admit of an elision of a vowel preceding them, and not aspirated (or silent) in words which require such elision. Thus *h* is aspirated in *le homard*, and not aspirated (or silent) in *l'homme*. It is hardly ever sounded in French.
- J has the sound of *s* in *pleasure*; as, *jaloux, jeu, joue*.
- L is sometimes liquid (see *liquid sounds*), otherwise it is sounded as in English.
- Q is always followed by *u*. They are commonly sounded like *k*; as, *que, question*. Sometimes *qu* is sounded as in English; as, *quadrupède*.
- R is pronounced stronger than in English, and is always sounded as *r* in *rose*.
- S. A single *s* between two vowels, and *s* final before a word beginning with a vowel, has the sound of *z*; as, *rose, pas ici*.
- T before *ion, ial, iel*, and before *i* in a few other cases, has the sound of *s*; as, *action, martial, partiel*. In the final syllable *tie*, *t* has the sound of *s*, when preceded by a vowel, in all words except *châtie* or a past participle; as, *démocratie, théocratie*.
- X alone, or after *e* at the beginning of a word, when followed by a vowel, has the sound of *gz*, as *Xercès, examen*; in a few words it has the sound of *s*, as *soixante, six, dix, dix-sept, Bruxelles*. *X* final is silent when preceded by a diphthong or compound vowel, in words pronounced alone or preceding a consonant or aspirated *h*; as, *paix, mauz, choix, jaloux, aux livres, aux héros, deux mille*. Before *c* it is always sounded like *k*, as in *excité*, etc. At the end of a few words, when preceding another word beginning with a vowel or *h* not aspirated, and in most compound numerals, *x* has the sound of *z*; as, *deux enfants, six ans, dix hommes, dix-huit, dix-neuf*, also in *deuxième, sixième, dixième*, and their derivatives. In other cases it is sounded as in English.

W does not properly belong to the French alphabet. It is used only in words adopted from foreign languages, and then takes, in some words, the sound which it has in those languages; as, *whig, whiskey, whist, Washington, Wellington, Walter Scott*. The French generally sound it as *v*.

## LIQUID SOUNDS.

*Gn* is generally liquid in French, in which case it has the sound of *ni* in *onion*; as, *mignon*. In a few words *gn* is pronounced as in *magnate*.

*L, ll*, in the middle or at the end of a word, when preceded by *i*, have usually the sound of *gli* in *seraglio*, or *lli* in *brilliant*. They are pronounced by many Frenchmen also with the sound of *y* in *yoke*.

TERMINATIONS IN *LE* AND *RE*.

In English we pronounce the terminations *le, re*, like *ul, ur*, as if the consonant were placed last. Care must be taken to avoid this pronunciation in French as very harsh and erroneous. Such syllables must be pronounced as follows:

ble as blu in blush.	fre as fru in frustrate.
bre bru brush.	gle glu glum.
cle clu clung.	gre gru grum.
cre cru crumb.	ple plu plum.
dre dru drum.	pre pru.
fle flu flung.	tre tru trump.

As, *bible, candelabre, acre, camphre, monstre, théâtre*.

IMPORTANT REMARK.—*E* is never silent in French, when two consonants are to be found before it: at the end of words, the three letters form a plain, distinct *half-audible sound*, as in all the above final syllables; and, in the middle of words, the *e* is articulated in *full sound* with the last of the foregoing consonants, as in *distinctment, parlsment, parlseront, gouvernement*, etc.

# PRELIMINARY LESSONS.

## PRONOUNCING.

### E. FOURTH SOUND.

#### 4. E sounded as *u* in *us* ; Fourth Sound.

<sup>4</sup> Je,	I.	<sup>4</sup> le,	the.
me,	me.	ce,	this or that.
te,	thee.	que,	what.
se,	one's self.	de,	of.

#### 6. Ê sounded as *a* in *fate* ; Sixth Sound.

<sup>6</sup> Clé or clef,	key.	<sup>6</sup> fée,	fairy.
blé,	wheat.	thé,	tea.
dé,	thimble.	geai,	jay.
gué,	ford.	j'ai,	I have.
né, née,	born.	je sais,	I know.

#### 5. E sounded as *e* in *ebb* ; Fifth Sound, and

#### 7. Ê sounded as *ai* in *air* ; Seventh Sound.

<sup>5</sup> Bec,	beak.	<sup>7</sup> baie,	bay.
bel,	handsome.	craie,	chalk.
chef,	chief.	vraie,	true.
net,	clean.	bègue,	stutterer.
effet,	effect.	cède,	yields.
jet,	throw.	cher,	dear.
dette,	debt.	fraise,	strawberry.
quel,	what.	vaine,	vain.
godet,	small cup.	crème,	cream.
poulet,	chicken.	gèle,	freezes.
parapet,	parapet.	zèle,	zeal.

#### 8. Ê sounded as *e* in *where* ; Eighth Sound.

<sup>8</sup> Bêche,	spade.	<sup>8</sup> pêche,	peach.
bête,	animal.	quête,	search.
blème,	sallow.	tête,	head.
fête,	festival.	vête,	clothes.
même,	same.	maître,	master.

\* When a figure or mark of sound is placed over a vowel in the following columns, it is meant to apply also to the words placed immediately under it in the same column, as 4 here applies also to *e* in *me*, *te*, and so on.

## SENTENCES.

Ce dé est de fer.	This thimble is of iron.
Ce blé est cher.	This wheat is dear.
Ce lait est frais.	This milk is cool.
Cette crème est fraîche.	This cream is cool.
Cette fraise est belle.	This strawberry is handsome.
Cette fête est belle.	This festival is beautiful.
C'est vrai, c'est très-vrai.	It is true, it is very true.
Je fais le même thème.	I do the same exercise.
Que fait le chef?	What does the chief?
Que fait le frère de ce chef?	What does the brother of that chief?

## A, FIRST SOUND.

1. A sounded as *a* in *ah*; First Sound.

<sup>1</sup> A,	has.	<sup>1</sup> balle,	ball.
as,	hast.	calme,	calm.
bal,	ball.	dame,	lady.
cap,	cape.	face,	face.
chat,	cat.	cage,	cage.
plat,	dish.	femme,	woman.
ma,	my.	dalle,	flag-stone.
la,	the.	salle,	hall.
fat,	fop.	malle,	trunk.
drap,	cloth.	dard,	dart.

2. A sounded as *a* in *arm*; Second Sound.

<sup>2</sup> Âge,	age.	<sup>2</sup> pâte,	dough.
Âme,	soul.	plâtre,	plaster.
hâte,	haste.	bas,	low.
lâche,	loose.	gras,	fat.
mâle,	male.	tas,	pile.
pâle,	pale.	mât,	mast.

12. I sounded as *i* in *pique*; Twelfth Sound.

<sup>12</sup> Ami,	friend.	<sup>12</sup> dit,	said.
il,	he.	file,	row, file.
cire,	wax.	lime,	file.
bis,	brown.	mille,	thousand.
cil,	eye-lash.	pile,	pile.
dix,	ten.	quitte,	free, discharged.
lit,	bed.	rime,	rhyme.

<sup>12</sup> pis,	worse.	<sup>12</sup> souris,	mouse.
prix,	price.	si,	if.
qui,	who.	bâti,	built.
riz,	rice.	six,	six.

13. *î* sounded as *ee* in *eel* ; Thirteenth Sound.  
(Also *ie, y.*)

<sup>12</sup> Lie,	drega.	<sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> dime,	tithe.
scie,	saw.	gite,	home.
vie,	life.	île,	island.

15. *O* sounded as *o* in *not* ; Fifteenth Sound ; and

16. *O* sounded as *aw* in *awe* ; Sixteenth Sound.

<sup>16</sup> Botte,	boot.	<sup>16</sup> <sup>0</sup> encore,	again.
code,	code.	dore,	gilds.
folle,	crazy.	Georges,	George.
mode,	mode.	maure,	Moor.
noce,	wedding.	corps,	body.
sotte,	foolish.	bord,	edge.
dérot,	devout.	fort,	strong.
col,	neck.	nord,	north.
bol,	bowl.	tort,	wrong.
vol,	theft.	mort,	dead.

17. *O* sounded as *o* in *no* ; Seventeenth Sound.

<sup>17</sup> Côte,	coast.	<sup>17</sup> <sup>0</sup> dôme,	dome.
gros,	big.	môle,	mole.
nos,	we.	rôle,	roll.
vos,	you.	rose,	rose.
peau,	skin.	tôle,	sheet-iron.
rôt,	roast.	cause,	cause.
flot,	wave.	psaume,	psalm.
tôt,	soon.	sauce,	sauce.
beau,	handsome.	sauge,	sage.
eau,	water.	geôle,	jail.

#### SENTENCES.

<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
Le chat est là.  
<sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>0</sup>  
Le drap est sec.  
<sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
Le plat est à sa place.  
<sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
Le tas de sacs est là.  
<sup>5</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>0</sup>  
Cette daine est grasse.  
<sup>5</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>0</sup>  
Cette salle est belle.

The cat is there.  
The cloth is dry.  
The dish is in its place.  
The pile of bags is there.  
That doe is fat.  
That hall is beautiful.

<sup>4 1 1 4 1</sup>  
 Le chat a le rat.  
<sup>4 5 1 1 1 0</sup>  
 Le chef a la malle.  
<sup>1 1 0 1 4 5</sup>  
 La dame a le thé.  
<sup>5 0 1 0 1 1 5</sup>  
 Cette femme a la clef.  
<sup>4 1 5 17 5 2</sup>  
 Ce chat est gros et gras.  
<sup>5 0 5 0 5 17 0 4</sup>  
 Cette bête est grosse et grasse.  
<sup>5 1 7 0 4 1 1 0</sup>  
 J'ai la craie de la dame.  
<sup>5 1 5 0 5 1 8 0</sup>  
 J'ai la pelle et la bêche.  
<sup>5 1 1 0 4 4 5</sup>  
 J'ai la cage de ce geai.  
<sup>5 1 1 0 4 5 0 1</sup>  
 J'ai la bague de cette femme.  
<sup>12 1 4 1 5 1</sup>  
 Il a le dard et l'arc.  
<sup>12 1 4 12 4 4 5</sup>  
 Il a le lit de ce chef.  
<sup>12 1 1 12 1 16 0</sup>  
 Il a la scie et la corde.  
<sup>4 5 1 4 17 0 15</sup>  
 Le chef a le pot et le bol.  
<sup>1 1 0 1 1 17 0</sup>  
 La dame a la rose.  
<sup>12 1 1 12 0 4 1 1 0</sup>  
 Qui a la cire de la dame?  
<sup>15 0 1 1 12 0</sup>  
 Georges a la cire.  
<sup>12 1 4 17 17</sup>  
 Qui a le beau seau?  
<sup>15 0 1 4 17 5 4 17 17</sup>  
 Georges a le seau et le gros pot.

The cat has the rat.  
 The chief has the trunk.  
 The lady has the tea.  
 That woman has the key.  
 That cat is big and fat.  
 That animal is big and fat.  
 I have the chalk of the lady.  
 I have the shovel and the spade.  
 I have the cage of that jay.  
 I have the jeweled ring of that woman.  
 He has the dart and the bow.  
 He has the bed of that chief.  
 He has the saw and the cord.  
 The chief has the pot and the bowl.  
 The lady has the rose.  
 Who has the wax of the lady?  
 George has the wax.  
 Who has the handsome bucket?  
 George has the bucket and the big pot.

## U. TWENTY-SECOND SOUND.

22. *U* sounded as *u* in *queen*; Twenty-second Sound.

<sup>22</sup> Bu,	drunk.	<sup>22 0</sup> butte,	hill.
but,	aim.	chut!	hush!
du,	of the.	plume,	feather.
lu,	read.	tu,	thou.
nu,	naked.	eu,	had.
su,	known.	sur,	on.

23. *U* sounded as *u* prolonged; Twenty-third Sound.

<sup>22</sup> Êât,	had.	<sup>22 0</sup> bûche,	log.
mûr,	ripe.	flûte,	flute.
sûr,	sure.	mûre,	mulberry.
bue,	drunk.	juge,	judge.
lue,	read.	tue,	kills.
sue,	known.	ruse,	craft.



9. *Eu* sounded as *u* in *us* ; Ninth Sound, and  
 11. *Eu* sounded as *i* in *sir* ; Eleventh Sound.

<sup>0</sup> Bleu,	blue.	<sup>9</sup> jeune,	young.
feu,	fire.	<sup>11</sup> peuple,	people.
jeu,	game.	<sup>11</sup> beurre,	butter.
seul,	alone.	peur,	fear.
bœuf,	beef.	meurs,	die.
œuf,	egg.	<sup>1</sup> mœurs,	manners.
neuf,	nine.	<sup>11</sup> labour,	labor.
veuf,	widower.	ardeur,	ardor.
peux,	can.	nageur,	swimmer.
veux,	will.		

10. *Eû* sounded as *eugh* in *eugh* ; Tenth Sound.

<sup>10</sup> Jeûne,	fast.	<sup>10</sup> jeudi,	Thursday.
deux,	two.	bœufs,	oxen.
eux,	them.	œufs,	eggs.
peu,	little.	creux,	hollow.

18. *Ou* sounded as in *you* ; Eighteenth Sound, and

19. *Ôû* sounded as *oo* in *mood* ; Nineteenth Sound.

<sup>18</sup> Bouc,	he-goat.	<sup>19</sup> boule,	ball.
bout,	end.	coude,	elbow.
aôût,	August.	moule,	mold.
coup,	blow.	poule,	hen.
cour,	yard.	toute,	all.
doux,	sweet.	voûte,	vault.
nous,	we, us.	boue,	mud.
sous,	under.	roue,	wheel.
tout,	all.	foule,	multitude.
vous,	you.	roue,	rolls.

20. *Oi* sounded as *wa* in *wash* ; Twentieth Sound.

<sup>20</sup> Bois,	wood.	<sup>20</sup> boite,	box.
doit,	finger.	droite,	right.
moi,	to me.	noir,	black.
roi,	king.	pois,	pea.
foi,	faith.	loi,	law.

## SENTENCES.

<sup>0</sup>J'ai bu tout le lait.  
<sup>0</sup>J'ai eu du beurre frais.  
<sup>0</sup>J'ai vu la bûche de chêne.

I have drunk all the milk.  
 I have had some fresh butter.  
 I have seen the log of oak.

<sup>23 1 22 23 4 23 0</sup>  
 Il a bu du *jus de mûres*.  
<sup>13 1 22 23 12 5 23 11 0</sup>  
 Il a eu du riz et du beurre.  
<sup>13 1 22 4 9 5 0 13</sup>  
 Il a vu le bœuf et le bouc.  
<sup>5 0 1 22 15 4 7 4 1 11</sup>  
 Elle a bu tout le lait de sa sœur.  
<sup>5 0 1 22 1 15 0 22 4 23</sup>  
 Elle a vu la poule sur le mur.  
<sup>5 0 1 22 1 15 0 10</sup>  
 Elle a eu sa robe bleue.  
<sup>15 0 1 22 1 23 0 9 0</sup>  
 Georges a eu la plume neuve.  
<sup>1 9 0 1 0 1 22 1 17 0</sup>  
 La jeune femme a eu la rose.  
<sup>1 1 0 1 22 1 5 0 23 0</sup>  
 La dame a eu la pêche mûre.  
<sup>4 6 5 15 22 6</sup>  
 Ce thé est trop sucré.  
<sup>1 15 0 5 15 0 12</sup>  
 La poule est sous le lit.  
<sup>1 15 0 22 6 5 9</sup>  
 La queue du geai est bleue.  
<sup>1 15 0 5 22 1 9 0</sup>  
 La corde est sur la meule.  
<sup>4 1 0 5 9</sup>  
 Ce drap bleu est neuf.  
<sup>4 17 9 5 9 5 15</sup>  
 Ce gros bœuf est jeune et fort.  
<sup>4 10 5 7 23</sup>  
 Ce nœud est très-dur.  
<sup>13 5 15 4 17 0</sup>  
 Qui est sous ce dôme ?  
<sup>4 17 0 6 17</sup>  
 Ce dôme est haut et beau.  
<sup>6 23 1 15 0 22 4 17</sup>  
 J'ai vu la cire sur le pot.  
<sup>13 1 22 1 23 0 15 4 17</sup>  
 Il a vu ma plume sous le seau. }  
<sup>5 1 22 15 4 7 5 4 11 0</sup>  
 Elle a eu tout le lait et le beurre.

He has drunk some mulberry juice.  
 He has had some rice and some butter.  
 He has seen the ox and the he-goat.  
 She has drunk all the milk of her sister.  
 She has seen the hen on the wall.  
 She has had her blue gown.  
 George has had the new pen.  
 The young woman has had the rose.  
 The lady has had the ripe peach.  
 This tea is too sweet.  
 The hen is under the bed.  
 The tail of the jay is blue.  
 The rope is on the grindstone.  
 This blue cloth is new.  
 That big ox is young and strong.  
 This knot is very hard.  
 Who is under that dome ?  
 That dome is high and handsome.  
 I (have seen) *saw* the wax on the pot.  
 He (has seen) *saw* my pen under the bucket.  
 She has had all the milk and the butter.

## NASAL SOUNDS.

3. *An* sounded as *en* in *encore* ; Third Sound.

<sup>3</sup> An,	year.	<sup>3 0</sup> tante,	aunt.
banc,	bench.	tente,	tent.
blanc,	white.	vente,	sale.
en,	in.	paon,	pea-fowl.
flanc,	flank.	sang,	blood.
Jean,	John.	temps,	time.

14. *In* sounded as *an* in *anchor* ; Fourteenth Sound.

<sup>14</sup> Daim,	deer.	<sup>14 0</sup> peintre,	painter.
faim,	hunger.	crainte,	fear.
lin,	flax.	mainte,	many.
pain,	bread.	nymphé,	nymph.
sain,	sound.	sein,	bosom.
saint,	holy.	vin,	wine.

21. *On* sounded as *on* in *song* ; Twenty-first Sound.

<sup>21</sup> Bon,	good.	<sup>21</sup> <sup>0</sup> monde,	world.
long,	long.	ronde,	round.
rond,	round.	honte,	shame.
done,	then.	ombre,	shadow.
font,	make.	taon,	breeze-fly.

24. *Un* sounded as *un* in *uhng* ; Twenty-fourth Sound.(Also *um*, *eun*.)

<sup>24</sup> Un,	a, one.	<sup>1</sup> <sup>24</sup> chacun,	each one.
brun,	brown.	parfum,	perfume.
Huns,	Huns.	<sup>24</sup> <sup>0</sup> humble,	humble.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>24</sup> défunt,	deceased.	jeûn,	fast.

## SENTENCES.

<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>24</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>3</sup> Jean a un long banc.	John has a long bench.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>21</sup> Ce pain est blanc et bon.	This bread is white and good.
<sup>6</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>24</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>3</sup> J'ai vu un beau paon.	I have seen a beautiful peacock.
<sup>13</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>24</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>24</sup> Il a vu un gros bœuf brun.	He has seen a big brown ox.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>3</sup> Ce champ de lin est très-grand.	This field of flax is very large.
<sup>21</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>14</sup> Mon père a du fil fin.	My father has some fine thread.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>23</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>13</sup> J'ai bu du vin dour.	I have drunk some sweet wine.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> Ce bœuf est plein de sang.	This ox is full of blood.
<sup>21</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>14</sup> Son goud est long et fort.	His hinge is long and strong.
<sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>21</sup> Mon plat rond est très-bon.	My round dish is very good.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>17</sup> Le plan de ce grand dôme est beau.	The plan of that large dome is fine.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>3</sup> Le nom de Jean est sur son banc.	The name of John is on his bench.

## LIQUID SOUNDS.

*Gn* sounded as *ni* in *onion* ; *Ll* or *l* as *lli* in *brilliant*.

<sup>13</sup> <sup>0</sup> Digne,	worthy.	<sup>13</sup> <sup>0</sup> bille,	marble.
cygne,	swan.	filie,	girl.
ligne,	line.	grille,	grate.
signe,	sign.	quille,	ninepin.
vigne,	vine.	vrille,	gimlet.
<sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> peigne,	comb.	gril,	gridiron.
<sup>1</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>21</sup> règne,	reign.	<sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> treille,	trellis.
Avignon,	Avignon.	veille,	watch.

## SENTENCES.

<sup>4 13 0 7 0 23 17</sup>  
 Le cygne règne sur l'eau.  
<sup>6 0 13 0 5 7 16 0</sup>  
 Cette ligne est très forte.  
<sup>13 1 4 7 0 4 5 0 13 0</sup>  
 Qui a le peigne de cette fille ?  
<sup>1 13 0 23 5 1 24 13 0</sup>  
 La fille *du* chef a un cygne.  
<sup>1 13 0 5 23 4 7 1 0</sup>  
 La vigne est sur le treillage.  
<sup>4 9 3 0 1 1 0</sup>  
 Le bœuf mange la paille.  
<sup>1 1 0 5 23 4 13</sup>  
 La caille est sur le grill.  
<sup>1 1 0 5 18 1 7 0</sup>  
 La paille est sous la treille.  
<sup>5 0 13 0 7 24 13 0</sup>  
 Cette fille fait un signe.  
<sup>13 1 1 13 0 5 1 13 0</sup>  
 Qui a ma vrille et ma ligne ?  
<sup>16 0 5 13 0 23 13</sup>  
 Georges est digne *du* prix.  
<sup>13 13 0 21 21 18 1 13 0</sup>  
 Il signe son nom sous la ligne.

The swan reigns on the water.  
 That line is very strong.  
 Who has the comb of that girl ?  
 The daughter *of the* chief has a swan.  
 The vine is on the trellis.  
 The ox eats the straw.  
 The quail is on the gridiron.  
 The straw is under the trellis.  
 That girl makes a sign.  
 Who has my gimlet and my line ?  
 George is worthy *of the* prize.  
 He signs his name under the line.

## WORDS CONTAINING DIPHTHONGS.

<sup>13 1 4</sup> Diacre,	deacon.	<sup>18 1 0</sup> moelle,	marrow.
diable,	devil.	<sup>1</sup> poêle,	stove.
fiacre,	hack.	<sup>7</sup> poème,	poem.
fier,	to trust.	<sup>7</sup> poète,	poet.
fiez,	trust.	<sup>18 1</sup> fouet,	whip.
biais,	slant.	<sup>23 1 0</sup> nuage,	cloud.
fiais,	trusted.	<sup>6</sup> nuée,	cloud.
fier,	proud.	<sup>5</sup> bluet,	blue-bottle.
ciel,	sky.	<sup>11</sup> fluet,	thin.
Dieu,	God.	<sup>11</sup> lueur,	light.
pieu,	stake.	<sup>11</sup> sueur,	sweat.
vieux,	old.	<sup>23 13</sup> buis,	box-wood.
lieue,	league.	nuit,	night.
cieux,	skies.	puis,	then.
<sup>16 0</sup> fiole,	vial.	<sup>13</sup> suie,	soot.
viol,	violation.		

## SENTENCES.

<sup>4 13 1 0 5 12 10</sup>  
 Ce diacre est pieux.  
<sup>4 13 1 0 5 13 9</sup>  
 Le fiacre est vieux.  
<sup>4 13 5 5 9</sup>  
 Le ciel est bleu.  
<sup>13 9 20 18 23 17 7 13 9</sup>  
 Dieu voit tout *du* haut *des* cieux.  
<sup>4 20 24 27 4 20</sup>  
 Je vois un toit de bois.  
<sup>4 5 5 13 7 5 23 5</sup>  
 Ce chef est fier et cruel.

That deacon is pious.  
 The hackney-coach is old.  
 The sky is blue.  
 God sees all *from the* height *of the* skies.  
 I see a roof of wood.  
 That chief is proud and cruel.

<sup>2 30 34 22 1 0 20</sup>  
 Il voit un nuage noir.  
<sup>1 12 15 0 5 22 4 20 22 22 13</sup>  
 La fiole est sur le toit du puits.  
<sup>6 22 4 15 8 0 4 4 15 7 0</sup>  
 J'ai lu le poème de ce poète.  
<sup>4 10 1 5 5 22 15 1 0</sup>  
 Le fouet est près du poêle.  
<sup>4 22 12 5 12 14 15 13</sup>  
 Ce buis est bien joli.  
<sup>4 22 12 3 6 4 22 11</sup>  
 Je suis trempé de sueur.

He sees a black cloud.  
 The viol is on the roof of the well.  
 I have read the poem of that poet.  
 The whip is near (of) the stove.  
 That box-wood is very pretty.  
 I am wet through with sweat.

## PROMISCUOUS SENTENCES.

<sup>4 15 1 5 3 4 1 17</sup>  
 Le forçat est dans le cachot.  
<sup>4 12 20 5 14 4 1 12 5</sup>  
 Ce tiroir est plein de papier.  
<sup>20 12 24 12 14 17 1 17</sup>  
 Voici un bien beau tableau.  
<sup>12 12 4 1 17 5 7 3 17</sup>  
 Oui, ce tableau est vraiment beau.  
<sup>6 22 4 20 12 22 5 12 3</sup>  
 J'ai vu le fruit du paysan.  
<sup>4 15 11 1 12 21 1 1</sup>  
 Le voleur a pris mon tabac.  
<sup>4 18 17 1 7 5 22 14</sup>  
 Ce nouveau laquais est mutin.  
<sup>20 1 4 1 15 5 4 1 17</sup>  
 Voilà le rabot et le marteau.  
<sup>6 3 6 24 4 21 22 6</sup>  
 J'ai mangé un melon musqué.  
<sup>4 22 12 5 10 7 4 22 12</sup>  
 Ce mûrier est couvert de fruit.  
<sup>22 1 0 1 1 1 21 7 0</sup>  
 Gustave va à la fontaine.  
<sup>4 12 15 0 1 22 0 5 5 0</sup>  
 Ce droguiste a une lancette.  
<sup>4 15 7 0 5 7 14 22 0</sup>  
 Le notaire est très-injuste.  
<sup>1 15 22 0 4 1 22 5 5 21 0</sup>  
 La fortune de la duchesse est grande.  
<sup>6 12 1 20 0</sup>  
 J'ai pris l'ardoise.  
<sup>4 15 3 5 1 24 1 15 5</sup>  
 Le boulanger a un flageolet.  
<sup>4 0 12 5 5 5 12 14 14 12 5</sup>  
 Ce petit enfant est bien indiscret.  
<sup>4 1 21 1 5 10 4 1 12 15 8</sup>  
 Le garçon paresseux sera ignorant.  
<sup>4 15 15 5 4 1 24 15 5 5 1</sup>  
 Ce colonel sera un jour général.  
<sup>6 0 1 0 5 7</sup>  
 Cette allemande parle français.  
<sup>4 20 12 5 1 7 1 5 4 1 7</sup>  
 Ce voilier a fait une voile.  
<sup>4 1 5 12 11 1 7 1 5 4 1 7</sup>  
 Le balayeur balaie avec le balai.  
<sup>4 7 3 12 5 1 22 22 12 0 22 7</sup>  
 Le ferblantier a du cuivre et du fer.  
<sup>4 1 5 12 14 1 1 1 5 5 21 12 0</sup>  
 Ce galérien a avoué son crime.  
<sup>21 4 12 12 5 5 1 6 4 22 12</sup>  
 Mon cerisier est chargé de fruit.  
<sup>4 1 12 12 5 1 1 0 1 20 0 5</sup>  
 Ce jardinier travaille adroitement.

The convict is in the dungeon.  
 That drawer is full of paper.  
 Here is a very fine picture.  
 Yes, this picture is truly fine.  
 I have seen the fruit of the country-man.  
 The thief has taken my tobacco.  
 That new lackey is stubborn.  
 There are the plane and the hammer.  
 I have eaten a muskmelon.  
 That mulberry tree is covered with fruit.  
 Gustavus goes to the fountain.  
 That druggist has a lancet.  
 The notary is very unjust.  
 The fortune of the duchess is large.  
 I have taken the slate.  
 The baker has a flageolet.  
 That little boy is very indiscreet.  
 That lazy boy will be ignorant.  
 This colonel will be one day general.  
 That German woman speaks French.  
 That sailmaker has made a sail.  
 The sweeper sweeps with the broom.  
 The tinman has some copper and some iron.  
 That galley-slave has confessed his crime.  
 My cherry-tree is loaded with fruit.  
 That gardener works skilfully.

<sup>4 14 5 3 4 1 0 2 6</sup>  
 Le pain est dans le garde-manger.  
<sup>4 0 13 1 21 5 22 1 1 1 0</sup>  
 Ce petit garçon est mon camarade.  
<sup>12 3 1 7 0 1 5 0 23 12 0 2</sup>  
 Il décachète la lettre furtivement.  
<sup>4 13 7 4 15 12 0 14 12 0 3</sup>  
 Je connais ce monsieur intimement.  
<sup>1 12 13 7 0 18 0 1 12 0 3</sup>  
 La rivière coule rapidement.

The bread is in the pantry.  
 That little boy is my comrade.  
 He unseals the letter stealthily.  
 I know that gentleman intimately.  
 The river flows rapidly.

## FINAL CONSONANTS SOUNDED ON A FOLLOWING VOWEL.

When a word, ending with a consonant, precedes one beginning with a vowel or an *h* not aspirated, the two are often connected in pronunciation, though no rule but euphony can be given for making or avoiding the connection.

In the following sentences the mark  $\sim$  is used to denote such a connection, in which case *d* is sounded as *t*; *f* as *v*; *c*, *g*, and *q*, as *k*; *s* and *z* as *s*, and final consonants which are naturally silent, in such cases are sounded upon the following vowel.

<sup>5 3 3 1 1 5 15 0</sup>  
 Cet enfant va à l'école.  
<sup>4 13 0 5 2 24 1 12 15 3</sup>  
 Cet homme est dans un cabriolet.  
<sup>4 12 4 5 1 12 6 5 15 12 3</sup>  
 Le prix de cet habit est exorbitant.  
<sup>12 1 3 1 12 0 1 5 12 13 6</sup>  
 Il apprend à lire avec facilité.  
<sup>4 0 12 3 3 5 7 14 5 5 3</sup>  
 Ce petit enfant est très-intéressant.  
<sup>12 5 0 5 12 1 3 1 1 0</sup>  
 Vous êtes évidemment malade.  
<sup>4 1 3 24 21 11 12 5 6 6</sup>  
 Cela est un bonheur *inespéré*.  
<sup>12 1 21 1 1 12 3 0 12</sup>  
 Nous allons à la boulangerie.  
<sup>3 3 24 12 15 0 3</sup>  
 J'entends un bourdonnement.  
<sup>5 15 0 7 23 6 1 1 3 0</sup>  
 Cet homme fait une extravagance.  
<sup>1 1 1 12 4 5 15 0 5 12 1 12</sup>  
 La maladie de cet homme est *imagin-*  
<sup>7 0</sup>  
 naire.  
<sup>4 1 3 1 12 17 22 9 0 3</sup>  
 Ce marchand agit frauduleusement.  
<sup>12 1 22 12 23 0 4 22 12 5 1 0 3</sup>  
 Il traduit une leçon littéralement.  
<sup>5 3 3 1 1 0 12 18 10 0 3</sup>  
 Cet enfant travaille vigoureusement.  
<sup>4 5 4 12 0 3 1 12 12 15 5</sup>  
 Je mets le livre dans la bibliothèque.  
<sup>5 1 1 5 12 12 14 6 7 1 3</sup>  
 Cet académicien est très-savant.  
<sup>5 15 0 1 12 15 15 1 4 3</sup>  
 Cet homme agit honorablement.  
<sup>12 1 4 1 3 12 12 15 6</sup>  
 Il a de la sensibilité.  
<sup>12 1 21 1 5 17 5</sup>  
 Nous allons à cet hôtel.  
<sup>12 6 12 3 1 12 12 1 4 3</sup>  
 Vous écrivez abominablement.  
<sup>5 15 0 1 0 5 7 15 1 4 3</sup>  
 Cet homme parle déraisonnablement.

That child goes to school.  
 That man is in a gig.  
 The price of that coat is exorbitant.  
 He learns to read with facility.  
 That little child is very interesting.  
 You are evidently sick.  
 That is an *unhoped for* happiness.  
 We are going to the baker's shop.  
 I hear a buzzing.  
 That man commits an extravagance.  
 The sickness of that man is imaginary.  
 That merchant acts fraudulently.  
 He translates a lesson literally.  
 That child works vigorously.  
 I put the book in the library.  
 That academicien is very learned.  
 That man acts honorably.  
 He has (*some*) sensibility.  
 We go to that hotel.  
 You write abominably.  
 That man speaks unreasonably.

Ext is silent in the third person *plural* of verbs; but then the preceding letter should be peculiarly sounded: if a vowel, it is *long*; if a consonant, it must be very distinctly heard; as, Ils <sup>18</sup>rient (they laugh), ils <sup>5 23 18</sup>étudient (they study); ils <sup>21</sup>content (they relate), ils <sup>1</sup>parent (they adorn), etc.

Ext is sounded as *en* nasal in the third person *singular* of the verbs *tenir* and *venir*, and all their derivatives, as, Il <sup>12 14</sup>tient (he holds), il <sup>12 15</sup>vient (he comes), il <sup>21 12 14</sup>convient (he agrees, or it is suitable), etc.

Ext, in all other cases, has the sound of *en* nasal, as <sup>1 12 2</sup>patient (patient), <sup>1 2</sup>agent (agent), <sup>1 2</sup>parent (relation), etc.

<sup>17 1 2 1 12 0 18 18</sup>  
Nos agents agissent pour nous.

Our agents act for us.

<sup>12 1 2 0 4 23 12 0 1 2 4 1 2</sup>  
Ils argentent le cuivre avec de l'argent.

They plate the copper with (some) silver.

<sup>7 15 0 21 0 11 1 2</sup>  
Ces hommes comptent leur argent.

Those men count their money.

<sup>7 1 2 1 0 11 2 2</sup>  
Les parents parent leurs enfants.

The parents adorn their children.

<sup>7 5 12 3 5 12 0 18 1 18</sup>  
Ces présidents président tour à tour.

These presidents preside by turns.

<sup>7 15 0 12 15 2 12 15 0 18 2</sup>  
Les hommes violents violent souvent

Violent men often violate the law.

<sup>7 30</sup>  
les lois.  
<sup>12 21 12 14 12 21 12 0 11 1 12</sup>  
Il convient qu'ils conviennent leurs amis.

It is suitable that they invite their friends.

<sup>12 2 2 7 1 11 12 4 5 0</sup>  
Il pressent les malheurs qui le pressent.

He foresees the misfortunes which press him.

<sup>12 1 12 1 5 5 17 12 6 4</sup>  
Ils admirent la générosité de  
<sup>5 15 0</sup>  
cet homme.

They admire the generosity of that man.

<sup>12 5 22 15 7 1 5 1 12 0</sup>  
Ils étudient les mathématiques.

They study the mathematics.

<sup>7 22 22 1 11 21 5 5 1 0 2</sup>  
Les usurpateurs sont généralement

Usurpers are generally detested.

<sup>5 5 6</sup>  
détestés.  
<sup>12 5 22 12 0 11 4 21 5 12 1 2</sup>  
Ils étudient leurs leçons négligemment.

They study their lessons negligently.

A single *s* between two vowels has the sound of *ss*, except in a few compound words, but *ss*, and *s* (single) between two consonants or between a vowel and a consonant, are sounded as *ss* in *bliss*.

<sup>7 6</sup>  
Baiser, to kiss, <sup>7 6</sup>  
baisser, to lower.

<sup>5 7</sup>  
désert, desert, <sup>5 7</sup>  
dessert, dessert.

<sup>2 0</sup>  
base, base, <sup>2 0</sup>  
basse, low.

<sup>20 21</sup>  
poison, poison, <sup>20 21</sup>  
poisson, fish.

<sup>2 0</sup>  
case, hut, <sup>2 0</sup>  
casé, breaks.

<sup>17 0</sup>  
rose, rose, <sup>14 0</sup>  
rosse, jade.

<sup>17 0</sup>  
chose, thing, <sup>1 0</sup>  
chasse, hunt.

<sup>22 0</sup>  
ruse, artifice, <sup>22 0</sup>  
russe, Russian.

<sup>12 14</sup>  
cousin, cousin, <sup>12 14</sup>  
cousin, cushion.

<sup>15 7 1 12 21 1 1 12 21</sup>  
— observation, abstraction.

The addition of *s* to an adjective or past participle ending with a consonant, causes that consonant to be sounded. The addition of *s* (or any other vowel-sound) causes also the syllables *an*, *en*, *in*, *on*, *un*, to lose their nasal sound.

MASCULINE.	FEMININE.		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.	
<sup>2</sup> Bas,	<sup>2</sup> <sup>0</sup> basse,	low.	<sup>18</sup> court,	<sup>18</sup> <sup>0</sup> courte,	short.
<sup>17</sup> chaud,	<sup>17</sup> <sup>0</sup> chaude,	warm.	<sup>20</sup> droit,	<sup>20</sup> <sup>0</sup> droite,	strait.
<sup>5</sup> <sup>20</sup> étroit,	<sup>5</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>0</sup> étroite,	narrow.	<sup>13</sup> dit,	<sup>13</sup> <sup>0</sup> dite,	said.
<sup>20</sup> froid,	<sup>20</sup> <sup>0</sup> froide,	cold.	<sup>2</sup> gras,	<sup>2</sup> <sup>0</sup> grasse,	fat.
<sup>17</sup> gros,	<sup>17</sup> <sup>0</sup> grosse,	big.	<sup>17</sup> haut,	<sup>17</sup> <sup>0</sup> haute,	high.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>13</sup> petit,	<sup>4</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>0</sup> petite,	small.	<sup>18</sup> lourd,	<sup>18</sup> <sup>0</sup> lourde,	heavy.
<sup>24</sup> brun,	<sup>24</sup> <sup>0</sup> brune,	brown.	<sup>18</sup> <sup>14</sup> cousin,	<sup>18</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> cousine,	cousin.
<sup>23</sup> <sup>14</sup> divin,	<sup>23</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> divine,	divine.	<sup>14</sup> fin,	<sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> fine,	fine.
<sup>14</sup> plein,	<sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> pleine,	full.	<sup>14</sup> sain,	<sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> saine,	sound.
<sup>14</sup> vain,	<sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> vaine,	vain.	<sup>20</sup> <sup>14</sup> voisin,	<sup>20</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>0</sup> voisine,	neighbor.

REMARK.—But there are only four words in French which lose their nasality when a final is carried over to the following word; they are the monosyllables *mon, ton, son, and don.*

<sup>26</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>22</sup> Un bon ami,	a good friend.	<sup>18</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>13</sup> mon ami,	my friend.
<sup>15</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>3</sup> son enfant,	his child.	<sup>15</sup> <sup>1</sup> ton arbre.	thy tree.

In speaking, *e* is often silent in words where it has naturally the sound of *â*. This occurs chiefly when several monosyllables succeed each other.

<sup>0</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>0</sup> Je te le donne.	I give it to thee.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> Je ne te le donne pas.	I give it not to thee.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>20</sup> Je le vois.	I see it.
<sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>1</sup> Je ne le vois pas.	I see it not.
<sup>0</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>1</sup> Je te dis que je ne le vois pas.	I tell thee that I see it not.
<sup>13</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>0</sup> Il me le donne.	He gives it to me.
<sup>13</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>2</sup> Il te le vend.	He sells it to thee.
<sup>13</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> Il ne te le vend pas.	He does not sell it to thee.
<sup>21</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> On vient de me dire cela.	One has just told me that.
<sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>0</sup> Cela est peu de chose.	That is a small matter.

## DIÆRESIS.

The vowels *e, i, u*, when marked with the diæresis (·).

<sup>1</sup> <sup>12</sup> Haï,	hated.	<sup>1</sup> <sup>13</sup> Haïc,	hated.	<sup>12</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> Moïse,	Moses.	<sup>1</sup> <sup>13</sup> naïf,	artless.
<sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>0</sup> baïonnette,	bayonet.	<sup>1</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>5</sup> caïman,	alligator.	<sup>12</sup> <sup>14</sup> païen,	pagan.	<sup>12</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> poëme,	poem.
<sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> caïque,	long-boat.	<sup>5</sup> <sup>12</sup> Esaï,	Esau.	<sup>16</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> poëte,	poet.	<sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>18</sup> Raphaël,	Raphael.
<sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> laïque,	layman.	<sup>12</sup> maïs,	maize.	<sup>12</sup> Saul,	Saul.		



## CONVERSATIONAL PHRASES.

<sup>22 23 15 22 9</sup>  
Bonjour, monsieur.

<sup>1 1 0 4 12 23 7 0 4</sup>  
Madame, je vous souhaite le bonjour.

<sup>22 23 8 0 20 5 0</sup>  
Bonsoir, mademoiselle.

<sup>0 0 20 5 0 4 23 7 0 4 22</sup>  
Mademoiselle, je vous souhaite le bon-  
<sup>12</sup>soir.

<sup>15 2 23 15 6 23</sup>  
Comment vous portez-vous?

<sup>7 12 14 4 12 4 5 22</sup>  
Très-bien, je vous remercie.

<sup>15 8 4 15 0 1 1 0 1</sup>  
Comment se porte madame A.?

<sup>15 2 4 15 0 23 0 22 0 4</sup>  
Comment se porte tout le monde chez  
<sup>12</sup>vous?

<sup>1 7 0 8 12 14</sup>  
Parfaitement bien.

<sup>12 0 21 0 4 15 0 12 14</sup>  
Tout le monde se porte bien.

<sup>5 15 15 3 5 15 4 2 0</sup>  
Et vous, comment est votre santé?

<sup>15 0 16 12 7 0 4 0 12 0 1 0</sup>  
Comme d'ordinaire, je me porte assez

<sup>12 14 7 12</sup>  
bien, merci.

<sup>12 7 12 14 17 3</sup>  
Il fait bien beau temps.

<sup>12 7 24 3 22 5</sup>  
Il fait un temps superbe.

<sup>10 12 7 12 7 15 5</sup>  
Oui, mais il fait trop sec.

<sup>1 1 11 5 5 15 2 0</sup>  
La chaleur est étouffante.

<sup>12 1 21 4 15 14 4 22 12</sup>  
Nous avons besoin de pluie.

<sup>12 1 0 20 12 14 17</sup>  
Il va pleuvoir bientôt.

<sup>4 20 5 4 22 1 0</sup>  
Je vois quelques nuages.

<sup>12 1 7 20 12 5 17 20</sup>  
Il a fait froid hier au soir.

<sup>12 7 17 4 1 14</sup>  
Il fait chaud ce matin.

<sup>9 12</sup>  
Pleut-il?

<sup>15 15 12 11 7 12 5 0</sup>  
Non, monsieur, mais il gèle.

<sup>12 7 0 12 7 22 5</sup>  
Il neige. Il fait du vent.

<sup>12 5 1 21 20</sup>  
Il est tard. Bonsoir.

<sup>1 12 0 17 4 20</sup>  
Adieu. Au revoir.

Good day (or good morning), sir.

Madam, I wish you a good day, or a  
good morning.

Good evening, miss.

Miss, I wish you a good evening.

How do you do?

Very well, I thank you.

How does madame A. do?

How is every body at your house?

~~I am~~ perfectly well.

Every body is well.

And you, how is your health?

As usual, I am pretty well, thank you.

It is very fine weather.

It is splendid weather.

Yes, but it is too dry.

The heat is suffocating.

We have need of rain.

It is going to rain soon.

I see some clouds.

It was cold yesterday evening.

It is warm this morning.

Does it rain?

No, sir, but it freezes.

It snows. It is windy.

It is late. Good evening.

Adieu. Until we see each other again.

## PRELIMINARY EXERCISES.

### 1.—PREMIÈRE LEÇON.

Sound of *Ê* and of *ÔI*.

*Ê* sounded as *e* in *us*.

*ÔI* sounded as *oi* in *waist*.

*ja, îa, éa, éa, ma, na.*      *pois, bois, doigt, froid, poids, roi, toit, voit.*

*I. I see.*

*Je. Je vois.*

*The. This, that.*

*Le* (before a noun). *Ce.*

*Him, it. I see it or him.*

*Le* (before a verb). *Je le vois.*

*The king. This king.*

*Le roi. Ce roi.*

*The wood. That wood.*

*Le bois. Ce bois.*

*The finger. This finger.*

*Le doigt. Ce doigt.*

*The weight. That weight.*

*Le poids. Ce poids.*

*The pea. This roof.*

*Le pois. Ce toit.*

*Cold. Of, from.*

*Froid. De.*

*Of wood. From that king.*

*De bois. De ce roi.*

*I see the roof.*

*Je vois le toit.*

*I see it.*

*Je le vois.*

*I see the king.*

*Je vois le roi.*

*I see him.*

*Je le vois.*

*I see the wood of this king.*

*Je vois le bois de ce roi.*

*The roof of wood.*

*Le toit de bois.*

*The cold pea. The cold finger.*

*Le pois froid. Le doigt froid.*

Most adjectives are placed after their nouns in French.

*Je vois le poids. Je le vois. Je vois ce pois. Je vois le pois froid. Je le vois. Je vois le roi. Je vois ce roi. Je le vois. Je vois le bois. Je vois le doigt de ce roi. Je vois ce poids. Je vois le toit de bois. Je le vois.*

*I see the king. I see this king. I see him. I see the wood. I see that wood. I see it. I see the finger of this king. I see it.*

\* Words introduced for the first time are printed in italics.

*Je vois ce poids. Je vois ce pois. Je vois ce froid.*  
 I see that weight. I see the pea. I see the cold pea. I see it.  
 I see the roof. I see this roof. I see the roof of wood. I see it.

## 2.—SECONDE LEÇON.

Sound of <sup>1</sup>A and <sup>6</sup>Ê.

A sounded as a in *ah, mass*. Ê sounded as e in *faté*.

<sup>1</sup>lac, <sup>1</sup>sac, <sup>1</sup>pas, <sup>1</sup>drap, <sup>1</sup>plat, <sup>1</sup>chat, <sup>1</sup>pape.\* <sup>6</sup>dé, <sup>6</sup>blé, <sup>6</sup>pré, <sup>6</sup>thé, <sup>6</sup>café, <sup>6</sup>canapé.

The lake.	The sack or bag.	Le lac.	Le sac.
The cloth.	The dish.	Le drap.	Le plat.
The cat.	The pope.	Le chat.	Le pape.
Not.	I do not see.	Ne-pas.	Je ne vois pas.

*Not* is two words in French; *ne* before the verb and *pas* after it.

This thimble.	That corn.	Ce dé.	Ce blé.
This meadow.	That tea.	Ce pré.	Ce thé.
This coffee.	That sofa.	Ce café.	Ce canapé.
I do not see the lake.		Je ne vois pas le lac.	
I do not see the bag.		Je ne vois pas le sac.	
I do not see the cloth.		Je ne vois pas le drap.	
I do not see the dish.		Je ne vois pas le plat.	
I do not see the cat.		Je ne vois pas le chat.	
I do not see the pope.		Je ne vois pas le pape.	

Je ne vois pas le roi. Je ne vois pas le bois. Je ne vois pas le doigt. Je ne vois pas le poids. Je ne vois pas le pois froid. Je ne vois pas le toit de bois. Je vois ce dé. Je le vois. Je vois ce blé. Je le vois. Je vois le pré. Je vois le thé froid. Je le vois. Je vois le café de ce roi. Je vois le canapé de ce pape. Je vois le pape. Je le vois. Je ne vois pas le dé. Je ne vois pas le blé.

*drap*  
 I see the lake. I see this bag. I see this cloth. I see that dish. I see this cat. I see the pope. I see him. I see the thimble. I see the corn. I see it. I see the meadow. I see the tea of this king. I see the cold coffee. I see the sofa. I do not see the meadow. I do not see the tea of this king. I do not see the coffee. I do not see the sofa. I do not see the sac of cloth.

\* A cipher over e shows that it is silent; this is often the case at the end of words.

## 3.—TROISIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of Ê and of È.

E as e in *ebb*. È as ai in *atr*.<sup>ê</sup>*bref*, <sup>ê</sup>*chef*, <sup>ê</sup>*jet*, <sup>ê</sup>*et*. <sup>è</sup>*cerf*, <sup>è</sup>*fer*, <sup>è</sup>*verre*, <sup>è</sup>*ver*, <sup>è</sup>*cort*, <sup>è</sup>*rais*, <sup>è</sup>*dais*, <sup>è</sup>*lait*, <sup>è</sup>*palais*.The *brief*. The *chief*.Le *bref*. Le *chef*.The *jet*. And.Le *jet*. *Et*.The *stag*. This *iron*.Le *cerf*. Ce *fer*.That *glass*, *tumbler*. The *worm*.Ce *verre*. Le *ver*.*Green*. This *spoke*.*Vert*. Ce *rais*.The *canopy*. The *milk*.Le *dais*. Le *lait*.The *palace*. The green canopy.Le *palais*. Le *dais vert*.I do not see the *brief*.Je ne vois pas le *bref*.

I do not see it.

Je ne le vois pas.

I do not see the *chief*.Je ne vois pas le *chef*.

I do not see him.

Je ne le vois pas.

I see the *iron* and the *glass*.Je vois le *fer* et le *verre*.

Je vois le *cerf*. Je le vois. Je ne vois pas le *jet froid*. Je ne le vois pas. Je vois le *ver*. Je ne vois pas le *rais*. Je ne le vois pas. Je vois le *dais vert*. Je ne vois pas le *lait* de ce *pape*. Je vois le *palais* de ce *roi*. Je ne le vois pas. Je vois le *lac*. Je ne vois pas le *sac*. Je vois le *drap* et le *chat*. Je ne vois pas le *plat*. Je vois le *palais* de ce *pape*. Je vois le *dé* de *fer*.

I do not see the green *corn*. I do not see it. I see the green *meadow*. I do not see the *tea*. I do not see it. I see the *coffee* and the *milk*. I do not see the *sofa*. I do not see it. I see the *king* and the *pope*. I see the *cold jet*. I do not see the *chief*. I do not see the *stag*. I do not see him. I see the *glass*. I do not see the *iron*. I see the *spoke* of *wood* and the green *canopy*. I do not see the *palace*. I do not see it. I see the *cold milk*. I see it.

## 4.—QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of Â.

Â sounded as a in *father*, *arm*.<sup>â</sup>*mât*, <sup>â</sup>*bas*, <sup>â</sup>*tas*, <sup>â</sup>*gras*. Sounds before given, <sup>â</sup>*fraîs*, <sup>â</sup>*laîd*, <sup>â</sup>*balât*, <sup>â</sup>*vere*, <sup>â</sup>*rat*, <sup>â</sup>*dard*, <sup>â</sup>*cadénas*, <sup>â</sup>*mémoire*.The *mast*. That *heap*, *pile*.Le *mât*. Ce *tas*.The *stocking*. *Fat*.Le *bas*. *Gras*.*Low*.*Bas*.The *rat*. That *dart*.Le *rat*. Ce *dard*.



*Handsome, fine.* The sailor.

This boat. The strong soldier.

The dead stag. The big sailor.

*Beau.* Le matelot.

Ce bateau. Le soldat fort.

Le cerf mort. Le gros matelot.

Most adjectives, as we have seen (Lesson 1), are placed after their nouns. Some are placed before them. *Gros* and *beau* are of this kind. Such adjectives will be marked in these Lessons with the abbreviation (bef. n.)

The big boat. The handsome globe. Le gros bateau. Le beau globe.

Je vois le gros bol. Je le vois. Je ne vois pas le globe. Je ne le vois pas. Je vois le gros rocher. Je ne vois pas le soldat laid. Je vois le crochet et le dard. Je ne vois pas le porc. Je vois l'or de ce matelot. Je vois le matelot fort. Je ne vois pas le cerf mort. Je vois le seau de bois. Je ne vois pas le mât de ce bateau. Je ne vois pas le beau seau. Je vois le porc gras et le bol de ce soldat. Je vois le rocher bas. Je vois le tas de bois gras. Je ne vois pas le beau bas.

I see the cat and the rat. I see the padlock of iron and the broom of wood. I do not see the handsome glass. I do not see it. I see the fresh milk. I do not see the memorial of this soldier. I do not see it. I see the bowl of wood and the handsome globe. I do not see the big rock. I do not see it. I see the fat pork. I do not see the gold of this ugly sailor. I see the big cat. I do not see the dead soldier. I do not see him. I see the bucket of strong wood. I do not see the handsome boat. I do not see it. I see the gold. I see this gold.

## 6.—SIXIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of <sup>12</sup>I and of <sup>12</sup>î.

I as <sup>12</sup>i in *pitque*. î as <sup>12</sup>ee in *cel*.

<sup>12</sup>lis, <sup>12</sup>lie, <sup>12</sup>tapis, <sup>12</sup>fil, <sup>12</sup>filet, <sup>12</sup>il, <sup>12</sup>sirop, <sup>12</sup>pirate, <sup>12</sup>petit, <sup>12</sup>rideau: <sup>12</sup>dîme, <sup>12</sup>cidre, <sup>12</sup>glis, <sup>12</sup>lie, <sup>12</sup>voit, <sup>12</sup>radeau, <sup>12</sup>gâteau, <sup>12</sup>cadeau.

The bed. The lily.

The carpet. The thread.

The net. That syrup.

The pirate. He, it.

This curtain. Small, little.

The cider.

This cake. That rake.

The present. He sees.

Le lit. Le lis.

Le tapis. Le fil.

Le filet. Le sirop.

Le pirate. Il.

Ce rideau. Petit, (bef. n.) *rideau*.

Le cidre.

Ce gâteau. Ce radeau.

Le cadeau. Il voit.

He sees. He does not see.	Il voit. Il ne voit pas.
He sees it. He does not see him.	Il le voit. Il ne le voit pas.
The soldier sees the pirate.	Le soldat voit le pirate.
He sees him.	Il le voit.
The pirate does not see the boat.	Le pirate ne voit pas le bateau.
He does not see it.	Il ne le voit pas.

Le matelot voit le gros rocher. Il le voit. Il ne voit pas le crochet d'or. Il ne le voit pas. Le soldat voit le lit et le tapis. Il ne voit pas le beau lis. Le matelot voit le petit filet, il ne voit pas le fil. Le soldat voit le cidre et le sirop, il ne voit pas le petit rideau. Il voit le filet de ce chef. Il ne voit pas le gâteau de ce matelot, il voit le petit râteau de fer. Le pirate voit le cadeau de ce soldat. Je vois le gros lit et le beau tapis. Le pirate voit le porc, et le soldat mort. Il ne voit pas le matelot fort.

The sailor sees the small bucket. He sees the hook of iron and the hook of gold. He does not see the handsome lily. He does not see it. I see the thread and the net. I do not see the handsome curtain. The soldier sees the cider and the cake of that pirate. I see the syrup and the little cake. The soldier sees the ~~Captain~~ Captain of this king. He sees the handsome carpet, he does not see the bed. He does not see it. He sees the thread and the small net, he does not see the syrup. He sees the rake of wood and the rake of iron. I see the handsome curtain.

## 7.—SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

*The same Sounds continued.*

<sup>5 17 0 7 17 1 17 1 17 15 5 5 15 5 15 17 15 12 16 0 15 5</sup>  
*Jérôme, vaisseau, marteau, anneau, loquet, perroquet, roseau, joli, Georges, Joseph,*  
<sup>15 0 1 12 20 0 20 0 1 1 1 0</sup>  
*homme, habit, moine, voile, camarade.*

*Jerome. The ship.*  
*This hammer. This latch.*  
*The ring. That ring.*  
*That parrot. That reed.*  
*The vail. Pretty.*  
*George. Joseph.*  
*That man. The man.*  
*This coat. The coat.*  
*The comrade. The monk.*  
*Does he see? Does he not see?*

*Jérôme. Le vaisseau.*  
*Ce marteau. Cette gaffe.*  
*L'anneau. Cet anneau.*  
*Ce perroquet. Ce roseau.*  
*Le voile. Joli, (bef. n.)*  
*Georges. Joseph.*  
*Cet homme. L'homme.*  
*Cet habit. L'habit.*  
*Le camarade. Le moine.*  
*Voit-il? Ne voit-il pas?*

The subject pronoun after the verb is always joined to it by a hyphen.

Does he see the ship?

Voit-il le vaisseau?

Does he not see the hammer?

Ne voit-il pas le marteau?

Jérôme voit le loquet de fer. Voit-il le perroquet de Joseph? Il le voit. Ne voit-il pas le joli roseau? Il ne le voit pas. Voit-il le joli voile? Il ne le voit pas, il voit le tapis et le beau rideau. Voit-il le camarade de ce moine? Il le voit. Georges voit le vaisseau de Jérôme, voit-il le gros marteau? Il voit le marteau de fer et le loquet de bois. Voit-il l'anneau d'or? Il voit l'anneau d'or et le joli voile. Voit-il le perroquet de cet homme? Il voit le perroquet de George et le joli roseau. Joseph voit le camarade de ce moine, ne voit-il pas l'habit de cet homme? Il le voit.

Jerome sees the pretty reed, does he see the handsome lily? He sees the lily, he does not see the reed. Does he not see the bed of this monk? He does not see it. He sees the thread of George and the handsome net. Does he not see the comrade of Joseph? He does not see him, he sees the monk and that ugly man. Does he see the cider? He sees the cider and the syrup. George sees the present of Joseph, does he not see the handsome cake? He sees the handsome cake and the fresh milk. I see the small curtain, the rake of iron, and the pretty present of Jerome. I see the latch of iron, the pretty vail, and the coat of that man.

## 8.—HUITIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of OU and of OÙ.

OU as in you. OÙ as oo in mood.

<sup>18</sup> clou, <sup>18</sup> trou, <sup>18</sup> court, <sup>18</sup> boucher, <sup>18</sup> boulet, <sup>18</sup> hibou, <sup>18</sup> bijou, <sup>18</sup> couteau, <sup>18</sup> ou, <sup>18</sup> chou; <sup>18</sup> ours, <sup>18</sup> volée,  
<sup>1</sup> panorama, <sup>1</sup> poteau, <sup>1</sup> fromage, <sup>1</sup> plat, <sup>1</sup> noir.

The nail. The hole.

Short. This knife.

The butcher. The cannon ball.

The owl. This jewel.

Or. That cabbage.

The bear. The panorama.

This cheese. That post.

Black.

The knife or the dish.

That black bear. That black dish.

Le clou. Le trou.

Court. Ce couteau.

Le boucher. Le boulet.

Le hibou. Ce bijou.

Ou. Ce chou.

L'ours. Le panorama.

Ce fromage. Ce poteau.

Noir.

Le couteau ou le plat.

Cet ours noir. Ce plat noir.



Je vois le clou de fer. Le boucher voit le petit hibou. Ne voit-il pas le chou? Il ne le voit pas. Le rat voit le fromage, voit-il ce trou? Il le voit. Le boucher voit le boulet, ne voit-il pas le poteau court? Il voit le poteau court, et le mat court. Voit-il le clou ou le boulet? Il voit le clou. Le hibou voit le chat, ne voit-il pas le trou? Ne voit-il pas le couteau de ce boucher? Il ne le voit pas. Voit-il le chou ou le fromage? Il voit le chou, il ne voit pas le fromage. Georges voit le drap noir, ne voit-il pas le panorama? Il voit le panorama et le palais de ce chef.

Jerome sees the hammer, does he see the latch? He does not see it, he sees the ring of gold, and the post of iron. The parrot does not see the owl. The butcher sees the nail, does he see the cannon-ball? Does he see the black vail or the black coat? The comrade of Jerome sees the panorama, does he not see the black bear? He does not see him. Does he not see the knife of this man? He sees it. The owl sees the rat, does he not see this small hole? I see the dish, I do not see the post of iron. Joseph sees the big post, does he not see the pretty dish? He sees it. Does he see the nail or the latch? He sees the nail, he does not see the latch.

## 9.—NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of <sup>8</sup>AN and of <sup>14</sup>IN.

AN as *an* in *encore*. IN as *an* in *anchor*.

<sup>8</sup>*prends*, <sup>8</sup>*banc*, <sup>8</sup>*blanc*, <sup>8</sup>*champ*, <sup>8</sup>*Jean*, <sup>8</sup>*grand*, <sup>8</sup>*gant*; <sup>14</sup>*lin*, <sup>14</sup>*pin*, <sup>14</sup>*vin*, <sup>14</sup>*pain*, <sup>14</sup>*linge*, <sup>14</sup>*daim*,  
<sup>13 14</sup>*bien*, <sup>17</sup>*aussi*, <sup>12</sup>*qua*.

*White.* The bench.

The field. John.

*Large.* The glove.

The flax. The linen.

This pine. This wine.

That deer. Very.

What (what thing?) Also.

I take. He takes.

Does he take? What does he take?

I take the large pine.

He takes the white glove.

I take the flax and the linen also.

Very large. Very white.

*Blanc.* Le banc.

Le champ. Jean.

*Grand* (bef. n.) Le gant.

Le lin. Le linge.

Ce pin. Ce vin.

Ce daim. Bien.

*Que.* Aussi.

Je prends. Il prend.

Prend-il? Que prend-il?

Je prends le grand pin.

Il prend le gant blanc.

Je prends le lin et le linge aussi.

Bien grand. Bien blanc.

Jean voit le pré, voit-il le grand champ? Il le voit. Ne voit-il pas le couteau de ce boucher? Il ne le voit pas. Que prend-il? Il prend le boulet de fer et le gros chou. Prend-il le gant noir ou le blanc? Je prends le banc. Que prend Jean? Il prend le lin de cet homme. Prend-il le linge aussi? Je vois le gros daim blanc. Que prend le soldat? Il prend le pain et le vin. Prend-il le fromage aussi? Il prend le fromage et le lait aussi. Je prends le pain et le vin. Que prend le matelot? Il prend le gâteau de Jean. Je prends le banc court. Que voit ce hibou? Il voit le petit trou et le grand champ.

The soldier sees the white deer, does he see the large bench also? He sees it. Does he not see the large field? He does not see it. John takes the glove, does he take the flax also? He takes the flax and the linen also. I take the white bread, what does George take? He takes the cake and the wine. Does he not see the white deer? He does not see him. Does he see the large pine? He sees it, and he sees the small wood also. I take the black glove of John, what does he take? He takes the white bread and the fresh milk. I take the wine of John, does he take the bread or the cake? He takes the bread and the cake also.

## 10.—DIXIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of <sup>23</sup>U and of <sup>23</sup>û.

U as in *queen*.    û, the same sound prolonged  
<sup>22</sup>tu, <sup>22</sup>du, <sup>22</sup>dur, <sup>22</sup>Jules, <sup>22</sup>0 <sup>22</sup>5 <sup>22</sup>12 <sup>22</sup>13 <sup>22</sup>14 <sup>22</sup>15 <sup>22</sup>16 <sup>22</sup>17 <sup>22</sup>18 <sup>22</sup>19 <sup>22</sup>20 <sup>22</sup>21 <sup>22</sup>22 <sup>22</sup>23 <sup>22</sup>24 <sup>22</sup>25 <sup>22</sup>26 <sup>22</sup>27 <sup>22</sup>28 <sup>22</sup>29 <sup>22</sup>30 <sup>22</sup>31 <sup>22</sup>32 <sup>22</sup>33 <sup>22</sup>34 <sup>22</sup>35 <sup>22</sup>36 <sup>22</sup>37 <sup>22</sup>38 <sup>22</sup>39 <sup>22</sup>40 <sup>22</sup>41 <sup>22</sup>42 <sup>22</sup>43 <sup>22</sup>44 <sup>22</sup>45 <sup>22</sup>46 <sup>22</sup>47 <sup>22</sup>48 <sup>22</sup>49 <sup>22</sup>50 <sup>22</sup>51 <sup>22</sup>52 <sup>22</sup>53 <sup>22</sup>54 <sup>22</sup>55 <sup>22</sup>56 <sup>22</sup>57 <sup>22</sup>58 <sup>22</sup>59 <sup>22</sup>60 <sup>22</sup>61 <sup>22</sup>62 <sup>22</sup>63 <sup>22</sup>64 <sup>22</sup>65 <sup>22</sup>66 <sup>22</sup>67 <sup>22</sup>68 <sup>22</sup>69 <sup>22</sup>70 <sup>22</sup>71 <sup>22</sup>72 <sup>22</sup>73 <sup>22</sup>74 <sup>22</sup>75 <sup>22</sup>76 <sup>22</sup>77 <sup>22</sup>78 <sup>22</sup>79 <sup>22</sup>80 <sup>22</sup>81 <sup>22</sup>82 <sup>22</sup>83 <sup>22</sup>84 <sup>22</sup>85 <sup>22</sup>86 <sup>22</sup>87 <sup>22</sup>88 <sup>22</sup>89 <sup>22</sup>90 <sup>22</sup>91 <sup>22</sup>92 <sup>22</sup>93 <sup>22</sup>94 <sup>22</sup>95 <sup>22</sup>96 <sup>22</sup>97 <sup>22</sup>98 <sup>22</sup>99 <sup>22</sup>100  
*tu, du, dur, Jules, mulot, rubis, fruit, Julien: mûr, juge: boulanger, peintre, mouchoir, quel.*

*Thou. Of the.*

*The handkerchief. What (adj.).*

*Julius. Hard.*

*The mule. The ruby.*

*Julian. The fruit.*

*The judge. Ripe.*

*The baker. The painter.*

*Thou seest. Thou takest.*

*Thou dost not see.*

*Thou dost not take.*

*Dost thou see? Dost thou take?*

*What ruby dost thou see?*

*I see the ruby of the painter.*

*Of the judge. Of the baker.*

*Th. Du.*

*Le mouchoir. Quel.*

*Jules. Dur.*

*Le mulot. Le rubis.*

*Julien. Le fruit.*

*Le juge. Mûr.*

*Le boulanger. Le peintre.*

*Tu vois. Tu prends.*

*Tu ne vois pas.*

*Tu ne prends pas.*

*Vois-tu? Prends-tu?*

*Quel rubis vois-tu?*

*Je vois le rubis du peintre.*

*Du juge. Du boulanger.*

Que vois-tu? Je vois le mouchoir du boulanger. Que prends-tu? Je prends le fruit. Quel fruit prends-tu? Je prends le fruit dur. Prends-tu le fruit mûr? Je ne le prends pas, Jules le prend. Que vois-tu? Je vois le mulet. Quel mulet vois-tu? Je vois le mulet du peintre. Que prend le boulanger? Il prend le mouchoir. Quel mouchoir prend-il? Il prend le mouchoir de Julien. Vois-tu le mulet de Jules? Je le vois. Prends-tu le fruit dur? Je ne le prends pas, je prends le fruit bien mûr. Vois-tu le camarade de Julien? Je ne le vois pas. Que prends-tu? Je prends le rubis du juge et le fruit dur.

Julius sees the mule of the baker, what dost thou see? I see the ruby of Julian. Dost thou see the coat of the judge? I do not see it. What fruit dost thou take? I take the ripe fruit. Dost thou take the glove or the stocking? I take the glove and the stocking also. What ruby dost thou take? I take the ruby of the painter. Thou takest the hard fruit, dost thou take the cheese also? I do not take it. Julius takes the bowl of Julian. What bread dost thou take? I take the bread of the baker. What dost thou take? I take the ring of the painter, and the wine of the judge. I see the ripe fruit. Dost thou see the field or the meadow? I see the field and the meadow also.

# 11.—ONZIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of EU, of EU (before r), of EÜ.

EU as u in us.    EUR as tr in sir.    EÜ as eugh in eugh.

<sup>9</sup> feu, <sup>9</sup> jeu, <sup>12</sup> lieu, <sup>9</sup> bauf, <sup>9</sup> meunier, <sup>9</sup> nœud : <sup>11</sup> beurre, <sup>11</sup> cœur, <sup>11</sup> leur, <sup>1</sup> nageur, <sup>10</sup> deux, <sup>10</sup> peu, <sup>10</sup> fêd :  
<sup>4</sup> chemin, <sup>14</sup> étroit : <sup>20</sup> sur, <sup>22</sup> mur, <sup>17</sup> beaucoup, <sup>18</sup> large.

The fire. The play, game.

That place. That miller.

The knot. The ox, or beef.

The heart. Their butter.

The swimmer. Little (not much).

Wide. The wall.

On. Much, many.

The path. Narrow.

Le feu. Le jeu.

Ce lieu. Ce meunier.

Le nœud. Le bauf.

Le cœur. Leur beurre.

Le nageur. Peu de.

Large. Le mur.

Sur. Beaucoup de.

Le chemin. Étroit.

*Peu and beaucoup take de before the following nouns.*

Much beef. Little butter.

The wide path. The narrow path.

Beaucoup de bœuf. Peu de beurre.

Le chemin large. Le chemin étroit.

Je vois ce jeu, le vois-tu? Je ne le vois pas. Le meunier voit le mur; ne voit-il pas le chemin? Il ne le voit pas. Ne voit-il pas le feu? Il le voit. Le nageur ne voit pas ce beau lieu; voit-il le chemin étroit? Il le voit et il voit le feu aussi. Prends-tu ce petit nœud? Je ne le prends pas. Ne prends-tu pas le cœur du bœuf. Je prends le cœur du bœuf et le pain du nageur. Ne prends-tu pas beaucoup de beurre? Je prends beaucoup de beurre et peu de bœuf? Que voit ce chat? Il voit le perroquet sur le mur. Que voit le meunier? Il voit le beau jeu. Quel mur voit-il? Il voit le gros mur. Ne prend-il pas le cœur du bœuf? Il ne le prend pas.

What dost thou see? I see the parrot. What parrot dost thou see? I see the pretty parrot on the wall. Dost thou see the wide road or the narrow? I see the wide and the narrow also. Dost thou see this beautiful place? I see it. What does the miller take? He takes the coat of the swimmer. Does he not take the little knot? He does not take it. Does he not take much butter? He takes little butter and little beef. Dost thou not see the cat on that wall? I see him, and I see the parrot on the big rock. Dost thou take the big knot or the little? I take the little (one). Dost thou not take the handkerchief of the swimmer? I do not take it. Dost thou see the large fire? I do not see it. The miller sees this beautiful place, does he not see the game? He does not see it.

## 12.—DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

### Sound of UN.

UN sounded *un* (g silent), or very nearly as *un* in *sun*.

un, brun, chacun, parfum, jeun, humble: veuz, veut, cuir, mauvais, diamant, éléphant, papier, manteau, bleu, renard, lapin.

A, one. Brown.

The perfume. Each one.

Bad. The leather.

A diamond. An elephant.

A cloak. This paper.

A fox. A rabbit.

Blue. A blue cloak.

Un. Brun.

Le parfum. Chacun.

Mauvais (before n.). Le cuir.

Un diamant. Un éléphant.

Un manteau. Ce papier.

Un renard. Un lapin.

Bleu. Un manteau bleu.

I wish for, thou wishest for, he wishes for. Je veux, tu veux, il veut.

Dost thou wish for? does he wish for? Veux-tu? veut-il?

*Veux-tu? veut-il?*

I do not wish for, thou dost not wish for, he does not wish for.	Je ne veux pas, tu ne veux pas, il ne veut pas.
Dost thou not wish for? does he not wish for?	Ne veux-tu pas? ne veut-il pas?
I wish for it, thou wishest for it, he wishes for it.	Je le veux, tu le veux, il le veut.
I do not wish for it, thou dost not wish for it, he does not wish for it.	Je ne le veux pas, tu ne le veux pas, il ne le veut pas.
What dost thou wish for?	Que veux-tu?
I wish for the brown paper.	Je veux le papier brun.
George does not wish for the rabbit.	Georges ne veut pas le lapin.
He does not wish for it; I wish for it.	Il ne le veut pas; je le veux.

Je veux le parfum. Que veux-tu? Je veux le cuir. Chacun veut un couteau. Georges veut le diamant, veut-il aussi ce mauvais cuir? Il ne le veut pas. Ne veux-tu pas le renard? Je ne le veux pas, je veux l'éléphant. Tu veux le manteau brun, ne veux-tu pas le bleu aussi? Je le veux. Charles veut le parfum, ne veut-il pas le diamant aussi? Il le veut. Chacun veut un plat et un gâteau. Veux-tu ce mauvais papier? Je ne le veux pas. Que veut le meunier? Il veut l'éléphant. Veut-il le renard? Il ne le veut pas. Ne veut-il pas le lapin? Il le veut.

Dost thou wish for the brown cloak or the blue? I wish for the brown and the blue also. Dost thou not wish for this perfume? I wish for it. Each one wishes for a rabbit. Each one wishes for a stag and a fox. Charles wishes for the bad leather. He wishes for it. I do not wish for it. Does he not wish for the diamond? He does not wish for it. I wish for it. I do not wish for the elephant, dost thou not wish for him? Thou dost not wish for him. I wish for him. Charles wishes for the paper, does he wish for the leather also? He wishes for the paper, and the bad perfume. What does the soldier wish for? He wishes for the elephant. Dost thou wish for this cloak? I wish for it.

### 13.—TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of <sup>21</sup>ON.

ON sounded as on in wrong.

<sup>21</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>21</sup>  
*mon, ion, on, don, gond, canon, lion, maçon, garçon, voyons, prenons, voulons, long,*  
<sup>18</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>0</sup>  
*nous, notre.*

*My. Thy.*

*His, her, its. Our.*

*Mon. Ton.*

*Son. " Notre. "*

<i>My hinge. Thy cannon.</i>	<i>Mon gond. Ton canon.</i>
<i>His lion. Our mason.</i>	<i>Son lion. Notre maçon.</i>
<i>A boy. We.</i>	<i>Un garçon. Nous.</i>
<i>Good. Long.</i>	<i>Bon. Long.</i>
<i>We see. We take.</i>	<i>Nous voyons. Nous prenons.</i>
<i>We wish for the good bread.</i>	<i>Nous voulons le bon pain.</i>
<i>Do we take? Do we wish for?</i>	<i>Prenons-nous? Voulons-nous?</i>
<i>Do we see the long cannon?</i>	<i>Voyons-nous le long canon?</i>
<i>Do we take the hinge?</i>	<i>Prenons-nous le gond?</i>
<i>We take it. We do not take it.</i>	<i>Nous le prenons. Nous ne le prenons pas.</i>
<i>We see it. We do not see it.</i>	<i>Nous le voyons. Nous ne le voyons pas.</i>
<i>We wish for it. We do not wish for it.</i>	<i>Nous le voulons. Nous ne le voulons pas.</i>
<i>Do we not see the good mason?</i>	<i>Ne voyons-nous pas le bon maçon?</i>
<i>Do we not take the hinge of iron?</i>	<i>Ne prenons-nous pas le gond de fer?</i>
<i>Do we not wish for our stick?</i>	<i>Ne voulons-nous pas notre bâton?</i>

Que voyons-nous? Nous voyons mon champ et ton pré. Ne voyons-nous pas le fer du maçon? Nous le voyons. Voyons-nous son bois? Nous ne le voyons pas. Que prenons-nous? Nous prenons notre gond de fer. Prenons-nous le canon du chef? Nous ne le prenons pas. Ne prenons nous pas son lion? Nous le prenons. Quel bâton voulons-nous? Nous voulons mon bâton. Voulons-nous le long canon? Nous ne le voulons pas. Ne voulons-nous pas le bon fromage? Nous le voulons. Nous voulons le marteau du maçon, nous ne voulons pas son lion. Nous voulons le long tapis et le bon lit.

What do we see? We see my ox and thy mule. Do we see our good mason? We see him. Do we not see his long cannon? We do not see it. Do we take the good hinge? We take it. Do we not take the good cloak? We do not take it. Do we wish for the diamond? We wish for it. Do we not wish for the fox? We do not wish for him. What do we wish for? We wish for our stick. Dost thou see the palace of the king? I see it. What does the monk see? He sees the palace of the pope. Dost thou take the padlock or the hinge? I take the padlock. What does the soldier take? He takes the fruit of the baker. We take our fruit. What paper do we wish for? I wish for the white paper, and thou wishest for the blue. Each one wishes for a knife and a cake.

## 14.—QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of RÊ final.

RE final sounded as ru in *brush* (half audible).

1 4 1 4 1 4 7 4 1 4 23 4 3 4 5 4 13 4 12 7 4 12 21  
*arbre, marbre, sabre, cède, cadre, sucre, plâtre, théâtre, lièvre, lièvre, qui, plomb,*  
 21 21 4 12 21 23 17  
*concombre, pigeon, gruu.*

The tree. This tree.

The marble. The sword, saber.

The cedar. The sugar.

This plaster. A frame.

A theater. A book.

The hare. A cucumber.

The lead. A pigeon.

The gruel. Who.

Who wishes for this book?

The mason wishes for it.

Dost thou wish for it?

Dost thou not wish for it?

Dost thou see it?

Dost thou not see it?

Dost thou take it?

Dost thou not take it?

L'arbre. Cet arbre.

Le marbre. Le sabre.

Le cède. Le sucre.

Ce plâtre. Un cadre.

Un théâtre. Un livre.

Le lièvre. Un concombre.

Le plomb. Un pigeon.

Le gruu. Qui.

Qui veut ce livre?

Le maçon le veut.

Le veux-tu?

Ne le veux-tu pas?

Le vois-tu?

Ne le vois-tu pas?

Le prends-tu?

Ne le prends-tu pas?

Qui veut le sucre blanc? Je le veux. Que vois-tu? Je vois le grand arbre. Que voit le maçon? Il voit le beau marbre. Que voyons-nous? Nous voyons le plâtre blanc. Vois-tu le sabre? Je le vois. Le veux-tu? Je le veux. Ne le prends-tu pas? Je ne le prends pas. Nous voulons le cède du maçon, ne le veux-tu pas? Je veux le cède et le marbre. Nous ne prenons pas le beau cadre, le prends-tu? Je prends le beau cadre et le long sabre. Nous voyons le grand théâtre; ne le vois-tu pas? Je vois le grand théâtre et le grand arbre. Qui prend le sucre? Je prends le sucre et le gruu. Qui voit mon livre, le vois-tu? Veux-tu le lièvre? Je veux le lièvre et le pigeon.

What dost thou see? I see the cucumber and the lead. We see the pigeon; dost thou see him? I see the pigeon and the hare. Who takes the gruel; dost thou take it? I take the gruel and the sugar. We see the white plaster; dost thou not see it? I see the plaster and the lead. I take the cucumber; dost thou wish for it? I wish for the cucumber and the gruel. We do not take the book; dost thou not take it? I take the book and the frame. What dost thou

see? I see the white marble, the long sword, and the cedar of the mason. We wish for the lead; dost thou not wish for it? I wish for the lead, the marble, and the plaster. Dost thou see the handsome theater? I see the handsome theater and the large tree. We wish for the hare and the pigeon.

## 15.—QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of EZ final.

EZ final sounded as *é*, or *a* in *fate*.

<sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup>  
*nez, assez, voyez, prenez, voulez, rez, avec, savez, riez: vous, votre, père, frère, chanvre,*  
<sup>21</sup> <sup>16</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>18</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>3</sup>  
*rond, taureau, bouton, ruban.*

The nose. Sufficiently, enough.

You. You see.

You take. You wish for.

Your. Round.

Your father. Your brother.

The hemp. The bull.

My button. Your ribbon.

Sufficiently long. Sufficiently short.

Do you see? Do you take?

Do you wish for? Do you not see?

Do you not take? Do you not wish for?

Does he see it? Does he not see it?

Does he take it? Does he not take it?

Does he wish for it? Does he not wish for it?

Le nez. Assez.

Vous. Vous voyez.

Vous prenez. Vous voulez.

Votre. Rond.

Votre père. Votre frère.

Le chanvre. Le taureau.

Mon bouton. Votre ruban.

Assez long. Assez court.

Voyez-vous? Prenez-vous?

Voulez-vous? Ne voyez-vous pas?

Ne prenez-vous pas? Ne voulez-vous pas?

Le voit-il? Ne le voit-il pas?

Le prend-il? Ne le prend-il pas?

Le veut-il? Ne le veut-il pas?

Voulez-vous le bouton rond? Je le veux. Ne voulez-vous pas le chanvre? Je ne le veux pas. Voyez-vous le taureau de mon père? Je vois le taureau de votre père et le bœuf de votre frère. Que prenez-vous? Je prends le ruban. Quel ruban prenez-vous? Je prends le long ruban. Je veux le ruban long. Que voyez-vous? Nous voyons le chanvre de votre frère; le veut-il? Il ne le veut pas. Ne le prend-il pas? Il ne le prend pas. Le voit-il? Il le voit. Prenez-vous le bouton rond? Je le prends. Vous voyez le sabre de votre frère. Vous prenez le sucre blanc. Vous voulez le cèdre du maçon; le veut-il aussi? Il ne le veut pas. Votre frère veut son livre; ne le prend-il pas? Il ne le prend pas.

Do you wish for this little cucumber? We do not wish for it.



Do you see the handsome frame? I see it. What do you take? I take the round button and the long ribbon. I take it sufficiently long. Who wishes for the hemp? My father wishes for it. Does he take it? He takes the hemp and the flax. Who wishes for the round cake? My brother wishes for it. Does he not see it? He does not see it. What does your father wish for? He wishes for his bull. Does he see him? He sees him. Does he not take him? He takes his bull and his ox. Do you see the field of your father? I see it. What do you take? I take the book of my brother. Do you wish for the long ribbon? Yes, I wish for it. Do you wish for the sugar or the milk? We wish for the sugar and the milk also.

## 16.—SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

## Sound of Ê.

Ê sounded as e in *where*.

<sup>8 0</sup> <sup>8 0</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8 0</sup> <sup>8 0</sup> <sup>8 8</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>8 4</sup> <sup>8 4</sup> <sup>4 20</sup> <sup>22 12 4</sup>  
*chêne, même, tas, tas, tas, bêche, flûte, pêcheur, pêcheur, hêtre, maître: melon, couteau,*  
<sup>1</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>12 8</sup> <sup>12 8</sup> <sup>22 12 16</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>1 12 8</sup> <sup>12 20</sup> <sup>0</sup>  
*! jardin, ami, encrier, uniforme, aul, acier, ivoire.*

The oak.	The same.	Le chêne.	Le même.
A peach-tree.	A fisherman.	Un pêcheur.	Un pêcheur.
The master.	The beech.	Le maître.	Le hêtre.
The melon.	The copper.	Le melon.	Le cuivre.
A garden.	The friend.	Un jardin.	L'ami.
That inkstand.	The uniform.	Cet encrier.	L'uniforme.
This egg.	The steel.	Cet aul.	L'acier.
The ivory.	This ivory.	L'ivoire.	Cet ivoire.
Do you see it?	Do you not see it?	Le voyez-vous?	Ne le voyez-vous pas?
Do you take it?	Do you not take it?	Le prenez-vous?	Ne le prenez-vous pas?
Do you wish for it?	Do you not wish for it?	Le voulez-vous?	Ne le voulez-vous pas?

A noun placed as an adjective before another noun, in English, is translated into French by placing it after the noun to which it belongs, with *de* between them; as,

The oak wood.	The copper nail.	Le bois de chêne.	Le clou de cuivre.
The ivory inkstand.	The steel knife.	L'encrier d'ivoire.	Le couteau d'acier.
The oak bench.	The steel sword.	Le banc de chêne.	Le sabre d'acier.

Quel arbre voyez-vous? Je vois le pêcheur. Voyez-vous le même arbre? Je vois le pêcheur et le chêne. Que prend le pêcheur? Il prend son bateau. Qui veut l'encrier de cuivre? Le maître le veut. Voulez-vous le même encrier? Je ne veux pas le même. Je vois le

petit hêtre, ne le voyez-vous pas ? Je vois le hêtre et le chêne. Votre ami veut ce melon, le voulez-vous aussi ? Je ne veux pas le même melon. Vous voyez le petit œuf, ne le prenez-vous pas ? Je ne le prends pas ; le soldat prend le petit œuf et son uniforme. Que voyez-vous ? Je vois le beau jardin de votre ami. Qui voit le bateau du pêcheur ? Notre ami le voit. Je vois le jardin de notre maître ; que voyez-vous ? Je vois l'uniforme du soldat et l'encrier d'ivoire de votre ami.

I take the big melon ; do you wish for it ? I do not wish for the melon, I wish for the egg. Do you see the peach-tree ? I see it ; do you not see it ? I see the peach-tree, and the large garden of our master. Do you see the boat of the fisherman ? I see the boat of the fisherman, and the ship of the king. I take the copper hammer ; do you wish for it ? I wish for the copper hammer and the steel knife. We see the broom ; do you not see it ? I see the broom and the oak. You wish for the ivory inkstand ; do you not take it ? We take the ivory inkstand and the steel knife. The soldier wishes for his uniform ; do you see it ? I take the small egg ; do you not wish for it ? I wish for the egg and the melon. The soldier wishes for this uniform ; do you wish for the same ? I do not wish for it. Do you see this handsome garden ? I see the handsome garden, and the green meadow. Who wishes for the ivory knife ? Our master wishes for it.

## 17.—DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of *LÉ* final and *CH*.

*LÉ* final as *tu* in *diunt* (half audible). *CH* as *sh* in *shad*.

<sup>2</sup> *câble*, <sup>4</sup> *sable*, <sup>1</sup> *buffle*, <sup>22</sup> *spectacle*, <sup>4</sup> *agréable*, <sup>5</sup> *double* : <sup>1</sup> *chien*, <sup>4</sup> *cheval*, <sup>13</sup> *charbon*, <sup>1</sup> *marchand*,  
<sup>6</sup> *méchant*, <sup>8</sup> *chameau*, <sup>1</sup> *chapeau*, <sup>17</sup> *chanteur*, <sup>2</sup> *chardon*.

A *cable*. The sand.

A *buffalo*. A *spectacle*.

*Agreeable*. *Double*.

A *dog*. A *horse*.

The coal. A *trader*.

*Wicked*. The camel.

A *hat*. A *singer*.

A *thistle*. Enough sand.

Un *câble*. Le *sable*.

Un *buffle*. Un *spectacle*.

*Agreeable*. *Double*.

Un *chien*. Un *cheval*.

Le *charbon*. Un *marchand*.

*Méchant*. Le *chameau*.

Un *chapeau*. Un *chanteur*.

Un *chardon*. *Assez* de *sable*.

*Assez*, like *beaucoup* and *peu*, takes *de* before the following noun.

This agreeable perfume.  
The double knot.  
The wicked man.

Ce parfum agréable.  
Le nœud double.  
Le méchant homme.

Prenez-vous le gros câble? Nous ne le prenons pas. Voyez-vous le câble de ce bateau? Nous ne le voyons pas. Que voyons-nous? Vous voyez le buffle et le chameau. Je vois un spectacle bien agréable, le voyez-vous? Nous le voyons. Que voit le petit chien? Il voit le méchant cheval et le gros chameau. Prenez-vous le chardon? Nous ne le prenons pas. Nous voyons le chapeau du marchand; le veut-il? Il ne le veut pas. Le chanteur veut son livre; ne le prend-il pas? Il prend son livre et son chapeau. Voyez-vous le cheval noir? Je vois le cheval noir et le chien noir aussi. Ne voyez-vous pas le grand buffle? Je ne le vois pas, je vois le gros taureau. Je prends assez de charbon et assez de sable.

Do you see this beautiful spectacle? I see it, and I see the large garden of the trader. What do you take? I take the thistle and the double knot. I take this agreeable perfume; do you wish for it? I wish for this agreeable perfume and the book of the singer. What does the singer wish for? He wishes for his hat and his dog. Who wishes for the long cable? The sailor wishes for the long cable and the boat of the trader. Do you see the big buffalo? I see the big buffalo and the wicked horse. Do you wish for much sand? I wish for little sand, and much charcoal. Do you take sufficient charcoal? I take sufficient charcoal, and the singer takes sufficient wood. What spectacle do you see? I see the great spectacle. What knot do you take? I take the double knot. I see the mule of the trader and the big thistle. We see the wicked dog; do you see him? I see the good camel, the white hat, and the big thistle.

## 18.—DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of <sup>0</sup>ENT, and of <sup>8</sup>ENT final.

ENT final, in the third person plural of verbs, *silent*. ENT final otherwise as *en*.

<sup>20</sup> 0 <sup>8</sup> 0 <sup>4</sup> 0 <sup>1</sup> 2 <sup>15</sup> 2 <sup>15</sup> 2 <sup>12</sup> 1 <sup>2</sup> 18 12 13 21  
*voient, prennent, veulent: argent, froment, comment: ils, charmant, oui, si, non,*  
<sup>15 0 12 2 0 1 1 0 1 0 21 5 0</sup>  
*monsieur, madame, mademoiselle.*

The silver, money. The wheat.  
Charming. They.

L'argent. Le froment.  
Charmant. Ils.

<i>Yes, sir. No, madam.</i>	<i>Oui, monsieur. Non, madame.</i>
<i>Yes, miss. No, miss.</i>	<i>Si,* mademoiselle. Non, mademoiselle.</i>
<i>They see. They take.</i>	<i>Ils voient. Ils prennent.</i>
<i>They wish for. They do not see.</i>	<i>Ils veulent. Ils ne voient pas.</i>
<i>They do not take. They do not wish for.</i>	<i>Ils ne prennent pas. Ils ne veulent pas.</i>
<i>They see it. They take it.</i>	<i>Ils le voient. Ils le prennent.</i>
<i>They wish for it. They do not see it.</i>	<i>Ils le veulent. Ils ne le voient pas.</i>
<i>They do not take it. They do not wish for it.</i>	<i>Ils ne le prennent pas. Ils ne le veulent pas.</i>
<i>Do they see? Do they take?</i>	<i>Voient-ils? Prennent-ils?</i>
<i>Do they wish for? Do they not see?</i>	<i>Veulent-ils? Ne voient-ils pas?</i>
<i>Do they not take? Do they not wish for?</i>	<i>Ne prennent-ils pas? Ne veulent-ils pas?</i>
<i>Do they see it? Do they take it?</i>	<i>Le voient-ils? Le prennent-ils?</i>
<i>Do they wish for it? Do they not see it?</i>	<i>Le veulent-ils? Ne le voient-ils pas?</i>
<i>Do they not take it? Do they not wish for it?</i>	<i>Ne le prennent-ils pas? Ne le veulent-ils pas?</i>

Mon père et mon frère veulent le bon cheval ; veulent-ils le chameau aussi ? Ils ne le veulent pas. Veulent-ils le froment ? Non, monsieur, ils ne le veulent pas. Ne veulent-ils pas l'argent ? Si, monsieur, ils veulent l'argent et l'or. Voient-ils ce charmant petit jardin ? Non, madame, ils ne le voient pas. Voient-ils le gros éléphant ? Oui, madame, ils le voient. Prennent-ils l'argent du marchand ? Non, mademoiselle, ils ne le prennent pas. Prennent-ils son froment ? Oui, mademoiselle, ils prennent son froment et son beurre. Qui voit ce lieu charmant ? Le chanteur et le soldat le voient. Voyez-vous ce charmant spectacle ? Oui, monsieur, je le vois. Le soldat et le matelot veulent le bon melon ; ne le prennent-ils pas ? Non, monsieur, ils prennent le beurre et le fromage.

Do you wish for much silver ? Yes, madam, I wish for much silver and much gold. Who wishes for the wheat of the trader ? My father and my brother wish for it. Do they wish for this charming garden ? Yes, madam, they wish for it. Do they take the white sugar ? Yes, miss, they take it. What do the judge and the master see ? They see the palace of the pope. Do they see the green meadow ? Yes, miss, and they see the ship of the trader.

\* French people most generally use *si* instead of *oui*, in answering interrogative sentences constructed with a negation.

Dost thou see the glass inkstand? Yes, sir, I see the glass inkstand and the white paper. What does the master take? He takes his hat and his handkerchief. Do you wish for the ivory knife? No, sir, I do not wish for it. What do the mason and his boy wish for? They wish for much copper and much iron. Do you take sufficient milk? Yes, madam, I take sufficient milk and sufficient sugar.

## 19.—DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of Y between vowels.

Y between two vowels, and sometimes between a vowel and a consonant, as <sup>12 13</sup> *été*.  
<sup>5 12 21</sup> <sup>20 12 14</sup> <sup>5 12 14</sup> <sup>5 12 1</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>Y</sup> <sup>Y</sup> <sup>Y</sup> <sup>Y</sup> <sup>Y</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>11</sup>  
*crayon, doyen, paysan, paysage: les, moi, les, ses, ces, nos, vos, leur, leurs.*

My pencil. This dean. Mon crayon. Ce doyen.  
 The countryman. The landscape. Le paysan. Le paysage.

The plural of French nouns and adjectives is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular.

The great man. The great men. Le grand homme. Les grands hommes.  
 The small pencil. The small pencils. Le petit crayon. Les petits crayons.

The article and adjectives in French agree with their nouns in number. The following are the plural of the article and pronominal adjectives thus far given.

<i>My. Thy. His, her, its.</i>	<i>Mes. Tes. Ses (plural).</i>
<i>Our. Your. These, those.</i>	<i>Nos. Vos. Ces.</i>
<i>The. Their.</i>	<i>Les. Leur (sing.). Leurs (plural).</i>
<i>Of the. Of the deans. Of the men.</i>	<i>Des (plur.). Des doyens. Des hommes.</i>
<i>The dean. The deans.</i>	<i>Le doyen. Les doyens.</i>
<i>This countryman. These countrymen.</i>	<i>Ce paysan. Ces paysans.</i>
<i>That landscape. Those landscapes.</i>	<i>Ce paysage. Ces paysages.</i>
<i>My dog. My dogs.</i>	<i>Mon chien. Mes chiens.</i>
<i>Thy melon. Thy melons.</i>	<i>Ton melon. Tes melons.</i>
<i>His inkstand. His inkstands.</i>	<i>Son encrier. Ses encrriers.</i>
<i>Our book. Our books.</i>	<i>Notre livre. Nos livres.</i>
<i>Your long pencil. Your long pencils.</i>	<i>Votre long crayon. Vos longs crayons.</i>
<i>Their round button. Their round buttons.</i>	<i>Leur bouton rond. Leurs boutons ronds.</i>

Voyez-vous ce charmant paysage? Oui, monsieur, je le vois. Que prennent les doyens? Ils prennent leurs bons crayons. Veulent-ils nos livres? Non, madame, ils veulent les livres de vos frères. Que veulent les paysans? Ils veulent les petits sacs de ces garçons. Que voient ces matelots? Ils voient les soldats. Voient-ils les prés verts? Oui, mademoiselle, ils les voient. Que voulez-vous? Je veux mes encrriers de verre. Ne veux-tu pas tes des d'argent? Non, monsieur, je veux mes bons canapés. Que prend le

doyen? Il prend ses papiers et ses crayons. Voyez-vous mes gants? Oui, madame, je vois vos gants et vos mouchoirs blancs. Que veut ce garçon? Il veut nos balais et nos bancs. Que prennent ces paysans? Il prennent leur beurre et leurs melons. Voyez-vous ce beau paysage? Oui, mademoiselle, et je vois le beau jardin aussi.

Do you wish for your books? I wish for my books and my papers. What do those men wish for? They wish for their mules and their oxen. Do they take their cheese? Yes, sir, they take it. What dost thou see? I see a palace. What palace dost thou see? I see the large palace of the king. Charles takes the big cake; does he wish for it? He wishes for it. What does the sailor see? He sees the large masts of his ship. Do you see my brothers? I see your brothers and your father. Do you wish for this melon? No, sir, I do not wish for it. We see the horse of those countrymen; do they wish for him? They wish for their horse and their oxen. Do you wish for the white handkerchiefs or the black? We wish for the white handkerchiefs and the black. Do you take the fruit of the countryman? We do not take it. What do those soldiers wish for? They wish for much silver and much gold. Do you wish for their cheese? I wish for their cheese and their butter. We take our books, our pencils, and our paper.

## 20.—VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of S and of SS.

S between two vowels sounded as z. SS sounded as ss in *mise*.

<sup>20 21</sup> poison, <sup>20 21</sup> cousin, <sup>20 21</sup> bison, <sup>20 21</sup> voisin: <sup>20 21</sup> poisson, <sup>20 21</sup> coussin, <sup>20 21</sup> bisac, <sup>20 21</sup> avon, <sup>20 21</sup> ai, <sup>20 21</sup> é, <sup>20 21</sup> plait, <sup>20 21</sup> remercie.

The poison. The fish.

Le poison. Le poisson.

The cousin. The cushion.

Le cousin. Le coussin.

Your bison.

Votre bison.

The neighbor. If.

Le voisin. Si.

Please. Thank.

Plait. Remercie.

If you please (if it please you).

S'il vous plait.

I thank you (I you thank).

Je vous remercie.

I have. You have. Have I? Have you?

J'ai. Vous avez. Ai-je? Avez-vous?

I have not. You have not.

Je n'ai pas. Vous n'avez pas.

I have it. You have it.

Je l'ai. Vous l'avez.

I have it not. You have it not.

Je ne l'ai pas. Vous ne l'avez pas.

Have I not? Have you not?	N'ai-je pas? N'avez-vous pas.
Have I it? Have you it?	L'ai-je? L'avez-vous?
Have I it not? Have you it not?	Ne l'ai-je pas? Ne l'avez-vous pas?
<i>Je, ne, le, si, que, become j', n', t', s', qu', before a vowel or a silent h.</i>	
Have you the fish? I have it.	Avez-vous le poisson? Je l'ai.
Have you not the poison? I have not.	N'avez-vous pas le poison? Je ne l'ai pas.
Have I your cushion? You have it.	Ai-je votre coussin? Vous l'avez.
Have I not your bison? You have it not.	N'ai-je pas votre bison? Vous ne l'avez pas.
What have you? I have the fish.	Qu'avez-vous? J'ai le poisson.

Avez-vous le bison? Non, monsieur, je ne l'ai pas. N'avez-vous pas mon coussin? Je l'ai. N'ai-je pas votre poisson? Si, monsieur, vous l'avez. N'ai-je pas le poison? Vous ne l'avez pas. Que prend votre cousin? Il prend mon encier d'ivoire. Que voit notre voisin? Il voit le bison noir de mon cousin. Voulez-vous le thé? Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît. Quel thé voulez-vous? Je veux le bon. Voulez-vous ce fruit? Non, monsieur, je vous remercie. Que veulent ces hommes? Ils veulent beaucoup de fruits. Que voient nos voisins? Ils voient les bisons de ces paysans. Prennent-ils le poison? Ils ne le prennent pas. Voulez-vous mes livres? Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît. Voulez-vous vos gants? Non, madame, je vous remercie. Qui prend le gros poisson? Nos cousins le prennent. Ils veulent leurs poissons et leurs fruits.

Have you my fish? No, sir, I have your fruit. Have you the cushions of my cousin? Yes, madam, I have his cushions and his benches. Have you not the books of our neighbors? I have their books and their sacks. Do you not take the fish? I do not take the fish, I take the sugar and the milk. What bisons do you see? I see the bisons of your cousin, and the oxen of the neighbor. Do you wish for this round cake? No, madam, I thank you. Do you wish for the milk and the sugar? Yes, miss, if you please. Have you not my papers? I have not thy papers. Have you the gloves of my brother? I have his gloves and his handkerchief. Have I not your pencils? You have our pencils and our inkstand. Have you the fish of those men? I have their fish and their fruit. I have the beautiful lily; do you wish for it? Yes, sir, if you please. Who takes the white hat? Your cousin takes it.

## 21.—VINGT ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of GN.

GN, commonly as *gni* in *bagno*; rarely as *gn* in *stagnate*.

<sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>0</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>12</sup>  
*cigne, vignoble, compagnon, peigne, ignorant: magnifique, as, avons, canif.*

A swan. A vineyard.

Your companion. A comb.

Ignorant. Magnificent.

Thou hast. Hast thou?

Thou hast not. Hast thou not?

We have. Have we?

We have not. Have we not?

Hast thou it? I have it.

Have you it not? We have it not.

Un cigne. Un vignoble.

Votre camarade or ami. Un peigne.

Ignorant. Magnifique.

Tu as. As-tu?

Tu n'as pas. N'as-tu pas?

Nous avons. Avons-nous?

Nous n'avons pas. N'avons-nous pas?

L'as-tu? Je l'ai.

Ne l'avez-vous pas? Nous ne l'avons pas.

Un canif. Les (before the verb).

Les as-tu? Nous les avons.

Nous ne les avons pas, tu les as.

Qui? Que.

A penknife. Them.

Hast thou them? We have them.

We have them not; thou hast them.

Who? Whom, that, which.

Whom interrogative is *qui*, not interrogative is *qua*.

Whom do you see?

Qui voyez-vous?

I see the man whom you see.

Je vois l'homme que vous voyez.

As-tu ton canif? Je ne l'ai pas, ne l'as-tu pas? J'ai ton canif et ton peigne. Avons-nous le peigne de notre camarade (or ami)? Nous l'avons. Avons-nous les cignes du voisin? Nous les avons. Avez-vous nos poissons? Nous les avons. N'avons-nous pas vos cignes? Vous ne les avez pas. N'as-tu pas mon canif? Je ne l'ai pas. N'avons-nous pas les coussins de notre ami? Nous ne les avons pas. As-tu le fruit de ce petit ignorant? Je ne l'ai pas. Vois-tu le cigne magnifique de notre voisin? Je le vois. N'avons-nous pas le peigne de cet homme ignorant? Nous ne l'avons pas. Voyez-vous ces vignobles magnifiques? Nous les voyons. Que voyez-vous? Nous voyons les vignobles du voisin. Qui voulez-vous? Je veux le garçon que vous voyez. Que voit ce garçon ignorant? Il voit notre camarade. Nous voyons le soldat que vous voyez.

Have you those magnificent swans? We have them not. Hast thou the hat of that ignorant man? I have it not. What combs hast thou? I have the combs of the trader. Have you his penknives? We have them not. Do you see them? We do not see



them. What do you see? We see the white swans and the magnificent vineyard of our neighbor. What does your companion see? He sees the large vineyard. Hast thou not our papers? I have them not. Have you the silver inkstands? We have them not. Have you not the ivory buttons? We have them. Do you wish for this fruit? Yes, sir, if you please. Dost thou wish for these gloves? No, madam, I thank you. I see the man whom I wish for, whom do you see? I see the ignorant little boy of your friend. Hast thou the good tea and the white sugar? I have them not. Dost thou wish for them? Yes, miss, if you please. Whom dost thou see? I see the men whom I wish for. Thou hast thy pencils, and we have our books and our papers.

## 22.—VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

### Sound of L and LL.

L or LL liquid, as *ll* in *brillant*.\*

<sup>12</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>18</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>9</sup>  
*corail, soleil, brillant, mallet, caillé, caillou, évantail: ivrogne, vieux, a, échal, fils, oncle.*

The coral. The sun.

Le corail. Le soleil.

Brilliant. A mallet.

Brillant. Un maillet.

Curdled. The flint (stone).

Caillé. Le caillou.

The fan. That drunkard.

L'éventail. Cet ivrogne.

The pewter. Old.

L'étain. Vieux (bef. n.).

The son. The uncle.

Le fils. L'oncle.

Has he? He has. Has he not? He has not. A-t-il? Il a. N'a-t-il pas? Il n'a pas.

1. When *ll* follows a verb ending with a vowel, *-t-* is inserted for better sound.

Has he it? He has it.

L'a-t-il? Il l'a.

Has he them? He has them not.

Les a-t-il? Il ne les a pas.

The curdled milk. The old mallet.

Le lait caillé. Le vieux maillet.

2. Nouns and adjectives ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, are the same in the plural.

The stocking, the stockings. The nose, the noses. Le bas, les bas. Le nez, les nez.

The big spoke, the big spokes.

Le gros rais, les gros rais.

The old carpet, the old carpets.

Le vieux tapis, les vieux tapis.

This bad verse. These bad verses.

Ce mauvais vers, ces mauvais vers.

Qu'a le fils du vieux matelot? Il a le petit caillou et l'éventail d'ivoire. N'a-t-il pas mon encier d'étain? Il ne l'a pas. Qu'a cet ivrogne? Il a le vieux chien de mon oncle. Qui a le beau co-

\* L and LL have generally this sound, in the middle or at the end of a word, when preceded by *t*.

rail? Le fils du maçon l'a. Voyez-vous ce paysage magnifique? Je vois le beau paysage et le soleil brillant. Qui a le maillet de notre oncle? Le fils du voisin l'a. A-t-il le lait caillé? Il ne l'a pas. Qu'a ce petit garçon? Il a le joli caillou et le plat d'étain. A-t-il les éventaill d'ivoire? Il ne les a pas. Voulez-vous ce corail? Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît. Qui a le chapeau de l'ivrogne? Le garçon de mon oncle l'a. Je vois le beau jardin et le soleil brillant. Nous avons les gros bas et les vieux tapis, et vous avez les mauvais dais.

What has the son of our old baker? He has the handsome coral and the big mallet. Has he not the curdled milk? He has it not. Has he the ivory fan? He has it. Who has the pewter inkstands? Your uncle has them. Who has the hat of that drunkard? That little boy has it. Has he not the little flint? He has it not. What do you see? I see the fine sun, and the beautiful landscape. What has the old mason? He has his mallets and his inkstand of shining pewter. Dost thou wish for this flint? No, sir, I thank you. Do you take the big fans? We do not take them. What has that drunkard? He has the old gloves of my uncle. Whom do you see? I see the sailors whom you see. Have you the big stockings or the little ones? I have the big and the little ones also. Who has the large fans? Your brother has them. Has he the white handkerchiefs? He has them not, the son of our neighbor has them.

## 23.—VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of *ÉR* final.

*ÉR* in most nouns (polysyllables) ending in *ter*, *yer*, *cher*, *ger*, and *iller*, sound as *é* (or *e* in *ebb*), when *r* is silent.

<sup>1</sup> 125    <sup>16</sup> 125    <sup>1</sup> 125    <sup>20</sup> 125    <sup>1</sup> 3    <sup>125</sup>    <sup>4</sup> 22 12 125    <sup>1</sup> 12 125    <sup>1</sup> 5 125    <sup>21</sup>  
*cahier*, *soulier*, *tablier*, *foyer*, *charpentier*, *menuisier*, *jardinier*, *chapelier*, *ont*,  
*mais*, *neveu*.

A copy-book. A shoe.

My apron. The hearth.

The carpenter. The joiner.

The gardener. The hatter.

But. His nephew. The stranger.

Have they? They have.

Have they not? They have not.

Have they it? They have it.

Have they it not? They have it not.

Un cahier. Un soulier.

Mon tablier. Le foyer (or l'âtre).

Le charpentier. Le menuisier.

Le jardinier. Le chapelier.

Mais. Son neveu. L'étranger.

Ont-ils? Ils ont.

N'ont-ils pas? Ils n'ont pas.

L'ont-ils? Ils l'ont.

Ne l'ont-ils pas? Ils ne l'ont pas.

Nouns and adjectives ending in *al* change this termination into *aux* for the plural, and those ending in *au*, *eu*, add an *x*; as,

The horse, the horses.	Le cheval, les chevaux.
<i>The general, the generals.</i>	<i>Le général, les généraux.</i>
The handsome boat, the handsome boats.	Le beau bateau, les beaux bateaux.
The hat, the hats.	Le chapeau, les chapeaux.
<i>But not.</i>	<i>Mais pas, mais non, mais non pas.</i>
I have the oxen, but not the horses.	J'ai les bœufs, mais non pas les chevaux.

Les neveux du chapelier ont nos cahiers. Quels souliers ont-ils? Ils ont leurs souliers. N'ont-ils pas les tabliers de cuir? Non, monsieur, ils ont les souliers, mais non pas les tabliers de cuir. Qu'ont les jardiniers? Ils ont les râteaux de fer. Ont-ils nos fruits? Non, monsieur, ils ne les ont pas. Qu'ont ces charpentiers? Ils ont les beaux canapés, et les longs bancs. N'ont-ils pas le bois de ces menuisiers? Non, monsieur, ils ne l'ont pas. Voyez-vous le charbon? Je le vois sur le foyer. Le fils du jardinier a les tabliers, mais le neveu du menuisier a les souliers. Qui a nos cahiers? Les neveux du charpentier ont nos cahiers et les fils du charpentier ont nos crayons. Voyez-vous les généraux? Nous voyons les généraux et leurs soldats. Les charpentiers voient le charbon sur le foyer.

Who has my copy-book? The son of the carpenter has it. Do you see the coal on the hearth? I see it. Who has the leather shoes? The nephews of the joiner have them. Have they the cloth shoes also? No, madam, they have the shoes of leather, but not the shoes of cloth. What has the hatter? He has many (*beaucoup*) black hats and many white hats. Who has the rakes of the gardener? His sons have them. Have they the hammers of the carpenter? No, madam, they have his nails, but they have not his hammers. Have they the wood of the joiner? No, sir. Who has the hats of the hatter? The sons of the general have them. What do the nephews of the gardener wish for? They wish for the melons of their uncle. Do you see the wood on the hearth? No, miss, I see the coal, but I do not see the wood. Hast thou thy copy-book? I have it. What has the general? He has his fine horses. Have you the leather gloves? No, sir, our cousins have them, and they have also the leather shoes.

## 24.—VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

Sound of *ÈR* final, continued.

72 23 12 5    22 12 5    5 12 12 5    20 1    12 5    16 12 5    20 12 5    20 12 5    16    12 5    22 12 5    5 5  
*figuier, prunier, cerisier, coignassier, rosier, poirier, noyer, pommier, fusil, enfant,*  
*grand-père, petit-fils, conseiller, clocher.*

A fig-tree.	A plum-tree.	Un figuier.	Un prunier.
A cherry-tree.	A quince-tree.	Un cerisier.	Un coignassier.
A rose-tree.	A pear-tree.	Un rosier.	Un poirier.
A walnut-tree.	An apple-tree.	Un noyer.	Un pommier.
The grandfather.	The grandson.	Le grand-père.	Le petit-fils.

In questions, when a noun is the subject, the noun is placed first, then the verb, and the pronoun of the third person is used after the verb; thus,

Does the man see?	Do the men see?	L'homme voit-il?	Les hommes voient-ils?
Does the soldier take?	Do the soldiers take?	Le soldat prend-il?	Les soldats prennent-ils?
Does the child want?	Do the children want?	L'enfant veut-il?	Les enfants veulent-ils?
Has the grandfather?	Have the grandsons?	Le grand-père a-t-il?	Les petits-fils ont-ils?
Has the gardener a fig-tree?		Le jardinier a-t-il un figuier?	
Do your brothers see the plum-tree?		Vos frères voient-ils le prunier?	
Does not your father take the good fruit?		Votre père ne prend-il pas le bon fruit?	
Do those men wish for the cherry-trees?		Ces hommes veulent-ils les cerisiers?	
Have the soldiers their guns?		Les soldats ont-ils leurs fusils?	
Does your grandfather take these quince-trees?		Votre grand-père prend-il ces coignassiers?	
The child.	The gun.	L'enfant.	Le fusil.

Notre jardinier a-t-il les rosiers? Il a les rosiers et les poiriers. Votre ami ne voit-il pas les noyers? Il les voit. Les petits-fils du voisin prennent-ils nos fruits? Ils ne les prennent pas. Les voisins veulent-ils les petits pommiers? Non, monsieur, ils veulent le fruit du jardinier. Vois-tu le figuier ou le prunier? Je vois le figuier. Votre oncle prend-il les beaux chevaux? Il les prend. Les jardiniers veulent-ils ces cerisiers? Ils veulent ces cerisiers et ces coignassiers. Qui a les noyers? Les paysans ont les noyers, les pommiers et les poiriers. Cet enfant n'a-t-il pas votre fusil? Il a mon fusil et mon chapeau. Quel homme le petit-fils de notre voisin voit-il? Il voit l'homme que nous voyons. Quels arbres voyez-vous? Je vois les pruniers, les coignassiers, les noyers et

les pommiers. Votre grand-père a-t-il beaucoup de chevaux ? Il a beaucoup de chevaux et beaucoup de bœufs. Cet enfant n'a-t-il pas votre canif ? Il l'a.

Does the countryman wish for the gardener's trees ? He wishes for his fig-trees and his plum-trees. Have those gardeners many trees ? They have many cherry-trees, many quince-trees, and many apple-trees. Has your grandfather a large garden ? He has a large garden and a large vineyard. Has not the grandson of the soldier his gun ? He has his gun and his saber. Do you see those large rose-trees ? Yes, sir, I see the rose-trees, the pear-trees, and the walnut-trees. Do those children take your books ? They do not take them. What do you wish for ? I wish for a little bread and a little milk. Have those children sufficient butter ? They have sufficient butter and sufficient bread. Do you wish for this fruit ? No, miss, I thank you. Do you wish for the milk ? Yes, madam, if you please. Do the sailors see those handsome boats ? They see those handsome boats and those large ships. Whom do you wish for ? We wish for the men whom we see.

## 25.—VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

ER, in the middle of words,

Is pronounced like the English word *atr*, when *r* is distinctly articulated, as in *rose*.

<sup>7</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
CHERCHER, to seek.

*Do you seek ? We seek.*

*Cherchez-vous ? Nous cherchons.*

*Do you not seek ? We do not seek.*

*Ne cherchez-vous pas ? Nous ne cherchons pas.*

*Do you seek it ? We seek it.*

*Le cherchez-vous ? Nous le cherchons.*

*Do you not seek him ?*

*Ne le cherchez-vous pas ?*

*We do not seek him.*

*Nous ne le cherchons pas.*

*Dost thou seek ? I seek.*

*Cherches-tu ? Je cherche.*

*Dost thou not seek ? I do not seek.*

*Ne cherches-tu pas ? Je ne cherche pas.*

*Dost thou seek them ? I seek them.*

*Les cherches-tu ? Je les cherche.*

*Dost thou not seek them ?*

*Ne les cherches-tu pas ?*

*I do not seek them.*

*Je ne les cherche pas.*

*Do we seek ? You seek.*

*Cherchons-nous ? Vous cherchez.*

*Do we not seek ? You do not seek.*

*Ne cherchons-nous pas ? Vous ne cherchez pas.*

*Do we seek him ? You seek him.*

*Le cherchons-nous ? Vous le cherchez.*

*Do we not seek it ? You do not seek it.*

*Ne le cherchons-nous pas ? Vous ne le cherchez pas.*

*Me, Thee, Us.*

*The one, that. The ones, those.*

Dost thou seek me? I seek thee.

You seek us. We seek you.

I seek the one of my father.

You seek those of the gardener.

*Me, Te, Nous* (all placed immediately before the verb).

*Celui. Ceux.*

Me cherches-tu? Je te cherche.

Vous nous cherchez. Nous vous cherchons.

Je cherche celui de mon père.

Vous cherchez ceux du jardinier.

Me cherchez-vous? Je vous cherche. Nous cherchez-vous? Nous vous cherchons. Je te cherche; me cherches-tu? Je ne te cherche pas. Ne me cherchez-vous pas? Je ne vous cherche pas. Nous cherches-tu? Je ne vous cherche pas. Qui cherchez-vous? Nous te cherchons. Ne nous cherchez-vous pas? Non, monsieur, nous cherchons nos frères. Qui cherches-tu? Nous cherchons notre oncle. Nous vous cherchons; nous cherchez-vous? Nous ne vous cherchons pas. Que cherches-tu? Je cherche un cheval. Quel cheval cherches-tu? Je cherche celui de mon père. Ne cherches-tu pas celui de ton oncle? Si, monsieur, je cherche celui de mon oncle et celui de mon père. Que cherchez-vous? Nous cherchons les gants. Quels gants cherchez-vous? Nous cherchons ceux du maître. Ne cherchez-vous pas ceux de votre cousin? Nous cherchons ceux du maître et ceux de notre cousin. Votre grand-père a-t-il son chapeau? Oui, monsieur, il l'a.

Whom dost thou seek? I seek thee, dost thou seek me? I do not seek thee. Do you seek us? We do not seek you. Whom do you seek? We seek our friends. Dost thou seek us? I do not seek you. Do you not seek me? We do not seek thee, we seek thy cousin. What dost thou seek? I seek a book. What book dost thou seek? I seek the one of the master. Dost thou not seek the one of thy brother? No, sir, I seek that of the master, I do not seek that of my brother. What papers do you seek? We seek those of these little boys. Do you not seek those of your cousins? Yes, sir, we seek those of our cousins and those of the master also. Does that cat see the rats? Yes, sir, he sees them. Do the rats see the cat? They see him also. Do the soldiers take your fruit? They do not take it. Does your grandfather wish for our gun? He does not wish for it. Have those children their books? Yes, sir, they have them. Do you not seek for me? No, sir, I seek my little cousin.

## 26.—VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

7            6  
CHERCHER, to seek.

<i>Does he seek? He seeks.</i>	<i>Cherche-t-il? Il cherche.</i>
<i>Does he not seek? He does not seek.</i>	<i>Ne cherche-t-il pas? Il ne cherche pas.</i>
<i>Does he seek them? He seeks them.</i>	<i>Les cherche-t-il? Il les cherche.</i>
<i>Does he not seek them? He does not seek them.</i>	<i>Ne les cherche-t-il pas? Il ne les cherche pas.</i>
<i>Do they seek? They seek.</i>	<i>Cherchent-ils? Ils cherchent.</i>
<i>Do they not seek? They do not seek.</i>	<i>Ne cherchent-ils pas? Ils ne cherchent pas.</i>
<i>Do they seek him? They seek him.</i>	<i>Le cherchent-ils? Ils le cherchent.</i>
<i>Do they not seek it? They do not seek it.</i>	<i>Ne le cherchent-ils pas? Ils ne le cherchent pas.</i>
<i>The one who. The ones (those) who.</i>	<i>Celui qui. Ceux qui.</i>
<i>The one whom. The ones (those) whom.</i>	<i>Celui que. Ceux que.</i>
<i>Which man do you seek?</i>	<i>Quel homme cherchez-vous?</i>
<i>I seek the one who seeks me.</i>	<i>Je cherche celui qui me cherche.</i>
<i>I seek those who seek me.</i>	<i>Je cherche ceux qui me cherchent.</i>
<i>I seek the one whom you seek.</i>	<i>Je cherche celui que vous cherchez.</i>
<i>I seek those whom you seek.</i>	<i>Je cherche ceux que vous cherchez.</i>
<i>Does your uncle seek you?</i>	<i>Votre oncle vous cherche-t-il?</i>
<i>He seeks me.</i>	<i>Il me cherche.</i>
<i>I seek them, and they seek me.</i>	<i>Je les cherche, et ils me cherchent.</i>
<i>A dictionary. An atlas.</i>	<i>Un dictionnaire. Un atlas.</i>
<i>Young. Red.</i>	<i>Jeune. Rouge.</i>

Cet homme cherche-t-il son cheval? Il le cherche. Ne cherche-t-il pas ses bœufs? Il ne les cherche pas. Qui le jardinier cherche-t-il? Il nous cherche. Me cherche-t-il? Il vous cherche. Ces petits garçons cherchent-ils leurs livres? Ils les cherchent. Quels livres cherchent-ils? Ils cherchent leurs dictionnaires. Ne cherchent-ils pas leurs atlas? Ils les cherchent. Ce jeune garçon cherche-t-il son frère? Non, monsieur, il cherche un enfant. Quel enfant cherche-t-il? Il cherche celui qui a le chapeau de ce garçon. Ne cherche-t-il pas ceux qui ont ses papiers? Il ne les cherche pas. Quels soldats ces hommes cherchent-ils? Ils cherchent ceux que nous cherchons. Cherchez-vous celui que je cherche? Je cherche celui qui a mon mouchoir rouge. Vous cherchez ceux que je cherche, et ceux qui nous cherchent.

Do you seek your dictionary? I seek my dictionary and my atlas. Does that young boy seek his handkerchief? He seeks it.

Does he seek his red handkerchief? He seeks his red handkerchief and his red coat. Do those young boys seek a mason? No, sir, they seek a gardener. What gardener do they seek? They seek the one who has much fruit. Do they seek the one who seeks them? No, sir, they seek the one whom we seek. Do they see the one whom they seek? What soldiers do you seek? We seek those who seek us, and you seek those whom we seek. Have you my atlas? No, sir, that young boy has it. Whom does that man seek? He seeks thee. Does he not seek you? He does not seek me. Who seeks us? The grandchildren of our neighbor seek us. What men do you see? I see those whom you see. What book have you? I have the one of my cousin, and you have the one of the master.

## 27.—VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

<sup>15</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
DONNER, to give.

*Dost thou give? I give.*

*Dost thou not give? I do not give.*

*Dost thou not give it? I do not give it.*

*Do you give? We give.*

*Do you give them? We give them.*

*To me. To thee. To us.*

*To you. To him. To them.*

*To. To that man. To that child.*

*To whom do you give your money?*

*I give it to my father.*

*To the.*

*Dost thou give me the fruit?*

*I give it to the little boy.*

*We give thee the books.*

*I give you the papers.*

*Do you give us your pencils?*

*I give him my pencils.*

*We give them our papers.*

*We give them to the men.*

*Donnes-tu? Je donne.*

*Ne donnes-tu pas? Je ne donne pas.*

*Ne le donnes-tu pas? Je ne le donne pas.*

*Donnez-vous? Nous donnons.*

*Les donnez-vous? Nous les donnons.*

*Me. Te. Nous.*

*Vous. Lui. Leur.*

*A. À cet homme. À cet enfant.*

*À qui donnez-vous votre argent?*

*Je le donne à mon père.*

*Au (singular). Aux (plural).*

*Me donnes-tu le fruit?*

*Je le donne au petit garçon.*

*Nous te donnons les livres.*

*Je vous donne les papiers.*

*Nous donnez-vous vos crayons?*

*Je lui donne mes crayons.*

*Nous leur donnons nos papiers.*

*Nous les donnons aux hommes.*

Que me donnez-vous? Je te donne cet anneau d'or. Que nous donnes-tu? Je te donne ces jolis livres. Que donnons-nous au petit garçon? Nous lui donnons ce gâteau. Donnez-vous les melons aux soldats? Non, monsieur, je leur donne ces fruits. À qui donnez-vous ce joli canif? Je le donne au petit-fils du jardi-



nier. À qui donnez-vous vos beaux crayons? Je les donne à mes amis. Me donnes-tu le bon vin? Non, mon ami, je te donne le café. Nous donnez-vous le lait? Nous vous donnons le lait et le thé. Que donnons-nous à mon frère? Nous lui donnons nos livres. Donnons-nous ces encriers aux petits garçons? Non, madame, nous leur donnons ces petits livres. À qui donnez-vous cet atlas? Je le donne à Charles.

Do you give me these books? I give you these books and these papers. We give thee these pencils, what dost thou give us? I give you these rings. Do you give your ivory inkstand to the master? I give him the inkstand, and I give the knives to the little boys. Do you give them these gloves? No, sir, we give them to the children. To whom do we give the melons? We give them to the soldier. What book have you? I have that (the one) of my brother. Have you not his papers? No, sir, I have those of the master. What man do you see? I see the one who has my book. What soldiers do you see? I see those who have the red coats. Whom do you see? I see the gardener. Do you see the one whom you wish for? Yes, sir, and I see those whom you seek. What dost thou give me? I give thee my ivory knife. We give you our books, and you give us your pencils. Whom do you seek? I seek the man whom you seek. Do you give him his money? I give him his money, but not his books.

## 28.—VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

<sup>13</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
DONNER, to give.

*Does he give? He gives.*

Does he not give? He does not give.

Does he not give it? He does not give it.

*Do they give? They give.*

Do they give it? They give it.

*It to me. Them to me.*

*It to you. Them to you.*

Does he give it to me?

He gives it to you.

Do they not give them to you?

They do not give them to me.

*Donne-t-il? Il donne.*

Ne donne-t-il pas? Il ne donne pas.

Ne le donne-t-il pas? Il ne le donne pas.

*Donnent-ils? Ils donnent.*

Le donnent-ils? Ils le donnent.

*Me le. Me les.*

*Vous le. Vous les.*

Me le donne-t-il?

Il vous le donne.

Ne vous les donnent-ils pas?

Ils ne me les donnent pas.

*Of the, and to the, in the singular, are de l' and à l' before a vowel or a silent h; in the plural, they are always des and aux.*

<i>Of the man.</i>	<i>Of the men.</i>	<i>De l'homme.</i>	<i>Des hommes.</i>
<i>Of the child.</i>	<i>Of the children.</i>	<i>De l'enfant.</i>	<i>Des enfants.</i>
<i>To the man.</i>	<i>To the men.</i>	<i>À l'homme.</i>	<i>Aux hommes.</i>
<i>To the child.</i>	<i>To the children.</i>	<i>À l'enfant.</i>	<i>Aux enfants.</i>
<i>Of the mason.</i>	<i>Of the masons.</i>	<i>Du maçon.</i>	<i>Des maçons.</i>
<i>To the mason.</i>	<i>To the masons.</i>	<i>Au maçon.</i>	<i>Aux maçons.</i>
<i>Of the grocer.</i>	<i>To the grocer.</i>	<i>De l'épicier.</i>	<i>À l'épicier.</i>
<i>He gives the money to the grocer.</i>		<i>Il donne l'argent à l'épicier.</i>	

Me donnez-vous les livres des petits garçons? Je vous les donne. À qui le maître donne-t-il ce cadeau? Il me le donne. Ne me le donne-t-il pas? Il ne vous le donne pas. À qui les maîtres donnent-ils les cahiers des enfants? Ils vous les donnent. Ne vous les donnent-ils pas? Ils ne me les donnent pas. Le jardinier donne-t-il son fruit à l'épicier? Il lui donne le fruit de ces arbres. L'épicier donne-t-il son rateau au jardinier? Il lui donne son rateau et ses balais. Qu'avez-vous? J'ai le beurre de l'épicier et les fruits des paysans. Me donnez-vous cet encrier de verre? Je vous le donne. Je donne ce livre à l'ami de Jean. Le voisin vous donne-t-il ces melons? Il me les donne. Qui a le cahier de l'enfant? Je l'ai. Vous le donne-t-il? Il me le donne. Lui donnez-vous le gâteau? Je lui donne le gâteau et le bon fruit.

You have the ivory inkstand; do you give it to me? I do not give it to you. Do you give it to the child of our neighbor? I give him the inkstand and the copybook. Have you the wine of the grocer? We have his wine and his butter. To whom does the master give the ivory? He gives it to me. Does he not give it to me? He does not give it to you. What books does the master seek? He seeks those of my brother. Does he seek the children whom we seek? No, sir, he seeks those who have his books. What inkstand do you seek? I seek the one of the grocer, and my brother seeks those of the little boys. My brother gives you the pretty ribbons. Do you not give them to me? I give them to you. What man do you see? I see the one whom you seek. What books has your brother? He has his dictionary and his atlas. Do you wish for the coffee? No, sir, I thank you. What does your friend take? He takes the bread, the butter, the cheese, and the milk.

## 29.—VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

ÊTRE, to be.

*Are you? We are.**Are you not? We are not.**Art thou? I am**Art thou not? I am not.**Here. There.**In. Under.**The store. The turf.**The floor. A relation (kin).**Sick. The sick man, patient.**Where. Where are you?**It to thee. Them to thee.**It to us. Them to us.**Dost thou give it to me?**I do not give it to thee.**Do they not give them to us?**They give them to us.**He gives them to thee.**They do not give it to us.**Are you there? We are here.**Art thou under the tree? I am on the turf.**Êtes-vous? Nous sommes.**N'êtes-vous pas? Nous ne sommes pas.**Es-tu? Je suis.**N'es-tu pas? Je ne suis pas.**Ici. Là.**Dans. Sous.**Le magasin. Le gazon.**Le plancher. Un parent.**Malade. Le malade.**Où. Où êtes-vous?**Te le. Te les.**Nous le. Nous les.**Me le donnes-tu?**Je ne te le donne pas.**Ne nous les donnent-ils pas?**Ils nous les donnent.**Il te les donne.**Ils ne nous le donnent pas.**Êtes-vous là? Nous sommes ici.**Es-tu sous l'arbre? Je suis sur le gazon.*

Où es-tu? Je suis ici. Es-tu là dans le jardin? Je suis ici dans le magasin. Êtes-vous sous l'arbre? Oui, nous sommes sous l'arbre sur le gazon. Êtes-vous malades? Non, monsieur, nous ne sommes pas malades. N'es-tu pas parent de Charles? Si, mademoiselle, je suis son frère. Je ne suis pas le frère de Jules, je suis son cousin. N'êtes-vous pas dans le magasin? Je suis ici sur le plancher. Je suis ton parent. Qu'a votre parent? Il a un bouton d'or. Ne me le donne-t-il pas? Il ne te le donne pas. Vous le donne-t-il? Il ne nous le donne pas. Me donne-t-il ses livres? Il ne te les donne pas. Ne vous les donne-t-il pas? Il nous les donne. Que donnez-vous à cet homme? Je lui donne un bon marteau. Que donnez-vous à ses enfants? Je leur donne ce pain et ce fruit. Me donnes-tu ce melon? Je te le donne.

Where are you? I am here. Are you in the store or in the garden? I am in the store. Are you on the bench or on the floor? We are on the bench. Art thou not sick? I am not sick.

Art thou there under the tree? I am here on the turf. Art thou not on the floor? I am here on the bench. Are you not our relations? We are your cousins. What has our master? He has the pretty ivory inkstand. Does he give it to us? He does not give it to us. To whom does he give the gold pencils? He gives them to thee. Does he give me the pretty book? He gives it to thee. Does he give me the papers? He does not give them to thee, he gives them to us. To whom do the gardeners give their fruits? They give them to us. What books do those little boys seek? They seek those of the master. Do they not seek those of your brother? No, sir, they do not seek them. What dictionary do you seek? I seek the one of my brother.

## 30.—TRENTIÈME LEÇON.

ÊTRE, to be.

<i>Is he? He is.</i>	<i>Est-il? Il est.</i>
<i>Is he not? He is not.</i>	<i>N'est-il pas? Il n'est pas.</i>
<i>Are they? They are.</i>	<i>Sont-ils? Ils sont.</i>
<i>Are they not? They are not.</i>	<i>Ne sont-ils pas? Ils ne sont pas.</i>
<i>At the house of. At my house.</i>	<i>Chez (preposition). Chez moi.</i>
<i>At my father's, or the house of my father.</i>	<i>Chez mon père.</i>
<i>At my uncle's, or the house of my uncle.</i>	<i>Chez mon oncle.</i>
<i>He is at my grandfather's.</i>	<i>Il est chez mon grand-père.</i>
<i>They are at my brother's.</i>	<i>Ils sont chez mon frère.</i>
<i>It to him. Them to him.</i>	<i>Le lui. Les lui.</i>
<i>Do you give it to him?</i>	<i>Le lui donnez-vous?</i>
<i>I do not give it to him.</i>	<i>Je ne le lui donne pas.</i>
<i>We give them to him.</i>	<i>Nous les lui donnons.</i>
<i>Which (relative pronoun).</i>	<i>Qui (subject). Que (object).</i>
<i>You seek the book which is here.</i>	<i>Vous cherchez le livre qui est ici.</i>
<i>You seek the book which I have.</i>	<i>Vous cherchez le livre que j'ai.</i>

We here see that *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb.

<i>I take the pencils which are of gold.</i>	<i>Je prends les boutons qui sont d'or.</i>
<i>I take the pencils which you give me.</i>	<i>Je prends les boutons que vous me donnez.</i>
<i>We see the horses which are in the field.</i>	<i>Nous voyons les chevaux qui sont dans le champ.</i>
<i>We see those which you have.</i>	<i>Nous voyons ceux que vous avez</i>

Où est votre frère ? Il est chez mon père. Votre cousin est-il chez votre oncle ? Non, monsieur, il est chez moi. Où sont vos livres ? Ils sont là sur le banc. Vos frères sont-ils chez votre père ? Non, madame, ils sont chez moi. Quel livre avez-vous ? J'ai celui de mon frère. Ne le lui donnez-vous pas ? Je le lui donne. Lui donnez-vous vos papiers ? Je ne les lui donne pas. Ne donnes-tu pas tes thèmes aux maîtres ? Je les lui donne. Je veux l'encrier qui est sur le banc, et mon frère veut le livre que vous avez. Où est le neveu de votre voisin ? Il est chez moi, et les petits garçons sont chez mon oncle. Donnez-vous le marteau au maçon. Je le lui donne. Donnez-vous les gâteaux au petit garçon ? Je les lui donne. Je prends les livres qui sont ici, et vous prenez le canif du maître. Me donnes-tu ce joli anneau ? Je ne te le donne pas, je le donne à ton frère.

Where is your friend ? He is at my house. Is your brother at the neighbor's ? No, sir, he is at my father's. Where are your cousins ? They are at my uncle's, and the children of the neighbor are at my grandfather's. Have you not the knife of the master ? I have it. Do you give it to him ? I give it to him. Do you give the rakes to the gardener ? I give them to him. Does he give his fruits to your father ? He gives them to him. Where are the children of the neighbors ? They are at my house. I take the book which is there on the bench, and you take the ivory inkstand of the master. Do you seek the papers which are here ? No, sir, I seek the papers which you have. Whom do you see ? I see the little boy who has my book. What knife do you take ? I take the one of ivory. Does the countryman wish for our horses ? No, sir, he wishes for those of the neighbors. Do those men seek their pencils which are here ? No, sir, they seek the books which we have. Do they give them to the master ? They give them to him and he gives them to us.

### 31.—TRENTÉ ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

<sup>1</sup>  
ALLER, <sup>6</sup>to go.

*Do you go, are you going ?*

*Allez-vous ?*

*We go, we are going.*

*Nous allons.*

*Dost thou go, art thou going ?*

*Vas-tu ?*

I go, I am going.	Je vais.
To our house. To your house.	Chez nous. Chez vous.
To his house. To their house.	Chez lui. Chez eux.
To thy house. I am going to thy house.	Chez toi. Je vais chez toi.
Art thou not going to our house?	Ne vas-tu pas chez nous?
I am not going to your house.	Je ne vais pas chez vous.
Are you not going to his house?	N'allez-vous pas chez lui?
We are going to their house.	Nous allons chez eux.
That which. Those which.	{ Celui qui. Ceux qui (subjects). { Celui que. Ceux que (objects).

Here again *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb.

What book have you?	Quel livre avez-vous?
I have that which is here.	J'ai celui qui est ici.
I have that which you seek.	J'ai celui que vous cherchez.
What papers do they seek?	Quels papiers cherchent-ils?
They seek those which are on the bench.	Ils cherchent ceux qui sont sur le banc.
They seek those which you wish for.	Ils cherchent ceux que vous voulez.

Où vas-tu? Je vais chez moi. Ne vas-tu pas chez nous? Je ne vais pas chez vous, je vais chez mon frère. N'allez-vous pas chez lui? Non, monsieur, nous allons chez nous. Allez-vous chez le voisin? Non, mademoiselle, nous n'allons pas chez lui. Où allez-vous? Nous allons chez vous. N'allons-nous pas chez nous? Nous allons chez ces hommes. Vas-tu chez eux? Je ne vais pas chez eux; je vais chez toi. Quel livre donnez-vous à cet enfant? Je lui donne celui qui est chez moi. Me donnez-vous celui que je veux? Je vous donne ceux qui sont chez vous. Quels cahiers avez-vous? J'ai ceux que le maître me donne. Que cherche cet homme? Il cherche ses gants. Cherche-t-il ceux qui sont ici? Non, monsieur, il cherche ceux de cet enfant. Quel encrier voulez-vous? Je veux celui du maître. Ne voulez-vous pas celui que nous avons? Je ne le veux pas. Vas-tu au magasin? Non, madame, je vais chez moi.

Where art thou going? I am going to the store. Art thou not going to my house? I am not going to thy house. Where are you going? We are going to our house. Are you not going to our house? We are not going to your house. Is my brother at your house? No, sir, he is at his house. Where are your cousins? They are at their house. Do you wish for the book which I have? I wish for the one which is at your house. What knife do you seek? I seek that of your little brother. Do you wish for those books which

I have? No, sir, I wish for those which are here on the bench. Do you seek the children who are in the garden? No, sir, I seek those whom you seek. To whom do you give that fruit? I give it to the little boys. Do you not give it to me? I do not give it to thee. Does the general give us his horse? He does not give it to us. Does he give it to the soldier? He does not give it to him.

## 32—TRENTÉ-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

ÀLLER, <sup>1</sup>to go.

<i>Does he go, is he going?</i>	<i>Va-t-il?</i>
He goes, he is going.	Il va.
<i>Do they go, are they going?</i>	<i>Vont-ils.</i>
They go, they are going.	Ils vont.
<i>Something. Nothing, not any thing.</i>	<i>Quelque chose. Rien (ne bef. the verb).</i>
<i>Somewhere. Nowhere, not any where.</i>	<i>Quelque part. Nulle part (ne bef. v.).</i>
<i>To-day. Now, at present.</i>	<i>Aujourd'hui. À présent.</i>
<i>This morning. This evening.</i>	<i>Ce matin. Ce soir.</i>
Where is your father going to-day?	Où va votre père aujourd'hui?
He is not going any where.	Il ne va nulle part.
Are your brothers going any where?	Vos frères vont-ils quelque part?
They are going nowhere.	Ils ne vont nulle part.
Where is your cousin going this morning?	Où va votre cousin ce matin?
He is going to the store.	Il va au magasin.
Are you going any where this evening?	Allez-vous quelque part ce soir?
I am going now to my grandfather's.	Je vais à présent chez mon grand-père.
Does the master give you any thing?	Le maître vous donne-t-il quelque chose?
He gives me something.	Il me donne quelque chose.
He gives you nothing.	Il ne vous donne rien.

Où va le général ce matin? Il ne va nulle part. Ses fils ne vont-ils nulle part aujourd'hui? Ils vont au palais du roi. Votre frère Charles va-t-il quelque part ce soir? Il va chez lui. Vos cousins vont-ils quelque part aujourd'hui? Ils vont à présent chez mon oncle. Où vont ses petits garçons ce matin? Ils vont au jardin du marchand. Vont-ils quelque part ce soir? Non, monsieur, ils ne vont nulle part. Que me donnez-vous? Je ne vous donne rien. Donnez-vous quelque chose à mon frère? Je ne lui donne rien. Le maître donne-t-il quelque chose aux petits

garçons? Il leur donne ses jolis livres. Leur donne-t-il son joli encrier? Il le leur donne. Les enfants donnent-ils leurs fruits au maître? Ils les lui donnent. Me donnez-vous ce joli anneau? Je ne vous le donne pas. Le donnez-vous à mon frère? Je le lui donne.

Where does the general go to-day? He is going to the palace of the king. Are his sons going any where now? They are not going any where. Is your brother going to the general's this morning? No, sir, he is going to our grandfather's. Where are the children going this evening? They are going to the garden. Do you give any thing to the mason? I give him nothing. Whom do you see? I see the man who seeks you. Does the master take the book which is on the bench? He takes the one which you wish for. Does he give it to your brother? He does not give it to him. Does he give it to you? He gives it to me. What papers do you seek? I seek those which are here, and my brother seeks those which you have. Where are your brothers? They are at the neighbor's. Where are you going now? I am going home (to my house). Is your uncle going any where to-day? He is going nowhere. Are you going to our house this morning? No, sir, we are going to the neighbor's. Where are the soldiers going this evening? They are going nowhere. Do you give them any thing? I give them nothing.

## CONVERSATIONAL PHRASES.

Ah! how do you do? It is an age since I have seen you.	Ah! comment vous portez-vous? Il y a un siècle que je ne vous ai vu.
I am very well, thank you; and I am delighted to see you in good health.	Je me porte très-bien, merci; et je suis charmé de vous voir en bonne santé.
Where have you been during all the time since I have seen you?	Où avez-vous été pendant tout le temps que je ne vous ai pas vu?
I have been to New York, where I stayed two months.	J'ai été à New York, où je suis resté deux mois.
I am very glad to see you; how long have you been back?	Je suis bien aise de vous voir; depuis quand êtes-vous de retour?
Only since yesterday. And how are they all at your house?	Depuis hier seulement. Et comment va tout le monde chez vous?
Every body is well.	Tout le monde se porte bien.



How do your mother and sister do?	Comment se portent madame votre mère et mademoiselle votre sœur?
My sister is perfectly well, but my mother is indisposed.	Ma sœur se porte parfaitement bien, mais ma mère est indisposée.
Ah, what is the matter with her?	Ah, qu'est-ce qu'elle a donc?
She has a very bad headache.	Elle a très-mal à la tête.
Is she subject to headaches?	Est-elle sujette aux maux de tête?
No, she often has the teethache, and a sore throat, but not the headache; perhaps she has taken cold.	Non, elle a souvent mal aux dents, et mal à la gorge, mais non pas à la tête; elle s'est peut-être enrhumée.
I am very sorry, and I hope that it will be nothing.	J'en suis bien fâché, et j'espère que ce ne sera rien.
Is your father at home?	Monsieur votre père est-il à la maison?
No, sir, he has gone to the country for a week.	Non, monsieur, il est allé à la campagne pour une semaine.
And is your brother still absent?	Et monsieur votre frère est-il encore absent?
He is absent at present, but he will be back to-morrow.	Il est absent à présent, mais demain il sera de retour.
Will it not rain to-morrow?	Ne pleuvra-t-il pas demain?
I believe not; it is very fine weather at present.	Je crois que non; il fait bien beau temps à présent.
It has been very agreeable weather, but it begins to be too dry.	Il a fait un temps très-agréable, mais il commence à faire trop sec.
Do you not like warm weather?	N'aimez-vous pas la chaleur?
I like warm weather in winter, but in summer I prefer cool weather.	En hiver, j'aime la chaleur, mais en été, je préfère un temps frais.
Come and dine with me to-day.	Venez dîner avec nous aujourd'hui.
I cannot to-day, but to-morrow I am at your command.	Aujourd'hui je ne le puis pas, mais demain je suis à vos ordres.
Well, good-by; we shall see you to-morrow about five, it is agreed.	Eh bien, adieu; on vous verra demain vers cinq heures, c'est convenu.
I shall not fail.	Je n'y manquerai pas.

# FRENCH GRAMMAR.

## 1.—PREMIÈRE LEÇON.

AVOIR, TO HAVE. FIRST AND SECOND PERSON.

<i>Have.</i>	<i>You.</i>	<i>Avez.*</i>	<i>Vous.</i>
<i>I.</i>	<i>Have.</i>	<i>Je.</i>	<i>Ai.</i>
Have you ?	I have.	Avez-vous ?	J'ai.

1. When the pronoun follows the verb, it is joined to it by a hyphen.
2. *Je* becomes *j'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

<i>The</i> (singular).	<i>Le</i> (masculine).	<i>La</i> (feminine).
<i>The</i> (plural).	<i>Les</i> (mas.).	<i>Les</i> (fem.).

3. The plural of nouns is generally formed in French as in English, by adding to the singular an *s*, silent in pronunciation.

4. All nouns in French are either masculine or feminine. They have no neuter gender. Masculine nouns will be placed in the left-hand column, and feminine in the right, as seen below.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The <i>book</i> .	The <i>pen</i> .	<i>Le livre.</i>	<i>La plume.</i>
The <i>books</i> .	The <i>pens</i> .	Les livres.	Les plumes.
The <i>desk</i> .	The <i>table</i> .	<i>Le pupitre.</i>	<i>La table.</i>
The <i>desks</i> .	The <i>tables</i> .	Les pupitres.	Les tables.
The <i>paper</i> .	The <i>letter</i> .	<i>Le papier.</i>	<i>La lettre.</i>
The <i>papers</i> .	The <i>letters</i> .	Les papiers.	Les lettres.
The <i>fruit</i> .	The <i>apple</i> .	<i>Le fruit.</i>	<i>La pomme.</i>
The <i>fruits</i> .	The <i>apples</i> .	Les fruits.	Les pommes.

5. As here seen, *le* is used with the masculine singular of nouns, *la* with the feminine singular, and *les* with the plural of both numbers; i. e. The article agrees with its noun in gender and number.

<i>Sir, mister.</i>	<i>Madam.</i>	<i>Monsieur.</i>	<i>Madame.</i>
---------------------	---------------	------------------	----------------

6. *Monsieur* is contracted to *M.* and *madame* to *Mme.*; but only before a proper name. *Monsieur* is pronounced with both the *n* and the *r* silent.

Have you the book ?	Avez-vous le livre ?
No, sir, I have the pen.	Non, monsieur, j'ai la plume.

\* Words introduced for the first time are printed in italics, and their pronunciation is marked at the bottom of the pages where they occur. The figures mark the simple vowel-sounds according to the table, page 8. The silent letters are in italics. In a few cases the sounds are denoted by a change in the letter. Monosyllables, in which each letter has its natural sound, as given on pages 8, 10, 11, it is deemed unnecessary to mark.

1 6 13 6 7 12 13 22 13 1 1 12 5 22 13 15 15 9  
a-ves, vous, ai, les, livre, plumé, pu-pitre, tablé, pa-pier, fruit, pomme, mon-sieur,  
1 1 21 4 12 5  
ma-dame, non, pre-mier.

1. Avez-vous les livres? 2. Non, madame, j'ai les plumes.  
3. Avez-vous le pupitre? 4. Non, monsieur, j'ai la table. 5. Avez-vous les papiers? 6. Non, madame, j'ai les lettres. 7. Avez-vous les fruits? \* 8. Non, monsieur, j'ai les pommes. 9. J'ai le livre; avez-vous le papier? 10. Non, madame, j'ai la lettre.

1. Have you the pen? 2. I have the pen. 3. Have you the book? 4. No, sir, I have the paper. 5. Have you the desks? 6. No, madam, I have the tables. 7. Have you the letter? 8. I have the letter. 9. Have you the papers? 10. No, sir, I have the fruit. 11. Have you the apples? 12. I have the apples. 13. I have the books; have you the tables? 14. No, madam, I have the desk.

## 2.—DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

### GENDER OF NOUNS.

- Names of males are masculine, as *le roi*, the king; *le lion*, the lion.
- Names of females are feminine, as *la reine*, the queen; *la lionne*, the lioness.
- Names of things, and also of animals, when the male and female are not easily distinguished, are generally feminine if they end in *e* mute, and masculine if not ending in *e* mute, as *la plume*, the pen; *la tortue*, the turtle; *le fer*, the iron; *le roseignol*, the nightingale. To this rule, however, there are many exceptions. For more on this subject, see *Grammatical Rules and Principles*, page 428-9.

Yes.                      And.                      Oui, Si.                      Et.

4. Yes, in answer to a negative question, is most commonly *et*.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The <i>coffee</i> .	The <i>fork</i> .	Le <i>café</i> .	La <i>fourchette</i> .
The <i>sugar</i> .	The <i>flour</i> .	Le <i>sucré</i> .	La <i>farine</i> .
The <i>bread</i> .	The <i>meat</i> .	Le <i>pain</i> .	La <i>viande</i> .
The <i>tea</i> .	The <i>beer</i> .	Le <i>thé</i> .	La <i>bière</i> .
The <i>dish</i> .	The <i>candle</i> .	Le <i>plat</i> .	La <i>chandelle</i> .

5. *Le* and *la* become *F* before a vowel or a silent *H*.

The <i>inkstand</i> .	The <i>ink</i> .	L' <i>encrier</i> .	L' <i>encre</i> .
The <i>milk</i> .	The <i>water</i> .	Le <i>lait</i> .	L' <i>eau</i> .
The bread and the meat.		Le pain et la viande.	
Yes, sir.	Yes, madam.	Oui, monsieur.	Oui, madame.
Him, it.	Her, it.	Le.	La.
Them (mas.).	Them (fem.).	Les.	Les.

6. These pronouns are placed immediately before the verb, and *le*, *la*, are elided like the article above.

\* *Fruit* is more frequently plural in French than in English.

<sup>6</sup> <sup>18</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>8</sup>  
et, four-chette, sucre, fa-rine, pain, vi-ande, thé, bi-ère, plat, chan-delle, en-crier, encre,  
<sup>7</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>7</sup>  
lalé, eau, les, deu-zième.

Have you the coffee?	Avez-vous le café?
Yes, sir, I have it.	Oui, monsieur, je l'ai.
Have you the fork?	Avez-vous la fourchette?
I have it.	Je l'ai.
Have you the inkstands?	Avez-vous les encriers?
Yes, madam, I have them.	Oui, madame, je les ai.

7. *Le* stands for a noun in the masculine singular, *la* for one in the feminine singular, and *les* for the plural of both genders; i. e. Pronouns agree with their antecedents in gender and number.

1. J'ai le sucre; avez-vous la farine? 2. Oui, monsieur, je l'ai.  
 3. Avez-vous le thé? 4. Oui, madame, j'ai le thé et le beurre.  
 5. Avez-vous le plat? 6. Non, monsieur, j'ai la chandelle. 7. Avez-vous l'encre? 8. Oui, madame, j'ai l'encre et la plume. 9. Avez-vous le lait? 10. Oui, madame, je l'ai. 11. Avez-vous l'eau et le café? 12. Oui, monsieur, je les ai. 13. J'ai les pupitres et les tables; avez-vous le papier? 14. Oui, madame, je l'ai. 15. J'ai la fourchette et le sucre; avez-vous la viande? 16. J'ai la viande, la farine et le pain.

1. Have you the beer? 2. Yes, sir, I have it. 3. Have you the dish and the candle? 4. Yes, madam, I have them. 5. Have you the inkstand? 6. I have it, and I have the milk and the water. 7. I have the coffee; have you the sugar and the milk? 8. No, sir, I have the bread, the flour, and the meat. 9. Have you the fork? 10. Yes, sir, I have it. 11. Have you the dish? 12. Yes, madam, I have the dish, the fork, and the candle. 13. Have you the tea and the butter? 14. I have them, and I have the coffee, the milk, and the water.

### 3.—TROISIÈME LEÇON.

#### AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

1. French adjectives are varied in gender and number. The plural of adjectives, like that of nouns, is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular.

2. The feminine of French adjectives always ends in *e* mute. When, therefore, the masculine ends in a silent *e*, it is unchanged in the feminine; but when it does not end in a silent *e*, it takes one for the feminine.

	MASCULEIN.	FEMININE.
Young (singular).	<i>Jeune.</i>	<i>Jeune.</i>
Young (plural).	<i>Jeunes.</i>	<i>Jeunes.</i>
The second.	{ <i>Le deuxième.*</i>	<i>La deuxième.</i>
	{ <i>Le second.</i>	<i>La seconde.</i>

\* *Deuxième* is the second of a series.

0 4 21 4 21  
jeune, se-gond, se-gonde.

The <i>third</i> .		Le <i>troisième</i> .	La <i>troisième</i> .
<i>Large</i> (singular).		<i>Grand</i> (gros).	<i>Grande</i> (grosse).*
<i>Large</i> (plural).		<i>Grands</i> .	<i>Grandes</i> .
<i>Bad</i> .		<i>Mauvais</i> .	<i>Mauvaise</i> .
<i>My</i> (singular).		<i>Mon</i> .	<i>Ma</i> .
<i>My</i> (plural).		<i>Mes</i> .	<i>Mes</i> .
<i>Your</i> (singular).		<i>Votre</i> .	<i>Votre</i> .
<i>Your</i> (plural).		<i>Vos</i> .	<i>Vos</i> .
<i>My wine</i> .	<i>My bottle</i> .	<i>Mon vin</i> .	<i>Ma bouteille</i> .
<i>Your glass</i> .	<i>Your plate</i> .	<i>Votre verre</i> .	<i>Votre assiette</i> .
<i>My butter</i> .	<i>My cream</i> .	<i>Mon beurre</i> .	<i>Ma crème</i> .
<i>Your volume</i> .	<i>Your leaf</i> .	<i>Votre volume</i> .	<i>Votre feuille</i> .

8. Adjectives agree with their nouns in gender and number.

The second volume.	The second leaf.	Le second volume.	La seconde feuille.
The bad butter.	The bad cream.	Le mauvais beurre.	La mauvaise crème.
The large glasses.	The large plates.	Les grands verres.	Les grandes assiettes.
My inkstands.	My bottles.	Mes encriers.	Mes bouteilles.
Your volumes.	Your leaves.	Vos volumes.	Vos feuilles.
<i>Or.</i>	<i>Also.</i>	<i>Ou.</i>	<i>Aussi.</i>
The first or the second.		Le premier ou le second.	
The glass and the bottle also.		Le verre et la bouteille aussi.	

1. J'ai mon vin et votre bouteille. 2. Avez-vous le deuxième ou le troisième volume? 3. J'ai le deuxième et le troisième aussi. 4. Avez-vous les grands encriers ou les grandes chandelles? 5. J'ai les grands encriers et la mauvaise encre. 6. Avez-vous votre vin? 7. J'ai mon vin et mes verres. 8. Avez-vous vos grandes assiettes? 9. Je les ai. 10. Avez-vous le beurre ou la crème? 11. J'ai le beurre et la crème aussi. 12. Avez-vous le mauvais sucre? 13. Non, monsieur, j'ai le mauvais thé et la mauvaise bière.

1. Have you the first volume or the second? 2. I have the second and the third. 3. Have you the bad flour? 4. Yes, sir, I have it. 5. Have you the bad bread? 6. Yes, madam, I have it. 7. Have you the large bottle? 8. I have the large bottle and the large glass. 9. Have you your plates? 10. Yes, sir, I have my plates and my wine. 11. I have the bad butter; have you the cream? 12. Yes, madam, I have it. 13. Have you the first leaf or the second? 14. I have the first leaf and the second also. 15. I have the large leaves and the large volumes.

\* See Lesson 4, 2.

20 227 8 8 17 17 16 7 16 7 21 7 16 17 16  
troisième, grand, grande, gros, grosse, mau-vaie, mau-vaize, mon, ma, votre, vos, vin,  
bou-teille, verre, as-siette, beurre, crème, vo-lume, fouille, aus-si.

## 4.—QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

1. We have seen (Lesson 3, 2) that the feminine of adjectives is generally formed by adding a silent *e*, as *le mauvais thé*, *la mauvaise bière*; and that when the masculine ends in *e* mute, the feminine is the same, as *le roi coupable*, the guilty king; *la reine coupable*, the guilty queen.

2. Adjectives ending in *el, ell, ien, on, as, os, ot, ôt*, double the final consonant and add *e* mute; as,

*What, which* (adjective).

*Good.*

*Big, coarse* (also large).

## MASCULINE.

*Quel.*

*Bon.*

*Gros.*

## FEMININE.

*Quelle.*

*Bonne.*

*Grosse.*

So *pareil, pareille*, equal; *ancien, ancienne*, ancient; *gras, grasse*, fat; *muet, muette*, mute; *sot, sotte*, foolish.

3. Adjectives ending in *f* change it to *ve*, and those in *se* to *se*, for the feminine, as *elf, élee*, lively; *heureux, heureuse*, happy.

4. Adjectives, as also nouns, ending in *eur*, change these letters, for the feminine, sometimes into *euse*, as *menteur, menteuse*, lying; *riche, actrice*, one who acts; *arrose, pécheur, péchereuse*, sinful. Sometimes by the general rule, as *meilleur, meilleure*, better. For more on this subject, see *Grammatical Rules and Principles*, p. 485-6.

*Small, little; the small one, the little one.* *Petit, le petit. Petite, la petite.*

5. One after an adjective is not to be translated into French. The good (one), *le bon, la bonne*; the big (one), *le gros, la grosse*.

What beef (or ox). What cow.  
The good hat. The good slate.  
The coarse shoe. The coarse boot.  
The large glove. The large chair.  
The little bag. The small trunk.  
Have I? You have.  
What.

Quel bœuf. Quelle vache.  
Le bon chapeau. La bonne ardoise.  
Le gros soulier. La grosse botte.  
Le grand gant. La grande chaise.  
Le petit sac. La petite malle.  
Ai-je? Vous avez.  
Que (qu' before a vowel or a silent h).

6. *What*, belonging to a noun, is *quel*; meaning *what thing*, it is *qua*.

What hat have you?	Quel chapeau avez-vous?
What have you?	Qu'avez-vous?
Have I the good beef?	Ai-je le bon bœuf?
You have it.	Vous l'avez.
Have I the coarse boots?	Ai-je les grosses bottes?
You have them.	Vous les avez.

1. Ai-je la petite vache? 2. Vous l'avez. 3. Ai-je votre ardoise?  
4. Non, monsieur, vous avez mon petit sac. 5. Quels souliers avez-vous? 6. J'ai les bons souliers et les bonnes bottes. 7. Ai-je vos gants? 8. Oui, monsieur, vous les avez. 9. Qu'avez-vous? 10.

<sup>5</sup> kel, <sup>21</sup> bon, <sup>15</sup> bonne, <sup>9</sup> bœuf (pl. bœu/s), <sup>10</sup> men-teur, <sup>8</sup> men-tenze, <sup>11</sup> ac-teur, <sup>8</sup> ac-trice, <sup>9</sup> pé-cheur, <sup>1</sup> pé-che-  
<sup>5</sup> reuse, <sup>1</sup> vache, <sup>1</sup> cha-peau, <sup>16</sup> ar-dolze, <sup>1</sup> sou-lier, <sup>13</sup> botte, <sup>12</sup> gant, <sup>4</sup> chaise, <sup>12</sup> pe-tite, <sup>4</sup> ke, <sup>11</sup> ka-tri-cine,  
<sup>5</sup> mei-lleur, <sup>11</sup> mei-lleure.

J'ai les grandes chaises et les petites malles. 11. Quels bœufs avez-vous? 12. J'ai mes bœufs et mes vaches. 13. Ai-je votre chapeau? 14. Vous l'avez. 15. Ai-je votre ardoise? 16. Non, madame; vous avez votre ardoise et votre livre. 17. Qu'avez-vous? 18. J'ai mon sac et mes gants. 19. Avez-vous la grosse chaise et la petite malle? 20. Je les ai.

1. What have you? 2. I have the shoes and the boots. 3. What shoes have you? 4. I have the good ones. 5. Have I your gloves? 6. No, sir, I have them. 7. What hat have you? 8. I have the good hat and the good boots. 9. What slate have you? 10. I have the big one. 11. Have you the small gloves? 12. Yes, madam, I have them. 13. What cow have you? 14. I have the good cow. 15. What ox have you? 16. I have the large one. 17. Have you the large chair? 18. No, sir, I have the small one. 19. What bag have you? 20. I have the little one. 21. What have you? 22. I have the bag, the chair, and the trunk. 23. What trunk have you? 24. I have the big one. 25. Have I your trunks? 26. No, sir, I have them.

### 5.—CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

#### AVOIR, TO HAVE FIRST AND SECOND PERSON NEGATIVE.

*Not.*

*Ne-pas, ne-point.*

1. *Ne* is placed before the verb, *pas* and *point* after it. *Point* is stronger than *pas*. *Ne* becomes *n'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

Have you not the fork?

I have it not.

Have I not your inkstands?

You have them not.

You have not. I have not.

N'avez-vous pas la fourchette?

Je ne l'ai pas.

N'ai-je pas vos encriers?

Vous ne les avez pas.

Vous n'avez pas. Je n'ai pas.

MASCULINE.

*Un.*

Un crayon.

Un cahier.

Mon père.

Un frère.

Joli, le joli.

Le couteau.

Le coton.

FEMININE.

*Une.*

Une salière.

Une page.

Ma mère.

Une sœur.

Jolie, la jolie.

La cuiller.

La laine.

*A, one.*

A pencil.

A copy-book.

My father.

A brother.

Pretty, the pretty one.

The knife.

The cotton.

A salt-cellar.

A page.

My mother.

A sister.

The spoon.

The wool.

1 16 14 24 22 6 12 21 1 12 7 1 12 5 1 7 7 7 11 15 12 16 12  
pas, point, un, une, cra-yon, sa-lière, ca-lier, page, père, mère, frère, sœur, jo-li, jo-lie,  
18 17 24 4 5 18 21 7 14 12 7  
cou-teau, cu-iller, co-ton, laine, cin-ki-ème.

*Of, from.*

I have a leaf of my book.

What have I?

You have the pencil of my father, or  
my father's pencil.*De, d' before a vowel or a silent h.*

J'ai une feuille de mon livre.

Qu'ai-je ?

Vous avez le crayon de mon père.

2. The English possessive case is always translated, as in this last phrase, with *de* before the possessor. The French have no possessive case.

My sister's glove (the glove of my sister). Le gant de ma sœur.

*Edouard's book. Henry's pen.*

My father's oxen.

My mother's cows.

Have you not my brothers' copy-books?

I have not your sisters' spoons.

Have I not your salt-cellar?

Yes, sir, you have it.

Le livre d'Edouard. La plume d'Henri.

Les bœufs de mon père.

Les vaches de ma mère.

N'avez-vous pas les cahiers de mes frères ?

Je n'ai pas les cuillers de vos sœurs.

N'ai-je pas votre salière ?

Si, monsieur, vous l'avez.

1. N'avez-vous pas la première page de mon livre? 2. J'ai la première page et la seconde aussi. 3. Avez-vous mon joli couteau? 4. Je ne l'ai pas. 5. Avez-vous le coton ou la laine? 6. J'ai le coton, je n'ai pas la laine. 7. N'ai-je pas votre crayon? 8. Vous ne l'avez pas. 9. N'avez-vous pas la salière de ma mère? 10. Je ne l'ai pas. 11. N'ai-je pas les cahiers de vos frères? 12. Non, monsieur, vous ne les avez pas. 13. N'avez-vous pas le couteau de mon père? 14. Si, monsieur, je l'ai. 15. N'avez-vous pas le couteau et la cuiller d'Edouard? 16. Si, madame, je les ai. 17. N'ai-je pas un bon crayon? 18. Vous avez un bon crayon et une bonne plume. 19. J'ai le coton d'Edouard et la laine d'Henri.

1. What have you? 2. I have a salt-cellar and a spoon. 3. What salt-cellar have you? 4. I have the salt-cellar of Henry. 5. Have you not my copy-book? 6. I have not your copy-book, I have your pencil. 7. What leaf have you? 8. I have the first leaf. 9. Have you not the third page? 10. I have not the third, I have the first and the second. 11. Have you not the cotton of my father? 12. I have not the cotton, I have the wool. 13. Have I not your brother's knife? 14. Yes, sir, and you have the pretty spoons. 15. Have I not your father's hat? 16. No, sir, you have it not. 17. Have you not the gloves of your mother? 18. Yes, sir, I have my mother's gloves, my brother's pencil, and my sister's pen. 19. Have you not the wool? 20. No, sir, I have it not. 21. I have my sister's pretty book.



## 6.—SIXIÈME LEÇON.

## THE SAME CONTINUED.

*Have I it? Have I it not?* *L'ai-je? Ne l'ai-je pas?*  
*Have you it? Have you it not?* *L'avez-vous? Ne l'avez-vous?*  
*Have you them? Have you them not?* *Les avez-vous? Ne les avez-vous pas?*

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The man.	The woman, wife.	L'homme.	La femme.
A son.	A young lady.	Un fils.	Une demoiselle.
The boy.	The daughter, girl.	Le garçon.	La fille.

1. *Boy*, meaning child, is *petit garçon* in French; *boys*, meaning young men, is *jeunes gens*. *Garçon* means also *servant, fellow, bachelor*, etc. *Girl*, also meaning child, is *petite fille*; meaning young lady, is *jeune fille*. *Fille* alone, not meaning daughter, is *servant girl, unmarried lady*, etc.

<i>This, that.</i>		<i>Ce.</i>	<i>Cette.</i>
<i>These, those.</i>		<i>Ces.</i>	<i>Ces.</i>
That boy's hat.		Le chapeau de ce petit garçon.	
That girl's book.		Le livre de cette petite fille.	
The stick.	Miss.	Le bâton.	Mademoiselle.
The button.	The lady.	Le bouton.	La dame.
A cousin.		Un cousin.	Une cousine.
A friend.		Un ami.	Une amie.
The carpet.	The saw.	Le tapis.	La scie.

2. *Ce* becomes *cet* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

This man.	That friend.	Cet homme.	Cet ami, cette amie.
These men.	Those friends.	Ces hommes.	Ces amis, ces amies.
<i>Of the, from the</i> (singular).		<i>Du.</i>	<i>De la.</i>
<i>Of the, from the</i> (plural).		<i>Des.</i>	<i>Des.</i>

3. *Du* is compounded of *de la*, and *des* of *de les*. Both *du* and *de la* become *de l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

The stick of the boy.	Le bâton du petit garçon.
The woman's carpet.	Le tapis de la femme.
The buttons of the young ladies.	Les boutons des demoiselles.
The man's saw.	La scie de l'homme.
A cousin of your sister's friend.	Un cousin de l'amie de votre sœur.

1. Quel bâton avez-vous? 2. J'ai le bâton du fils de cette femme. 3. Je n'ai pas le livre de cette petite fille; l'avez-vous? 4. Non, mademoiselle, je ne l'ai pas. 5. Je n'ai pas la scie de cet homme; ne l'avez-vous pas? 6. Si, monsieur, je l'ai. 7. Qu'avez-vous? 8. J'ai les gants de cette demoiselle et le chapeau du fils de votre ami. 9. Je n'ai pas les jolis boutons; les avez-vous?

12 127 16 1 12 4 20 5 1 21 12 5 7 3 21 1 0 20  
 si-xième, hom-me, fem-me, fils, de-moi-zelle, gar-çon, fille, cot-te, ces, bâ-ton, made-moi-  
 zelle, bou-ton, dame, cou-zin, cou-zine, a-mi, a-mie, ta-pis, scie, des.

10. Non, mademoiselle, je n'ai pas les jolis boutons, j'ai le tapis de cette dame. 11. N'avez-vous pas les plumes de la petite fille? 12. Non, mademoiselle, je ne les ai pas. 13. Qu'avez-vous? 14. J'ai les cahiers des demoiselles, le bâton du petit garçon et le crayon de l'amie de votre cousine. 15. N'avez-vous pas le tapis de cette dame? 16. Si, mademoiselle, et j'ai ces jolis boutons aussi. 17. Vous avez le livre du fils de cette femme, et j'ai les papiers des amies de votre cousine.

1. I have not the stick of this man; have you it not? 2. No, sir, I have the book of the young lady. 3. Have you the pencils of this woman's son? 4. No, miss, I have them not. 5. Have you not the pencil of the (little) boy? 6. No, sir, I have the pretty button of this (little) girl. 7. You have the oxen of these men; have you not the letters of these ladies? 8. I have them not. 9. What saw have you? 10. I have the saw of the friend of your cousin. 11. Have you not the carpet of the daughter of my cousin? 12. Yes, sir, and I have the slates of the (little) boys. 13. What leaf have you? 14. I have the leaf of that large volume. 15. I have not my cousin's book; have you it? 16. I have it not. 17. Have you not the man's glove? 18. No, miss, I have my fruit and my butter.

## 7.—SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## A VOIR, TO HAVE. THIRD PERSON SINGULAR.

Who. Has.

Qui. A.

He, it. She, it.

Il. Elle.

Has he? He has.

A-t-il? Il a.

1. When the verb ends with a vowel, and the subject-pronoun following begins with a vowel, *t* is inserted for better sound.

Has she not? She has not.

N'a-t-elle pas? Elle n'a pas.

Has she it? She has it.

L'a-t-elle? Elle l'a.

Has he it not? He has it not.

Ne l'a-t-il pas? Il ne l'a pas.

MASCULINE.

FEMININE.

The leather. The porcelain, china.

Le cuir.

La porcelaine.

The coat. The dress, gown.

L'habit.

La robe.

This cloth. This silk.

Ce drap.

Cette soie.

That gold. That watch.

Cet or.

Cette montre.

That silver, or }  
money. } The gold watch.

Cet argent.

La montre d'or.

A ring. A finger- ring.	A ring (with jewels).	Un anneau.	Une bague.
The steel.	A cravat.	L'acier.	Une cravate.
The iron.	A pin.	Le fer.	Une épingle.
Who has?	The gentleman has.	Qui a?	Le monsieur

2. When *monsieur*, *madame*, *mademoiselle*, denote a person present and supposed to hear the speaker, they omit the article and demonstrative pronouns *ce*, *cette*, in French.

Who has the good cloth?

Qui a le bon drap?

The gentleman has it.

Monsieur l'a (if present); (if not present), Le monsieur l'a.

The lady has it. The young lady has it. Madame l'a. Mademoiselle l'a.

3. We have seen that *yes*, in answer to a negative interrogation, is *et*, and not *oui*. Such questions are often in the form of affirmation in French, with the interrogative accent.

You have not my watch?

Vous n'avez pas ma montre?

Yes, sir, I have it.

Si, monsieur, je l'ai.

I have not your cravats?

Je n'ai pas vos cravates?

Yes, sir, you have them.

Si, monsieur, vous les avez.

1. Qui a le bon cuir? 2. Monsieur l'a. 3. Qui a la jolie porcelaine? 4. Votre mère l'a. 5. A-t-elle la jolie robe? 6. Elle ne l'a pas. 7. Qui a l'habit de drap? 8. Mon père l'a. 9. Qui a la robe de soie? 10. Cette dame l'a. 11. A-t-elle le crayon? 12. Non, mademoiselle, elle ne l'a pas. 13. N'a-t-elle pas l'anneau d'or? 14. Elle a l'anneau d'or et une jolie bague. 15. Qui a le couteau d'acier? 16. L'ami d'Edouard a le couteau d'acier et le crayon d'argent. 17. N'a-t-il pas les jolies cravates? 18. Si, monsieur, et il a les épingles d'or aussi. 19. Qui a les souliers de cuir? 20. Ce monsieur les a. 21. Qu'avez-vous? 22. J'ai la jolie porcelaine, le bon habit de drap et cette soie. 23. Qui a mon argent? 24. Mon frère a votre argent, votre jolie bague et la grosse épingle d'or.

1. Have you the small pins? 2. No, madam, the gentleman has them. 3. Has he the shoes of leather? 4. No, sir, he has them not. 5. Who has the plates of porcelain? 6. The lady has them. 7. Has she the dress of silk? 8. She has the dress of silk, the watch of gold, and the pretty finger-ring. 9. Who has the coat of cloth? 10. The son of the gentleman has the coat and the pantaloons. 11. Has he not the watch of silver? 12. He has it not. 13. Has he the ring of gold? 14. He has it. 15. Has he the pretty cravats? 16. Yes, sir, he has them. 17. Has he

not the boots of leather? 18. No, madam, he has them not. 19. Who has the knife of steel? 20. My cousin has the knife of steel, the plate of porcelain, and the coat of cloth. 21. I have the pretty cravats, the buttons, and the good pins. 22. Who has the good silk? 23. The lady has it; the gentleman has it not.

## 8.—HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## INTERROGATIONS, WITH A NOUN FOR SUBJECT.

1. In questions, with a noun for subject, in French, the subject is mentioned first, and then the question is asked with the pronoun. Thus, instead of *Has the man? Has the woman?* etc., as in English, the French say, *The man has he? The woman has she?* etc.

Has the man?	L'homme a-t-il?
Has the woman?	La femme a-t-elle?
Has my brother your money?	Mon frère a-t-il votre argent?
Has that lady the silk?	Cette dame a-t-elle la soie?
Has your friend the gold?	Votre ami a-t-il l'or?

2. If, however, an interrogative word, as *que, quel, où*, where, *quand*, when, *comment*, how, *combien*, how much, etc., be used, the question must begin with the interrogative in French, as in English.

What has your friend?	Qu'a votre ami?
What has that great man?	Qu'a ce grand homme?
What ring has your cousin?	{ Quel anneau a votre cousin? or, Quel anneau votre cousin a-t-il?

3. But, when having asked about several persons or things successively, we change to another, we may begin the question with the subject; as,

What has your brother?	Qu'a votre frère?
He has the book.	Il a le livre.
What has your sister?	Qu'a votre sœur?
She has the paper.	Elle a le papier.
And your cousin, what has he?	Et votre cousin, qu'a-t-il?

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The horse.	The goat.	Le cheval.	La chèvre.
The mutton, sheep.		Le mouton.	La brebis.
A chicken.	A hen.	Un poulet.	Une poule.
The cabbage.	A peach.	Le chou.	Une pêche.
A servant.	A mule.	Un domestique.	Une mule.
The captain.	A pear.	Le capitaine.	Une poire.
This cloak.	This cherry.	Ce manteau.	Cette cerise.
That wood.	That vest, jacket.	Ce bois.	Cette veste.

20 12 13 7 4 1 15 21 4 12 10 6 18 8 15 5 13 22  
 huit-tième, che-val, chè-vre, mou-ton, bre-bis, pou-let, poule, pé-che, do-mes-tika, mule,  
 1 12 7 20 8 17 15 20 6  
 ca-pi-taine, poire, man-teau, cerise, bois, veste.

*Handsome, fine.**Old.*

His, her, its (singular).

His, her, its (plural).

*Beau.\***Vieux.**Son.**Ses.**Belle.**Vieille.**Sa.**Ses*

4. *Son, sa, ses*, like all possessive adjectives, agree with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor.

Her son. His daughter. His or her      Son fils. Sa fille. Ses plumes.  
pens.

1. Le capitaine a-t-il son cheval? 2. Il l'a. 3. Le domestique n'a-t-il pas la chèvre? 4. Il a la chèvre et la brebis. 5. Cet homme n'a-t-il pas son mouton? 6. Il a son mouton, ses poulets et ses poules. 7. Le fils de cette femme n'a-t-il pas son chou? 8. Si, monsieur, il a son chou et ses pêches. 9. A-t-il la mule du capitaine? 10. Il a sa mule et son cheval. 11. Le domestique a-t-il vos fruits? 12. Oui, mademoiselle, il a mes pêches, mes poires et mes cerises. 13. Quel manteau a le capitaine? 14. Il a le manteau de drap. 15. Qu'a le vieux domestique? 16. Il a le beau manteau et la belle veste. 17. Quel bois a-t-il? 18. Il a mon bois. 19. Votre domestique a-t-il la vieille mule? 20. Il a la vieille mule et la vieille brebis. 21. J'ai le poulet et la poule.

1. Has not the captain his horse? 2. He has his horse, his mule, and his goat. 3. Has the old servant his sheep? He has his sheep, his goat, his hens, and his chickens. 4. Who has the big cabbage? 5. My brother has it. 6. What fruit has he? 7. He has the peaches, the pears, and the cherries. 8. Has he the fine cherries? 9. Yes, madam, he has the fine cherries, the fine peaches, and the fine pears. 10. Has the wife of the captain her hens? 11. She has her hens and her chickens. 12. What vest has your cousin? 13. He has the handsome vest and the handsome cloak. 14. Has the son of that man his wood? 15. He has it. 16. What have you? 17. I have the handsome vest, the old cloak, and my good hat. 18. Has the brother of your friend the handsome hat? 19. He has the handsome hat and the old cloak.

---

\* *Beau* applies rather to what is noble and imposing; *joli*, to what is delicate, small, and regular.

## 9.—NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

## AVOIR, TO HAVE. FIRST PERSON PLURAL.

*Have we? We have.**Have we not? We have not.**Have we it? We have it.**Have we it not? We have it not.**Avons-nous? Nous avons.**N'avons-nous pas? Nous n'avons pas.**L'avons-nous? Nous l'avons.**Ne l'avons-nous pas? Nous ne l'avons pas.*

## MASCULINE.

## FEMININE.

*The pantaloons.**The linen.**Le pantalon.**La toile.**The apron.**The pluin.**Le tablier.**La prune.**The candlestick.**The lamp.**Le chandelier.**La lampe.**The waistcoat.**The flower.**Le gilet.**La fleur.**The cap.**The rose.**Le bonnet.**La rose.**The dog.**Le chien.**La chienne.**The coal (fossil).**The tulip.**Le charbon (de terre).**La tulipe.**The charcoal.**The muslin.**Le charbon (de bois).**La mousseline.**A biscuit.**A potato.**Un biscuit.**Une pomme de terre.**Our (singular).**Notre.**Notre.**Our (plural).**Nos.**Nos.**Have we our caps?**Avons-nous nos bonnets?**We have them.**Nous les avons.**Have we the coarse pantaloons?**Avons-nous le gros pantalon?**We have them.**Nous l'avons.**Have we not the apron?**N'avons-nous pas le tablier?**We have it not.**Nous ne l'avons pas.*

1. The name of the material of which any thing consists may be used as an adjective in English, and placed before the name of the thing; as, a *gold watch*, a *leather shoe*. This cannot be done in French, but the name of the material is placed after that of the thing, with *de* between them; as, a *watch of gold*, a *shoe of leather*, etc. Thus,

*A silver candlestick.**Un chandelier d'argent.**A gold ring.**Un anneau d'or.**His leather shoes.**Ses souliers de cuir.**Our porcelain dishes.**Nos plats de porcelaine.**What has that little girl?**Qu'a cette petite fille?**She has her silk apron.**Elle a son tablier de soie.*

1. Quel fruits avons-nous? 2. Nous avons les poires, les cerises et les prunes. 3. Avons-nous le bois ou le charbon? 4. Nous avons le bois et le charbon. 5. Quel gilet votre frère a-t-il? 6. Il a le gilet de soie. 7. Quelles fleurs votre sœur a-t-elle? 8. Elle

9 127 1 21 10 3 1 21 30 1 12 5 22 8 4 12 5 3 12 5  
 neu-vièma, a-vons, nous, pan-ta-lon, toile, ta-bli-er, prune, chan-de-li-er, lampe, gi-let,  
 fleur, bon-net, roze, chien, chienne, char-bon, terre, tu-lipe, mouss-e-lina, bis-cuit, pomme,  
 notre, nos.

a les roses et les tulipes. 9. Le garçon a-t-il le bonnet de cuir? 10. Non, monsieur, il a le bonnet de drap. 11. Qu'a le vieux chien? 12. Il a le biscuit du domestique. 13. Quelles lampes a le capitaine? 14. Il a les lampes et les chandeliers d'argent. 15. Qu'a cette femme? 16. Elle a notre toile et notre mousseline. 17. La chienne n'a-t-elle pas le biscuit? 18. Si, elle a le biscuit et la pomme de terre. 19. Quelle lampe le domestique a-t-il? 20. Il a la lampe d'argent. 21. N'a-t-il pas son charbon? 22. Non, il ne l'a pas.

1. What pantaloons have we? 2. We have the cloth pantaloons. 3. Have we not our linen? 4. Yes, sir, we have our linen and our silk. 5. What plums has the little boy? 6. He has our plums. 7. Have we the silk waistcoats? 8. We have the silk waistcoats and the cloth pantaloons. 9. What flowers has that girl? 10. She has her roses and our tulips. 11. Has she not the lady's flowers? 12. No, miss, she has them not. 13. Has that young girl the handsome muslin? 14. She has the handsome muslin and the handsome linen. 15. What has your father's dog? 16. He has the little boy's biscuit and the big potato. 17. What aprons have we? 18. We have the silk apron and the cloth cap. 19. What potato has the little boy? 20. He has the good potato and the good biscuit. 21. Have you the lady's roses? 22. Yes, miss, I have her roses and her tulips. 23. Have we not the silver candlesticks? 24. We have not the silver candlesticks, we have the silver plates.

## 10.—DIXIÈME LEÇON.

## AVOIR, TO HAVE THIRD PERSON PLURAL.

*They.**Have they? They have.**Ils (mas.). Elles (fem.).**Ont-ils (or elles)? Ils (or elles) ont.**Have they not? They have not.**N'ont-ils pas? Ils n'ont pas.**Have they it? They have it.**L'ont-elles? Elles l'ont.**Have they it not? They have it not.**Ne l'ont-ils pas? Ils ne l'ont pas.**Have they them? They have them not.**Les ont-elles? Elles ne les ont pas.**The neighbor.*

MASCULINE.

*Le voisin.*

FEMININE.

*La voisine.**The cook.**Le cuisinier.**La cuisinière.*

1. Nouns often form the feminine in the same manner as adjectives, and in both, when the masculine ends in *er*, the feminine takes a grave accent on the *a*.

A scholar (school child).	Un <i>écolier</i> .*	Une <i>écolière</i> .
A pupil or scholar (of any age).	Un <i>élève</i> .	Une <i>élève</i> .
A stranger, foreigner.	Un <i>étranger</i> .	Une <i>étrangère</i> .
That countryman.      That country- woman.	Ce <i>paysan</i> .	Cette <i>paysanne</i> .
The shopkeeper, merchant.	Le <i>marchand</i> .	La <i>marchande</i> .
The merchant.      The young lady.	Le <i>négociant</i> .	La <i>demoiselle</i> .
An egg.      A key.	Un <i>œuf</i> .	Une <i>clef</i> .
The tobacco.      The soup.	Le <i>tabac</i> .	La <i>soupe</i> .
Excellent.	Excellent.	Excellent.
Last.	Dernier.	Dernière.
Their (sing.).	Leur.	Leur.
Their (plur.).	Leurs.	Leurs.
The bed.      His bed.	Le <i>lit</i> .	Son <i>lit</i> .

2. *Beau* becomes *bel*, and *vieux* commonly becomes *vieil*, before a vowel or a silent *A*.  
The handsome gold. The handsome silver.      Le *bel* or.      Le *bel* argent.

The old bird. The old feather.      Le *vieil* oiseau.      La *vieille* plume.  
They have their fruit and their flowers.      Ils ont leurs fruits et leurs fleurs.  
You have a handsome coat.      Vous avez un *bel* habit.

1. Quel *tabac* les voisins ont-ils? 2. Ils ont leur *tabac*. 3. Quels *œufs* les cuisinières ont-elles? 4. Elles ont leurs *œufs*. 5. Les *écoliers* n'ont-ils pas leurs *plumes*? 6. Non, monsieur, ils ont les *plumes* des *marchands*. 7. Les *écolières* n'ont-elles pas leurs *crayons*? 8. Elles ne les ont pas. 9. Ces *étrangers* ont-ils leur *argent*? 10. Non, monsieur, ils ont l'*argent* du *négociant*. 11. Cet homme a-t-il le *livre* de son *élève*? 12. Non, monsieur, il a les *œufs* du *paysan*. 13. Qu'a cette *paysanne*? 14. Elle a le *beau* *drap* de la *marchande*. 15. Ces *demoiselles* ont-elles leurs *clefs*? 16. Elles les ont. 17. Quels *livres* ces *demoiselles* ont-elles? 18. Elles ont leurs *excellents* *livres*. 19. Les *cuisiniers* ont-ils leur

\* We often use the term *scholar*, or *good scholar*, for a learned man. The translation of that in French is *savant*. *Savante*, applied to ladies, generally means blue-stocking. *Student*, as of law or medicine, is *étudiant*.

† Also, *fol*, crazy, *mou*, soft, and *nouveau*, new, before a vowel or a silent *A*, become *fol*, *mol*, *nouvel*, and from this form ending in *l*, these five adjectives form their feminine; as, *bel habit*, fine coat, *belle robe*, fine dress; *fol espoir*, foolish hope, *folle conduite*, foolish conduct; *mol édreton*, soft elder down, *molle aisance*, soft ease; *nouvel arbre*, new tree, *nouvelle table*, new table.

é 15 17 5 é 15 17 7 é 7 é 8 é 8 é 8 7 é 12 3 é 12 1 é 1 8  
é-co-lier, é-co-lière, é-lève, é-tran-ger, é-tran-gère, pa-y-zan, pa-y-zanne, mar-chand,  
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43 44 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53 54 55 56 57 58 59 60 61 62 63 64 65 66 67 68 69 70 71 72 73 74 75 76 77 78 79 80 81 82 83 84 85 86 87 88 89 90 91 92 93 94 95 96 97 98 99 100  
mar-chande, né-go-ciant, œuf (pl. œufs), clef, ta-bac, soupe, ek-cel-lent, ek-cel-lente, der-nier, der-nière, leur, leurs, lit, vi-eil, oi-zeau.



excellente soupe? 20. Ils ont leur excellente soupe et leur excellent café. 21. L'élève de votre frère a la dernière feuille de son livre. 22. Quel lit avez-vous? 23. J'ai le petit lit.

1. What have the countrywomen? 2. They have their eggs and their soup. 3. What have the merchants? 4. They have the keys of the shopkeepers. 5. Have they their excellent tobacco? 6. No, sir, they have the keys of the neighbor and the cook's soup. 7. What have the pupils of the captain? 8. They have the apples of their neighbor and the cook's tea. 9. Has that scholar the second volume or the last? 10. He has the last volume. 11. What has that foreigner? 12. He has a handsome horse and a pretty little gold watch. 13. Who has the handsome bird? 14. My old friend has the handsome bird and the handsome silver. 15. Have those foreigners the countrymen's fruit? 16. They have the countrymen's fruit and the merchant's flowers. 17. What has that little boy? 18. He has the old coat and the handsome egg. 19. What flowers have those scholars? 20. They have their handsome roses and their handsome tulips. 21. What have we? 22. We have the handsome flowers. 23. Have we not our candlesticks? 24. We have our candlesticks and our handsome inkstand. 25. Have you the big bed or the little one? 26. I have the big bed.

## 11.—ONZIÈME LEÇON.

### PLURAL OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

1. We have seen that the plural of nouns and adjectives is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular. To this rule there are many exceptions.

2. Those ending in *s*, *es*, or *x*, are unchanged in the plural.

The *nut*. The nuts.

La *noix*. Les noix.

The old carpet. The old carpets.

Le vieux tapis. Les vieux tapis.

The coarse stocking. The coarse stockings.

Le gros bas. Les gros bas.

3. Those ending in *ai* change this termination into *aux* for the plural.

The *general*. The generals.

Le *général*. Les *généraux*.

The *corporal*. The corporals.

Le *caporal*. Les *caporaux*.

The *animal*. The animals.

L'*animal*. Les *animaux*.

4. Those in *au*, and nouns in *eu*, take *u* in the plural.\*

\* For exceptions to these rules, see *Grammatical Rules*.

21 12 5    20    5    5    1    5    5    17    1    16    1    1    16    17    1    12    1    1    12    17  
on-zième, noix, gé-né-ral, gé-né-raux, cap-o-ral, cap-o-raux, a-ni-mal, a-ni-maux.

The cloak.	The cloaks.	Le manteau.	Les manteaux.
The handsome hat.	The handsome hats.	Le beau chapeau.	Les beaux chapeaux.
The handsome bird.	The handsome birds.	Le bel oiseau.	Les beaux oiseaux.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
A store.	A house.	Un magasin.	Une maison.
The whip.	The maid (servant).	Le fouet.	La servante.
That widower.	That widow.	Ce veuf.	Cette veuve.
Honest.		Honnête.	Honnête.
Rich.		Riche.	Riche.
Poor.		Pauvre.	Pauvre.

5. *Pauvre* placed before the noun means pitiable; after it, it means poor in property.

Ugly.	Vilain, laid.	Vilaine, laide.
A cake.	A carriage.	Un gâteau. Une voiture.
What have the corporals?	Qu'ont les caporaux?	
They have the horses of the generals.	Ils ont les chevaux des généraux.	
Who has the apples and the cakes?	Qui a les pommes et les gâteaux?	
Those boys (young men) have them.	Ces jeunes gens les ont.	
Who has the ugly animals?	Qui a les vilains animaux?	
That poor widower has them.	Ce pauvre veuf les a.	

1. Qu'a cette riche veuve? 2. Elle a la belle voiture. 3. Qu'a ce petit garçon? 4. Il a le fouet et les noix. 5. Quels animaux ces paysans ont-ils? 6. Ils ont les beaux chevaux. 7. Cette servante n'a-t-elle pas les gros gâteaux? 8. Si, elle les a. 9. Cet homme riche n'a-t-il pas une grande maison? 10. Il a une grande maison et un grand magasin. 11. Qu'a cette servante? 12. Elle a le fouet du général. 13. Quels chevaux ces caporaux ont-ils? 14. Ils ont leurs vilains chevaux. 15. Cette riche veuve a-t-elle son argent? 16. Oui, mademoiselle, et elle a l'argent de ses filles. 17. Qu'a cet honnête homme? 18. Il a son grand magasin. 19. Qui a la belle voiture? 20. Ce veuf a la belle voiture et les beaux chevaux. 21. Le cuisinier a ses gâteaux et ses fruits.

1. What has the maid-servant? 2. She has the cook's cakes and the countrywoman's chickens. 3. Has the cook your cakes? 4. He has my cakes and my nuts. 5. Have the maid-servants the soup? 6. They have the soup and the potatoes. 7. Have the corporals the keys of their trunks? 8. They have them. 9. What animals have we? 10. We have our horses and our sheep. 11.

<sup>5</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>18</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup>  
<sup>12</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>22</sup>  
 bel, oi-zeau, ma-ga-zin, mai-son, fou-et, ser-vante, veuf, veuve, hon-nête, riche, pauvre,  
 vi-lain, vi-laine, laid, laide, gâ-teau, voi-ture.

Have we not the handsome bird? 12. We have it not. 13. What have we? 14. We have the general's whip, and the money of that young widow. 15. Has that honest man his papers? 16. He has them not. 17. What birds has the poor man? 18. He has the handsome birds. 19. Who has the rich man's horses? 20. My brothers have them. 21. Have they the handsome horses or the ugly ones? 22. They have the ugly ones. 23. Have those servants their fruit? 24. They have it. 25. What candlestick have we? 26. We have the old candlestick.

## 12—DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

## SECOND PERSON SINGULAR.

<i>Hast thou? Thou hast.</i>	<i>As-tu? Tu as.</i>
<i>Hast thou not? Thou hast not.</i>	<i>N'as-tu pas? Tu n'as pas.</i>
<i>Hast thou them? Thou hast them.</i>	<i>Les as-tu? Tu les as.</i>
<i>Hast thou it not? Thou hast it not.</i>	<i>Ne l'as-tu pas? Tu ne l'as pas.</i>
<i>Thy (singular).</i>	<i>Ton (mas.). Ta (fem.).</i>
<i>Thy (plural).</i>	<i>Tes (mas.). Tes (fem.).</i>

1. The second person singular (*tu, ton, etc.*) is considerably more used in French than in English. It is used, first, to denote great intimacy and endearment; secondly, as in English, in the solemn and sublime style; thirdly, to the Supreme Being, and to high dignitaries; and sometimes, in speaking to inferiors, and to show contempt.

When respect or civility are to be expressed, the second person plural, or the third person, with *monseigneur, madame, mademoiselle, etc.*, must be used. (See Lesson 16, 3.)

Thou hast thy pen; hast thou thy paper and thy books? I have them. Tu as ta plume; as-tu ton papier et tes livres? Je les ai.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The <i>snuff</i> .	The <i>napkin</i> .	Le <i>tabac à priser</i> .	La <i>serviette</i> .
The <i>soap</i> .	A <i>pair</i> .	Le <i>savon</i> .	Une <i>paire</i> .
A ( <i>school</i> ) <i>exercise</i> .	A <i>brush</i> .	Un <i>thème</i> .	Une <i>brosse</i> .
A <i>relation, relative</i> .		Un <i>parent</i> .	Une <i>parente</i> .
The <i>ham</i> .	The <i>street</i> .	Le <i>jambon</i> .	La <i>rue</i> .
A <i>gun</i> .	A <i>plank, board</i> .	Un <i>fusil</i> .	Une <i>planche</i> .
<i>Wicked</i> .		<i>Méchant</i> .	<i>Méchante</i> .
The <i>best</i> .		Le <i>meilleur</i> .	La <i>meilleure</i> .
My <i>brother-in-law</i> .	My <i>sister-in-law</i> .	Mon <i>beau-frère</i> .	Ma <i>belle-sœur</i> .
<i>Here</i> .	<i>On</i> .	<i>Ici</i> .	<i>Sur</i> .
The <i>floor</i> .	On the <i>floor</i> .	Le <i>plancher</i> .	Sur le <i>plancher</i> .
My <i>relation's carriage</i> .		La <i>voiture de mon parent</i> .	
These <i>guns</i> .	These <i>plank</i> .	Ces <i>fusils</i> .	Ces <i>planches</i> .

don-zième, as, ton, tes, pri-zer, ser-vi-ette, as-vo-n, paire, thème, brosse, pa-rent, pa-rente, jam-bon, rue, fu-zil, planche, mé-chant, mé-chante, meill-eur, meill-eure, i-ci, plan-cher.

The gentleman has my knife.  
 Who has your gun?  
 This gentleman has it here.  
 Those gentlemen have it not.  
 Has the lady her book?  
 The young lady has it.  
 We have the gentleman's brush.

Monsieur a mon couteau.  
 Qui a votre fusil?  
 Monsieur l'a ici.  
 Ces messieurs ne l'ont pas.  
 Madame a-t-elle son livre?  
 Mademoiselle l'a.  
 Nous avons la brosse de monsieur.

1. Votre beau-frère a-t-il le tabac à priser? 2. Il l'a. 3. Monsieur, a-t-il une serviette? 4. Monsieur a une serviette et une assiette. 5. Qu'a mademoiselle? 6. Elle a le savon, la brosse et une paire de souliers. 7. Ces messieurs ont-ils leurs thèmes? 8. Ils ne les ont pas. 9. Qu'a votre parent? 10. Il a le jambon et les pommes de terre. 11. Ces dames ont-elles leurs fleurs? 12. Elles les ont ici sur la table. 13. Qu'a ce méchant homme ici? 14. Il a une petite planche. 15. As-tu le meilleur fusil? 16. Je l'ai ici sur le plancher. 17. Qu'a votre belle-sœur? 18. Elle a son mouchoir et sa brosse. 19. Qui a le tabac à priser? 20. Votre parent l'a. 21. Qu'a cette petite fille? 22. Elle a la serviette, le savon et une paire de gants. 23. Tu as ton crayon; n'as-tu pas tes cahiers aussi? 24. Je les ai.

1. Hast thou thy exercises? 2. I have them. 3. Who has the best ham? 4. The shopkeeper has it. 5. Has that wicked man the plank? 6. He has it here on the floor. 7. Hast thou not the best gun? 8. No, sir, my brother-in-law has it. 9. Has your sister-in-law the brush? 10. She has it. 11. Who has the best soap? 12. My relation has the best soap and the best ham. 13. Has your brother-in-law the best exercise? 14. No, sir, my sister-in-law has the best. 15. Has the gentleman his snuff? 16. He has it here in this paper. 17. What has your relation? 18. She has the napkin, the brush, and the handsome gloves. 19. Hast thou the wicked animal? 20. No, madam, my relation has him. 21. What has that boy (servant)? 22. He has a pair of boots and a little plank. 23. Has he his shoes here? 24. He has them here on the floor. 25. Have these gentlemen their gloves? 26. These young ladies have them. 27. Has the young lady her gloves? 28. The lady has them. Hast thou thy pencil? I have it.

## 13.—TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

## ÊTRE, TO BE. FIRST AND SECOND PERSONS.

<i>Are you? I am.</i>	<i>Êtes-vous? Je suis.</i>
<i>Are you not? I am not.</i>	<i>N'êtes-vous pas? Je ne suis pas.</i>
<i>We are. We are not.</i>	<i>Nous sommes. Nous ne sommes pas.</i>
<i>Where? There. In.</i>	<i>Où? Là. Dans.</i>
<i>People, persons, men.</i>	<i>Gens.</i>

*Gens* has the adjectives before it generally feminine, those after it masculine.

Young people, young men.	Les jeunes gens.
Honest persons, honest men.	Les honnêtes gens.

1. *People*, meaning a people or nation, is *peuple*.

2. When *vous* refers to but one, the adjectives, nouns, and pronouns belonging to it are singular; when it refers to more than one, they are plural.

<i>Are you poor? I am poor.</i>	<i>Êtes-vous pauvre? Je suis pauvre.</i>
<i>Are you not our friends?</i>	<i>N'êtes-vous pas nos amis?</i>
<i>We are your friends.</i>	<i>Nous sommes vos amis.</i>

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>A handkerchief. The yard.</i>	<i>Un mouchoir.</i>	<i>La cour.</i>

## PLURAL OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

3. Nouns compounded of a substantive and adjective, change both for the plural.

Her brother-in-law.	Her sister-in-law.	Son beau-frère.	Sa belle-sœur.
Her brothers-in-law.	Her sisters-in-law.	Ses beaux-frères.	Ses belles-sœurs.

4. The three following are compounded of a possessive adjective and a noun.

Sir, gentleman.	Sirs, gentlemen.	Monsieur* (sing.).	Messieurs (pl.).
Madam.	Ladies.	Madame,	" Mesdames,
Miss.	Misses.	Mademoiselle,	" Mesdemoiselles,

5. *Steur*, *dame*, and *demoiselle*, are not used without the prefix in addressing persons, nor in titles.

6. Nouns compounded of two substantives without a preposition, take the form of the plural with both; as,

<i>The cauliflower.</i>	<i>The cauliflowers.</i>	<i>Le chou-fleur.</i>	<i>Les choux-fleurs.</i>
-------------------------	--------------------------	-----------------------	--------------------------

7. Nouns compounded of two substantives joined by a preposition, take the form of the plural in the first only; as,

<i>The potato.</i>	<i>The potatoes.</i>	<i>La pomme de terre.</i>	<i>Les pommes de terre.</i>
--------------------	----------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------

8. Nouns compounded of a substantive and adverb, take the form of the plural in the substantive only; as,

<i>The fore-runner.</i>	<i>The fore-runners.</i>	<i>L'avant-coureur.</i>	<i>Les avant-coueurs.</i>
-------------------------	--------------------------	-------------------------	---------------------------

\* *Monsieur* is compounded of *mon* and *steur*; *madame* of *ma* and *dame*; *mademoiselle* of *ma* and *demoiselle*.

9. Nouns compounded of verbs, prepositions, or adverbs, are unchanged in the plural.

His *drink-money*.

Son *pour-boire*. Ses *pour-boire*.

10. Sometimes the meaning of a noun and adjective forming a compound is such as not to admit a change for the plural.

The *tooth-pick*. The *tooth-picks*.

Le *cure-dents*. Les *cure-dents*.

Are you there in the house?

Êtes-vous là dans la maison?

I am here in the store.

Je suis ici dans le magasin.

Ladies, have you your cloaks?

Mesdames, avez-vous vos manteaux?

1. Êtes-vous riche? 2. Je ne suis pas riche. 3. N'êtes-vous pas mon ami? 4. Je suis votre ami. 5. Où êtes-vous? 6. Nous sommes ici. 7. N'êtes-vous pas dans la rue? 8. Non, monsieur, nous sommes ici dans la cour, nous ne sommes pas dans la rue. 9. Êtes-vous là? 10. Nous sommes ici dans la maison. 11. N'êtes-vous pas dans le magasin? 12. Non, monsieur, je suis ici sur le plancher. 13. N'êtes-vous pas mon parent? 14. Je suis votre cousin. 15. Êtes-vous les amis de monsieur? 16. Oui, mesdames, nous sommes ses amis. 17. Mesdemoiselles, êtes-vous les belles-sœurs du général? 18. Oui, mesdames, nous sommes ses belles-sœurs. 19. Qu'a ce méchant chien? 20. Il a les gâteaux et le jambon des petits garçons. 21. Mesdames, avez-vous les mouchoirs de coton ou de soie? 22. Nous avons les mouchoirs de soie. 23. Qui a la meilleure voiture? 24. Cette riche veuve a la meilleure voiture et les meilleurs chevaux. 25. Quelle planche avez-vous? 26. J'ai la petite planche et le bon bois.

1. Where are you? 2. I am here. 3. Are you in the yard or in the street? 4. We are in the street. 5. Are you not the friend of the young widow? 6. I am her friend and her relation. 7. Are you the relations of that wicked man? 8. We are not his relations. 9. What has that young man? 10. He has his whips and his guns. 11. What animals has the countryman? 12. He has the wicked animals. 13. Who has the best guns? 14. Those young men have the best guns and the best whips. 15. Are you the brother-in-law of the rich widow? 16. No, ladies, I am her brother. 17. Are you the relation of that young girl? 18. Yes, I am her cousin. 19. What has that maid-servant? 20. She has the large cakes, the excellent hams, and the good fruit. 21. Who has the handsome houses? 22. The merchant has the handsome houses and the handsome stores. 23. Has he the best butter? 24. He

has the best butter and the best flour. 25. Who has your handsome bird? 26. My sister-in-law has my handsome bird and my handsome flowers. 27. Are you the sons of the captain? 28. No, miss, we are his brothers-in-law.

## 14.—QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

## ÊTRE, TO BE THIRD PERSON SINGULAR AND FIRST PLURAL.

*Are we? You are.*

*Are we not? You are not.*

*Is he? He is. Is she? She is.*

*Is he not? He is not.*

*Is she not? She is not.*

*Nothing.*

*What have you? Nothing.*

*I have nothing here.*

*Nothing is good here.*

*Under. But.*

*Something, any thing. A thing.*

*The bench.*

*A fish. A codfish.*

*An onion. A sardine.*

*The parasol. The clock (large).*

*The pendulum. The clock.*

*Sommes-nous? Vous êtes.*

*Ne sommes-nous pas? Vous n'êtes pas.*

*Est-il? Il est. Est-elle? Elle est.*

*N'est-il pas? Il n'est pas.*

*N'est-elle pas? Elle n'est pas.*

Without a verb, *rien*; with a verb of which it is the object, *ne* before the verb and *rien* after it; with a verb of which it is the subject, *rien ne* before the verb.

*Qu'avez-vous? Rien.*

*Je n'ai rien ici.*

*Rien n'est bon ici.*

*Sous. Mais.*

## MASCULINE

*Quelque chose.*

*Le banc.*

*Un poisson.*

*Un oignon.*

*Le parasol.*

*Le pendule.*

## FEMININE

*Une chose.*

*Une morue.*

*Une sardine.*

*L'horloge.*

*La pendule.*

1. *Horloge* is a large clock upon some large building to sound the hours for the public.  
*La pendule* is a clock for an ordinary room.

*The clock of that church is large.*

*I have here a fine clock.*

*That pendulum is long.*

*A broom. A strawberry.*

*That sofa. That cellar.*

*I have the chest, but I have not the broom.*

*A newspaper. A den, cavern.*

*My chest. My room.*

*Have you any thing, is any thing the matter with you?*

*L'horloge de cette église est grande.*

*J'ai ici une belle pendule.*

*Ce pendule est long.*

*Un balai. Une fraise.*

*Ce canapé. Cette cave.*

*J'ai le coffre, mais je n'ai pas le balai.*

*Un journal. Une caverne.*

*Mon coffre. Ma chambre.*

*Avez-vous quelque chose?*

1 10 12 7 5 12 14 18 7 5 4 17 3 20 21 15 22 16 12 21 1  
ka-tor-zième, est, il-en, sous, mais, kei-ke chose, banc, pois-son, mo-rue, of-gulon, sar-  
dine, pa-ra-sol, hor-loge, pen-dule, ba-lai, fraise, ca-na-pé, cave, jour-nal, ca-verne, coffre,  
chambre.

I have something, something is the matter with me. J'ai quelque chose.

What is the matter with you? Qu'avez-vous?  
Nothing is the matter with me. Je n'ai rien.

2. *Quelque chose* is not used with a negative except in a question.

Have you not something? N'avez-vous pas quelque chose?  
Have you not any thing (or nothing)? N'avez-vous rien?

3. *Quelque chose, rien, and que* interrogative, take *de* before a following adjective.

Have you any thing good? Avez-vous quelque chose de bon?  
I have nothing good. Je n'ai rien de bon.  
What have you pretty? Qu'avez-vous de joli?

1. Sommes-nous les amis du marchand? 2. Nous sommes ses amis. 3. Ne sommes-nous pas ses cousins? 4. Non, monsieur, nous ne sommes pas ses cousins. 5. Où est votre beau-frère? 6. Il est dans sa chambre. 7. Mon parasol est-il sur le banc? 8. Non, mademoiselle, elle est sur le plancher. 9. La morue est-elle dans la cave? 10. La morue est dans la cave, et les sardines sont ici sur le banc. 11. L'oignon est-il sur le banc ou sous le banc? 12. Il est sous le banc. 13. Où est le canapé? 14. Il est dans votre chambre. 15. Le journal est-il sur le canapé? 16. Il est dans votre coffre. 17. N'as-tu pas les fraises? 18. J'ai les fraises et les cerises. 19. As-tu les poissons ici? 20. La morue est ici et les sardines sont sur la table. 21. Cette horloge est grande, et cette pendule est jolie. 22. J'ai le parasol et le balai. 23. Le journal est sur la table, et l'oignon est sur le plancher. 24. La petite chèvre est dans cette caverne. 25. Qu'avez-vous de gros? 26. Je n'ai rien de gros.

1. What has that man? 2. He has his gun. 3. What is the matter with you? 4. Nothing is the matter with me. 5. Are we not your relations? 6. You are our cousins. 7. Have you the fish? 8. No, madame, the fish is here on the bench. 9. Is the codfish in the cellar? 10. The codfish is in the cellar, the sardines are on the table, and the onions are under the table. 11. Where is the newspaper? 12. It is on the sofa. 13. Has the servant any thing? 14. He has the broom and the parasol. 15. Have you a chest in your room? 16. I have a chest in my room and a trunk also. 17. Have you the strawberries? 18. No, sir, I have the cherries, but I have not the strawberries. 19. I have the onion and the sardine, and you have the parasol, the sofa, and the broom. 20. Are we in your store? 21. No, sir, we are in the store of my



father. 22. Are we not your friends? 23. You are our friends and our relations. 24. Where is the clock? 25. It is in my room. 26. Have you a good clock? 27. We have a good clock and a good watch; the watch is of gold, but the clock is of wood. 28. Have you any thing handsome? 29. I have nothing handsome. 30. What have you good? We have nothing good.

## 15.—QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

## ÊTRE, TO BE SECOND PERSON SINGULAR AND THIRD PLURAL.

*Art thou? Thou art.*

*Art thou not? Thou art not.*

*Are they? They are.*

*Are they not? They are not.*

*Es-tu? Tu es.*

*N'es-tu pas? Tu n'es pas.*

*{ Sont-ils? Ils sont.*

*{ Sont-elles? Elles sont.*

*{ Ne sont-ils pas? Ils ne sont pas.*

*{ Ne sont-elles pas? Elles ne sont pas.*

*A hammer.*

*A cup.*

*The ivory.*

*A saucer.*

*This tree.*

*This cord, rope.*

*My uncle.*

*My aunt.*

*His nephew.*

*Her niece.*

*Which one, what one, which.*

*Which ones, what ones, which.*

*The garden.*

*The straw.*

*The physician.*

*The washerwoman.*

*All (singular).*

*All (plural).*

*Much, many.*

*Little, few.*

*Much ivory. Many hammers.*

## MASCULINE.

*Un marteau.*

*L'ivoire.*

*Cet arbre.*

*Mon oncle.*

*Son neveu.*

*Lequel.*

*Lesquels.*

*Le jardin.*

*Le médecin.*

*Tout.*

*Tous.*

*Beaucoup.*

*Beaucoup d'ivoire. Beaucoup de marteaux.*

## FEMININE.

*Une tasse.*

*Une soucoupe.*

*Cette corde.*

*Ma tante.*

*Sa nièce.*

*Laquelle.*

*Lesquelles.*

*La paille.*

*La blanchisseuse.*

*Toute.*

*Toutes.*

*Peu (adverb).*

*Little straw. Few cups.*

*Peu de paille. Peu de tasses.*

1. *Beaucoup, peu, and adverbs of quantity generally, take de before the following noun.*

*Where is the washerwoman's cord?*

*Où est la corde de la blanchisseuse?*

*It is on the tree.*

*Elle est sur l'arbre.*

*Which one has she?*

*Laquelle a-t-elle?*

*Which ones are under the tree?*

*Lesquelles sont sous l'arbre?*

*I have the large cup; which one have you?*

*J'ai la grande tasse; laquelle avez-vous?*

14 12 5 8 1 17 1 12 20 10 18 1 16 21 1 4 10  
kin-zième, ça, mar-teau, tasse, l-voire, sou-coupe, arbre, corde, oncle, tante, ne-veu  
ni-ve, le-ko, la-kella, les-kela, les-kelles, jar-din, paille, mé-de-cin, blan-chis-seuse, tout,  
toute, tous, toutes, beau-coup, peu.

Which one? has the physician? Laquelle le médecin a-t-il?  
*To, or at the house of.* At my uncle's *Chez* (preposition). Chez mon oncle.  
house.

At the man's house. At my aunt's. Chez l'homme. Chez ma tante.

2. When *house* is understood after the possessive case in English, *chez* must be used in French; as,

At your nephew's. At your brother's. Chez votre neveu. Chez votre frère.  
Your nieces are at the neighbor's. Vos nièces sont chez la voisine.  
They are not at my father's. Elles ne sont pas chez mon père.

3. *Sujet*, subject, is often applied to persons, especially to boys, in reference to their morals; as,

The neighbor's son is a *bad boy*. Le fils du voisin est un *mauvais sujet*.  
Edward's friend is a *good boy*. L'ami d'Edouard est un *bon sujet*.

4. *Bon garçon* means usually *good fellow*.

Henry is a *good fellow*, but his cousin Henri est un *bon garçon*, mais son  
is *bad*. cousin est un *mauvais sujet*.

1. Les marteaux sont-ils dans votre chambre? 2. Non, monsieur, ils sont ici sur la table. 3. Où sont les soucoupes? 4. Elles sont dans le magasin du marchand. 5. Où sont les cordes et les cordeaux? 6. Elles sont sous l'arbre. 7. Vos sœurs sont-elles chez votre oncle? 8. Elles sont chez ma tante. 9. Où sont les médecins? 10. Ils sont chez votre père. 11. Le neveu du voisin a tout l'ivoire, et sa nièce a toute la soie, toutes les tasses et tous les papiers. 12. Où est la blanchisseuse? 13. La blanchisseuse est dans le jardin de mon oncle, et le médecin est chez ma tante. 14. Où est la corde de la blanchisseuse? 15. Elle est sur le grand arbre dans votre jardin. 16. Ce marchand a beaucoup de soucoupes et peu de tasses. 17. Ce paysan a beaucoup de paille; sa corde est ici sur cette chaise. 18. Edouard est un bon garçon, mais son petit frère est un mauvais sujet. 19. N'es-tu pas mon parent? 20. Je suis ton cousin. 21. Tu es l'ami d'Henri.

1. Where are the shopkeeper's cords? 2. They are on the plank under the tree. 3. Where are his iron hammers? 4. His iron hammers are on the floor, and his ivory knives are on the desk. 5. Has he many cups? 6. No, sir, he has few cups and few saucers. 7. Where are the lines of the washerwoman? 8. They are on the tree in the garden. 9. Where is the rope? 10. It is under the tree in the garden. 11. Has the countryman the straw? 12. He has all the straw and all the fruit. 13. Has the servant the knives? 14. He has all the knives and all the forks. 15. What has the physician's niece? 16. She has the parasol. 17. Which

one has she? 18. She has the little one. 19. Which ones has the nephew? 20. He has the silk parasols. 21. Are thy brothers at thy uncle's? 22. No, sir, they are at my aunt's. 23. The nephew of the shopkeeper has his cups; which ones has he? 24. He has the cups of porcelain. 25. Which one has his niece? 26. She has the pretty one. 27. The washerwoman is at my aunt's; she has her line and her soap. 28. Thou art the nephew of the general. 29. What have you bad? 30. We have nothing bad. 31. Have you something good? 32. I have the good coffee and the good fruit.

## 16.—SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

## ALLER, TO GO. FIRST AND SECOND PERSONS.

<i>Do you go? are you going?</i>	<i>Allez-vous?</i>	
<i>We go, we are going.</i>	<i>Nous allons.</i>	
<i>Do you not go? are you not going?</i>	<i>N'allez-vous pas?</i>	
<i>We do not go, we are not going.</i>	<i>Nous n'allons pas.</i>	
<i>Dost thou go? art thou going?</i>	<i>Vas-tu?</i>	
<i>I go. I am going.</i>	<i>Je vais.</i>	
<i>Dost thou not go? art thou not going?</i>	<i>Ne vas-tu pas?</i>	
<i>I do not go, I am not going.</i>	<i>Je ne vais pas.</i>	
<i>To, at. To or at my house.</i>	<i>A. Chez moi.</i>	
<i>To our house. At your house.</i>	<i>Chez nous. Chez vous.</i>	
<i>To his house. At her house.</i>	<i>Chez lui. Chez elle.</i>	
<i>To or at their house.</i>	<i>Chez eux. Chez elles.</i>	
	<b>MASCULINE.</b>	<b>FEMININE.</b>
<i>The child.</i>	<i>L'enfant.</i>	<i>La campagne.</i>
<i>That tailor.</i>	<i>Ce tailleur.</i>	<i>Cette rivière.</i>
<i>The pepper.</i>	<i>Le poivre.</i>	<i>La ville.</i>
<i>The roast beef.</i>	<i>Le bœuf-rôti.</i>	<i>La cuisine.</i>
<i>The roast meat.</i>	<i>Le rôti.</i>	<i>La montagne.</i>
<i>To the (singular).</i>	<i>Au.</i>	<i>A la.</i>
<i>To the (plural).</i>	<i>Aux.</i>	<i>Aux.</i>

1. *A le* and *à les* are not to be used in French; but the former is contracted into *au* before a consonant, and the latter always into *aux*. *A le* and *à la* become *à l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

<i>Are you going to the garden?</i>	<i>Allez-vous au jardin?</i>
<i>We are going to the stores.</i>	<i>Nous allons aux magasins.</i>
<i>Art thou not going to the kitchen?</i>	<i>Ne vas-tu pas à la cuisine?</i>
<i>I am going to the tree.</i>	<i>Je vais à l'arbre.</i>

<sup>7</sup> <sup>13</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>7</sup>  
 sei-zième, all-eg, al-lons, vas, va-le, ches, lui, eux, en-fant, cam-pagne, taill-eur, ri-vi-ère,  
 poivre, ville, rôti, cui-zine, mon-tagne, au, aux.

2. *À la maison* is very often used for *to* or *at the house* of the person referred to.

Is he at home ?	Est-il à la maison, or chez lui ?
Art thou going home ?	Vas-tu à la maison, or chez toi ?
	Madame est-elle chez elle ?
Is the lady at home ?	Madame est-elle à la maison ?
	Madame est-elle au logis ?
	Madame y est-elle ? See les. 39.

3. *Monsieur*, *madame*, and *mademoiselle*, are often joined to terms of relationship and to titles, from politeness.

Where is your father ?	Où est monsieur votre père ?
Is your mother here ?	Madame votre mère est-elle ici ?
Is your sister at home ?	Mademoiselle votre sœur est-elle chez elle ?
Where is the general ?	Où est monsieur le général ?

1. Allez-vous au jardin du tailleur ? 2. Non, madame, nous allons à la rivière. 3. Où vas-tu ? 4. Je vais à la maison. 5. Ne vas-tu pas chez nous ? 6. Non, monsieur, je vais chez moi. 7. Allez-vous chez les tailleurs ? 8. Oui, madame, nous allons chez eux. 9. Le médecin est-il chez lui ? 10. Non, monsieur, il est chez moi. 11. Vas-tu chez toi ? 12. Non, monsieur, je vais à la campagne. 13. Où sont tes cousins ? 14. Ils sont chez eux. 15. Es-tu l'ami des tailleurs ? 16. Je suis leur ami. 17. Vas-tu chez eux ? 18. Je vais chez moi. 19. Allez-vous à la ville ? 20. Non, madame, je vais à la rivière et à la montagne. 21. L'enfant du voisin est-il chez vous ? 22. Il n'est pas chez moi, il est chez son père. 23. Cet enfant a le bœuf-rôti et les pommes de terre. 24. Qui a le rôti ? 25. L'enfant l'a. 26. Est-il à la cuisine ? 27. Il est chez vous. 28. Tu n'es pas le parent de Charles ? 29. Si, je suis son frère.

1. Where are you going ? 2. We are going to the city. 3. Are you not going to the mountain ? 4. We are going to the mountain and to the river. 5. Art thou going to the house of thy uncle ? 6. I am not going to his house, I am going to thy house. 7. Is the little child at the house of his cousins ? 8. He is not at their house, he is at the kitchen. 9. Art thou going to the country ? 10. I am not going to the country, I am going to the city. 11. Are you going to the tailor's ? 12. We are not going to his house, we are going to thy house. 13. Where are the nieces of the physician ? 14. They are at their house. 15. You are going to the city, we are going to the country. 16. Art thou going to the

river or to the mountain? 17. I am going to my uncle's. 18. I have the roast beef and the pepper; thou hast the roast meat and the bread. 19. I am going to the garden; are you going to the stores? 20. We are going to the stores; art thou not going to the river? 21. No, sir, I am going to the tree in the garden. 22. Hast thou the pepper or the roast beef? 23. I have the pepper and the roast meat. 24. Have you anything small? 25. I have nothing small. 26. What have you large? I have the large horse.

## 17.—DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## ALLER, TO GO. THIRD PERSON.

<i>Does he go? is he going?</i>	<i>Va-t-il?</i>
He goes, he is going.	Il va.
<i>Does she not go? is she not going?</i>	<i>Ne va-t-elle pas?</i>
She does not go, she is not going.	Elle ne va pas.
<i>Do they go? are they going?</i>	<i>Vont-ils?</i>
They go, they are going.	Ils vont.
<i>Do they not go? are they not going?</i>	<i>Ne vont-elles pas?</i>
They do not go, they are not going.	Elles ne vont pas.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>The president.</i>	<i>The door.</i>	<i>Le président.</i>	<i>La porte.</i>
<i>The doctor.</i>	<i>The window.</i>	<i>Le docteur.</i>	<i>La fenêtre, croisée.</i>
<i>The market.</i>	<i>The stable.</i>	<i>Le marché.</i>	<i>L'écurie.</i>
<i>The mill.</i>	<i>The half.</i>	<i>Le moulin.</i>	<i>La moitié.</i>

1. *Mon, ton, votre*, etc., are adjectives, and belong to nouns. The following are pronouns, and used without nouns. *Le nôtre, le vôtre*, and their feminines and plurals, must always have a circumflex accent.

<i>Mine</i> (singular).	<i>Le mien,</i>	<i>la mienne.</i>
<i>Mine</i> (plural).	<i>Les miens,</i>	<i>les miennes.</i>
<i>Thine</i> (singular).	<i>Le tien,</i>	<i>la tienne.</i>
<i>Thine</i> (plural).	<i>Les tiens,</i>	<i>les tiennes.</i>
<i>His, hers, its</i> (singular).	<i>Le sien,</i>	<i>la sienne.</i>
<i>His, hers, its</i> (plural).	<i>Les siens,</i>	<i>les siennes.</i>
<i>Ours</i> (singular).	<i>Le nôtre,</i>	<i>la nôtre.</i>
<i>Ours</i> (plural).	<i>Les nôtres,</i>	<i>les nôtres.</i>
<i>Yours</i> (singular).	<i>Le vôtre,</i>	<i>la vôtre.</i>
<i>Yours</i> (plural).	<i>Les vôtres,</i>	<i>les vôtres.</i>
<i>Theirs</i> (singular).	<i>Le leur,</i>	<i>la leur.</i>
<i>Theirs</i> (plural).	<i>Les leurs,</i>	<i>les leurs.</i>

<sup>12</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>16</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>23</sup> <sup>12</sup>  
 dix-sep-tième, vont, pré-si-dent, porte, doc-teur, fenê-tre, croi-sée, mar-ché, é-cu-rie,  
<sup>18</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>11</sup>  
 mou-lin, moi-tié, mi-en, mi-enne, ti-en, ti-enne, si-en, si-enne, nôtre, vôtre, leur.

2. The above pronouns cannot be used without the article. Like all pronouns, they agree with their nouns in gender and number.

What hats have you?

Quels chapeaux avez-vous?

We have ours. I have mine, thou hast thine, he has his, you have yours, and they have theirs. Nous avons les nôtres. J'ai le mien, tu as le tien, il a le sien, vous avez les vôtres, et ils ont les leurs.

1. Où va le docteur? 2. Il va chez le président. 3. L'enfant ne va-t-il pas à la porte? 4. Il va à l'écurie. 5. Où vont ces hommes? 6. Ils vont au moulin. 7. Ne vont-ils pas aux magasins? 8. Ils vont aux magasins et aux moulins aussi. 9. Cet enfant va-t-il à la porte ou à la fenêtre (croisée)? 10. Il va à la croisée (fenêtre). 11. Le garçon va-t-il au marché? 12. Il va à l'écurie, et le domestique va au marché. 13. Quel poivre as-tu? 14. J'ai le mien. 15. Qu'a cet enfant? 16. Il a la moitié d'une pomme et la moitié d'une poire. 17. Ai-je le fruit du docteur? 18. Non, Charles, tu as le tien et il a le sien. 19. Quelles pommes avons-nous? 20. J'ai la mienne, tu a la tienne, et le docteur a la sienne, vous avez les vôtres, et ces messieurs ont les leurs. 21. N'ai-je pas tes livres? 22. Non, monsieur, j'ai les miens, tu as les tiens, et mon frère a les siens. 23. Avons-nous nos papiers? 24. Vous avez les vôtres, nous avons les nôtres, et le docteur a les siens.

1. Are the physicians going to the president's? 2. They are not going to the president's, they are going to the doctor's. 3. Where is that child going? 4. He is going to the door. 5. Is he not going to the window? 6. No, sir, he is going to the door and to the stable. 7. Art thou the son of the president? 8. No, madam, I am his nephew. 9. Are you going to the market or to the mill? 10. I am going to the market, and the servant is going to the mill. 11. Is the lady at home? 12. Yes, sir, she is at home. 13. Where is that little child going? 14. He is going to the stable. 15. Where is his stick? 16. It is on the window. 17. What has he? 18. He has the half of a pear and the half of a potato. 19. Has the cook our meat? 20. He has not ours, he has his. 21. What cloth have the little boys? 22. They have theirs. 23. Have they their buttons? 24. No, sir, they have not theirs. 25. Is not the doctor going to our house? 26. No, madam, he is not going to your house; he is going home. 27. That child has an inkstand; which one has he? 28. He has thine; he has not mine.

## 18.—DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## VOULOIR, TO WILL. FIRST AND SECOND PERSONS.

*To will. To be willing.**Vouloir. Vouloir bien.*

1. The verb *vouloir* has various significations in English, and its right use forms one of the difficulties of the French language. In general it means *to will*, and, modified by *bien*, *to be willing*. Followed by a noun or pronoun as object, it may be rendered *to wish for*; and in this sense it will now be used. Its other meanings will be given in their places hereafter.

*Do you wish for? will you have?**Voulez-vous? or, Désirez-vous?**We wish for, we will have.**Nous voulons, or, Nous désirons.**Do you not wish for? will you not have?**Ne voulez-vous pas? or, Ne désirez-vous pas?**We do not wish for, we will not have.**Nous ne voulons pas, or, Nous ne désirons pas.**Dost thou wish for? wilt thou have?**Veux-tu? or, Désires-tu?**I wish for, I will have.**Je veux, or, Je désire.**Dost thou not wish for? wilt thou not have?**Ne veux-tu pas? or, Ne désires-tu pas?**I do not wish for, I will not have.**Je ne veux pas, or, Je ne désire pas.**Do you wish for the milk?**Voulez-vous le lait?**Yes, sir, if you please.**Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît.\***No, sir, I thank you.**Non, monsieur, je vous remercie.**The blacksmith. A history.*

MASCULINE.

*Le forgeron.*

FEMININE.

*Une histoire.**The grocer. America.**L'épicier.**L'Amérique.*

2. The names of countries generally take the article in French.

*A nail. England.**Un clou.**L'Angleterre.**The copper. France.**Le cuivre.**La France.**The one of, that of.**Celui de.**Celle de.**The ones of, those of.**Ceux de.**Celles de.**The one of iron, that of iron, the iron one.**Celui de fer.**Celle de fer.**The ones of iron, those of iron, the iron ones.**Ceux de fer.**Celles de fer.*3. *Celui* and *ceux* are pronouns, and of course agree with their antecedents in gender and number.*What nail dost thou wish for?**Quel clou veux-tu?**I wish for the one of copper.**Je veux celui de cuivre.**Do you not wish for the silver ones?**Ne voulez-vous pas ceux d'argent?*\* *S'il vous plaît* means literally, *if it you please*; i. e. *if it please you*.

12 22 12 12 8    18 20    12 14    18 6    6 12 6    18 21    6 17 21    9    6 12  
 dix-huitième, vou-loir, bi-en, vou-lez, dé-si-res, vou-lons, dé-si-rons, veu-x, dé-si-re,  
 7    4 7    12 16 4 21    12 20    6 12 12 6    1    2 12    9    4 7    22 12    3  
 plaît, re-mer-cié, for-ge-ron, his-toire, é-pi-cier, A-mé-ri-ka, An-gle-terre, cui-vre, France,  
 4 22 12    6    10  
 ce-lui, celle, ceux.

We do not wish for them.	Nous ne les voulons pas.
What cups do you wish for?	Quelles tasses voulez-vous ?
I wish for the glass ones.	Je veux celles de verre.
You wish for those of porcelain.	Vous voulez celles de porcelaine.

4. The pronoun belonging to the possessive case is often omitted in English. We can say either, *The man's*, or *that of the man*; *My father's*, or *those of my father*. In such cases, *celui de*, *celle de*, etc., must not be omitted in French.

The blacksmith's, or, that of the blacksmith. Celui du forgeron, or, celle du forgeron.

The grocer's, or, those of the grocer. Ceux de l'épicier, or, celles de l'épicier.

1. Voulez-vous le beurre de l'épicier ? 2. Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît. 3. Veux-tu son café ? 4. Non, monsieur, je vous remercie. 5. Quelle histoire voulez-vous ? 6. Nous voulons l'histoire de France. 7. Ne voulez-vous pas celle d'Angleterre ? 8. Non, madame, nous voulons celles d'Amérique et de France. 9. Veux-tu le café ? 10. Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît. 11. Veux-tu le thé aussi ? 12. Non, monsieur, je vous remercie. 13. Désirez-vous le marteau du forgeron ? 14. Je ne désire pas celui du forgeron, je désire le mien. 15. Quels clous voulez-vous ? 16. Nous voulons les clous de cuivre. 17. J'ai l'histoire d'Angleterre et celle d'Amérique; laquelle voulez-vous ? 18. Je veux celle d'Amérique et celle d'Angleterre aussi. 19. Voulez-vous tous ces livres ? 20. Je ne les veux pas tous. 21. Lesquels voulez-vous ? 22. Je veux l'histoire d'Angleterre et celle d'Amérique. 23. Voulez-vous les clous de l'épicier ? 24. Non, monsieur, je vous remercie. 25. Veux-tu tous ces livres ? 26. Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît.

1. What do you wish for ? 2. I desire a good history. 3. We wish for the history of America; which one dost thou wish for ? 4. We wish for that of England and that of France. 5. Dost thou wish for mine ? 6. I do not wish for thine, I wish for that of my brother. 7. Do you wish for the nails ? 8. Yes, sir, if you please. 9. Do you wish for the nails of copper, or those of iron ? 10. I wish for those of copper. 11. Dost thou wish for the nails of the blacksmith ? 12. No, sir, I thank you. 13. Which ones dost thou wish for ? 14. I wish for the iron nails and those of copper. 15. What sugar do you wish for ? 16. We wish for that of the grocer. 17. Have you all the hammers ? 18. No, sir, I have them not all. 19. Which have you ? 20. I have the iron hammers and those of copper. 21. Where are you going ? 22. I am going to the city,



and the cook is going to the market. 23. Where is your cousin?  
 24. He is at the store. 25. Has the servant your candlestick?  
 26. He has not mine, he has the doctor's. 27. Have you my pen?  
 28. I have not yours, I have the grocer's. 29. Have you not my  
 papers? 30. No, sir, I have those of the master. 31. Have you  
 not my candles? 32. I have not yours, I have my brother's (or  
 those of my brother).

## 19.—DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

VOULOIR, TO WISH FOR (will have). THIRD PERSON SINGULAR AND PLURAL.

<i>Does he wish for? will he have?</i>	<i>Veut-il? or, Désire-t-il?</i>
He wishes for, he will have.	Il veut, or, Il désire.
<i>Does she not wish? will she not have?</i>	<i>Ne veut-elle pas? or, Ne désire-t-elle pas?</i>
She does not wish, she will not have.	Elle ne veut pas, or, Elle ne désire pas.
<i>Do they wish for? will they have?</i>	<i>Veulent-ils? or, Désirent-ils?</i>
They wish for, they will have.	Ils veulent, or, Ils désirent.
<i>Do they not wish for? will they not have?</i>	<i>Ne veulent-elles pas? or, Ne désirent-elles pas?</i>
They do not wish for, they will not have.	Elles ne veulent pas, or, Elles ne désirent pas.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The baker.	A piece.	Le boulanger.	Une pièce.
The fisherman.	A bark.	Le pêcheur.	Une barque.
A carpenter.	A dollar.	Un charpentier.	Une piastre.
A dollar.		Un dollar.	Une gourde.
The same.		Le même.	La même.
The other.		L'autre.	L'autre.
Sick.		Malade.	Malade.
The sick man.	The sick woman.	Le malade.	La malade.
The soldier.	The stone.	Le soldat.	La pierre.
A sailor.	A brick.	Un matelot.	Une brique.
Which.		Qui (subject).	Que (object).

The stone *which* is here.La pierre *qui* est ici.The stone *which* we have.La pierre *que* nous avons.The bricks *which* are there.Les briques *qui* sont là.The bricks *which* you wish for.Les briques *que* vous voulez.1. We here see that *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb.

The baker wishes for the piece of cloth *which* is on the table.    Le boulanger veut la pièce de drap *qui* est sur la table.

<sup>19</sup> dix-neu-<sup>9</sup>vième, <sup>12</sup>veut, <sup>9</sup>dé-<sup>12</sup>sire, <sup>9</sup>veulent, <sup>12</sup>dé-<sup>12</sup>sirent, <sup>18</sup>bon-<sup>8</sup>lan-<sup>12</sup>ger, <sup>18</sup>pi-<sup>8</sup>èce, <sup>12</sup>pê-<sup>11</sup>cheur, <sup>1</sup>barka, <sup>1</sup>char-<sup>12</sup>pen-<sup>12</sup>tier, <sup>12</sup>pi-<sup>12</sup>astre, <sup>12</sup>dol-<sup>12</sup>lar, <sup>12</sup>gourde, <sup>12</sup>même, <sup>12</sup>autre, <sup>12</sup>ma-<sup>12</sup>lade, <sup>12</sup>sol-<sup>12</sup>dat, <sup>12</sup>pierre, <sup>12</sup>mate-<sup>12</sup>lot, <sup>12</sup>brique, <sup>12</sup>ki, <sup>12</sup>ke.

We wish for the cloth <i>which</i> you have.	Nous voulons le drap <i>que</i> vous avez.
I desire the hammer <i>which</i> is of iron.	Je désire le marteau <i>qui</i> est de fer.
The hammer <i>which</i> the carpenter has.	Le marteau <i>que</i> le charpentier a.
He desires to be tall.	Il désire être grand.
We desire to be your friends.	Nous désirons être vos amis.
The fishermen wish for the bark <i>which</i> is on the river.	Les pêcheurs veulent la barque <i>qui</i> est sur la rivière.
You desire to be their friend, and they desire to be yours.	Vous désirez être leur ami, et ils désirent être les vôtres.
Do you wish for the half of this apple?	Voulez-vous la moitié de cette pomme?
No, I thank you.	Je vous remercie.

2. *Je vous remercie* in such replies always signifies declining.

1. Que veut ce matelot? 2. Il veut la petite barque. 3. Laquelle veut-il? 4. Il veut celle du pêcheur. 5. Que veulent les soldats? 6. Ils veulent le bon pain. 7. Celui de qui veulent-ils? 8. Ils veulent celui du boulanger. 9. Que désires-tu? 10. Je désire une chandelle et un chandelier. 11. Que veut le boulanger? 12. Il veut ces pièces de drap. 13. Lesquelles veut-il? 14. Il veut celles que les charpentiers ont et celles qui sont ici sur la table. 15. Que veulent ces matelots? 16. Ils veulent les barques des pêcheurs. 17. Ces enfants veulent-ils les dollars d'or ou ceux d'argent? 18. Ils veulent les dollars d'or et ceux d'argent aussi. 19. Ce petit enfant veut ce livre; son frère veut-il le même? 20. Il ne veut pas le même, il veut le sien. 21. Le soldat est-il malade? 22. Il n'est pas malade. 23. Que veut le malade? 24. Il veut le pain du boulanger, et les soldats veulent le même. 25. Le matelot et les charpentiers veulent-ils le même pain ou l'autre? Ils veulent l'autre. 26. La maison du pêcheur est-elle de brique ou de pierre? 27. Elle est de bois.

1. Do you wish for the half of this fish? 2. Yes, sir, if you please. 3. Do you wish for the milk? 4. No, sir, I thank you. 5. What has that child? 6. He has the silver dollars. 7. Has he all the dollars? 8. He has them all. 9. What does the baker wish for? 10. He wishes for the wood and the flour. 11. What has the servant? 12. He has a piece of cloth and a piece of linen. 13. What does the sailor wish for? 14. He wishes for the bark of the fisherman. 15. Where is his bark? 16. It is on the river. 17. Is the carpenter's house of stone or of brick? 18. It is of brick. 19. I wish for this coffee; does the sick man wish for the same or for the other? 20. He wishes for the other. 21. The

soldier desires the bread of the sick man; we desire the wine which is on the table. 22. What has the little child? 23. He has the dollars. 24. Which (ones) has he? 25. He has the gold dollars and the silver ones. 26. What has the soldier? 27. He has all the meat and all the butter. 28. Do you desire to be rich? 29. My brother desires to be rich, and I desire to be good. 30. The neighbors desire to be our friends, and we desire to be theirs.

## 20.—VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

### PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

1. The **PRESENT PARTICIPLE**, in French, is formed by changing **ONS**, of the first person plural, indicative present, into **ANT**; \* as,

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLE.	INFINITIVE.	1ST PER. PLU.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>To go.</i>	<i>Going.</i>	<i>Aller,</i>	<i>allons,</i>	<i>Allant.</i>
<i>To will.</i>	<i>Willing.</i>	<i>Vouloir,</i>	<i>voulons,</i>	<i>Voulant.</i>
<i>To desire.</i>	<i>Desiring.</i>	<i>Désirer,</i>	<i>désirons,</i>	<i>Désirant.</i>

2. The present participles of *avoir* and *être* are exceptions to the above rule.†

<i>To have.</i>	<i>Having.</i>	<i>Avoir.</i>	<i>Ayant.</i>
<i>To be.</i>	<i>Being.</i>	<i>Être.</i>	<i>Étant.</i>

The **PRESENT INDICATIVE** of the following five verbs has now been given.

TO HAVE,		HAVING.	AVOIR,		AYANT.
<i>J'ai,</i>	<i>tu as,</i>	<i>il a,</i>	<i>nous avons,</i>	<i>vous avez,</i>	<i>ils ont,</i>
I have,	thou hast,	he has,	we have,	you have,	they have.
TO BE,		BEING.	ÊTRE,		ÉTANT.
<i>Je suis,</i>	<i>tu es,</i>	<i>il est,</i>	<i>nous sommes,</i>	<i>vous êtes,</i>	<i>ils sont,</i>
I am,	thou art,	he is,	we are,	you are,	they are.
TO GO,		GOING.	ALLER,		ALLANT.
<i>Je vais,</i>	<i>tu vas,</i>	<i>il va,</i>	<i>nous allons,</i>	<i>vous allez,</i>	<i>ils vont,</i>
I go,	thou goest,	he goes,	we go,	you go,	they go.
TO WILL,		WILLING.	VOULOIR,		VOULANT.
<i>Je veux,</i>	<i>tu veux,</i>	<i>il veut,</i>	<i>nous voulons,</i>	<i>vous voulez,</i>	<i>ils veulent,</i>
I will,	thou wilt,	he wills,	we will,	you will,	they will.
TO DESIRE,		DESIRING.	DÉSIRER,		DÉSIRANT.
<i>Je désire,</i>	<i>tu désires,</i>	<i>il désire,</i>	<i>nous désirons,</i>	<i>vous désirez,</i>	<i>ils désirent,</i>
I desire,	thou desirest,	he desires,	we desire,	you desire,	they desire.

\* Most French grammarians form the first person plural from the participle, and this is well for the French; but as it is a matter of mere convenience, and as the English learner becomes acquainted with the present indicative first, I have thought it best to give the above rule.

† There are three other exceptions in all,—*Échoir*, to fall to, makes *échoiant*, falling to; *Savoir*, to know, makes *sachant*, knowing; and *Seoir*, to sit, makes *seant*, sitting.

3. We have seen (Lesson 19) that *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb. It is the same when *qui* and *que* are joined to the demonstrative pronouns *celui*, *ce*, etc.

<i>The one which, that which</i> (subject).	<i>Celui qui.</i>	<i>Celle qui.</i>
<i>The one which, that which</i> (object).	<i>Celui que.</i>	<i>Celle que.</i>
<i>The ones which, those which</i> (subject).	<i>Ceux qui.</i>	<i>Celles qui.</i>
<i>The ones which, those which</i> (object).	<i>Ceux que.</i>	<i>Celles que.</i>
I have the one which is here.	J'ai celui <i>qui</i> est ici.	
I have the one which you desire.	J'ai celui <i>que</i> vous désirez.	
We have those which are there.	Nous avons celles <i>qui</i> sont là.	
We have those which you wish for.	Nous avons celles <i>que</i> vous voulez.	

4. *What*, equivalent to *that which*, or *the thing which*, is *ce qui* or *ce que*.

I desire <i>what</i> ( <i>that which</i> ) is just.	Je désire <i>ce qui</i> est juste.
We desire <i>what</i> ( <i>that which</i> ) you have.	Nous désirons <i>ce que</i> vous avez.

5. Some adjectives are generally placed before the noun, and some are generally placed after it; others again are sometimes placed before and sometimes after it. The adjectives thus far introduced are placed before the noun. The learner may understand generally, until further rules be given, that all other adjectives are placed after their nouns.

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>Fresh, cool.</i>	<i>Frais.</i>	<i>Fraiche.</i>
<i>White.</i>	<i>Blanc.</i>	<i>Blanche.</i>
<i>Black.</i>	<i>Noir.</i>	<i>Noire.</i>
<i>Blue.</i>	<i>Bleu.</i>	<i>Bleue.</i>
<i>Green.</i>	<i>Vert.</i>	<i>Verte.</i>
<i>Yellow.</i>	<i>Jaune.</i>	<i>Jaune.</i>
<i>Red.</i>	<i>Rouge.</i>	<i>Rouge.</i>
<i>Sweet, gentle.</i>	<i>Doux.</i>	<i>Douce.</i>
<i>Sour.</i>	<i>Aigre.</i>	<i>Aigre.</i>

The white glove. The black stocking.	Le gant blanc. Le bas noir.
The umbrella. A needle.	Le parapluie. Une aiguille.

6. *Ma, ta, sa*, become *mon, ton, son*, before a vowel or a silent *h*.

My pen, thy table, his spoon.	<i>Ma</i> plume, <i>ta</i> table, <i>sa</i> cuiller.
My plate, thy needle, his ink.	<i>Mon</i> assiette, <i>ton</i> aiguille, <i>son</i> encre.

7. A verb following another verb, and expressing its object, is put in the infinitive.

He desires to have a horse.	Il désire <i>avoir</i> un cheval.
They desire to be rich.	Ils désirent <i>être</i> riches.
I will go home.	Je veux <i>aller</i> chez moi, or à la maison.

1. Désires-tu être riche? 2. Non, monsieur, je désire être juste et bon, mais je ne désire pas être riche. 3. Ce monsieur désire avoir beaucoup d'argent, et ses fils désirent avoir beaucoup d'amis. 4. Désirez-vous aller chez vous? 5. Non, monsieur, nous désirons aller à la campagne. 6. Quel parapluie voulez-vous? 7. Je veux

<sup>21</sup> juste, <sup>7</sup> frais, <sup>7</sup> frai-che, <sup>8</sup> blanc, <sup>8</sup> blan-che, <sup>20</sup> noir, <sup>9</sup> noire, <sup>9</sup> bleu, <sup>9</sup> bleue, <sup>7</sup> vert, <sup>7</sup> verte, <sup>17</sup> jaune, <sup>18</sup> rouge, <sup>18</sup> doux, <sup>18</sup> douce, <sup>7</sup> aigre, <sup>1</sup> pa-ra-pluie, <sup>22</sup> al-gu-ille.

celui qui est sur le banc. 8. Mon frère désire celui que vous avez. 9. Voulez-vous les parapluies qui sont dans le magasin? 10. Je désire les parapluies qui sont sur votre table, et mon père désire ceux du marchand. 11. Quelles plumes voulez-vous? 12. Je veux les plumes qui sont sur le pupitre, et celle que le marchand a chez lui. 13. Quelles aiguilles veulent les tailleurs? 14. Ils veulent les aiguilles qui sont ici et celles que le marchand a dans son magasin. 15. Désires-tu ce que j'ai? 16. Non, monsieur, je désire ce que nous avons ici. 17. Le domestique a-t-il l'eau fraîche? 18. Il a l'eau fraîche et le vin frais. 19. Avez-vous le chapeau blanc ou le noir? 20. J'ai le blanc et le noir aussi. 21. J'ai le papier bleu, le vert et le jaune, et cet enfant a l'encre rouge, le vin doux et le lait frais.

1. My cousin desires to be rich, but we desire to be just and good. 2. What book do you wish for? 3. I wish for that which is on my desk, and the one which that child desires, and my brothers wish for those which are at the store, and those which we have. 4. I wish for the needle which the tailor has in his chest, and for those which are on this table. 5. What apples do those children desire? 6. They wish for the ones which are here, and those which the countryman has on his table. 7. Do you wish for what is in that chair? 8. Yes, sir, I wish for what is on that chair, and for that which the soldiers have here. 9. Have you the black umbrella or the blue? 10. I have the blue one. 11. Has your friend the green paper or the yellow? 12. He has the green and the yellow also. 13. Do the scholars wish for the red ink or the black? 14. They wish for the red. 15. Is that wine sweet or sour? 16. That wine is sweet, but the milk is sour. 17. This needle is small; do you wish for it? 18. Yes, madam, I wish for the small needle and the blue umbrella. 19. The little child has my pen and my slate; he has also thy paper and thy ink.

## 21.—VINGT ET UNIÈME LEÇON

### CHERCHER, TO SEEK OR LOOK FOR.

<i>To seek, or look for. Seeking, looking for.</i>			<i>Chercher.</i>	<i>Cherchant.</i>	
<i>Je cherche,</i>	<i>tu cherches,</i>	<i>il cherche,</i>	<i>nous cherchons,</i>	<i>vous cherchez,</i>	<i>ils cherchent,</i>
<i>I seek,</i>	<i>thou seekest,</i>	<i>he seeks,</i>	<i>we seek,</i>	<i>you seek,</i>	<i>they seek.</i>

<sup>16</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>23</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup>  
vingt et un<sup>16</sup>time, cher<sup>8</sup>-cher<sup>23</sup>, cher<sup>12</sup>-chant<sup>8</sup>, cher<sup>7</sup>-che<sup>6</sup>, cher<sup>7</sup>-ches<sup>8</sup>.

1. The learner has seen, that, a verb agrees with its subject in number and person; i. e. the first person singular is always used with *je*, the second with *tu*, and the third with all other subjects singular; the first person plural is always used with *nous*, the second with *vous*, and the third with all other subjects plural.

2. Let the learner bear in mind also that the English have three forms of the present, as *I seek, do seek, am seeking*; *thou seekest, dost seek, art seeking*; *he seeks, does seek, is seeking*; and that these three are rendered by one form in French, as above.

*I seek what thou art seeking.*

*Je cherche ce que tu cherches.*

*He is seeking what we seek.*

*Il cherche ce que nous cherchons.*

*You seek what they are seeking.*

*Vous cherchez ce qu'ils cherchent.*

3. The syllable *ci* is annexed by a hyphen to a noun with a demonstrative adjective, or to a demonstrative pronoun, to denote an object near, and *là* to denote one more remote; also when objects are contrasted.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
This apron.	This needle.	Ce tablier-ci.	Cette aiguille-ci.
These aprons.	These needles.	Ces tabliers-ci.	Ces aiguilles-ci.
Thy dictionary.	Thy grammar.	Ton dictionnaire.	Ta grammaire.
That dictionary	That grammar.	Ce dictionnaire-là.	Cette grammaire-là.
Those dictionaries.	Those grammars.	Ces dictionnaires-là.	Ces grammaires-là.
<i>This, this one, the latter.</i>		<i>Celui-ci.</i>	<i>Celle-ci.</i>
<i>These, these here, the latter.</i>		<i>Ceux-ci.</i>	<i>Celles-ci.</i>
<i>That, that one, the former.</i>		<i>Celui-là.</i>	<i>Celle-là.</i>
<i>Those, those there, the former.</i>		<i>Ceux-là.</i>	<i>Celles-là.</i>
<i>Neither.</i>	<i>Nor.</i>	<i>Ne</i> (bef. verb), <i>ni</i> (after it). <i>Ni.</i>	
<i>I have neither the brick nor the stone.</i>		<i>Je n'ai ni la brique ni la pierre.</i>	
<i>He has neither the glove nor the stocking.</i>		<i>Il n'a ni le gant ni le bas.</i>	

4. When *ne* is used with *ni, rien*, or any negative word, *pas* is omitted.

*I am looking for nothing.*

*Je ne cherche rien.*

*He is looking for neither this one nor that one.*

*Il ne cherche ni celui-ci ni celui-là.*

5. *Ce, cette, ces*, are adjectives, and always belong to nouns; *celui, celle, ceux, celles*, are pronouns, and stand without nouns.

*Does he wish for these needles or those?* *Veut-il ces aiguilles-ci ou celles-là?*

*He wishes for neither these nor those.* *Il ne veut ni celles-ci ni celles-là.*

*He has these umbrellas and those.* *Il a ces parapluies-ci et ceux-là.*

6. When two or more nouns singular are the subject of the verb, unless they are connected by *ou*, the verb must be plural, and the adjectives agreeing with them must be plural also.

*The soldier and the sailor are here.*

*Le soldat et le matelot sont ici.*

*The apple and the peach are good.*

*La pomme et la pêche sont bonnes.*

*The doctor or his brother is sick.*

*Le docteur ou son frère est malade.*

7. *Quelques chose, rien*, and *que* interrogative, as we have seen, require *de* before the following adjective and adverb.

What have you white?

I have nothing white.

We have something sweet.

*Qu'avez-vous de blanc ?*

*Je n'ai rien de blanc.*

*Nous avons quelque chose de doux.*

1. Qu'avez-vous de frais ? 2. Je n'ai rien de frais. 3. Avez-vous quelque chose de noir ? 4. J'ai l'encre noire. 5. Que cherches-tu de vert ? 6. Je cherche le drap vert. 7. Les tailleurs cherchent-ils quelque chose de jaune ? 8. Ils cherchent le drap jaune et l'encre rouge. 9. Cherchez-vous quelque chose ? 10. Nous ne cherchons rien. 11. Quel dictionnaire cherchez-vous ? 12. Je cherche celui que vous avez. 13. Cherchez-vous celui-ci ou celui-là ? 14. Nous ne cherchons ni celui-ci ni celui-là, nous cherchons celui qui est ici. 15. Voulez-vous cette grammaire-ci ou celle-là ? 16. Je ne veux ni celle-ci ni celle-là. 17. Votre père veut-il ces chevaux ? 18. Il ne veut pas ces chevaux-là, il veut ceux-ci. 19. Ces enfants veulent-ils ces pommes-ci ou celles-là ? 20. Ils ne veulent ni celles-ci ni celles-là, ils veulent celles du domestique. 21. Désirez-vous ce que j'ai ? 22. Non, madame, je désire ce qui est ici. 23. Je désire le bon pain et le vin frais.

1. What art thou looking for ? 2. I am looking for my grammar and my dictionary. 3. Do you wish for this dictionary or for that ? 4. I wish for neither this nor that, I wish for mine. 5. Are you looking for your grammar ? 6. I am looking for it. 7. Are you looking for this one or for that one ? 8. I am looking for neither this one nor that one. 9. Have you any thing sweet ? 10. I have something sweet. 11. What have you sweet ? 12. I have the sweet wine. 13. Have you the red ink or the black ? 14. I have neither the red nor the black. 15. Do you wish for your book or that of your brother ? 16. I wish for neither mine nor that of my brother. 17. What have you blue ? 18. I have the blue umbrella and the blue handkerchief. 19. Have you any thing green ? 20. I have nothing green. 21. Do you wish for these peaches or those ? 22. I wish for neither these nor those, I wish for the ones of the countrywoman. 23. Have you the cloth shoes or those of leather ? 24. I have the cloth ones and the leather ones also. 25. What inkstand are you looking for ? 26. I look for the ivory one.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

[N. B.—The exercises headed Optional, throughout the book, may be omitted whenever circumstances require it.]

1. Have you your book ? 2. No, sir, I have it not ; do you wish

for it? 3. I wish for yours or your brother's. 4. My brother's book is on the table. 5. Where is yours? 6. I have it not here; it is at home. 7. Do you wish for this one? 8. If you please. 9. Is your mother at home? 10. No, sir, she is at my cousin's. 11. Where is your father? 12. He is in his room; do you wish to see him? 13. If you please. 14. I am going to look for him. 15. Father, Mr. A. asks for (demands) you. 16. Is he here? 17. Yes, sir, he is in the garden.

## 22.—VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS. DIRECT OBJECT.

<i>To love,</i>		<i>loving.</i>	<i>Aimer,</i>	<i>aimant.</i>
<i>J'aime,</i> I love,	<i>tu aimes,</i> thou lovest,	<i>il aime,</i> he loves,	<i>nous aimons,</i> we love,	<i>vous aimez,</i> you love,
<i>Me.</i> <i>Us.</i>	<i>Thee.</i> <i>You.</i>		<i>Me.</i> <i>Nous.</i>	<i>Th.</i> <i>Vous.</i>

1. These four pronouns, like *le, la, les*, are placed immediately before a transitive verb.

We love thee and thou lovest us.

Nous t'aimons et tu nous aimes.

They love me and I love them.

Ils m'aiment et je les aime.

You love him and he loves you.

Vous l'aimez et il vous aime.

2. *Me, te, become m', t', before a vowel or a silent h.*

*Whom?*

*Who.*

*Qui? que.*

*Qui.*

3. *Whom* Interrogative is always *qui*. With this exception, *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb; the same of persons as we have seen of things (Lessons 19 and 20).

Whom do you love?

*Qui aimez-vous?*

I love the friend whom you love.

J'aime l'ami *que* vous aimez.

He loves the brother who loves him.

Il aime le frère *qui* l'aime.

We love him (the one) who loves us.

Nous aimons celui *qui* nous aime.

They love her (the one) whom thou lovest.

Ils aiment celle *que* tu aimes.

I seek those (the ones) who seek me.

Je cherche ceux *qui* me cherchent.

We seek those (the ones) whom you seek.

Nous cherchons celles *que* vous cherchez.

4. Pronouns which are the object of the verb in the manner of the above (*me, te, vous*, etc.), that is, without a preposition expressed or understood before them, are called DIRECT OBJECTS, or DIRECT OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
A <i>rat</i> .	A <i>mouse</i> .	Un <i>rat</i> .	Une <i>souris</i> .
A <i>cat</i> .	A <i>bat</i> .	Un <i>chat</i> .	Une <i>chauve-souris</i> .
A <i>clerk</i> .	A <i>pound</i> .	Un <i>commis</i> .	Une <i>livre</i> .

14 10 12 7 7 6 7 8 7 7 21 7 6 7 1 13 12 1  
vingt-deuxième, al-mer, al-mané, aime, aimes, al-mons, al-mos, aiment, rat, sou-rie, chat,  
17 12 12 12 12 12 12  
chauve-sou-rie, com-mis, livre



		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>Superb.</i>		<i>Superbe.</i>	<i>Superbe.</i>
			<i>Mais pas, mais non.</i>
<i>But</i>	<i>But not.</i>	<i>Mais.</i>	<i>Mais non pas.</i>
			<i>Mais point.</i>
			<i>Mais non point.*</i>

5. When *de* comes before a possessive pronoun (*le mien, le tien, etc.*), *de le* and *de les* are of course contracted to *du, des* (according to Lesson 6, 8).

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.
Of mine, from mine	<i>Du mien,</i>	<i>de la mienne,</i>	<i>des miens,</i>	<i>des miennes.</i>
Of thine, from thine.	<i>Du tien,</i>	<i>de la tienne,</i>	<i>des tiens,</i>	<i>des tiennes.</i>
Of his, hers, its, etc.	<i>Du sien,</i>	<i>de la sienne,</i>	<i>des siens,</i>	<i>des siennes.</i>
Of ours, from ours.	<i>Du nôtre,</i>	<i>de la nôtre,</i>	<i>des nôtres,</i>	<i>des nôtres.</i>
Of yours, from yours.	<i>Du vôtre,</i>	<i>de la vôtre,</i>	<i>des vôtres,</i>	<i>des vôtres.</i>
Of theirs, from theirs.	<i>Du leur,</i>	<i>de la leur,</i>	<i>des leurs,</i>	<i>des leurs.</i>
Art thou the clerk of his father or of mine?	Es-tu le commis de son père ou du mien?			
I am the clerk of thine.	Je suis le commis du tien.			
I have the pen, but not the paper.	J'ai la plume, mais pas le papier.			
Has he the money of your friends and of ours?	A-t-il l'argent de vos amis et des nôtres?			
He has that of yours, but not of ours.	Il a celui des vôtres, mais non pas des nôtres.			

1. Tes amis t'aiment-ils? 2. Ils m'aiment, et je les aime.  
 3. Le général vous aime-t-il? 4. Il nous aime. 5. Qui aimez-vous?  
 6. Nous aimons tous nos amis. 7. Qui aime le commis?  
 8. Il aime celui qui l'aime. 9. Cherchez-vous la dame que nous cherchons?  
 10. Nous ne cherchons pas celle que vous cherchez, nous cherchons celle qui est chez ma tante.  
 11. Cherchez-vous les hommes que je cherche? 12. Non, monsieur, je cherche ceux qui me cherchent.  
 13. Qui ces dames aiment-elles? 14. Elles aiment les petites filles qui les aiment.  
 15. Le négociant cherche-t-il les commis que nous cherchons? 16. Non, monsieur, il cherche ceux qui nous cherchent.  
 17. Que cherche le chat? 18. Il cherche les rats et les souris.  
 19. Ne cherche-t-il pas les chauves-souris aussi? 20. Non, madame, il cherche les souris mais non pas les chauves-souris.  
 21. Le chat a-t-il le rat? 22. Non, monsieur, il a la souris, mais pas le rat.  
 23. La maison du général est superbe, et ses chevaux sont superbes aussi. 24. Le garçon veut une livre de

\* These negatives stand in the order of their strength—*point* being stronger than *pas*, and *non point* the strongest; *mais non* is the most elegant.

viande et une livre de chandelles. 25. Veut-il le pain de mon boulanger ou du sien? 26. Il veut celui du sien et du vôtre.

1. Whom dost thou love? 2. I love my good friends. 3. Does the neighbor love me? 4. He loves thee. 5. Do the children love you? 6. They love us and we love them. 7. Whom does the doctor love? 8. He loves thee and he loves us also. 9. Does he not love you? 10. No, he loves you, but he does not love me. 11. Whom is the clerk looking for? 12. He is looking for the merchant whom we are looking for. 13. Is he not looking for the one who is looking for him? 14. No, sir, he is looking for the one who is in that store. 15. What children do you seek? 16. I seek those whom you seek, and those who are in the garden. 17. Are you looking for the little girls whom I am looking for? 18. No, sir, I am looking for those who are at the neighbor's. 19. What has the cat? 20. He has the rat and the bat. 21. Has he not the mouse? 22. No, sir, he has the bat, but not the mouse. 23. What do you wish for? 24. I wish for a pound of tea and a pound of sugar. 25. Do those men wish for the coffee of their merchant or of ours? 26. They wish for that of theirs; we wish for that of yours. 27. I wish for the superb coat. 28. Do you wish for this one or that one? 29. I wish for neither this one nor that one, I wish for the superb coat of the tailor.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What are you looking for? 2. I am looking for my pen and my pencil. 3. Your pen is in my copy-book, and your pencil is under that slate. 4. I am not looking for my steel pen. 5. Which one do you wish for? 6. I am looking for my gold pen. 7. Is it not on the table? 8. No, sir. 9. Sister (*ma sœur*), what do you wish for? 10. I wish for your ink and your copy-book, if you please. 11. My ink is there on the chair. 12. Where is your copy-book? 13. It is not here, my cousin has it in the house. 14. Have you a pin? 15. Do you wish for a large pin or a small one? 16. A large one, if you please. 17. Is this good? 18. Yes, thank you (*merci*).

## 23.—VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

FIRST CONJUGATION. IN *ER*.

1. There are in French four conjugations, that is, four different ways of conjugating verbs, distinguished by the termination of the infinitive.

The First Conjugation has the infinitive ending in ER.

The Second	"	"	in IR.
The Third	"	"	in OIR.
The Fourth	"	"	in EE.

2. A very large majority of all the verbs in the language are of THE FIRST CONJUGATION (in ER); and all of them, except *aller*, to go, have the terminations of the indicative present, like *désirer*, *chercher*, and *aimer*, in E, ES, E, ONS, EZ, ENT.

3. The *past participle* of this conjugation is formed by dropping *r* final of the infinitive, and accenting the final *a*. Thus,

Désirer, to desire,	makes the past participle	<i>désiré</i> , desired.
Chercher, to seek,	"	<i>cherché</i> , sought.
Aller, to go,	"	<i>allé</i> , gone.
Aimer, to love,	"	<i>aimé</i> , loved.

To listen to, listening to, listened to.	<i>Écouter</i> , <i>écoutant</i> , <i>écouté</i> .
<i>J'écoute</i> , <i>tu écoutes</i> , <i>il écoute</i> ,	<i>nous écoutons</i> , <i>vous écoutez</i> , <i>ils écoutent</i> ,
I listen to, thou listenest to, he listens to,	we listen to, you listen to, they listen to.

How much, how many.

Combien (de before the noun).

One. Two. Three. Four.

Un, une. Deux. Trois. Quatre.

How much gold. How many dollars. Combien d'or. Combien de piastres.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The master.	The mistress.	Le maître.	La maîtresse.
The king.	The queen.	Le roi.	La reine.
A prince.	A princess.	Un prince.	Une princesse.
A bishop.	A church.	Un évêque.	Une église.
The shoemaker.	The seamstress.	Le cordonnier.	La couturière.
The mason.	The poultry.	Le maçon.	La volaille.
Whose beef.	Whose poultry.	Le bœuf de qui.	La volaille de qui.
Whose, the one of whom (sing.).		Celui de qui.	Celle de qui.
Whose, the ones of whom (plur.).		Ceux de qui.	Celles de qui.

4. Whose, accompanied by a noun, is *de qui* in French, with the noun preceding; without a noun, it is *de qui* with *celui*, *celle*, *ceux*, or *celles*, preceding.

Whose horse do you wish for?	Le cheval de qui voulez-vous?
Whose has the master?	Celui de qui le maître a-t-il?
Whose history art thou looking for?	L'histoire de qui cherches-tu?
Whose has the mistress?	Celle de qui la maîtresse a-t-elle?
Whose children do you listen to?	Les enfants de qui écoutez-vous?
Whose does the prince listen to?	Ceux de qui le prince écoute-t-il?
Whose slates have you?	Les ardoises de qui avez-vous?
Whose has the mason?	Celles de qui le maçon a-t-il?

5. The article is prefixed to titles and epithets belonging to proper names.

General Jackson.	President Adams.	Le général Jackson.	Le président Adams.
King George.	Queen Victoria.	Le roi Georges.	La reine Victoria.
Doctor Peter.	Big William.	Le docteur Pierre.	Le gros Guillaume.

6 12 6 7 6 1 4 7 6 5 14 6 5 18 2 5 18 6 5 19 5 19 6 18  
 dé-si-ré, cher-ché, al-lé, ai-mé, é-cou-ter, é-con-tant, é-cou-té, é-coute, é-coute, é-cou-  
 tons, é-cou-tes, é-cou-tenz, com-bien, une, deux, trois, quatre, mai-tre, mai-tresse, reine, prince,  
 prin-cesse, é-vê-que, é-g-lise, cor-don-nier, cou-tu-rière, ma-çon, vo-laille.

6. When *de* precedes such epithets, it of course forms *du* with the article (Lesson 6).

Corporal John's gun.

Le fusil *du* caporal Jean.

Captain Smith's house.

La maison *du* capitaine Smith.

The books of the good David.

Les livres *du* bon David.

1. M'écoutes-tu? 2. Je t'écoute. 3. Qui le roi écoute-t-il?  
4. Il écoute l'évêque Jean. 5. Nous écoutez-vous? 6. Nous vous  
écoutons. 7. Les soldats écoutent-ils la reine? 8. Il ne l'écoute  
pas. 9. Combien d'enfants le roi a-t-il? 10. Il a deux fils et trois  
filles. 11. Combien de frères la reine a-t-elle? 12. Elle a quatre  
frères et deux sœurs. 13. Écoutez-vous la princesse? 14.  
J'écoute la princesse et le prince. 15. Combien d'enfants le maître  
a-t-il? 16. Il a quatre fils et trois filles. 17. Allez-vous à l'église  
de l'évêque Pierre? 18. Non, monsieur, je vais chez le cordonnier.  
19. Le cordonnier écoute-t-il la couturière? 20. Non, monsieur,  
la couturière écoute le cordonnier et le maçon. 21. Les aiguilles  
de qui avez-vous? 22. J'ai celles de la couturière. 23. La volaille  
de qui voulez-vous? 24. Je veux celle du paysan. 25. Allez-  
vous à l'église? 26. Non, monsieur, je ne vais pas à l'église, je  
vais chez le voisin.

1. To whom dost thou listen? 2. I listen to thee. 3. Does  
the scholar listen to me? 4. No, sir, he listens to the master. 5.  
To whom do the little girls listen? 6. They listen to the mistress.  
7. Do you listen to us? 8. We do not listen to you. 9. How  
many horses has your father? 10. He has two horses, three cows,  
and four oxen. 11. How many children has the king? 12. He  
has two sons and three daughters. 13. Does the mistress wish for  
this book or that? 14. She wishes for neither this one nor that,  
she wishes for the one of the master. 15. Is the king going to  
this church or to that? 16. He is going neither to this nor to that,  
he is going to that of the bishop. 17. How many sons has the  
queen? 18. She has four sons and one daughter. 19. Does the  
queen listen to the prince or to the princess? 20. She listens  
neither to the prince nor to the princess, she listens to the bishop.  
21. Do you desire the shoes of my shoemaker or of yours? 22. I  
desire those of mine. 23. Have you the needles of your seamstress  
or of ours? 24. I have those of yours. 25. Whose hammers has  
the mason? 26. He has his. 27. Whose poultry have you? 28.  
I have mine. 29. Whose has the mason? 30. He has the poul-  
try of the countrywoman.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Where is the little boy who has the mason's hammer? 2. He is in the yard of my uncle's house. 3. He is not there. 4. Is he not in the garden? 5. He is neither in the yard nor in the garden. 6. He is in the yard or in the house. 7. Have you not the mistress's book? she wishes for it. 8. No, sir, I have it not. 9. Who has it? 10. Your cousin has it. 11. Where is she? 12. She is at your house, in the garden. 13. Does that scholar wish for his dictionary and his grammar? 14. He wishes for his dictionary, but not his grammar. 15. What knife have you? 16. The big one. 17. Where is it? 18. It is in the yard on the bench. 19. Thank you.

## 24.—VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## AVOIR, TO HAVE. IDIOMATIC.

1. In the phrases, *to be warm, to be cold, to be hungry, to be thirsty, to be sleepy, to be afraid, to be ashamed, to be right, to be wrong*, instead of the verb *to be* with an adjective, as in English, the French use the verb *to have* and a noun, literally meaning *to have heat, to have cold, to have hunger, etc.*

*To be warm. To be cold.*

*To be hungry. To be thirsty.*

*To be sleepy. To be afraid.*

*To be right. To be wrong.*

*To be ashamed. Well, very.*

*Avoir chaud. Avoir froid.*

*Avoir faim. Avoir soif.*

*Avoir sommeil. Avoir peur.*

*Avoir raison. Avoir tort.*

*Avoir honte. Bien.*

Are you cold? I am not cold.

He is very cold.

Art thou not warm?

I am very warm.

Are you not hungry?

We are very hungry.

Is the mistress thirsty?

She is very thirsty.

Are the children sleepy?

They are very sleepy.

*What is the matter with you?*

I am very hungry.

Who is afraid?

That seamstress is afraid.

Is big William right?

No, sir, he is wrong.

Is not king George wrong?

No, sir, he is right.

Are you ashamed? I am ashamed.

Avez-vous froid? Je n'ai pas froid.

Il a bien froid.

N'as-tu pas chaud?

J'ai bien chaud.

N'avez-vous pas faim?

Nous avons bien faim.

La maîtresse a-t-elle soif?

Elle a bien soif.

Les enfants ont-ils sommeil?

Ils ont bien sommeil.

*Qu'avez-vous?*

J'ai bien faim.

Qui a peur?

Cette couturière a peur.

Le gros Guillaume a-t-il raison?

Non, monsieur, il a tort.

Le roi George n'a-t-il pas tort?

Non, monsieur, il a raison.

Avez-vous honte? J'ai honte.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The cold.	Hunger.	Le froid.	La faim.
Sleep.	Thirst.	Le sommeil.	La soif.
The brook.	Fear.	Le ruisseau.	La peur.
A vessel.	Reason.	Un vaisseau.	La raison.
A ship.	Shame.	Un navire.	La honte.

2. In addressing relations and intimate friends, *Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle*, are not to be used; and *père, mère, frère, sœur*, etc., are not to be used without *mon* or *ma*; as, Son, art thou cold? No, sir, I am warm. Mon fils, as-tu froid? Non, mon père,\* j'ai chaud.

Daughter, art thou warm? Ma fille, as-tu chaud?  
 Yes, ma'am, I am very warm. Oui, ma mère, j'ai bien chaud.  
 Brother, where are you going? Mon frère, où vas-tu?  
 Sister, are you thirsty? Ma sœur, as-tu soif?

1. Avez-vous chaud? 2. Je n'ai pas chaud, j'ai froid. 3. Avez-vous bien froid? 4. Non, monsieur. 5. Qui a faim? 6. Le petit garçon a bien faim. 7. Les petites filles ont-elles soif? 8. Elles n'ont pas soif. 9. Qu'avez-vous? 10. J'ai sommeil. 11. Avez-vous bien sommeil? 12. Non, madame. 13. Qui a peur? 14. Ces jeunes filles ont peur. 15. Qui a raison et qui a tort? 16. Le maître a raison, et ce jeune garçon a tort. 17. Avez-vous honte? 18. Je n'ai pas honte. 19. Mon fils vas-tu au ruisseau? 20. Non, mon père, je vais chez le voisin. 21. Le matelot va-t-il à ce vaisseau-ci ou à celui-là? 22. Il ne va ni à celui-ci ni à celui-là, il va à ce navire. 23. Mon frère, où vas-tu? 24. Je vais au ruisseau. 25. Le général veut-il ce vaisseau-ci ou ce vaisseau-là? 26. Il ne veut ni celui-ci ni celui-là, il veut ce gros navire. 27. Le navire de qui veut-il? 28. Il veut celui du négociant. 29. Celui de qui voulez-vous? 30. Je veux le vôtre. 31. Avez-vous le cheval de mon frère ou du vôtre? 32. J'ai celui du mien.

1. Are you warm or cold? 2. I am neither warm nor cold. 3. Art thou hungry or thirsty? 4. I am hungry and thirsty also. 5. Are you not sleepy? 6. Yes, sir, we are very sleepy. 7. Who is afraid? 8. This little boy is afraid. 9. Are the masons right or wrong? 10. They are right, they are not wrong. 11. Are you afraid or ashamed? 12. We are neither afraid nor ashamed. 13. What is the matter with you? 14. We are very sleepy. 15. Son,

\* *Où, monsieur*, addressed to a father or brother, would be not very unlike *yes, mister*, in English.

is thy sister here? 16. No, sir, she is at her aunt's. 17. Daughter, hast thou my pen? 18. No, ma'am, it is on the table. 19. My son, hast thou my knife? 20. No, sir, Charles has it. 21. Daughter, hast thou thy book? 22. Yes, ma'am, I have it here. 23. Are you going to the vessel or to the brook? 24. I am going to the brook. 25. Does the prince wish for this ship or that one? 26. He wishes for neither this one nor that one. 27. Does he not wish for the ship and the vessel? 28. He wishes for the vessel, but not the ship. 29. Whose apples has the little boy? 30. He has his. 31. Whose has his sister? 32. She has the gardener's. 33. Has she those of our gardener or of theirs? 34. She has those of theirs. 35. Are you looking for the men whom I am looking for? 36. I am looking for those who are looking for me.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. I am very thirsty; I wish for a glass of cool water. 2. The glass is on the table. 3. Do you wish for a glass of beer or a glass of wine? 4. I thank you, a glass of cool water; I do not like (*la*) beer. 5. You are right; I like (*le*) wine, but not (*la*) beer. 6. Who has my dictionary? I wish for it. 7. Have you my dictionary, my friend? 8. Yes; do you wish for it? 9. I am looking for it. 10. It is there on my table. 11. This is not mine. 12. Is your dictionary big or little? 13. It is big. 14. It is in my room; I am going to look for it. 15. If you please. 16. Is this one yours? 17. Yes, my friend, I thank you (*mille remerciements*).

## 25.—VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## VOULOIR, TO WILL.

1. We have seen that the verb *vouloir*, followed by a noun or pronoun, may be translated *wish for*, *will have*. Before a verb also, when used interrogatively or negatively, it may be translated *to wish*, or *to be willing*.

Do you wish to (will you) go home? Voulez-vous aller chez vous?

He is not willing to (will not) be my friend. Il ne veut pas être mon ami.

Are you willing to (will you) be good? Voulez-vous être bon?

We do not wish to (will not) be lazy. Nous ne voulons pas être paresseux.

2. The ordinary meaning of *vouloir*, however, especially when affirmative, is equivalent to *will*, in English, a little emphasized.

I will have my money *to-day*. Je veux avoir mon argent *aujourd'hui*.

She will have all that she desires. Elle veut avoir tout ce qu'elle désire.

We will (are determined to) have it. Nous voulons l'avoir.

They will (are determined to) be rich. Ils veulent être riches.

8. *Vouloir bien*, used interrogatively, is a polite mode of asking or requesting; used affirmatively, it denotes consent.

Will you please to go to our house?      Voulez-vous bien aller chez nous?  
I am quite willing.      Je le veux bien.  
Will you please to look for my pencil?      Voulez-vous bien chercher mon crayon?  
I am quite willing to look for it.      Je veux bien le chercher.

*To speak, speaking, spoken.*      *Parler, parlant, parlé.*  
*Je parle, tu parles, il parle, nous parlons, vous parlez, ils parlent,*  
*I speak, thou speakest, he speaks, we speak, you speak, they speak.*

4. Let the learner bear in mind that all verbs of the first conjugation (in ER) are varied as *chercher, aimer, écouter, and parler*, already given.

*To me.*      *To us.*      *Me.*      *Nous.*  
*To thee.*      *To you.*      *Te.*      *Vous.*  
*To him, to her, to it.*      *To them.*      *Lui.*      *Leur.*

To whom dost thou speak?      A qui parles-tu?  
I speak to thee.      Je te parle.  
Do you not speak to me?      Ne me parlez-vous pas?  
We do not speak to you.      Nous ne vous parlons pas.  
The shoemakers speak to us.      Les cordonniers nous parlent.  
My brother speaks to them, and they speak to him.      Mon frère leur parle, et ils lui parlent.  
I speak to her, and she speaks to me.      Je lui parle, et elle me parle.

5. Pronouns which are the object of the verb in the manner of the above six,—that is, with the preposition to employed before them in English,—are called INDIRECT OBJECTS or INDIRECT OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS. They are placed immediately before a transitive verb.

*To taste, tasting, tasted.*      *Goûter, goûtant, goûté.*  
MASCULINE.      FEMININE.  
*The one and the other, both (sing.).*      *L'un et l'autre.*      *L'une et l'autre.*  
*The ones and the others, both (plur.).*      *Lcs uns et les autres.*      *Les unes et les autres.*  
*Neither the one nor the other, neither (sing.).*      *Ni l'un ni l'autre.*      *Ni l'une ni l'autre.*  
*Neither the ones nor the others, neither (plur.).*      *Ni les uns ni les autres.*      *Ni les unes ni les autres.*

6. The above negatives require *ne* before the verb.

Dost thou taste the sweet fruit or the sour fruit?      Goûtes-tu le fruit doux ou le fruit aigre?  
I taste neither.      Je ne goûte ni l'un ni l'autre.  
Do you taste this meat or that?      Goûtez-vous cette viande-ci ou celle-là?  
We taste neither.      Nous ne goûtons ni l'une ni l'autre.  
Does he taste the biscuits or the cakes?      Goûte-t-il les biscuits ou les gâteaux?  
He tastes neither.      Il ne goûte ni les uns ni les autres.  
*Lazy.*      *Paresseux.*      *Paresseuse.*  
*To-day.*      *To-morrow.*      *Aujourd'hui.*      *Demain.*

<sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
par-ler, par-lant, par-lé, par-le, par-lons, par-les, par-lent, goût-er, goût-ant, goût-té, pa-  
res-seux.



1. Désirez-vous votre argent? 2. Oui, monsieur, je le désire, et je veux l'avoir aujourd'hui. 3. Cet homme aime l'argent, et il veut être riche. 4. Voulez-vous bien écouter cet homme? 5. Je veux bien l'écouter. 6. Voulez-vous bien chercher mon livre? 7. Je veux bien le chercher. 8. Que goûtent les soldats? 9. Ils goûtent notre bon vin. 10. Goûtent-ils ces pommes-ci ou celles-là? 11. Ils ne goûtent ni les unes ni les autres. 12. Me parles-tu? 13. Je te parle. 14. Nous parlez-vous? 15. Nous vous parlons. 16. Le maître parle-t-il à cet écolier? 17. Il lui parle. 18. Les écolières parlent-elles à la maîtresse? 19. Elles lui parlent. 20. Le général parle-t-il aux soldats? 21. Il leur parle. 22. Goûtes-tu le thé ou le café? 23. Je goûte l'un et l'autre. 24. Goûtez-vous la pêche et la poire? 25. Nous ne goûtons ni l'une ni l'autre. 26. Cet enfant n'a ni faim ni soif? 27. Je ne goûte ni l'eau ni la bière, mon frère goûte l'une et l'autre.

1. Will you go to the store? 2. No, sir, I will go home. 3. That man will have all that he desires. 4. Will you please to look for my pen? 5. I am quite willing to look for it. 6. Do you taste the sweet apples or the sour? 7. We taste both. 8. Does the general taste these biscuits or those? 9. He tastes both. 10. Dost thou taste the wine or the milk? 11. I taste neither. 12. What gloves have you? 13. I have mine. 14. Have you the white gloves or the black ones? 15. I have neither. 16. Have you the gloves or the stockings? 17. We have both. 18. Has the merchant both? 19. No, sir, he has neither. 20. Has the doctor the white cravats or the blue? 21. He has neither. 22. Hast thou both? 23. I have neither. 24. Where are you going? 25. We are going to the brook. 26. Queen Victoria has many soldiers and many vessels.

1. I speak to thee; dost thou speak to me? 2. I speak to thee. 3. Do you speak to us? 4. We do not speak to you. 5. We speak to you; do you not speak to us? 6. We speak to you. 7. Those men speak to me, and I speak to them. 8. Does the master speak to the scholars? 9. He speaks to them, and they speak to him. 10. Do you taste the bread or the butter? 11. We taste neither, but the children taste both. 12. Do you wish for the pen or the ink? 13. I wish for neither, but my friend is looking for both. 14. Is the boy looking for his books or his papers? 15. He is looking for neither.



sons, the first and the second persons precede the third; second, when they are both of the third person, the direct object is always placed first. Thus,

It *or* him to me, it *or* her to me, them    Me le, me la, me les.  
to me.

It *or* him to thee, it *or* her to thee, them    Te le, te la, te les.  
to thee.

It *or* him to us, it *or* her to us, them to    Nous le, nous la, nous les.  
us.

It *or* him to you, it *or* her to you, them    Vous le, vous la, vous les.  
to you.

It *or* him to him, it *or* her to him, them    Le lui, la lui, les lui.  
to him.

It *or* him to her, it *or* her to her, them    Le lui, la lui, les lui.  
to her.

It *or* him to them, it *or* her to them,    Le leur, la leur, les leur.  
them to them.

Does the gentleman give you the parasol?    Monsieur vous donne-t-il le parasol?

He does not give it to me.

Il ne me le donne pas.

I give it to him.

Je le lui donne.

Do you not give it to us?

Ne nous le donnez-vous pas?

We do not give it to you.

Nous ne vous le donnons pas.

Dost thou lend me thy pen?

Me prêtes-tu ta plume?

I do not lend it to thee.

Je ne te la prête pas.

Do you not lend it to us?

Ne nous la prêtez-vous pas?

We do not lend it to you.

Nous ne vous la prêtons pas.

5. When two nouns, a direct and indirect object, belong to the same verb, the direct object is generally placed first.\*

I give the man this money.

Je donne cet argent à l'homme.

He sends his brother the letters.

Il envoie les lettres à son frère.

6. But if the direct object be limited by something following, it is to be placed after the indirect object.

He sends to his brother the letters of  
his son and daughter.

Il envoie à son frère les lettres de son  
fils et de sa fille.

1. Prêtes-tu ton crayon ou ton couteau? 2. Je ne prête ni l'un ni l'autre. 3. Portes-tu les journaux à mon père? 4. Je ne les lui porte pas. 5. Les portez-vous aux voisins? 6. Nous les leur portons. 7. Envoyez-vous cette lettre au capitaine? 8. Je la lui envoie. 9. Me donnes-tu le fruit? 10. Je te le donne. 11. Le petit garçon vous donne-t-il sa fleur? 12. Il ne me la donne pas. 13. Les négociants vous donne-t-ils leurs pommes? 14. Ils ne me les donnent pas. 15. Ils te les donnent, ne nous les donnes-tu pas? 16. Je ne vous les donne pas. 17. L'écolier donne-t-il cette rose

\* The direct and indirect objects in nouns are distinguished in the same way as in pronouns.

au maître? 18. Il ne la lui donne pas. 19. Ne la donne-t-il pas à la maîtresse? 20. Il la lui donne. 21. Les soldats prêtent-ils leurs fusils à ces hommes? 22. Ils les leur prêtent. 23. Prêtez-vous votre livre à cette dame? 24. Je le lui prête. 25. Le prêtez-vous aux écoliers? 26. Je le leur prête. 27. Envoyez-vous les journaux à vos frères? 28. Nous les leur envoyons. 29. Envoies-tu ce livre à ta sœur? 30. Je le lui envoie.

1. To whom dost thou give the handsome sofa? 2. I give it to thee. 3. To whom does the master give the pretty book? 4. He gives it to me. 5. Dost thou not give it to us? 6. I do not give it to you. 7. To whom do the gardeners give their flowers? 8. They give them to me. 9. Do they not give them to us? 10. They do not give them to you. 11. Do they give them to thee? 12. Yes, sir, they give them to me. 13. To whom do the fishermen carry their fish? 14. They carry them to you. 15. Do they not carry them to the shoemaker? 16. They do not carry them to him. 17. Do you carry your letters to your friends? 18. We carry them to them. 19. To whom does the clerk send the gloves? 20. He sends them to the stranger. 21. Does he send them to thee? 22. He does not send them to me. 23. Does he send them to us? 24. He does not send them to you.

25. Does the clerk carry the cloth to the doctor? 26. He does not carry it to him. 27. Does he carry (to) him the silk? 28. He carries it to him. 29. Dost thou carry that book to thy mother? 30. I carry it to her. 31. Dost thou carry her the newspaper also? 32. I do not carry it to her. 33. Do you give the flowers to that young lady? 34. We give them to her. 35. Do you lend your money to the merchants? 36. We lend it to them. 37. Do you send the meat to the soldiers? 38. We send it to them. 39. Do you wear the white cravat or the black one? 40. I wear neither. 41. Do you lend me these books or those? 42. I lend you both.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Good morning, sir; do you wish to buy (*acheter*) something? 2. Yes, sir, I wish to buy a book. 3. What book do you wish to buy? 4. Have you the history of France? 5. Yes, sir, we have it; do you wish for it in French (*en français*) or in English (*en anglais*)? 6. In French, if you please. 7. This one is a good history. 8. Thanks (*merci*). 9. To whom do you speak? 10. I speak to the president. 11. Do those gentlemen speak to doctor

Peter? 12. They speak to him. 13. Does captain John speak to the soldiers? 14. He speaks to them. 15. Do they speak to the sailors? 16. They do not speak to them. 17. Do they speak to thee? 18. They do not speak to me. 19. Are you warm or cold? 20. I am neither warm nor cold. 21. Is that sick man thirsty? 22. He is very thirsty. 23. Is he not sleepy? 24. No, sir, he is thirsty, but not sleepy.

## 27.—VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

USE OF *EST-CE QUE*.

1. With most French verbs a question is asked in the first person singular, as in the other persons, by placing the subject after the verb; as,

Do I go to the bank?	Vais-je à la banque?
Am I at your house or your father's?	Suis-je chez vous ou chez votre père?
Have I a good pen?	Ai-je une bonne plume?
Do I speak properly?	Parlé-je convenablement?
Do I listen well?	Écouté-je bien?

2. When *je* follows the verb, *e* final of the first person singular indicative present takes an acute accent, as in the last two phrases.

3. *Est-ce que*, however, is used to introduce the Indicative present first person, to avoid a harsh sound.

Do I sleep?	Est-ce que je dors (not <i>dors-je</i> )?
Do I run?	Est-ce que je cours (not <i>cours-je</i> )?
Do I seek?	Est-ce que je cherche?

4. The French also use *est-ce que* with all persons and tenses, to express some emotion blended with the interrogation.

Do I go to school, father?	Est-ce que je vais à l'école, mon père?
Are you wounded, my friend?	Est-ce que vous êtes blessé, mon ami?
Are we the friends of that wicked person?	Est-ce que nous sommes les amis de ce méchant?
Do I ever speak evil of you?	Est-ce que je parle jamais mal de vous?
Have we your money?	Est-ce que nous avons votre argent?
<i>To study, studying, studied.</i>	<i>Étudier, étudiant, étudié.</i>
<i>To buy, buying, bought.</i>	<i>Acheter, achetant, acheté.</i>

5. In verbs of the first conjugation having *e* mute in the last syllable but one, that *e* takes the grave accent when the next consonant is followed by *e* mute.

<i>J'achète,</i>	<i>tu achètes,</i>	<i>il achète,</i>	<i>nous achetons,</i>	<i>vous achetez,</i>	<i>ils achètent,</i>
I buy,	thou buyest,	he buys,	we buy,	you buy,	they buy.

That scholar studies well.

Cet écolier étudie bien.

1 7 21 1 4 8 5 22 17 6 5 22 17 2 5 22 17 6 1 6 1 2 1 6  
par-lé-je, conve-nable-ment, é-tu-dior, é-tu-diant, é-tu-dié, a-che-ter, a-che-tant, a-che-té,  
a-chète, a-che-ton, a-che-tes, a-chètent.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The <i>air</i> .	A <i>fever</i> .	L' <i>air</i> .	Une <i>fièvre</i> .
This <i>country</i> .	A <i>tomato</i> .	Ce <i>pays</i> .	Une <i>tomate</i> .
This <i>climate</i> .	The <i>mustard</i> .	Ce <i>climat</i> .	La <i>moutarde</i> .
The <i>time, weather</i> .	My <i>library</i> .	Le <i>temps</i> .	Ma <i>bibliothèque</i> .
The <i>Frenchman</i> .	The <i>French-woman</i> .	Le <i>français</i> .	La <i>française</i> .
The <i>Spaniard</i> .	{ The <i>Spanish-woman</i> .	L' <i>espagnol</i> .	L' <i>espagnole</i> .
The <i>German</i> .	{ The <i>German-woman</i> .	L' <i>allemand</i> .	L' <i>allemande</i> .
The <i>Englishman</i> .	{ The <i>English-woman</i> .	L' <i>anglais</i> .	L' <i>anglaise</i> .
The <i>Italian</i> .	The <i>Italian-woman</i> .	L' <i>italien</i> .	L' <i>italienne</i> .

6. National designations like the above, when used as nouns and applied to nations, begin with a capital letter; when used as adjectives or applied to individuals, they begin with a small letter.

The French are polite.	Les Français sont polis.
He is a Frenchman (French).	Il est français.
I have an English watch.	J'ai une montre anglais.

7. The masculine of the above five also denotes the language.

I study <i>French</i> and <i>English</i> , you study	J'étudie le <i>français</i> et l' <i>anglais</i> , vous
<i>German</i> and <i>Spanish</i> , she studies	étudiez l' <i>allemand</i> et l' <i>espagnol</i> ,
<i>Italian</i> .	elle étudie l' <i>italien</i> .

1. Quels livres avez-vous ? 2. J'ai un dictionnaire anglais et une grammaire italienne. 3. Étudiez-vous le français ? 4. J'étudie le français et mes cousins étudient l'espagnol. 5. Le français achète-t-il les cravates blanches ou les cravates noires ? 6. Il n'achète ni les unes ni les autres. 7. Que désirez-vous étudier ? 8. Je désire étudier l'espagnol, mais ma sœur veut étudier l'allemand. 9. Est-ce que votre sœur est malade ? 10. Elle est un peu malade. 11. L'air de cette chambre est-il frais ? 12. Il est bien frais. 13. Aimez-vous ce pays-ci ? 14. J'aime ce pays-ci et ce climat-ci ? 15. Votre mère va-t-elle chez la petite française ? 16. Non, madame, elle n'a pas le temps. 17. Votre ami est-il malade ? 18. Oui, monsieur, il a la fièvre. 19. Qu'a ce domestique ? 20. Il a les tomates et la moutarde. 21. La bibliothèque du docteur est grande.

1. I desire to study French, but my brother will study Spanish.  
2. What is the matter with that sick man ? 3. He has the fever.

7 12 7 5 12 15 1 12 1 18 1 8 12 12 15 5 8 7 8  
air, fièvre, pays, to-mate, cli-mat, mon-tarde, temps, bi-bli-o-thèque, fran-çaise, fran-  
çaise, es-pa-gnol, es-pa-gnole, alle-mand, alle-mande, an-glais, an-glaise, i-ta-lien, i-ta-lienne.

4. What art thou buying? 5. I am buying a library. 6. What do the cooks wish to buy? 7. They wish to buy the tomatoes and the mustard. 8. Is the Spanish woman going to the house of the German woman? 9. No, sir, she is going to the Italian woman's. 10. Are you going to the English woman's? 11. No, sir, I have not the time. 12. Do you wish to study Italian? 13. I wish to study Italian, but my sister will study French. 14. Do you study Spanish or German? 15. We study neither. 16. Do the merchants buy the shoes or the gloves? 17. They buy neither. 18. Do you buy the forks or the spoons? 19. We buy neither.

20. What do those children study? 21. They study English. 22. Do the countrymen send you their fruit? 23. They send it to me. 24. Do they send you their peaches? 25. They do not send them to me. 26. To whom do you give your books? 27. We give them to thee. 28. Do you send this meat to the neighbor? 29. We do not send it to him, we send it to thee. 30. To whom do you lend your books? 31. We lend them to you. 32. To whom does the master lend his? 33. He lends them to thee. 34. To whom dost thou lend thy money? 35. I lend it to you. 36. Does the merchant send you your money? 37. He sends it to us.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What are you carrying in that bag? 2. We are carrying these nails to the carpenter who is at our house. 3. You have many nails; does the carpenter wish for them all? 4. Yes, he wishes for them all. 5. Where do you go for (*chercher*) these nails? 6. My father sends me for them (*les chercher*) to the store. 7. Do you go to the store of Mr. A. or to Mr. B.'s? 8. I go to neither the one nor the other; I go to my cousin's. 9. Is your cousin at his store? 10. No, sir, he is sick. 11. He is sick! what is the matter with him? 12. He has the fever. 13. Who is his physician? 14. His physician is doctor H. 15. Is your cousin very sick? 16. Not (*non pas*) very sick. 17. I wish to go to his house. 18. You are right; he loves you much.

## 28.—VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## SECOND CONJUGATION. IN IR.

1. Verbs of the Second Conjugation (inf in IR), have the terminations of the present indicative, as follows :

IS, IS, IT, ISSONS, ISSEZ, ISSENT.

2. The past participle of this conjugation is formed by dropping IR of the infinitive ; except that those in *enir* change the *i* to *u*.\*

To CHOOSE, CHOSEN, CHOISIR (inf.). CHOISI (past part.).

*Je choisis, tu choisis, il choisit, nous choisissons, vous choisissez, ils choisissent,*  
I choose, thou choosest, he chooses, we choose, you choose, they choose.

To come, coming, come. Venir, venant, venu.

To hold, holding, held. Tenir, tenant, tenu.

3. *Ventr, tenir*, and their compounds, are irregular, and terminate thus :

*Je viens, tu viens, il vient, nous venons, vous venez, ils viennent,*  
I come, thou comest, he comes, we come, you come, they come.

## MASCULINE.

## FEMININE.

The chocolate.	A purse.	Le chocolat.	Une bourse.
A billet, note.	A violet.	Un billet.	Une violette.
A bank-bill.	A jonquil.	Un billet de banque.	Une jonquille.
Live, living.		Vivant.	Vivante.
Dead.		Mort.	Morte.
Whence.	From your house.	D'où.	De chez vous.
From his house.	From her house.	De chez lui.	De chez elle.
Do you choose the chocolate or the tea ?		Choisissez-vous le chocolat ou le thé ?	

I choose neither the chocolate nor the tea. Je ne choisis ni le chocolat ni le thé.

Do you choose the leather purse ? Choisissez-vous la bourse de cuir ?

I choose the silk purse. Je choisis la bourse de soie.

Whence do you come ? D'où venez-vous ?

We come from home. Nous venons de chez nous.

Dost thou come from the store ? Viens-tu du magasin ?

No, I come from the brook. Non, je viens du ruisseau.

What are those little boys holding ? Que tiennent ces petits garçons ?

They are holding their books, and I am holding mine. Ils tiennent leurs livres, et je tiens les miens.

4. The articles and adjective pronouns are to be repeated before each noun in the same construction, and before each adjective belonging to a separate noun.

He has the book, pencil, and paper. Il a le livre, le crayon et le papier.

We wish for the bread and cheese. Nous voulons le pain et le fromage.

He has his sugar and milk. Il a son sucre et son lait.

\* Other exceptions to this rule will be given as the verbs are introduced.

<sup>20 12</sup> <sup>20 12</sup> <sup>20 12</sup> <sup>20 12</sup> <sup>20 12 21</sup> <sup>20 12 6</sup> <sup>20 12</sup> <sup>4 13</sup>  
<sup>4 8</sup> <sup>4 22</sup> <sup>4 12</sup> <sup>4 8</sup> <sup>4 22</sup> <sup>12 14</sup> <sup>12 14</sup> <sup>4 21</sup> <sup>4 6</sup> <sup>12 6</sup> <sup>16 15</sup> <sup>1 18</sup>  
*choi-zir, choi-zir, choi-zir, choi-zir, choi-zir-sons, choi-zir-sons, choi-zissent, ve-nir,*  
*ve-nant, ve-nu, te-nir, te-nant, te-nu, viens, vient, ve-nons, ve-nus, viennent, cho-co-lat, bourse,*  
*bi-llet, vi-o-lette, ban-ke, jon-killé, vi-vant, vi-vante, mort, morte.*



5. *Country*, meaning a particular region, is *pays*; *country*, distinguished from the city, is *campagne*.

I like my country, you like yours. J'aime mon *pays*, vous aimez le vôtre.  
We like the country, he likes the city. Nous aimons la campagne, il aime la ville.

1. D'où viennent vos frères? 2. Ils viennent de chez eux.  
3. Les chevaux de qui tenez-vous? 4. Nous tenons les nôtres.  
5. Que tient ce petit garçon? 6. Il tient les fleurs de cette dame.  
7. Je tiens mes livres, et les enfants tiennent les roses, les violettes et les jonquilles.  
8. Portez-vous ce billet à votre père? 9. Je le lui porte.  
10. Donnez-vous les billets de banque aux marchands?  
11. Nous les leur donnons. 12. Quel poisson ce cuisinier choisit-il?  
13. Il choisit celui-ci. 14. Ces poissons-ci sont vivants et ceux-là sont morts.  
15. Ces arbres du jardinier sont morts. 16. La mère de ce petit garçon est-elle morte?  
17. Elle est vivante. 18. Ces dames choisissent-elles les violettes ou les jonquilles?  
19. Elles choisissent les unes et les autres. 20. D'où cet homme vient-il?  
21. Il vient de France. 22. Que tiens-tu? 23. Je tiens mon livre.

1. Do the cooks choose the live fish of this boy, or the dead ones of the fisherman? 2. They choose the live ones.  
3. Dost thou choose the glass candlestick or the copper one? 4. I choose neither.  
5. Do you come from the (*du*) brook? 6. No, sir, I come from the store.  
7. Does the mason come from your house? 8. No, sir, he comes from the ship.  
9. Are the countrymen coming here? 10. No, sir, they are going to the country.  
11. Whence do you come? 12. We come from the city. 13. Dost thou come from the country?  
14. No, sir, I come from home (*de chez moi*). 15. What books are you holding?  
16. We are holding ours. 17. Are the scholars holding theirs? 18. They are holding them.  
19. Whose horse is the countryman holding? 20. He is holding his. 21. Whose books dost thou hold?  
22. I hold my friends'. 23. Do they not hold theirs? 24. No, sir, I hold them.

1. Does the master lend you his pen? 2. He lends it to us.  
3. Do the merchants lend you their money? 4. They do not lend it to us, they lend it to you.  
5. Dost thou send the flower to that lady? 6. I send it to her.  
7. Does the neighbor send you your notes? 8. He sends them to us.  
9. Do you send his newspapers to him? 10. I send them to him. 11. Do you carry the fruit to

your mother? 12. I carry it to her. 13. Do you carry her the violets and the jonquils? 14. I carry them to her. 15. Dost thou send that soup to the sick men? 16. I send it to them. 17. Dost thou send them the coffee also? 18. I send it to them. 19. Where is the bank bill? 20. It is here in my purse. 21. My mother, sister, and cousin are here.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you study French? 2. No, madam, but I am going to study it. 3. Do you like the French? 4. I like much the French and the Spanish, but I do not like the German. 5. Do you not wish for a dictionary? 6. I have a French and English dictionary at home. 7. If you wish, I am going to send you a history. 8. You are very good, sir. 9. Adieu (*adieu*), sir. 10. Till we see each other again (*au revoir*).

11. What have you in that bag? 12. I have the books which I study. 13. Do you study all those books? 14. Yes, sir, I study them all. 15. Is the air of this chamber fresh? 16. It is very fresh. 17. What do you buy of (*à*) that countryman? 18. I buy his tomatoes and his mustard. 19. Have you a history of France in your library? 20. Yes, sir, this book is the history of France, and that one the history of Spain. 21. Do you buy the German grammar? 22. No, sir, we buy the Italian grammar.

## 29.—VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

## SECOND CONJUGATION CONTINUED.

1. Some verbs of the Second Conjugation, the stems \* of which end in two distinct consonants, terminate in

S, S, T, ONS, EZ, ENT.

and drop the last consonant of the stem before a silent terminating consonant.

*To go out, going out, gone out. Sortir, sortant, sorti.*

*Je sors, tu sors, il sort, nous sortons, vous sortez, ils sortent,*  
*I go out, thou goest out, he goes out, we go out, you go out, they go out.*

*Never.*

{ Without a verb, *jamais*; with a verb, *ne*  
 before the verb and *jamais* after it, or  
*jamais ne* before the verb.

*Ever.*

*Often.*

*Jamais.*

*Souvent.*

*Still (adverb). Again.*

*Encore, or toujours. Encore.*

*Sometimes. Already.*

*Quelquesfois. Déjà.*

\* The stem is that part of the verb which is unchanged, to which the terminations are added in conjugating it.

16 12 16 8 16 12 16 16 16 11 16 6 16 1 7 16 8 8 16  
 sor-tir, sor-tant, sor-ti, sors, sort, sor-tona, sor-tes, sortent, ja-mais, sou-ven-t, en-core,  
 12 16 1 1  
 ten-jours, kel-ke-fois, dé-jà.

*Not yet.*

{ Without a verb, *pas encore*; with a verb, *ne* before the verb and *pas encore* after it.

The morning. The night.  
The fire. The ice.  
The evening. The school.  
Hard.  
Soft.

MASOULINE.	FEMININE.
Le matin.	La nuit.
Le feu.	La glace.
Le soir.	L'école.
Dur.	Dure.
Mou.	Molle.

2. *Mou* becomes *mol* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

Warm, hot.  
Cold.

Chaud. Chaude.  
Froid. Froide.

Do you often go out?

Sortez-vous souvent?

We go out sometimes, but not often.

Nous sortons quelquefois, mais pas souvent.

3. Adverbs are generally placed immediately after their verbs. Those of time and place, however, can stand at the beginning of the phrase.

Do you never go to the market? N'allez-vous jamais au marché? Jamais.

He never goes to church.

Il ne va jamais à l'église.

I often go to the store, but I never go to the market.

Je vais souvent au magasin, mais jamais je ne vais au marché.

4. The circumstance of time is often expressed in French without a preposition.

In the morning. In the evening.

Le matin. Le soir.

In the night, at night.

La nuit.

Dost thou ever go out at night?

Sors-tu jamais la nuit?

No, sir. I sometimes go out in the morning and in the evening, but I never go out at night.

Non, monsieur. Je sors quelquefois le matin et le soir, mais je ne sors jamais la nuit.

Is that child already hungry?

Cet enfant a-t-il déjà faim?

He is not yet hungry.

Il n'a pas encore faim.

He is still sleepy.

Il a encore sommeil.

5. The article *le* is used as in English with nouns in a definite sense; also with nouns in a general sense (which omit it in English); as,

Iron is hard. Coal is black.

Le fer est dur. Le charbon est noir.

Fire is hot. Ice is cold.

Le feu est chaud. La glace est froide.

I like tea, I do not like coffee.

J'aime le thé, je n'aime pas le café.

1. Ce petit garçon a-t-il déjà soif? 2. Pas encore. 3. J'ai encore froid; n'avez-vous pas froid? 4. Non, monsieur, j'ai chaud. 5. Votre frère sort-il la nuit? 6. Jamais. 7. Qu'a ce malade? 8. Il a la fièvre jaune. 9. Ces enfants sortent-ils quelquefois? 10. Ils sortent souvent. 11. Sortent-ils la nuit? 12. Non, monsieur, ils sortent le matin, et le soir, mais ils ne sortent jamais

la nuit. 13. L'acier n'est il pas bleu? 14. Si, l'acier est bleu, l'argent est blanc, et le charbon est noir. 15. Choisissez-vous le biscuit mou ou le dur? 16. Nous voulons l'un et l'autre. 17. Aimez-vous un climat chaud ou un climat froid? 18. Je n'aime ni l'un ni l'autre. 19. N'aimez-vous pas ce pays-ci? 20. Je l'aime beaucoup. 21. Désirez-vous étudier l'allemand? 22. Je désire l'étudier, mais mon père ne le veut pas. 23. Voulez-vous bien venir ici ce soir? 24. Oui, je le veux bien. 25. Où allez-vous? 26. Je vais à l'école.

1. Dost thou buy the countryman's chickens? 2. I buy his chickens, his tomatoes, and his mustard. 3. Where is your Spanish grammar? 4. It is in my library. 5. Is your brother still sick? 6. Yes, madam, he has the fever still. 7. Do you choose the chocolate or the tea? 8. We choose the chocolate. 9. What has the Italian woman? 10. She has the silk purse and the bank bill. 11. Does the neighbor send you his fruit? 12. He sends it to me. 13. Do you send him his notes? 14. I send them to him. 15. Does that child go out often? 16. He goes out sometimes, but not often. 17. Is he already hungry? 18. He is not yet hungry. 19. Is the mason still thirsty? 20. He is still thirsty.

21. Is that child already sleepy? 22. He is not yet sleepy. 23. Dost thou ever go out in the morning? 24. No, I often go out in the evening, but I never go out in the morning. 25. Does your sister choose the roses or the tulips? 26. She chooses neither, she chooses the violets and the jonquils. 27. Does she give them to you? 28. She gives them to me. 29. Does the master give you his pen? 30. He gives it to me. 31. To whom dost thou give that note? 32. I give it to thee. 33. Dost thou give me the letter? 34. I give it to thee. 35. Dost thou give me the newspapers? 36. I give them to thee. 37. Do you give me that purse? 38. We give it to you. 39. Are you going to school? 40. I am not going to school, I am going to church.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you ever speak Spanish? 2. Sometimes, but not often. 3. Do you study it still? 4. No, sir, I have not the time, I study French. 5. Do you speak it? 6. Not yet. 7. Your brother speaks it, however (*cependant*). 8. Yes, sir, my brother and sister speak it. 9. Where is your brother? 10. He is clerk in the store of my uncle. 11. Does he still study French? 12. Yes, sir, he studies it

still; he wishes to speak it well (*le bien parler*). 13. He is right. 14. Where does your sister go to school? 15. She goes to the school of Madam G. 16. It is a very good school. 17. Madam G. speaks French, and her daughters also. 18. She has many scholars, and they all study (*elles étudient toutes*) French. 19. Do your cousins go to Madam G.'s school? 20. No, sir, they do not go to school at present (*à présent*).

## 30.—TRENTIÈME LEÇON.

THE RELATIVES WITH *EST-CE QUI* AND *EST-CE QUE*

1. We have seen that (except *qui*? whom? interrogative) *qui* is the subject and *que* the object of the following verb. The same is the case also when these relatives follow *qui est-ce* or *qu'est-ce*, interrogative.

Who?

Qui est-ce qui?

Whom?

Qui est-ce que?

What? (subject).

Qu'est-ce qui?

What? (object).

Qu'est-ce que?

Who goes to the bank?

{ Qui est-ce qui va à la banque?

{ Qui va à la banque?

Whom is that man looking for?

{ Qui est-ce que cet homme cherche?

{ Qui cet homme cherche-t-il?

What have you?

{ Qu'est-ce que vous avez?

{ Qu'avez-vous?

2. The choice between the two forms of translating *who*, *whom*, and *what*, here given, is determined by euphony; but *what*? as subject, can only be *qu'est-ce qui*?

What is on the table?

{ Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table?

{ (And not *Que est* sur, etc.)

To pick up, picking up, picked up.

Ramasser, ramassant, ramassé.

To find, finding, found.

Trouver, trouvant, trouvé.

The gardener.

MASCULINE

FEMININE

Le jardinier. La jardinière.

A cupboard. A clothes-press.

Un buffet. Une garde-robe.

A cask. A closet.

Un tonneau. Une armoire.

A barrel. A stable.

Un baril. Une étable.

Full.

Plein.

Pleine.

Empty. Always.

Vide.

Toujours.

Do you pick up what you find?

Ramassez-vous ce que vous trouvez?

We pick up what we find.

Nous ramassons ce que nous trouvons.

I pick up what I find.

Je ramasse ce que je trouve.

The cow is in the stable.

La vache est dans l'étable.

3. *Écurie* is a stable for horses and mules; *étable*, for oxen, cows, and sheep.

8 12 5 1 1 6 1 1 8 1 1 6 18 6 18 8 18 6 1 12 12 8  
 tren-tième, ra-mas-ser, ra-mas-sant, ra-mas-sé, trou-ver, trou-vant, trou-vé, jar-di-nier,  
 1 12 12 7 23 6 1 14 15 17 1 20 1 12 8 1 14 7 11 12 15  
 jar-di-nière, bu-f-fet, garde-robe, ton-neau, ar-moire, ba-ril, é-ta-ble, plein, pleine, vide, tou-  
 18  
 jours.

4. *He, she, it, they*, are translated by *ce* instead of *il, elle, ils, elles*, before the verb *être*, when the predicate is a noun, a pronoun, or any phrase characterizing the subject, except an adjective, a past participle, or a noun used as an adjective.

Who is that man?	Qui est cet homme?
He is our neighbor.	C'est notre voisin.
That woman is beautiful.	Cette femme est belle.
She is the wife of our neighbor.	C'est la femme de notre voisin.
Who are those little boys?	Qui sont ces petits garçons?
They are my cousins.	Ce sont mes cousins.
Do you see those young ladies?	Voyez-vous ces jeunes demoiselles?
They are the scholars of Madam G.	Ce sont les écolières de madame G.
They are very good.	Elles sont bien bonnes.

*Elles* is used in this last phrase, because the predicate is the verb and adjective merely; *ce* is used in the preceding, because the predicate contains a noun.

5. Usage authorizes the employment of *il, elle*, etc., in such cases, provided the subject has been distinctly specified.

Who is the gentleman?	Qui est ce monsieur?
He is my brother.	C'est mon frère, <i>or</i> , Il est mon frère.
Who is in the house?	Qui est dans la maison?
It is my brother.	C'est mon frère ( <i>and not</i> Il est, etc.).
What have you there?	Qu'avez-vous là?
They are my books.	Ce sont mes livres.
You love John. He is my friend.	Vous aimez Jean. C'est ( <i>or il est</i> ) mon ami.

1. Qui est chez vous? 2. Ce sont mes amis. 3. Qui est cet homme? 4. C'est notre médecin. 5. Il est anglais.\* 6. Qui est-ce que vous cherchez? 7. Je cherche celui que vous cherchez. 8. Qui est-ce qui veut ces papiers? 9. Le maître les veut. 10. Qu'est-ce que vous ramassez? 11. Je ramasse ces pommes. 12. Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table? 13. Ce sont les papiers du maître. 14. Trouvez-vous ce que vous cherchez? 15. Je le trouve. 16. Cet homme est-il votre cuisinier? 17. Non, monsieur, c'est notre jardinier. 18. Où est la clef du buffet? 19. La clef du buffet est dans cette armoire, et celle de la garde-robe est sur la table. 20. Qu'est-ce qui est sous cet arbre? 21. Ce sont les tonneaux et les barils du marchand. 22. Sont-ils pleins ou vides? 23. Les tonneaux sont vides, et les barils sont pleins de bière. 24. Qu'est-ce qui est dans l'étable? 25. Ce sont nos vaches. 26. Qui est (*or qui est-ce qui est*) dans le jardin? 27. C'est le jardinier.

1. Does the gardener send us the flowers? 2. He sends them to us. 3. Who picks up those apples? 4. The gardener picks

\* *Il* is used here, and not *ce*, because *anglais* is used as an adjective

them up. 5. Do you find the man whom you seek? 6. I find him. 7. Do you pick up what you find? 8. I pick it up. 9. What is in the cupboard? 10. It is our glass bottles and our porcelain plates. 11. Are the bottles full or empty? 12. They are empty. 13. Where is the key of the wardrobe? 14. It is in that closet. 15. Where is your cloak? 16. It is in my wardrobe. 17. Your cupboard is small, but your closet is large. 18. Are those casks empty? 19. No, sir, those casks are full of wine, and these barrels are full of wine also. 20. What is in the stable? 21. It is the oxen of my father. 22. Who is that man? 23. It is Captain John. 24. He is very tall. 25. That lady is beautiful; she is the friend of my sister. 26. Who are those little boys? 27. They are the children of our neighbor. 28. What is on the table? 29. They are my books and my papers. 30. Where is the cow? 31. She is in the stable.

32. Does that young girl lend you her pen? 33. She lends it to me. 34. Do you give those apples to your sister? 35. I give them to her. 36. I find the air of this room very fresh. 37. What is the matter with your sick friend? 38. He has the fever. 39. Do you send the bank-bill to your mother? 40. I do not send it to her. 41. Do you send it to your brothers? 42. I send it to them. 43. What is in the stable? 44. It is the horse of our neighbor. 45. To whom does the gardener give those apples? 46. He gives them to us. 47. Do you not give them to me? 48. We give them to you.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you find the candlesticks which you seek? 2. I do not find them. 3. Do you look for the hat which is on the floor? 4. I do not look for it. 5. Does the countryman find what he looks for? 6. He does not find it. 7. Does the merchant wish for the casks which are empty? 8. No, sir, he wishes for those which are full of wine. 9. Does the gardener wish for the barrels of the merchant? 10. No, sir, he wishes for those which are in the yard. 11. What is in the cupboard? 12. It is the porcelain cups. 13. What cow do you buy? 14. I buy the one which is in the stable. 15. Do you ever go out in the morning? 16. I often go out in the morning and in the evening. 17. Who is that man? 18. He is the friend of my father. 19. What is on the table? 20. They are the letters of my friend.

## 31.—TRENTÉ ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

## PARTITIVE NOUNS.

1. When the word *some* or *any* is expressed or understood with a noun, it is said to be used in a partitive sense. Nouns so used take *de* and the article in French, which, according to the gender and number, take the following forms.

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>Some, any</i> (singular).	<i>De</i> .	<i>De la</i> (before a consonant).
	<i>De l'</i> .	<i>De l'</i> (before a vowel or silent <i>h</i> ).
<i>Some, any</i> (plural).	<i>Des</i> .	<i>Des</i> .
Some bread. Some meat.	Du pain.	De la viande.
Some gold. Some water.	De l'or.	De l'eau.
Some casks. Some slates.	Des tonneaux.	Des ardoises.
He wishes for some bread and some meat.	Il veut du pain et de la viande.	

We wish for some pens and some ink. Nous voulons des plumes et de l'encre.

2. The learner can easily determine, on reflection, whether the noun is used in a partitive or in a general sense. In the first three of the following sentences the noun is general, and therefore takes the article, but not *de*; in the last three it is partitive, and takes *de* with the article.

He loves money. He loves coffee.	Il aime l'argent.	Il aime le café.
He loves chocolate. He has money.	Il aime le chocolat.	Il a de l'argent.
He has coffee. He has chocolate.	Il a du café.	Il a du chocolat.

3. To the above rule of partitive nouns taking *de* and the article, there are two exceptions; first exception, a partitive noun being the object of a verb with a negative, takes *de* without the article.

He has no money.	Il n'a pas d'argent.
Have you no biscuit?	N'avez-vous pas de biscuit?
I have some biscuit.	J'ai du biscuit.

4. Sometimes, especially in questions, the form of the phrase is negative, though the meaning is not, or does not express total negation; in such cases the article must be used.

Have you not money? (meaning affirmative.)	N'avez-vous pas de l'argent?
--	------------------------------

I have no money to spend foolishly. Je n'ai pas de l'argent \* pour le dépenser follement.

5. Second exception, partitives immediately preceded by an adjective take *de* without the article.

I have some pretty buttons.	J'ai de jolis boutons.
He has excellent wine.	Il a d'excellent vin.

The above rule (1) and its two exceptions are illustrated in the four following phrases.

Has he any ivory?	A-t-il de l'ivoire?
He has no ivory.	Il n'a pas d'ivoire.

\* The meaning is, I have money, but not to spend foolishly.



He has some good sheep.  
He has some white sheep.

Il a de bons moutons.  
Il a des moutons blancs.

6. The article and preposition are to be repeated before each partitive noun in the same construction.

I wish for some paper, pens, and ink. Je veux du papier, des plumes et de l'encre.

<i>To break.</i>	<i>To show.</i>	<i>Casser.</i>	<i>Montrer.</i>
<i>Foolishly.</i>	<i>Blind of one eye.</i>	<i>Follement.</i>	<i>Borgne.</i>
<i>Blind.</i>	<i>That blind man.</i>	<i>Aveugle.</i>	<i>Cet aveugle.</i>

## MASCULINE

## FEMININE

<i>A portfolio, pocket-book.</i>	<i>The lettuce.</i>	<i>Un porte-feuille.</i>	<i>La laitue.</i>
<i>A mattress.</i>	<i>The bean.</i>	<i>Un matelas.</i>	<i>La fève, le haricot.</i>
<i>Raw.</i>		<i>Cru.</i>	<i>Crue.</i>
<i>Cooked.</i>		<i>Cuit.</i>	<i>Cuite.</i>
<i>Well-cooked, well-done.</i>		<i>Bien cuit.</i>	<i>Bien cuite.</i>
<i>Rare.</i>		<i>Peu cuit.</i>	<i>Peu cuite.</i>

1. Qu'est-ce que les espagnols cassent? 2. Ils cassent leurs verres. 3. Nous montrez-vous les billets de banque? 4. Nous vous les montrons. 5. Choisissez-vous le portefeuille rouge ou le bleu? 6. Je choisis le rouge. 7. Le français choisit-il le matelas dur ou le mou? 8. Il choisit le doux. 9. Choisissez-vous le bœuf cru ou le cuit? 10. Je choisis le cuit. 11. Nous aimons la viande peu cuite et l'anglais l'aime bien cuite. 12. Que désire l'aveugle? 13. Il veut de l'argent. 14. Cet homme est-il aveugle? 15. Non, monsieur, il est borgne, mais non pas aveugle. 16. Que vous montre la paysanne? 17. Elle me montre de la laitue et des haricots. 18. Ce borgne casse son verre et son assiette. 19. Que cassez-vous? 20. Je ne casse rien. 21. Avez-vous du fer? 22. Je n'ai pas de fer; j'ai de l'argent et de bel ivoire.

1. Do you like chocolate? 2. I like chocolate and tea. 3. Do you like meat rare or well done? 4. I like meat rare and eggs well done. 5. Does the Italian like ham raw or cooked? 6. He likes it raw. 7. What does the servant break? 8. He breaks (cracks) the nuts. 9. What do you break? 10. We often break our glasses and our plates. 11. What do you show to the master? 12. We show him our copy-books and our slates. 13. Dost thou show him thy papers? 14. I show them to him. 15. Do you show your brothers that letter? 16. I show it to them. 17. Do

<sup>1</sup> cas-ser, <sup>2</sup> mon-trer, <sup>3</sup> fol-le-ment, <sup>4</sup> borg-ne, <sup>5</sup> a-veu-gle, <sup>6</sup> porte-feuille, <sup>7</sup> lai-tue, <sup>8</sup> mate-las, <sup>9</sup> fève, <sup>10</sup> cru, <sup>11</sup> cuit, <sup>12</sup> cuite.

you wish for some warm biscuit? 18. No, sir, I wish for some warm meat and some cold bread.

19. Do you wish for some cool water? 20. I wish for some cool water and some good wine. 21. What has the countryman? 22. He has some fresh meat and some good apples. 23. What have you in your portfolio? 24. I have some letters and some papers in my portfolio. 25. Has the shopkeeper some mattresses? 26. He has mattresses and beds (*lits*). 27. What does the servant buy? 28. He buys lettuce, beans, and potatoes. 29. Has the gardener lettuce and beans? 30. He has good lettuce, but he has no beans; he has fruit and beautiful flowers. 31. That man is blind of one eye; he is our neighbor. 32. Father, where is your portfolio? 33. The gentleman has it. 34. What is on the floor? 35. It is some beautiful flowers.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you a garden? 2. I have a garden, but I have no gardener. 3. What have you in your garden? 4. I have violets and jonquils in my garden, and some roses in my yard. 5. At my house I have neither roses nor violets, but I have fruits. 6. What fruits have you? 7. I have apples and pears, and my uncle has some superb peaches and some beautiful plums in his garden. 8. Do you not like apples? 9. I like all fruits (*les fruits*). 10. A fine peach is an excellent fruit. 11. Have you many apples at your house? 12. We have not many apples, but we have many pears. 13. What horse do you wish to buy? 14. I wish to buy the one which is in the stable. 15. What nuts do you pick up? 16. We pick up those which we find under the tree, and the children pick up those which are on the floor.

## 32.—TRENTÉ-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

## THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

1. Verbs whose infinitive ends in OIR are of the THIRD CONJUGATION. They form the past participle by adding U to the stem; as,

TO RECEIVE, RECEIVED. REC-EVOIR, REC-U.

Regular verbs of this conjugation \* have the following terminations in the indicative present: OIS, OIS, OIT, EVONS, EVES, OIVENT.

---

\* There are only seven regular verbs of this conjugation: *S'apercevoir, concevoir, Découvrir, Devoir, Parcevoir, Recevoir, Redevenir*.

*Je reçois, tu reçois, il reçoit, nous recevons, vous recevez, ils reçoivent,*  
I receive, thou receivest, he receives, we receive, you receive, they receive.

Do you receive our notes?

Recevez-vous nos billets?

We receive them all.

Nous les recevons tous.

I receive many letters.

Je reçois beaucoup de lettres.

*Why. Because.*

*Pourquoi. Parce que.*

*Badly. Sad.*

*Mal. Triste.*

As adjectives ending in *e* are common gender, they will be placed hereafter in either column of genders, as may be convenient.

*A little. Very.*

*Un peu. Très, fort, bien.*

2. *Très* is always joined by a hyphen to the following word. *Très* and *fort* have about the same force, *bien* is more used in exclamations.

Very hard.

Très-dur, fort dur, bien dur.

8. As an exclamation, *bien* denotes approbation; *eh bien* is merely introductory to something further to be said.

*How* do you like this book?

*Comment* trouvez-vous ce livre?

Well; it is a very good *work*.

Bien; c'est un bon *ouvrage*.

This little boy does not study *at all*.

Ce petit garçon n'étudie pas *du tout*.

Well, I am going to speak to his father.

Eh bien, je vais parler à son père.

*Some. Some difficulty.*

*Quelque. Quelque difficulté.*

*A few, some. A few apples.*

*Quelques. Quelques pommes.*

#### MASCULINE

#### FEMININE

*The vinegar. A radish.*

*Le vinaigre. Une rave.*

*Of which one.*

*Duquel.*

*De laquelle.*

*Of which ones.*

*Desquels.*

*Desquelles.*

4. Objective pronouns with a preposition expressed, always follow the verb. Their form, then, (as seen Lesson 16), is as follows:

Of me, to me, of us, to us.

De moi, à moi, de nous, à nous.

Of thee, to thee, of you, to you.

De toi, à toi, de vous, à vous.

Of him, to him, of them, to them.

De lui, à lui, d'eux, à eux.

Of her, to her, of them, to them.

D'elle, à elle, d'elles, à elles.

*Of what, to what.*

*De quoi, à quoi.*

*No one, nobody.*

{ Without a verb, *personne*; with a verb of which it is the object, *ne* before the verb and *personne* after it; with a verb of which it is the subject, *personne* *ne*.

Whom do you seek? No one.

Qui cherchez-vous? *Personne.*

I seek nobody.

Je *ne* cherche *personne*.

No one is looking for me.

*Personne* *ne* me cherche.

*To fill with. To load with.*

*Remplir de. Charger de.*

5. Verbs which require *with* after them in English, require *de* in French.

He fills the cask with wine.

Il remplit le tonneau de vin.

4 20 4 20 4 4 21 4 4 6 4 21 13 20 1 4 17 7 16  
re-çois, re-coit, re-ce-vons, re-ce-vez, re-çoivent, pour-quoi, parce-que, triste, tri-é, fort,  
16 8 18 1 6 4 12 21 6 14 7 2 4 7 6 7 15 8  
com-ment, ou-vrage, quel-ke, dif-fi-cul-té, vin-aigre, rave, du-quel, des-quele, per-sonne, rem-  
13 1 6  
plir, char-ger.

I fill the chest with wood.  
They load the ship with cotton.

Je remplis de bois \* le coffre.  
Ils chargent le navire de coton.

1. Reçois-tu les lettres que je t'envoie? 2. Je les reçois. 3. Votre père reçoit-il ce que vous lui envoyez? 4. Mon père le reçoit, mais mes frères ne reçoivent pas ce que je leur envoie. 5. Pourquoi l'homme riche est-il triste? 6. Il est triste parce qu'il est malade. 7. Cet homme parle-t-il bien français? 8. Non, monsieur, il le parle très-mal. 9. Ce petit garçon étudie un peu, et son cousin étudie fort bien. 10. Comment trouvez-vous ce discours? 11. Bien; il est excellent. 12. Votre frère n'étudie pas du tout. 13. Eh bien; je vais parler au maître. 14. De quoi remplissez-vous ce baril? 15. Je le remplis de vinaigre. 16. Qu'a le domestique? 17. Il a ~~quelque~~<sup>de la</sup> laitue et quelques raves. 18. Qui cherchez-vous? 19. Je ne cherche personne. 20. Qui est dans cette chambre? 21. Personne. 22. Parlez-vous de moi? 23. Nous parlons de vous. 24. Ces paysans parlent-ils de toi? 25. Ils parlent de moi. 26. De quoi parlez-vous? 27. Je parle de mes leçons. 28. Desquelles parlez-vous? 29. Je parle de mes leçons de français.

1. Do you speak of us? 2. We do not speak of you. 3. Does the little boy speak of the master? 4. He speaks of him. 5. Does he speak of the scholars? 6. He speaks of them. 7. Do you speak of those young girls? 8. We speak of them. 9. Do you speak of your sister? 10. I do not speak of her. 11. No one is coming here to-day. 12. With what do you load that boat? 13. I load it with butter and flour. 14. Does the cook wish for the radishes? 15. He wishes for the radishes and the vinegar. 16. Has he not some radishes? 17. He has a few radishes and a little lettuce. 18. Does the German speak English well? 19. He speaks it badly. 20. Why are you afraid? 21. I am afraid because I have no gun.

22. Do you receive the books which I send you? 23. I receive them. 24. How do you like them? 25. Well, they are excellent works. 26. Why is the gardener sad? 27. He is sad because he has no fruit. 28. Why do you look for the captain? 29. Because I desire to speak to him. 30. What notes dost thou receive? 31. I receive those which my friend sends me. 32. Does

\* This construction is used to avoid ambiguity, as *coffre de bois* means also *chest of wood*.

the Frenchman speak English well? 33. No, sir, he speaks it very badly. 34. What is in the stable? 35. It is the horses of my friend. 36. Of whom do you speak? 37. I speak of the mason. 38. Of which one do you speak? 39. I speak of the old mason. 40. Of what does the little girl speak? 41. She speaks of her pen. 42. Of which one does she speak? 43. She speaks of the gold pen. 44. The cook has no radishes. 45. Well, I am going to buy some radishes and some lettuce. 46. With what do you fill that bottle? 47. I fill it with wine. 48. This bottle is full of vinegar.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. With what does the merchant fill his cask? 2. He fills it with vinegar. 3. Has that man many books? 4. He has few books; he has a few friends, and a little money. 5. What have you good (*de bon*)? 6. I have a little good wine. 7. Do you receive the letters which we send you? 8. I receive them all. 9. Do your brothers receive their letters? 10. They receive them. 11. Of whom does the master speak? 12. He speaks of thee and of me. 13. Does he speak of the beautiful ladies? 14. He speaks of them. 15. Of which ones does he speak? 16. He speaks of those who are going to church. 17. Do you speak of the same, or of the others? 18. I speak of neither. 19. Is not that man one-eyed (*borgne*)? 20. No, madam, he is blind. 21. Have you bank-bills in your pocket-book? 22. No, sir. 23. Whom are you looking for? 24. I am looking for no one.

## 33.—TRENTÉ-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

THE PRONOUN *EN*.

<i>To doubt,</i>	<i>to doubt of.</i>	<i>Douter,</i>	<i>douter de.</i>
<i>To thank,</i>	<i>to thank for.</i>	<i>Remercier,</i>	<i>remercier de.</i>
<i>To have need of, to need, to want.</i>		<i>Avoir besoin de.</i>	
<i>To know, knowing, known.</i>		<i>Savoir, sachant, su.</i>	
<i>Je sais, tu sais, il sait,</i>	<i>nous savons, vous savez, ils savent,</i>		
<i>I know, thou knowest, he knows,</i>	<i>we know, you know, they know.</i>		
		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>Pleased, contented (with).</i>		<i>Content (de).</i>	<i>Contente (de).</i>
<i>The foot.</i>	<i>The hand.</i>	<i>Le pied.</i>	<i>La main.</i>
<i>A service.</i>	<i>The mouth.</i>	<i>Un service.</i>	<i>La bouche.</i>
<i>A penknife.</i>	<i>Clean.</i>	<i>Un canif.</i>	<i>Propre.</i>

18 6 4 7 12 6 4 18 14 1 20 1 8 6 6 1 21 1 6 1 21  
 8 21 8 12 6 14 7 12 18 1 19 16  
 douter, re-mer-cier, be-soin, sa-voir, sa-chant, sa-ils, sa-vons, sa-vez, savent, con-  
 tent, con-tente, pied, main, ser-vice, bouche, ca-nif, propre.

His or her courage.	<i>Dirty.</i>	Son courage.	<i>Salé.</i>
The linen.	The head.	Le linge.	La tête.
New (newly made, bought new).		Neuf.	Neuve.
New, novel (new in kind).		Nouveau.	Nouvelle.
I fill the chest with linen.		Je remplis le coffre de linge.	

1. *Tout* is linen cloth; *linge* is linen made into articles of use.

2. In speaking of the parts of the body, the articles *le, la*, etc., are to be preferred to *mon, ton, son*, etc., when the possessor is otherwise sufficiently denoted. Observe also the French use of *avoir* in phrases like the following. In such phrases the adjective always follows the noun.

That man's foot is large.	Cet homme a le pied grand.
His hand is large also.	Il a la main grande aussi.
That lady's mouth is small.	Cette dame a la bouche petite.
Her head is too large.	Elle a la tête trop grosse.
To take care (of), to have care (of).	Avoir soin (de).
He takes care of my garden.	Il a soin de mon jardin.
Of it, of them, from it, from them, of him, of her, some, from there. }	En (placed before the verb).

3. *En* is a pronoun, having, as indicated by the above definitions, the force of *de* with *lui, elle, eux, elles*, or *cela*; also often an adverb for *ici*, or *là*. As a pronoun, it usually refers to things or animals. When therefore a noun of the third person, and object of *de* is replaced by a pronoun, that pronoun is to be *en*, UNLESS PERSONS ARE REFERRED TO.

Have you need of our service?	Avez-vous besoin de notre service?
I have need of it.	J'en ai besoin.
Does the boy take care of the horses?	Le garçon a-t-il soin des chevaux?
He takes care of them.	Il en a soin.
My little dog is sick, and my sister has care of him.	Mon petit chien est malade, et ma sœur en a soin.
My little brother is sick, and my sister has care of him.	Mon petit frère est malade, et ma sœur a soin de lui.
Do you come from the brook?	Venez-vous du ruisseau?
I come from there.	J'en viens.
Do you fill the chests with linen?	Remplissez-vous les coffres de linge?
I fill them with it.	Je les en remplis.
Does he thank you for your service?	Vous remercie-t-il de votre service?
He thanks me for it.	Il m'en remercie.
Are you pleased with your boy?	Êtes-vous content de votre garçon?
I am pleased with him.	J'en suis content.

We see in these sentences that *en* supplies the place of *de* and its object. So partitive nouns, being preceded by *de*, are replaced by *en*.

Have you some linen?	Avez-vous du linge?
I have some.	J'en ai.
Has the Italian courage?	L'italien a-t-il du courage?
He has none.	Il n'en a point.

*En* is to be used in French when *of it* or *of them* may be understood in English.

I have wine, have you some?

J'ai du vin, *en* avez-vous?

I have some good.

J'en ai de bon.

Have you butter? I have.

Avez-vous du beurre? J'en ai.

1. Doutez-vous de mon courage? 2. Je n'en doute pas. 3. Doutez-vous du courage de ce soldat? 4. Nous en doutons. 5. Remerciez-vous cet homme de son service? 6. Je l'en remercie. 7. Avez-vous besoin de ces papiers? 8. J'en ai besoin. 9. Qui a soin de votre chambre? 10. Le domestique en a soin. 11. Êtes-vous contents de vos livres? 12. Nous en sommes contents. 13. Ce mouchoir neuf est-il sale? 14. Non, monsieur, il est très-propre. 15. Avez-vous de bons canifs? 16. Je n'en ai pas. 17. Cet enfant a-t-il peur des fusils? 18. Il en a peur. 19. Parlez-vous de ces billets de banque? 20. Nous en parlons. 21. Savez-vous où est votre frère? 22. Il est à la maison. 23. Savez-vous la grammaire? 24. Je la sais bien. 25. Cet écolier sait-il bien la grammaire? 26. Il sait bien la grammaire et l'histoire.

1. Has the gardener lettuce and beans? 2. He has some. 3. Do you receive some newspapers this morning? 4. I receive some. 5. Does not the Frenchman speak English badly? 6. Yes, very badly. 7. Why is that boy sad? 8. He is sad because his father is sick. 9. I have a little wine; do you wish for some (*en voulez-vous*)? 10. No, thank you. 11. Do you thank your friends for their service? 12. We thank them for it. 13. Do they thank you for your flowers? 14. They thank me for them. 15. Are those ladies pleased with their flowers? 16. They are pleased with them. 17. That servant's feet are large, and his hands are large also. 18. Has the shopkeeper some good penknives? 19. He has some (*de*) good. 20. What have you white? 21. I have some white paper. 22. Have you any thing black? 23. I have nothing black.

1. Do those scholars know history well? 2. They do not know it well. 3. Dost thou know grammar? 4. I know it well. 5. Are those new handkerchiefs clean or dirty? 6. These handkerchiefs are clean and those are dirty. 7. What have you new? 8. I have some new boots and some new shoes. 9. That lady's hand is small and her foot is small also. 10. Her head is large and her mouth is large also. 11. Has the shopkeeper penknives? 12. He has some. 13. Do you fill the chest with linen? 14. I fill it with

it. 15. Does the captain doubt of our courage? 16. He does not doubt of it. 17. That man's head is small and his mouth large. 18. Have you need of money? 19. I have need of some. 20. Is that lady afraid of the dog? 21. She is afraid of him. 22. Do you know your lessons well? 23. We know them well.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What have you in these barrels? 2. This one is a barrel of wine, and that one is full of vinegar. 3. Is your vinegar good? 4. It is vinegar of white wine, and it is excellent; will you taste it? 5. No, thank you (*merci*); I will buy a little. 6. How much do you wish? 7. Not much; have you some demijohns (*dames-jeannes*, fem.)? 8. Yes, sir, I have some large and some small ones. 9. Well, a large demijohn full is all that I wish. 10. I am going to fill you one. 11. Do you not wish for a box (*une caisse*) of red wine? 12. Have you some good? 13. Will you please taste of this? 14. How do you like (*trouvez*) it? 15. It is not bad; how many boxes of it have you? 16. I have half a dozen (*une demi-douzaine*). 17. Well, I wish for them all. 18. Do you not wish, also, for a few bottles of white wine? I have some very good. 19. Thank you, I have some (*du*) white still in (*d*) the house. 20. If you wish, I am going to send the wine and the vinegar to your house. 21. Yes, sir, if you please.

## 34.—TRENTÉ-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## EN CONTINUED. FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Five, Six, Seven, Eight.

Cinq, Six, Sept, Huit.

1. *En*, though commonly spoken of things or animals, when used in a partitive sense may refer to persons as well as things.

Have you brothers?

Avez-vous des frères?

I have some.

J'en ai.

How many have you?

Combien en avez-vous?

I have six; my friend has seven.

J'en ai six; mon ami en a sept.

2. In other cases, though *en* may refer to persons, the objective pronoun with *de* is preferred.

My friend is sick, and I take care of him. Mon ami est malade, et j'ai *soin de lui* (rather than *j'en ai soin*).

Your horse is here, and the boy takes care of him. Votre cheval est ici, et le garçon *en a soin*.

3. An adjective belonging to a partitive noun understood, takes or omits the article the same as if the noun were expressed.

14 14 13 13 6 22 12  
cinq, cinq,\* six, six,\* sept, huit.

\* The last consonant of *cinq* and *six* are not sounded before a noun beginning with a consonant. The *s* of *six* is pronounced like *z* in all other cases. *Sept* and *huit* sound the final consonant only at the end of a phrase, or before a vowel.



Have you ink?

Avez-vous de l'encre?

I have some good. I have some black. J'en ai de bonne. J'en ai de la noire.\*

4. *En* used with any other objective pronoun must be placed after it.

Some to me. Some to us.

M'en.

Nous en.

Some to thee. Some to you.

T'en.

Vous en.

Sonne to him, or her. Some to them.

Lui en.

Leur en.

You have fruit; do you give me some?

Vous avez du fruit; m'en donnez-vous?

I give thee some. I give them some.

Je t'en donne. Je leur en donne.

I give him some. I give you some.

Je lui en donne. Je vous en donne.

They give us some.

Ils nous en donnent.

#### FOURTH CONJUGATION.

5. Verbs whose infinitive ends in *EE* are of the **FOURTH CONJUGATION**. Those which are regular form the past participle by adding *v* to the stem. They have the terminations of the indicative present as follows:

*S, S, T, ONS, EZ, ENT.*

**TO RETURN** (give back), *returning, returned.* REX-DRE, *ren-dant, ren-du.*

*Je rends, tu rends, il rend, nous rendons, vous rendez, ils rendent.*

The proper termination of the third person singular is here blended with *d* of the stem.

6. Those in **UIRE** form the past participle by adding *t* to the stem. In the indicative present they take *s* after the stem before a vowel, and terminate thus:

**TO CONDUCT**, *conducting, conducted.* CONDUI-RE, *condui-sant, condui-t.*

*Je condui-s, tu condui-s, il condui-t, nous condui-sons, vous condui-sez, ils condui-sent.*

I conduct, thou conductest, he conducts, we conduct, you conduct, they conduct.

#### MASCULINE.

#### FEMININE.

The care.

A case, box.

Le soin.

Une caisse.

The wit, spirit, mind.

A demijohn.

L'esprit.

Une dame-jeanne.

His or her judgment.

A bridle.

Son jugement.

Une bride.

The village.

A saddle.

Le village.

Une selle.

That workman. That working-woman.

Cet ouvrier.

Cette ouvrière.

Green.

Vert.

Verte.

The turf. The verdure.

Le gazon.

La verdure.

Gray.

Gris.

Grise.

Not at all.

Pas du tout.

At the same time.

En même temps, au même temps.

Where dost thou conduct the blind man?

Où conduis-tu l'aveugle?

I conduct him to the village.

Je le conduis au village.

What do you give back to the workman?

Que rendez-vous à l'ouvrier?

I give back to him his green cloth.

Je lui rends son drap vert.

\* *Bon* comes before the noun and omits the article, *noir* comes after the noun and takes it. With the noun expressed, it would be, *J'ai de bonne encre, J'ai de l'encre noire.*

rendre, ren-dant, ren-du, rende, rend, ren-dons, ren-des, rendent, con-duire, con-dui-sant, con-dui-s, con-duis, con-duit, con-dui-sons, con-dui-sez, con-dui-sent, soin, caisse, es-prit, dame-jeanne, juge-ment, bride, vil-lage, selle, ou-vrier, vert, verte, ga-zon, ver-dure, gris, grise.

1. Que vous rend cet homme? 2. Il me rend mon canif. 3. Où les ouvriers conduisent-ils cet aveugle? 4. Ils le conduisent chez lui. 5. Qu'ont les ouvrières? 6. Elles n'ont rien. 7. Sont-elles chez elles aujourd'hui? 8. Elles sont toujours chez elles. 9. Me donnes-tu des fleurs? 10. Je t'en donne. 11. En donnes-tu à l'ouvrier? 12. Je lui en donne. 13. Nous en donne-t-il? 14. Il vous en donne. 15. Donnez-vous des billets de banque à ces hommes? 16. Nous leur en donnons. 17. J'ai cinq pommes; combien en avez-vous? 18. J'en ai huit. 19. Doutez-vous de mon jugement? 20. Je n'en doute pas. 21. De quoi doutez-vous? 22. Je doute du jugement et de l'esprit de cet ouvrier. 23. Qu'a le marchand? 24. Il a du drap vert et du gris. 25. Où conduisez-vous l'étranger? 26. Nous le conduisons au village. 27. Nous rendons la caisse et la dame-jeanne de vin au marchand. 28. J'ai une selle et une bride, mais je n'ai pas de fouet. 29. Votre fouet est sur le gazon dans le jardin. 30. Ce petit garçon n'étudie pas du tout.

1. Do you give back to the neighbor his saddle and bridle? 2. I give them back to him. 3. Does the blind man give back to you your money? 4. He gives it back to me. 5. Do the scholars give back to us our books? 6. They give them back to us. 7. Does the workman conduct the blind man to the store? 8. No, sir, he conducts him to the village. 9. Do you conduct the stranger to the village? 10. No, sir, we conduct him to the river. 11. Who is at your house? 12. It is a friend of my father. 13. Who is in that room? 14. No one. 15. To whom do you give that box of wine? 16. I give it to no one. 17. What dost thou give back to the merchant? 18. I give back to him the green ribbons and the gray cloth. 19. What do you give to that blind man? 20. I give him a demijohn of wine.

21. Are you going to the village to-day? 22. No, sir, I am going to the country to-day. 23. Do you doubt of the stranger's wit? 24. I doubt of it. 25. Do you doubt of his judgment? 26. I do not doubt of it. 27. Does your uncle doubt of his wit or of his judgment? 28. He doubts of both. 29. Do you give back to the merchant the green cloth or the gray? 30. We give back to him neither. 31. How many pears have you? 32. I have eight; I have also six peaches and seven apples. 33. How many sisters have you? 34. I have five. 35. Do you give my brother some

fruit? 36. I give him some, and I give thee some also. 37. Where are your flowers? 38. They are on the turf in the garden. 39. Do you give some to my brothers? 40. I give some to them, at the same time that (*que*) I give some to you.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you sometimes receive letters from your friend Peter? 2. I receive some often; if you wish I am going to show you his last. 3. You are very good; I never receive letters from him (*de ses lettres*). 4. He speaks to me of you in all those which I receive from him. 5. Does he like the climate of the country where he is? 6. He does not like it much. 7. I wish to go to Mr. A's, and I want your horse this morning. 8. Well, if you come to my house, I will let you have him (*je vais vous le donner*). 9. I thank you much. 10. Do you wish for the saddle and bridle? 11. If you please; I have a saddle which is not very good, but I have no bridle. 12. Well, I am going to lend you mine, if you come to my house. 13. Thank you, I am going for them (*je vais les chercher*); you are very good. 14. That (*cela*) is a very little thing (*bien peu de chose*). 15. Which horse do you wish for? 16. Either; are you pleased with your big horse? 17. Yes, I am well pleased with him; but the little one is not bad. 18. Have you need of two horses? 19. Sometimes.

## 35.—TRENTÉ-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## FOURTH CONJUGATION CONTINUED.

1. Verbs in **AINDRE**, **ENDRE**, and **OINDRE**, form the past participle by adding *t* to the stem and dropping the preceding *d*. They drop the *d* generally before a silent consonant, and change *nd* into *gn* before a vowel.

TO PITY, *pitying*, *pitied*.

PLAINDRE, *plaignant*, *plaint*.

*Je plains, tu plains, il plaint, nous plaignons, vous plaignez, ils plaignent,*  
I pity, thou pitiest, he pities, we pity, you pity, they pity.

2. Those in **ALTRE** and **OLTRE** have a *t* after the stem only before *r*. They take *ss* before a vowel, and form the past participle by adding *u* to the stem, and dropping the preceding diphthong.

TO BE ACQUAINTED WITH, TO KNOW.

CONNAÎTRE.

*Knowing, known.*

*Connai-sant, conn-u.*

*Je connais, tu connais, il connaît, nous connaissons, vous connaissez, ils connaissent,*  
I know, thou knowest, he knows, we know, you know, they know.

3. *Connaître* is to know objects of the senses; *savoir*, to know what is learned and remembered.

I know him, and I know where he lives. *Je le connais, et je sais où il demeure.*

<sup>14</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>16</sup> <sup>8</sup>  
<sup>15</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>8</sup>  
plaindre, plai-gnant, plaind, plains, plaint, plai-gnon, plai-gnez, plaignent, con-naître,  
con-naîs-sant, con-nu, con-naît, con-naît, con-naîs-sons, con-nais-ses, con-naissent.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>Pleasure.</i>	<i>A fountain.</i>	<i>Le plaisir.</i>	<i>Une fontaine.</i>
<i>The name.</i>	<i>A pitcher, jug.</i>	<i>Le nom.</i>	<i>Une cruche.</i>
<i>The lily.</i>	<i>The pansy.</i>	<i>Le lis.</i>	<i>La pensée.</i>
<i>To dwell, to live, to remain.</i>	<i>To forget.</i>	<i>Demeurer, rester.</i>	<i>Oublier.</i>
<i>Nine, Ten, Eleven, Twelve.</i>		<i>Neuf, Dix,* Onze, Douze.</i>	
<i>As far as, to. With pleasure.</i>		<i>Jusqu'à.</i>	<i>Avec plaisir.</i>
<i>Some one, somebody, any one.</i>		<i>Quelqu'un.</i>	<i>Quelqu'une.</i>
<i>Some ones, some, a few.</i>		<i>Quelques-uns.</i>	<i>Quelques-unes.</i>
<i>Has any one my blue cap?</i>		<i>Quelqu'un a-t-il mon bonnet bleu?</i>	
<i>No one has it.</i>		<i>Personne ne l'a.</i>	

2. *Quelque* is an adjective, and belongs to a noun; *quelqu'un* is a pronoun, and used without a noun.

Have you not some pain?

N'avez-vous pas quelque *peine*?

I have a few friends.

J'ai quelques amis.

I have a few.

J'en ai quelques-uns.

4. *Quelqu'un*, in a general sense, is always masculine singular.

Do you know any one here?

Connaissez-vous quelqu'un ici?

I know some of these ladies.

Je connais quelques-unes de ces dames.

Some of those flowers are very beautiful.

Quelques-unes de ces fleurs sont très-belles.

We live in Boston.

Nous demeurons à Boston.

I sometimes forget your name.

J'oublie quelquefois votre nom.

I go as far as the fountain.

Je vais jusqu'à la fontaine.

Do you not pity those poor people?

Ne plaignez-vous pas ces pauvres gens?

We pity them.

Nous les plaignons.

We know that man, and we know from whence he comes.

Nous connaissons cet homme, et nous savons d'où il vient.

5. Partitive nouns, with *ni* .. *ni*, take neither *de* nor the article.

I have neither bread nor wine.

Je n'ai *ni* pain *ni* vin.

He buys neither sugar nor tea.

Il n'achète *ni* sucre *ni* thé.

6. *Ne* before the verb and *que* after it mean *but* or *only*.

Have you only twelve apples?

N'avez-vous *que* douze pommes?

I have only nine or ten.

Je n'en ai *que* neuf ou dix.

You have but eleven.

Vous n'en avez *que* onze.†

1. Cet homme connaît-il quelqu'un ici? 2. Il ne connaît personne. 3. Connais-tu quelqu'un de mes parents? 4. J'en connais

\* *Sept, huit, neuf, dix*, have the final consonant sounded at the end of a phrase, or before a vowel, but not before a consonant.

† *E* is never elided before *onze* and *onzième*.

7 13 21 7 21 23 13 8 6 4 9 6 8 6 18 12 6 9 13  
 plat-zir, fon-taine, nom, cruche, lis, pen-sée, de-meu-rer, res-tor, ou-blier, neuf,\* dix,\*  
 21 15 23 1 5 5 24 5 4 14 8 4 22  
 onze, douze, jusk', a-vec, kel-k'un, kel-k'une, kel-kez-une, kel-kez-unes.

\* Before a noun beginning with a vowel, the final letter of *neuf* is pronounced like *v*, before one beginning with a consonant it is silent; otherwise it is sounded as *f*. Before a vowel, the final consonant of *dix* is pronounced *x*, before a consonant it is silent, at the end of a clause and in *dix-sept, dix-huit, dix-neuf*, it has the sound of *s*.

quelques-uns. 5. Ces étrangers connaissent-ils quelqu'un dans ce village? 6. Ils connaissent quelques-uns de nos amis. 7. Connaissez-vous quelqu'une de ces dames? 8. Nous en connaissons quelques-unes. 9. Qui est-ce que vous plaignez? 10. Je plains cet aveugle. 11. Connaissez-vous le bon Jean? 12. Je le connais et je sais où il demeure. 13. Pourquoi plaignez-vous ce monsieur? 14. Je le plains parce qu'il n'a pas d'amis. 15. L'allemand plaint-il son cheval? 16. Il ne le plaint pas. 17. Les enfants plaignent-ils ce pauvre animal? 18. Ils le plaignent. 19. Plaignez-vous ces pauvres animaux? 20. Je les plains. 21. Qu'a votre garçon? 22. Il a une cruche pleine d'eau. 23. Voulez-vous bien me donner des lis et des pensées? 24. Avec plaisir. 25. Avez-vous beaucoup d'argent? 26. Je n'ai que dix dollars.

1. Have you some fresh water? 2. Yes, sir, I have a pitcher full. 3. What flowers has the gardener? 4. He has lilies and pansies. 5. Where does your friend dwell? 6. He dwells in (a) New York. 7. Do you dwell in this village? 8. No, sir, I dwell in Boston. 9. Do you sometimes forget the merchant's name? 10. We forget it often. 11. Does he ever forget your name? 12. He never forgets it. 13. How many oxen has the countryman? 14. He has ten oxen, nine cows, and eleven sheep. 15. Has the fisherman many fish? 16. He has only twelve. 17. Have you some of my books? 18. I have a few. 19. Do you know any one of those gentlemen? 20. I know some of them. 21. Are you going as far as the fountain? 22. I am going as far as the village.

23. Is that pitcher empty? 24. No, sir, it is full of water. 25. Have you much water? 26. No, sir, I have only that pitcher full. 27. Do you know where the servant is going? 28. He is going as far as the fountain. 29. What does the gardener give you? 30. He gives me flowers. 31. Does he give you lilies or pansies? 32. He gives me neither lilies nor pansies. 33. Why do you pity that child? 34. I pity him because he has neither bread nor meat. 35. What has the countrywoman? 36. She has some apples, some peaches, and a few flowers. 37. Do you know any of those ladies? 38. I know some of them. 39. I have need of your dictionary; have you it here? 40. Yes; which do you wish for? 41. I wish for that one. 42. Does the countryman give you some fruit? 43. He gives me some. 44. Does he give us some? 45. He gives you

some. 46. Does he carry some to the sick man? 47. He carries some to him.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. George, are you coming with me? 2. Where are you going? 3. I am going as far as the fountain. 4. Why are you going to the fountain? 5. I am going for (*chercher*) a pitcher of fresh water for (*pour*) my aunt. 6. Where is Charles? 7. He is studying his lesson under the large tree in the garden. 8. Have you many flowers in your garden? 9. Not many (*pas beaucoup*), we have some roses, some lilies, and some beautiful tulips. 10. At our house, we have no lilies, but we have many violets and pansies. 11. I like pansies very much, but I like violets still better (*mieux*). 12. I am going to give you a few violets to (*pour*) carry to your aunt (*madame votre tante*); she likes them much.

## 36.—TRENTÉ-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

## THE PAST-INDEFINITE TENSE.

*Had.**Eu* (past part. of *avoir*).*Been.**Été* (past part. of *être*).

1. THE PAST-INDEFINITE TENSE is formed by joining the past participle to the present tense of the auxiliary verb *avoir*. Thus:

*Past-indefinite of AVOIR, to have.*

*J'ai eu, tu as eu, il a eu, nous avons eu, vous avez eu, ils ont eu,*  
I have had, thou hast had, he has had, we have had, you have had, they have had.

*Past-indefinite of ÊTRE, to be.*

*J'ai été, tu as été, il a été, nous avons été, vous avez été, ils ont été,*  
I have been, thou hast, etc., he has, etc., we have, etc., you have, etc., they have, etc.

*Past-indefinite of PARLER, to speak (1st Conj.).*

*J'ai parlé, tu as parlé, il a parlé, nous avons parlé, vous avez parlé, ils ont parlé,*  
I have spoken, thou hast, etc., he has, etc., we have, etc., you have, etc., they have, etc.

*Past-indefinite of FINIR, to finish (2d Conj.).*

*J'ai fini, tu as fini, il a fini, nous avons fini, vous avez fini, ils ont fini,*  
I have finished, thou hast, etc., he has, etc., we have, etc., you have, etc., they have, etc.

*Past-indefinite of RECEVOIR, to receive (3d Conj.).*

*J'ai reçu, tu as reçu, il a reçu, nous avons reçu, vous avez reçu, ils ont reçu,*  
I have received, thou hast, etc., he has, etc., we have, etc., you have, etc., they have, etc.

*Past-indefinite of RENDRE, to give back (4th Conj.).*

*J'ai rendu, tu as rendu, il a rendu, nous avons rendu, vous avez rendu, ils ont rendu,*  
I have given back, thou hast, etc., he has, etc., we have, etc., you have, etc., they have, etc.

2. This tense is called *past-indefinite* because it is used in speaking of Indefinite past time, as, *I have spoken to your brother, J'ai parlé à votre frère* (time not defined). It is

used also of definite past time, which includes the present day, as, *I spoke to your brother this morning, this month, etc., J'ai parlé à votre frère ce matin, ce mois, etc.*

8. The negatives and pronouns which are placed before the verb in the simple tenses are placed before the auxiliary in the compound tenses, and the last negative word is placed between the auxiliary and the past participle.

Have you not had my book?

N'avez-vous pas eu mon livre?

I have not had it.

Je ne l'ai pas eu.

*To believe, believing, believed.*

*Croire, croyant, cru (fem. crue).*

<i>Je crois, tu crois, il croit,</i>	<i>nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient,</i>
<i>I believe, thou believest, he believes,</i>	<i>we believe, you believe, they believe.</i>

You believe that he is rich.

Vous croyez qu'il est riche.

I believe that he is not rich.

Je crois qu'il n'est pas riche.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
<i>My grandfather.</i>	<i>My grandmother.</i>	<i>Mon grand-père.</i>	<i>Ma grand'mère.</i>
<i>His grandson.</i>	<i>His granddaughter.</i>	<i>Son petit-fils.</i>	<i>Sa petite-fille.</i>
<i>A father-in-law.</i>	<i>A mother-in-law.</i>	} <i>Un beau-père.</i>	} <i>Une belle-mère.</i>
<i>A step-father.</i>	<i>A step-mother.</i>		
<i>Your step-son.</i>	{ <i>Your daughter-in-law, or step-daughter.</i>	} <i>Votre beau-fils.</i>	} <i>Votre belle-fille.</i>
<i>Your son-in-law.</i>			

Your son-in-law.

Votre gendre, or votre beau-fils.

Did you give the fruit to your grandfather?

Avez-vous donné le fruit à votre grand-père?

I did not give it to him.

Je ne le lui ai pas donné.

Hast thou not found thy pencil?

N'as-tu pas trouvé ton crayon?

I have not found it.

Je ne l'ai pas trouvé.

*Somebody's, that of somebody (sing.).*

*Celui de quelqu'un, celle de quelqu'un.*

*Somebody's, those of somebody (plur.).*

*Ceux de quelqu'un, celles de quelqu'un.*

*Nobody's, that of nobody (sing.).*

*Celui de personne, celle de personne.*

*Nobody's, those of nobody (plur.).*

*Ceux de personne, celles de personne.*

1. Avez-vous eu mon livre? 2. Nous ne l'avons pas eu. 3. Votre grand'mère a-t-elle été chez vous? 4. Non, monsieur, elle a été à l'église. 5. As-tu trouvé ton canif? 6. Je l'ai trouvé. 7. Ces ouvriers ont-ils fini leur ouvrage (*work*)? 8. Ils l'ont fini. 9. Votre beau-père a-t-il reçu le billet de son petit-fils? 10. Il ne l'a pas reçu. 11. La petite-fille de votre voisin vous a-t-elle rendu votre livre? 12. Elle me l'a rendu. 13. Ces écoliers croient que vous avez eu leurs plumes. 14. Avez-vous été au marché? 15. Non, madame, nous avons été chez votre belle-mère. 16. N'avez-vous pas eu le cheval de votre beau-frère? 17. Nous ne l'avons pas eu. 18. Où ces petites filles ont-elles été? 19. Elles ont été

chez votre belle-sœur. 20. Notre voisin a-t-il trouvé son gendre? 21. Il l'a trouvé. 22. Avez-vous trouvé le mouchoir de quelqu'un? 23. J'ai trouvé celui de quelqu'un. 24. Avez-vous eu les plumes de quelqu'un? 25. Nous n'avons eu celles de personne. 26. Avez-vous les livres de quelqu'un? 27. Non, mademoiselle, je n'ai ceux de personne. 28. Nous croyons que votre père est riche; notre voisin croit qu'il est pauvre.

1. Has the neighbor's grandson your horse? 2. He has him not. 3. Has he not somebody's? 4. He has nobody's. 5. Has your grandfather your gold pen? 6. He has it not. 7. Has he not somebody's? 8. He has nobody's. 9. Where has your grandmother been? 10. She has been to her son-in-law's. 11. Has your brother-in-law had the money of your sister-in-law? 12. He has not had it. 13. Has your father had the letters of his granddaughter? 14. No, sir, he has had her copy-book, but not her letters. 15. Has he not had somebody's? 16. No, sir, he has had nobody's. 17. Whose horse have you bought? 18. I have bought nobody's. 19. Has your father-in-law bought somebody's? 20. He has bought nobody's. 21. Have you finished your exercise? 22. I have not finished it.

23. Where has your mother-in-law been? 24. She has been to her grand-daughter's. 25. Are you the general's step-son? 26. No, sir, I am his brother-in-law. 27. Have you not found the general's grandson? 28. We have not found him. 29. Did not the gardeners give the fruit to your mother-in-law? 30. No, miss, they gave it to my sister-in-law. 31. Did you not give the copy-book to the master? 32. I did not give it to him. 33. Has the workman finished his work? 34. Yes, sir, he finished it this morning. 35. Have you my pen? 36. I have it not. 37. Have you had somebody's? 38. I have had nobody's. 39. Where has the neighbor's grandson been? 40. He has been to my grandfather's. 41. Are you acquainted with the general's grand-daughter? 42. I am acquainted with her, and I know where she lives. 43. I believe that she lives in this village. 44. You believe that she is rich; we believe that she is poor. 45. The scholars believe that it will rain.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. How many brothers have you? 2. I have three, but I have



only one sister. 3. Your father has five children? 4. Yes, and my uncle has nine. 5. I know a gentleman who has thirteen (*treize*). 6. He has many indeed (*vraiment*). 7. Yes, it is a large family (*famille*). 8. Who is that little child that your sister is conducting to school? 9. He is one of our neighbor's children. 10. Is he going to the school of Mr. B.? 11. Yes, sir. 12. He is very young. 13. Who is that workman? do you know him? 14. I know him, and I know that he is a good workman; he comes often to our house. 15. Is he not blind of one eye? 16. No, but he has a brother who is blind. 17. I pity him; who takes care of him? 18. His brother takes care of him, and his nephews conduct him when (*quand*) he goes out. 19. Does any one give him money? 20. No, no one gives him any. 21. Is he not very young? 22. No, he is not a child, he is a man. 23. I know a young man who is blind, and you know him also; it is Peter B. 24. I know him very well.

## 37.—TRENTÉ-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## AGREEMENT OF PAST PARTICIPLES.

1. The past participle forming part of an active verb agrees with the direct object of that verb when the object precedes it, but when the object follows it remains unchanged.

Past participles, as we have seen (Lesson 26), form the feminine and plural as adjectives.

Have you found your pen?

Avez-vous *trouvé* votre plume?

I have found it.

Je l'ai *trouvée*.

In the former of these phrases, *trouvé* does not agree, because its object, *plume*, comes after it; in the latter it agrees, because its object, *la*, precedes it. So in the following.

Didst thou buy the horses?

As-tu *acheté* les chevaux? (object follows).

I bought them.

Je *les* ai *achetés* (object precedes).

Have you had my pens?

Avez-vous *eue* mes plumes? (object follows).

I have not had them.

Je ne *les* ai pas *eues* (obj. precedes).

Did your brother receive your letter?

Votre frère a-t-il *reçu* votre lettre? (object follows).

He received it.

Il l'a *reçue* (object precedes).

*To finish, finishing, finished.*

*Finir, finissant, fini, e (fem.).*

Have they finished their exercises?

Ont-ils *fini* leurs thèmes? (object follows).

They have finished them.

Ils *les* ont *finis* (object precedes).

Have you returned our letters?

Avez-vous *rendu* nos lettres? (object follows).

We have returned them.

Nous *les* avons *rendues*\* (object precedes).

\* From the above examples it may be seen that the past participle coming after its object has more the nature of an adjective than when it precedes the object. When I say,

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
A journey.	The news.	Un voyage.	La nouvelle (sing.).
That work.	The news.	Cet ouvrage.	Les nouvelles (plur.).
The lake.	Wise, discreet.	Le lac.	Sage.

2. Sage, applied to children, means good.

An old man.	Acquaintance.	Un vieillard.	Connaissance.
Proud.		Fier.	Fière.
The finger.	Which way.	Le doigt.	Par où.
This way.	That way.	Par ici.	Par là.
Which way are you going?		Par où allez-vous?	
He comes this way.	He goes that	Il vient par ici.	Il va par là.

way.

3. Changes in condition and feeling expressed by *make* in English, are expressed by *rendre* in French.

This bad weather makes me sad.	Ce mauvais temps me rend triste.
Misfortune makes us wise.	Le malheur nous rend sages.

To follow, following, followed.

Suivre, suivant, suivi, e (fem.).

Je suis, tu suis, il suit,	nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent,
I follow, thou followest, he follows,	we follow, you follow, they follow.

To live, living, lived.

Vivre, vivant, vécu, e (fem.).

Je vis, tu vis, il vit,	nous vivons, vous vivez, ils vivent,
I live, thou livest, he lives,	we live, you live, they live.

To live on. Wherewith to live.

Vivre de. De quoi vivre.

He lives on dry bread.	Il vit de pain sec.
They have lived on bread and water.	Ils ont vécu de pain et d'eau.
Do you follow me?	Me suivez-vous?
I follow you.	Je vous suis.
Have you followed your brothers?	Avez-vous suivi vos frères?
We have followed them.	Nous les avons suivis.

4. *Dernier*, as a numeral, precedes its noun; when not a numeral, it follows it.

I have the first, he has the last volume.	J'ai le premier, il a le dernier volume.
I spoke to him last week.	Je lui ai parlé la semaine dernière.

1. Où allez-vous? 2. Je vais au marché. 3. Ces messieurs viennent par ici, nous allons par là. 4. Votre beau-père a-t-il cherché ses petits-fils? 5. Il les a cherchés. 6. A-t-il trouvé ses petites-filles? 7. Il les a trouvées. 8. Avez-vous reçu la nouvelle? 9. Je l'ai reçue ce matin. 10. Mon frère a fini son long voyage. 11. Avez-vous fini votre ouvrage? 12. Je l'ai fini. 13. Ces pom-

*J'ai fini mes thèmes, I have finished my exercises, have and finished are taken together as in English, and express the idea of an action merely. But when I say, Je les ai finis, I have them finished, it is evident that finished has more the nature of an adjective. Hence in the latter case it agrees like an adjective.*

vo-yage, nou-velle, ou-vrage, lac, sage, fier, fi-ère, doigt, vi-vre, vi-vant, vé-cu, vie, vié, vi-vons, vi-vez, vivent, vieil-lard, con-nais-sance.

mes aigres m'ont rendu malade. 14. Ce vieillard est sage et son gendre est fier. 15. Avez-vous été sur le lac? 16. Non, monsieur, j'ai été sur la rivière, mais non pas sur le lac. 17. Qui est ce vieillard? 18. C'est mon grand-père, il a beaucoup de connaissances dans cette ville. 19. Ce forgeron a le bras (*arm*) et les doigts gros. 20. Votre beau-père a-t-il reçu les nouvelles? 21. Il les a reçues. 22. Ce vieillard n'a pas de quoi vivre. 23. Me suivez-vous? 24. Je ne vous suis pas. 25. Cet homme vous suit-il? 26. Il me suit. 27. Ces oiseaux vivent longtemps (*long*). 28. Avez-vous suivi ces hommes? 29. Nous les avons suivis.

1. Did you lend your money to that old man? 2. I lent it to him. 3. Did the scholars give you their pens? 4. They gave them to me. 5. Have you received the letters of your brother? 6. I have received them. 7. Has the old man lent you his books? 8. He has lent them to me. 9. Did the children have my slate? 10. No, sir, your mother-in-law had it. 11. Has your grandfather received the news? 12. He has received it. 13. Has that workman finished his work? 14. He has finished it. 15. Has your brother finished his journey? 16. He has not finished it. 17. Have you been on the lake? 18. No, sir, I have been on the river. 19. Are the neighbor's children good? 20. They are very good. 21. Have you many acquaintances here? 22. No, sir, I know no one in this village. 23. Is not that lady proud? 24. She is very proud.

25. That lady's hands are white and her fingers small. 26. The servant's fingers are big. 27. On what does that poor man live? 28. He lives on bread and cheese. 29. On what does the mason live? 30. He lives on bread and meat. 31. Do those men live on dry bread? 32. They live on bread and butter. 33. This water is bad; it makes me sick. 34. Have you had the last volume of this work? 35. I have had it; and I returned it to your father this morning. 36. Father, am I going to the store to-day? 37. No, son, you are going to school. 38. Will you please to give me these apples? 39. With pleasure; do you not wish for some pears also? 40. Thank you; you are very good. 41. Does your brother know any one here? 42. Yes, sir, he has many acquaintances in this city. 43. He believes that they are all very good. 44. You believe that that man is rich; I believe that he is poor.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Has not the grocer wine and beer? 2. He has neither wine nor beer. 3. Have you bought coffee or tea? 4. I have bought neither coffee nor tea. 5. I have a few acquaintances in this village. 6. Where did you conduct (*conduil*) the stranger last evening (*hier au soir*)? 7. I conducted him to the theatre. 8. Where did you conduct your little sister this morning? 9. I conducted her to the school of madam B. 10. Have you some ink? 11. I have some black ink and some red. 12. How many uncles have you? 13. I have only two; my friend has five. 14. What has the gardener? 15. He has much fruit. 16. Does he give you some? 17. He gives us some. 18. Does he give me some? 19. He gives thee some. 20. Has he given some to the neighbors? 21. He has given them some. 22. Has that proud man much wit? 23. He has neither courage nor wit. 24. With what do you fill that cask? 25. I fill it with water. 26. Does that scholar study much? 27. No, sir, he desires to learn, but he will not study. 28. How many chickens has the countryman? 29. He has twelve.

## 38.—TRENTÉ-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

*To make, making, made.*

*Faire, faisant, fait, e (fem.).*

*Je fais, tu fais, il fait,*  
I make, thou makest, he makes,

*nous faisons, vous faites, ils font,*  
we make, you make, they make.

*To wash, washing, washed.*

*Laver, lavant, lavé, e (fem.).*

*Less. Once. Twice.*

*Moins. Une fois. Deux fois.*

*Three times. Four times, etc.*

*Trois fois. Quatre fois.*

CARDINAL NUMBERS.	NOMBRES CARDINAUX.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	NOMBRES ORDINAUX.
1,	<i>Un, uno,</i>	1st,	<i>Premier (m.), Première (f.).</i>
2,	<i>Deux,</i>	2d,	<i>Second (m.), Seconde (f.).</i>
3,	<i>Trois,</i>	3d,	<i>Troisième,</i>
4,	<i>Quatre,</i>	4th,	<i>Quatrième,</i>
5,	<i>Cinq,</i>	5th,	<i>Cinquième,</i>
6,	<i>Six,</i>	6th,	<i>Sixième,</i>
7,	<i>Sept,</i>	7th,	<i>Septième,</i>
8,	<i>Huit,</i>	8th,	<i>Huitième,</i>
9,	<i>Neuf,</i>	9th,	<i>Neuvième,</i>
10,	<i>Dix,</i>	10th,	<i>Dixième,</i>
11,	<i>Onze,</i>	11th,	<i>Onzième,</i>
12,	<i>Douze,</i>	12th,	<i>Douzième,</i>
13,	<i>Treize,</i>	13th,	<i>Treizième,</i>
14,	<i>Quatorze,</i>	14th,	<i>Quatorzième,</i>
15,	<i>Quinze,</i>	15th,	<i>Quinzième,</i>
16,	<i>Seize,</i>	16th,	<i>Seizième,</i>
17,	<i>Dix-sept,</i>	17th,	<i>Dix-septième,</i>
18,	<i>Dix-huit,</i>	18th,	<i>Dix-huitième,</i>

7 7 8 7 7 7 21 7 21 1 6 1 8 1 6 1 1 1 1  
 faire, fai-zant, fait, fais, fai-zons, faites, font, la-ver, la-vant, la-vé, lave, laves, la-vone,  
 1 6 1 18 14 20 21 1 12 17 16 12 17 7 1 16 14 7  
 la-ves, lavent, moins, fois, nom-bres, car-di-naux, or-di-naux, treize, ka-torze, kinze, seize,  
 12 2 12 21 12  
 dix-sept, dix-huit.

CARDINAL NUMBERS.	NOMBRES CARDINAUX.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	NOMBRES ORDINAUX.
19,	<i>Dix-neuf,</i>	19th,	<i>Dix-neuvième,</i>
20,	<i>Vingt,</i>	20th,	<i>Vingtème,</i>
21,	<i>Vingt et un,</i>	21st,	<i>Vingt et unième,</i>
22,	<i>Vingt-deux,</i>	22d,	<i>Vingt-deuxième,</i>
23,	<i>Vingt-trois,</i>	23d,	<i>Vingt-troisième,</i>
30,	<i>Trente,</i>	30th,	<i>Trentième,</i>
31,	<i>Trente et un,</i>	31st,	<i>Trente et unième,</i>
32,	<i>Trente-deux,</i>	32d,	<i>Trente-deuxième,</i>
40,	<i>Quarante,</i>	40th,	<i>Quarantième,</i>
50,	<i>Cinquante,</i>	50th,	<i>Cinquantième,</i>
60,	<i>Soixante,</i>	60th,	<i>Soixantième,</i>
70,	<i>Soixante-dix,</i>	70th,	<i>Soixante-dixième,</i>
71,	<i>Soixante et onze,</i>	71st,	<i>Soixante-onzième,</i>
80,	<i>Quatre-vingt,</i>	80th,	<i>Quatre-vingtième,</i>
81,	<i>Quatre-vingt-un,</i>	81st,	<i>Quatre-vingt-unième,</i>
90,	<i>Quatre-vingt-dix,</i>	90th,	<i>Quatre-vingt-dixième,</i>
91,	<i>Quatre-vingt-onze,</i>	91st,	<i>Quatre-vingt-onzième,</i>
100,	<i>Cent,</i>	100th,	<i>Centième,</i>
101,	<i>Cent un,</i>	101st,	<i>Cent unième,</i>
200,	<i>Deux cents,</i>	200th,	<i>Deux centième,</i>
210,	<i>Deux cent dix,</i>	210th,	<i>Deux cent dixième,</i>
1,000,	<i>Mille,</i>	1,000th,	<i>Millième,</i>
1,001,	<i>Mille un,</i>	1,001st,	<i>Mille unième,</i>
2,500,	<i>Deux mille cinq cents,</i>	2,500th,	<i>Deux mille cinq centième,</i>
1,000,000,	<i>Un million,</i>	1,000,000th,	<i>Millionième.</i>

1. In *vingt*, *t* is sounded before a vowel, and rarely at the end of a phrase ; it must be distinctly heard in *vingt et un*, *vingt-deux*, etc.; but in *quatre-vingt-un*, *quatre-vingt-deux*, etc., the *t* is never sounded.

2. *Vingt* and *cent* take *s* when multiplied by another number, as *cinq cents*, except when followed by a number, as *quatre-vingt-cinq*, *trois cent dix*; and when used as ordinal numbers, as, *Page quatre cent*, *L'an mil sept cent quatre-vingt*.

3. *Mille* becomes *mil* only in the computation of years of the Christian era ; *L'an mil huit cent soixante*. The year one thousand eight hundred and sixty.

What are you doing ?

Que faites-vous ?

I am doing nothing.

Je ne fais rien.

We do what you do.

Nous faisons ce que vous faites.

What is the washerwoman doing ?

Que fait la blanchisseuse ?

She is washing pocket-handkerchiefs.

Elle lave des *mouchoirs de poche*.

How many do four times five make ?

Combien font quatre fois cinq ?

Four times five make twenty.

Quatre fois cinq font vingt.

Twenty-five less nine make sixteen.

Vingt-cinq moins neuf font seize.

A pocket. A pocket-handkerchief.

Une poche. Un mouchoir de poche.

1. Combien font deux fois quatre ? 2. Deux fois quatre font huit. 3. Combien font quatre fois cinq ? 3. Quatre fois cinq font vingt. 5. Combien font cinq fois six ? 6. Cinq fois six font trente. 7. Combien font six fois sept ? 8. Six fois sept font quarante-deux. 9. Combien font sept fois huit ? 10. Sept fois huit font cinquante-six. 11. Combien font huit fois neuf ? 12. Huit fois neuf font soixante-douze. 13. Combien font neuf fois dix ? 14. Neuf fois dix font quatre-vingt-dix. 15. Dix fois onze font

<sup>19</sup> dix-neuf, <sup>20</sup> vingt, <sup>21</sup> vingt-et-un, <sup>22</sup> vingt-deux, <sup>23</sup> trente, <sup>30</sup> ka-rante, <sup>31</sup> cin-kante, <sup>32</sup> soi-san-te, <sup>40</sup> cent-mille, <sup>50</sup> mi-ll-on, <sup>60</sup> ka-ran-tième, <sup>70</sup> cin-kan-tième, <sup>80</sup> soi-san-tième, <sup>90</sup> cen-tième, <sup>100</sup> mi-llième, <sup>101</sup> mi-ll-on-<sup>102</sup>nième, <sup>103</sup> po-<sup>104</sup>che.

cent dix. 16. Huit et six font quatorze. 17. Quarante-cinq moins quinze font trente. 18. Dix-sept moins neuf font huit. 19. Que fais-tu? 20. Je ne fais rien. 21. Que lavez-vous? 22. Je lave mon ardoise. 23. Avez-vous lavé vos encriers? 24. Je les ai lavés. 25. Avez-vous fait un voyage? 26. J'ai fait un long voyage. 27. Avez-vous votre livre? 28. Je l'ai dans ma poche.

1. What art thou doing? 2. I am washing my slate. 3. What are you doing? 4. We are washing our inkstands. 5. Have you washed your pens? 6. We have not washed them. 7. What are those washerwomen washing? 8. They are washing my pocket-handkerchiefs. 9. What saddle have you had? 10. I have had mine. 11. Have you somebody's bridle? 12. I have nobody's. 13. Has that child had some one's hammer? 14. He has had some one's. 15. Will you please give me some lilies and some pansies? 16. Yes, sir, with pleasure. 17. What has the servant? 18. He has a pitcher of water. 19. Have you forgotten our names? 20. I have forgotten them. 21. Where have you been? 22. I have been as far as the fountain.

23. What flowers have you? 24. I have roses, lilies, and pansies. 25. Have you had my pen? 26. I have not had it. 27. What have you in that pitcher? 28. It is fresh water. 29. Have you had my papers? 30. I have not had them. 31. Has not that child somebody's book? 32. He has somebody's. 33. Whose cravats has he? 34. He has nobody's. 35. How many do five times five make? 36. Five times five make twenty-five, and six times six make thirty-six. 37. How many do seven times seven make? 38. Seven times seven make forty-nine, eight times eight make sixty-four, and nine times nine make eighty-one. 39. Ninety-four less twenty-eight are sixty-six. 40. Has the tailor made your coat and pantaloons? 41. He has made them. 42. What has that man? 43. He has his pockets full of money.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you desire your money? 2. I desire it and I will have it to-day. 3. Will you please come to my house to-day? 4. I am quite willing. 5. Who takes care of your horse? 6. The boy takes care of him. 7. Have you received your letters? 8. Yes, sir, I have received them. 9. That boy has not done his work. 10. Well, I am going to speak to his master. 11. Have you some fruit? 12. I have some good fruit. 13. Have you some apples?

14. I have no apples ; but I have a few pears and some excellent peaches. 15. What is on your table ? 16. They are the books of my sister. 17. What makes that noise (*bruit*) ? 18. It is the children who are in the street.

19. Do you ever go out in the morning ? 20. I often go out in the morning and in the evening. 21. Has the workman already finished his work ? 22. He has not yet finished it. 23. Has the carpenter already finished his benches ? 24. He has finished them. 25. Has the shoemaker made your shoes ? 26. He has not yet made them. 27. Has the washerwoman washed my cravats ? 28. She has washed them.

## 39.—TRENTÉ-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

## THE PRONOUN Y.

*To put, put on, putting, put.*

*Mettre, mettant, mis, e.*

*Je mets, tu mets, il met,*  
I put, thou puttest, he puts,

*nous mettons, vous mettez, ils mettent,*  
we put, you put, they put.

Where do you put your book ?

Où mettez-vous votre livre ?

I put it on the desk.

Je le mets sur le pupitre.

*To dry, drying, dried.*

*Sécher, séchant, séché, e.*

1. Verbs having an acute accent on *e* in the penult of the infinitive, as *sécher*, change the acute to the grave accent when followed by a consonant having *e* mute after it ; thus,

*Je sèche, tu sèches, il sèche,*  
I dry, thou driest, he dries,

*nous séchons, vous séchez, ils séchent,*  
we dry, you dry, they dry.

## MASCULINE.

## FEMININE.

The wind.

A spade.

Le vent.

Une bêche.

The sun.

A pepper-box.

Le soleil.

Une poivrière.

The east.

A smell, odor.

L'est (st sounded).

Une odeur.

The west.

The part, share.

L'ouest (st sounded).

La partie, part.

The north.

A family.

Le nord.

Une famille.

The south.

Le sud (d sounded).

Wet.

Mouillé.

Mouillée.

Before.

Devant, avant.

2. *Devant* refers to place, and *avant* to time.

Before the fire. Before morning.

Devant le feu. Avant le matin.

The wet linen. In the wind.

Le linge mouillé. Au vent.

In the sun. In the fire.

Au soleil. Au feu.

We dry the linen in the sun.

Nous séchons le linge au soleil.

Do you dry yours in the wind ?

Séchez-vous le vôtre au vent ?

I dry it before the fire.

Je le sèche devant le feu.

<sup>5</sup> met-tre, <sup>6</sup> met-tant, <sup>12</sup> mis, <sup>5</sup> met, <sup>5</sup> met-ton, <sup>5</sup> met-tes, <sup>5</sup> mettent, <sup>5</sup> sé-cher, <sup>5</sup> sé-chant, <sup>5</sup> sé-ché,  
<sup>7</sup> sèche, <sup>5</sup> sé-çons, <sup>5</sup> sé-chez, <sup>7</sup> séchent, <sup>16</sup> vent, <sup>16</sup> bêche, <sup>16</sup> so-<sup>13</sup>leil, <sup>16</sup> poi-<sup>13</sup>vi-<sup>1</sup>ère, <sup>1</sup> est, <sup>1</sup> par-tie, <sup>1</sup> part, <sup>1</sup> nord, <sup>1</sup> fa-  
<sup>12</sup> mille, <sup>12</sup> sud, <sup>12</sup> mouil-lé, <sup>12</sup> de-<sup>1</sup>vant, <sup>1</sup> a-<sup>1</sup>vant.

Which way (where) is the wind?	Où est (or, D'où vient) le vent?
It is in the east.	Il est à l'est, or, Il vient de l'est.
<i>To it, at it, in it, to them, at them, in them, there, thither, here, hither.</i>	<i>Y</i> (before the verb).
Are you going to the village?	Allez-vous au village?
I am going there.	J'y vais.
What do you put in that barrel?	Que mettez-vous dans ce baril?
We put vinegar in it.	Nous y mettons du vinaigre.
What does the workman put in his chest?	Qu'est-ce que l'ouvrier met dans son coffre?
He puts linen in it.	Il y met du linge.
3. <i>There</i> and <i>here</i> referring to a place not mentioned before are <i>là</i> (or <i>y</i> ), and <i>ici</i> .	
Dost thou always put thy books there?	Mets-tu toujours tes livres là?
I always put them there.	Je les y mets toujours.
Do you put your umbrellas here?	Mettez-vous vos parapluies ici?
We put them there.	Nous les y mettons.
We put our hats there also.	Nous y mettons nos chapeaux aussi.
He puts on his cloak.	Il met son manteau.

1. Où le domestique lave-t-il son linge? 2. Il le lave au ruisseau. 3. Le sèche-t-il au soleil? 4. Il le sèche devant le fen. 5. Le vent n'est pas au nord; ne vient-il pas de l'ouest? 6. Non, monsieur, il vient du sud. 7. Qu'est-ce que vous mettez dans votre porte-feuille? 8. J'y mets des billets de banque. 9. Qu'est-ce que les marchands mettent dans ces tonneaux? 10. Ils y mettent du vin. 11. Mon frère est-il chez vous? 12. Oui, madame, il y vient toujours avant le soir. 13. La bêche est-elle dans le jardin? 14. Elle y est. 15. La poivrière n'est-elle pas sur la table? 16. Elle n'y est pas. 17. J'aime beaucoup les violettes; elles ont une odeur très-douce. 18. Les blanchisseuses séchent-elles leur linge au soleil? 19. Elles l'y séchent. 20. Avez-vous eu votre part de ce fruit? 21. Je ne l'ai pas eue. 22. Cet homme a huit fils et six filles; c'est une grande famille. 23. J'ai ici un bon gâteau; en voulez-vous une partie? 24. Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plait.

1. Where does the maid-servant wash the linen? 2. She washes it at the brook. 3. Does she dry it in the wind? 4. No, madam, she dries it before the fire. 5. What art thou drying? 6. I am drying my wet handkerchief. 7. Is the wind in the east or in the west? 8. It is neither in the east nor in the west; it is in the south. 9. Is it not in the north? 10. It is not in the north; it is in the south. 11. How many do five times seven make? 12. Five times seven make thirty-five, and eight times twelve make ninety-



six. 13. Are you going to the village? 14. I am going there. 15. Of what has that workman need? 16. He has need of a spade. 17. What is on the table? 18. It is a pepper-box and a pocket-handkerchief. 19. What does the workman put on the bench? 20. He puts his spade there.

21. Are you going to the city before evening? 22. I am going there now. 23. Didst thou dry thy wet gloves in the sun? 24. I dried them before the fire. 25. Our neighbor has much fruit; does he give you a part? 26. He gives me some. 27. Do you give money to that poor man? 28. I give him some. 29. Do you give some to his children? 30. I give some to them. 31. Whose books have you? 32. I have nobody's. 33. Has not that scholar somebody's? 34. She has nobody's. 35. Whose pens has she? 36. She has nobody's. 37. Hast thou washed thy slate? 38. I have washed it. 39. Have you washed your inkstands? 40. We have not washed them. 41. What has the gardener? 42. He has a spade and some flowers. 43. Do you like the odor of those flowers? 44. I like it much. 45. Is the family of your friend going to the country? 46. They (*elle*) are going there. 47. Do you wish for the pepper-box? 48. Yes, sir, if you please.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Where is the pepper-box? 2. Is it not on the table? 3. No, it is not there. 4. I want a little soup. 5. Will you have also a piece of boiled meat (*bouilli*)? 6. No, sir, thank you. 7. Do you not like boiled meat? 8. Yes, sir, I like it, but I do not wish for any to-day.

9. You have nothing on your plate; do you wish for a piece of roast meat? it is very tender (*tendre*). 10. A little piece, if you please. 11. Do you like it well done? 12. I like it rare. 13. Do you wish for some bread? 14. Thank you, I have some still. 15. You are not hungry. 16. Yes, I am very hungry; this roast meat is excellent. 17. Is not your coffee cold? 18. No, sir, it is still very warm. 19. Do you wish for a cup of tea? 20. I thank you much; I like coffee and not tea. 21. Why do you put on your cloak? 22. I put it on because I am cold.

## 40.—QUARANTIÈME LEÇON.

## PRONOUN Y CONTINUED.

<i>To think (of), thinking, thought.</i>	<i>Penser (à), pensant, pensé, e (fem.).</i>
<i>To labor (on), laboring, labored.</i>	<i>Travailler (à), travaillant, travaillé.</i>

pen-ser, pen-sant, pen-sé, tra-vail-ler, tra-vail-lant, tra-vail-lé.

1. *Y* is generally a pronoun, having the force of *d*, or some other preposition of place except *de*, with *lui, elle, eux, elles*, or *cela*, also often an adverb for *ici* or *là*. As a pronoun it applies almost always to things.

Do you put your name to these papers?	Mettez-vous votre nom à ces papiers?
I put it to them.	Je l'y mets.
Does he labor on that work?	Travaille-t-il à cet ouvrage?
He labors on it.	Il y travaille.
Do you ever think of your books?	Pensez-vous jamais à vos livres?
I think of them often.	J'y pense souvent.
Are the musicians coming here?	Les musiciens viennent-ils ici?
They are coming here.	Ils y viennent.
Are they in the country?	Sont-ils à la campagne?
They are there.	Ils y sont.

2. The place of the other objective pronouns we have seen (Lesson 26), and that *en* is placed last of all (Lesson 34). *Y* is placed after the other objective pronouns and before *en*.

<i>Me there.</i>	<i>Us there.</i>	<i>M'y.</i>	<i>Nous y.</i>
<i>Thee there.</i>	<i>You there.</i>	<i>T'y.</i>	<i>Vous y.</i>
<i>Him, it, or her there.</i>	<i>Them there.</i>	<i>L'y.</i>	<i>Les y.</i>
<i>Some there.</i>	I put some there.	<i>Y en.</i>	J'y en mets.
We conduct you there.			Nous vous y conduisons.
He conducts me there.			Il m'y conduit.
I conduct thee there.			Je t'y conduis.
They carry it there.			Ils l'y portent.
We take some there to you.			Nous vous y en portons.
To lead, take, leading, led.		<i>Mener, menant, mené, e (fem.).</i>	
To mend, mending, mended.		<i>Raccommoder, raccommo-dant, raccommo-dé.</i>	
<i>This, this thing.</i>	<i>That, that thing.</i>	<i>Ceci. Cela.</i>	

3. *Ceci* and *cela* are used in reference to propositions, or to things not named.

This is good, that is bad. *Ceci est bon, cela est mauvais.*

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The traveler.	The color.	Le voyageur.	La couleur.
The place.	The place, square.	L'endroit, lieu.	La place.

4. *Endroit* and *lieu* denote mere locality; *place* belonging to a person or thing, is *place*.

The hatter.	The border.	Le chapelier.	La bordure.
The arrangement.	The disposal.	L'arrangement.	La disposition.
The musician.		Le musicien.	La musicienne
The lieutenant.	Somewhere, any where.	Le lieutenant.	Quelque part.
The world, people.	Every where.	Le monde.	Partout.
Every body.	All the world.	Tout le monde.	Le monde entier.
Easily.	Nowhere.	Facilement.	Nulle part.

No one, none.

Without a verb, *aucun*; with a verb, and standing as subject, *aucun* *ne* before the verb; standing as object, *ne* before the verb and *aucun* after it. The feminine is *aucune*.

6 6 4 2 4 6 1 15 16 8 1 15 15 8 1 15 15 6 4 12 5 1 20 12 1  
me-ner, me-nant, me-né, rac-co-mo-der, rac-co-mo-dant, rac-co-mo-dé, ce-cl, ce-la, vo-ya-  
11 15 11 8 10 12 9 1 1 4 12 8 10 22 1 8 8 12 15 12 12 21 22  
geur, cou-deur, en-droit, lieu, place, cha-pe-lier, bor-dure, ar-ran-ge-ment, dis-po-si-tion, mu-  
12 12 14 22 12 12 8 12 9 13 1 18 8 12 8 1 17 8 22  
si-clien, mu-si-ci-enne, lieute-nant, monde, par-tout, en-tier, fa-cile-ment, nulle.

*To which one.*

*To which ones.*

To what store dost thou take the cloth?

To which one do you take the traveler?

I take him to none.

To which ones do your friends go?

Does no child go to school?

*None.* No one goes there.

Do you doubt of that?

I do not doubt of it.

*Auquel.*

*Auxquels.*

A quel magasin portes-tu le drap?

Auquel menez-vous le voyageur?

Je ne le mène à aucun. (Les. 27, 5.)

Auxquels vos amis vont-ils?

Aucun enfant ne va-t-il à l'école?

Aucun. Aucun n'y va.

Doutez-vous de cela?

Je n'en doute pas.

*A laquelle.*

*Auxquelles.*

1. Le voyageur vous conduit-il à la rivière? 2. Il nous y conduit. 3. Conduisez-vous les enfants à l'école? 4. Je les y conduis. 5. Nous y conduisez-vous? 6. Je ne vous y conduis pas. 7. Pensez-vous jamais à vos amis? 8. Je pense souvent à eux. 9. Travaillez-vous à cet ouvrage? 10. J'y travaille beaucoup. 11. Portez-vous du sucre au magasin? 12. J'y en porte vingt livres. 13. Ceci n'est-il pas jaune? 14. Si, ceci est jaune et cela est vert. 15. Avez-vous mené les voyageurs au village? 16. Je les y ai menés. 17. Raccommodez-vous quelque chose? 18. Je ne raccommode rien. 19. Le tailleur a-t-il raccommodé vos pantalons? 20. Il les a raccommodés. 21. Avez-vous connu le lieutenant et le musicien? 22. Je les ai connus. 23. Je mets mes livres dans cet endroit-ci. 24. Nous mettons toujours nos papiers à leur place. 25. Allez-vous quelque part? 26. Je ne vais nulle part. 27. Avez-vous cherché votre livre? 28. Je l'ai cherché. 29. Tout le monde connaît le lieutenant. 30. Savez-vous où il demeure? 31. Oui. Est-ce un bel endroit? C'est le plus beau lieu du monde. 32. Cette fleur est d'une belle couleur. 33. Pensez-vous à votre leçon? 34. J'y pense. 35. Ce monsieur parle bien facilement.

1. Where are you going? 2. I am going to school. 3. To which one are you going? 4. I am going to Mr. A.'s. 5. To which ones do your sisters go? 6. They go to none. 7. Do you often think of your friends? 8. We think of them very often. 9. Of (à) what do those scholars think? 10. They think of what they study. 11. Does the servant take the horse to the stable? 12. He takes him there. 13. What are those tailors mending? 14. They are mending coats and pantaloons. 15. Where have you put your books? 16. I have put them in that place. 17. Do you always put them in (à) their place? 18. I often put them there. 19. Is this iron? 20. This is iron and that is copper. 21. Have you labored

on that work? 22. I labored on it. 23. Did you finish it easily? 24. I finished it very easily. 25. I like the arrangement of that garden. 26. The color of that cloth is blue.

27. How many sisters have you? 28. I have none. 29. The smell of these flowers is very sweet. 30. The wind is neither in the north nor in the south, it is in the west. 31. Where does the washerwoman dry the wet cravats? 32. She dries them in the sun and in the wind. 33. How many brothers has the lieutenant? 34. The lieutenant has none, the musician has four. 35. Are you going any where to-day? 36. I am going nowhere. 37. Where is the traveler going? 38. He is going every where. 39. Is the musician going any where? 40. She is going nowhere. 41. Does the hatter (*chapelier*) think of what he has done? 42. He thinks of it. 43. Will you please conduct me to the hatter's? 44. With pleasure; I am going there now.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you need of your spade? 2. No; do you wish for it? 3. Certainly (*certainement*). 4. It is in the garden, under the window of the kitchen. 5. Why do you need a spade? 6. I wish to make a hole (*un trou*) before the house, in order to (*pour*) put there a yellow rose-tree (*rosier*). 7. Have you yellow roses? 8. I have some yellow, some white, and some red; have you not some? 9. Not (*pas*) yellow ones, that color is rare (*rare*). 10. If you come with (*avec*) me, I am going to give you a stock (*un pied*) of it. 11. You are too good. 12. All that I have is at your disposal. 13. Do you see (*voyez-vous*) what large leaves this rose-tree has? 14. Yes, truly (*vraiment*), they are very large. 15. What rose is it (*est-ce*)? 16. It is the cloth of gold (*drap d'or*) rose; if you wish for it, it is at your service. 17. Thank you, I am going to take good (*bien*) care of it. 18. Do you wish for a stock of the white? 19. I thank you, I have some of that color, and I have not much space (*place*) in my border.

## 41.—QUARANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

## A BEFORE THE INFINITIVE.

I like to listen to the traveler.

J'aime à écouter le voyageur.

1. The verb *aider* generally requires *à* before a dependent infinitive, as seen in the above phrase. Many other verbs and phrases do the same. *Avoir, chercher, donner, mettre, montrer, porter, and trouver*, already given, take *à* before a dependent infinitive. Such verbs will be marked, as they are given hereafter, with the abbreviation (*à bef inf*). Some verbs and phrases also take *de* before the infinitive. These will be noted hereafter.

I have something to do.	J'ai quelque chose à faire.
He seeks to do that.	Il cherche à faire cela.
We show you how to do that.	Nous vous montrons à faire cela.

2. Other verbs, as we have seen, govern the infinitive without a preposition.

I am going to look for my book.	Je vais chercher mon livre.
---------------------------------	-----------------------------

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The thread.	The apothecary's shop.	Le fil.	La pharmacie.
Secret.		Secret.	Secrète.
Fine.		Fin.	Fine.
Alone, only (adj.).		Seul.	Seule.
An officer.	Exactly so.	Un officier.	Tout juste.
A secret.	That is it.	Un secret.	C'est cela.
Only (adv.).	To stay, remain.	Seulement.	Rester (à bef. inf.).
To-morrow.	To intrust, confide.	Demain.	Confier.
With.	To count, reckon, also intend.	Avec.	Compter.
To admire.	To leave, let.	Admirer.	Laisser.
To take away, to take off.		Oter.	
To depart, set out, departing, departed.		Partir, partant, parti.	

3. *Partir* is conjugated like *sortir* (Lesson 29).

Have you only the fine thread?	Avez-vous seulement le fil fin? (or stronger) N'avez-vous que le fil fin?
--------------------------------	---

Of whom, from whom, of which, from }  
which, whose. } Dont.

4. *De qui* is used only of persons and personified objects. It must always be used when of whom or whose is interrogative. *Dont* applies to both persons and things, and is generally preferred to *de qui* when followed by a pronoun.

Of whom do you speak?	De qui parlez-vous?
I speak of the man of whom you speak.	Je parle de l'homme dont vous parlez.
Do you buy the thread of which I speak?	Achetez-vous le fil dont je parle?
That (the one) of which or of whom.	Celui dont (m.). Celle dont (f.).
Those (the ones) of which or of whom.	Ceux dont (m.). Celles dont (f.).
That (the thing) of which.	Ce dont.
I admire him of whom you speak.	J'admire celui dont vous parlez.
He admires her of whom you speak.	Il admire celle dont vous parlez.
He takes away that of which I am afraid.	Il ôte ce dont j'ai peur.
We leave our books here.	Nous laissons nos livres ici.
My brothers remain at home.	Mes frères restent chez eux.
I trust to you my money.	Je vous confie mon argent.
I intend to depart to-morrow.	Je compte partir demain.

5. *Même*, the same, an adjective, and *même*, self, joined to a pronoun, are variable; but *même*, even, an adverb, is invariable.

We have the same friends.	Nous avons les mêmes amis.
We are ourselves his friends.	Nous sommes nous-mêmes ses amis.
He does not love even his children.	Il n'aime pas même ses enfants.

13 1 1 13 4 6 4 6 14 12 9 9 15 13 17 22 9 8 6 6  
fil, phar-ma-cie, se-crèt, se-crète, fin, fine, seul, seule, of-fi-cier, just, seule-ment, res-ter,  
4 14 21 17 5 1 6 21 6 1 12 6 7 6 17 6 1 14 1 3 1 12 21  
de-main, con-fier, a-vec, comp-ter, ad-mi-rer, lais-ser, ô-ter, par-tir, par-tant, par-ti, dont

1. Cet écolier trouve beaucoup à étudier. 2. Il aime à parler français. 3. Avez-vous seulement ces poissons-ci? 4. Je n'ai que celui-ci, et mon ami n'a que celui-là. 5. Pourquoi ôtez-vous votre chapeau? 6. Je l'ôte à cet homme. 7. Laissez-vous votre argent dans ce coffre? 8. Je l'y laisse. 9. Restez-vous seuls ici? 10. Nous y restons seuls. 11. Confiez-vous votre argent à nos soins? 12. Nous l'y confions. 13. Est-ce que vous admirez l'officier dont nous parlons? 14. Nous ne l'admirons pas. 15. Ne compte-t-il pas les soldats? 16. Il les compte. 17. Compte-t-il partir demain? 18. Non, monsieur, il part aujourd'hui. 19. Partez-vous demain? 20. Nous partons ce matin. 21. Où va ce chapelier? 22. Il va à la pharmacie. 23. Je confie tout à mon ami, il est fort discret. 24. Vous confie-t-il son secret? 25. Il me le confie.

1. Where does the hatter take that officer? 2. He takes him to the grain market-house (*la halle aux blés*). 3. Has the carpenter mended your door? 4. He has mended it. 5. To whom does the hatter speak? 6. He speaks to the musician. 7. To which one does he speak? 8. He speaks to this one. 9. Have you put your tree in this place? 10. I have put it in this place, and my roses in that. 11. Is that officer going any where? 12. He is going nowhere. 13. I am going to the apothecary's shop. 14. To which are you going? 15. I am going to mine. 16. Are you acquainted with that officer? 17. Yes, sir, every body is acquainted with him. 18. Does he intrust to you his secrets? 19. He intrusts them to me. 20. What have you fine? 21. I have nothing fine.

22. Do you always leave your books in their place? 23. I always leave them there. 24. Does your brother remain here? 25. He remains here to-day only, but he intends to depart to-morrow. 26. Do you confide your secret to me? 27. I confide it to you. 28. Do you admire the officer of whom we speak? 29. We admire him. 30. Why do you take off your cloak? 31. I take it off because I am warm. 32. What men are you looking for? 33. I am looking for those of whom you speak. 34. The physician dwells in Water-street; he is going to the apothecary's shop with his friend. 35. Of what do you speak? 36. I speak of that of which you speak. 37. My pencil is on my desk with my books. 38. I have bought the horse of which you speak. 39. Our neighbor has a dog, of which we are afraid.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Where are you going? 2. I am going to conduct this little boy home. 3. Where does he dwell? 4. He dwells near (*près du*) the market on Water-street. 5. Who is his father? 6. It is Mr. Bernard; do you not know him? 7. I know him very well. 8. Is Mr. Bernard at home to-day? 9. I do not doubt of it; he does not often go out. 10. Well, I am going to his house with you.

11. Who is that man? 12. Which one? 13. He who is going to the apothecary's shop with Mr. George. 14. He is the physician of my father; he comes to our house often. 15. Is your father still sick? 16. He is not very well yet. 17. I will go and see (*je vais aller voir*) your father. 18. You do not come often. 19. Do you still (*toujours*) live at the same place? 20. Yes, we live in Saint Francis-street (*la rue Saint François*). 21. You live in a large white house, do you not (*n'est-ce pas*)? 22. Exactly (*exactement*); that is it.

## 42.—QUARANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

## NEGATIVE PARTITIVES, ETC.

1. We have seen (Lesson 31, Nos. 3, 4) that negative partitives take or omit the article as the affirmative or negative meaning prevails.

Has not this rich man money?  
Has not this great king power?  
Has that poor man no bread?  
*To feel, to smell, feeling, felt.*

Cet homme riche n'a-t-il pas de l'argent?  
Ce grand roi n'a-t-il pas du pouvoir?  
Ce pauvre homme n'a-t-il pas de pain?  
*Sentir, sentant, senti.*

(Conjugated as *sortir*, Lesson 19.)

*All, quite. All alone.*  
*Instantly, forthwith.*  
*Too, too much.*

*Tout (adv.). Tout seul.*  
*À l'instant, sur le champ, tout de suite.*  
*Trop (de before a noun).*

## MASCULINE.

## FEMININE.

The blow. The writing.  
The thunder. The reading.  
*Square.*  
The hole. The slit, chink.  
*Round.*  
The nest. Lean.  
*Salted, salt.*  
*Fat.*

Le coup. L'écriture.  
Le tonnerre. La lecture.  
*Carré.*  
*Carré.*  
Le trou. La fente.  
*Rond.*  
*Ronde.*  
Le nid. Maigre.  
*Salé,*  
*Salée.*  
*Gras.*  
*Grasse.*

*Does it rain? It rains.*  
*When. The clap of thunder.*  
Do you feel the north wind?  
I feel it.  
Are you afraid of claps of thunder?  
*Now, at present. From here.*

*Pleut-il? Il pleut.*  
*Quand. Le coup de tonnerre.*  
Sentez-vous le vent du nord?  
Je le sens.  
Avez-vous peur des coups de tonnerre?  
*À présent. D'ici.*

18 20 8 12 8 8 8 12 14 8 22 12 18 6 19 23 15 7 1 6 1  
pou-voir, sen-tir, sen-tant, sen-ti, ins-tant, suite, coup, é-crit-ture, ton-nerre, car-ré, car-  
ré, fente, rond, ronde, maigre, sa-lé, sa-lée, gras, grasse, pleut, kand, pré-sent

Do you smell from here the flowers of your garden?	Sentez-vous d'ici les fleurs de votre jardin?
Do the children feel the cold?	Les enfants sentent-ils le froid?
They feel it and I feel it also.	Ils le sentent et je le sens aussi.
Near. Near the church.	Près, au près (de bef. n.). Près de l'église.

2. *Près* is accidentally near, *auprès*, permanently near.

Do you see that lady near the fountain?	Voyez-vous cette dame près de la fon- taine?
The large tree is near the fountain.	Le grand arbre est auprès de la fon- taine.
I give the horse some water.	Je donne de l'eau au cheval.
I give the horse some blows with your whip.	Je donne au cheval des coups de votre fouet (Lesson 26, 6).

1. Est-ce que vous laissez cet enfant tout seul? 2. L'oiseau est-il dans son nid? 3. Il y est. 4. Les rats font des trous au plancher. 5. Voulez-vous du bœuf salé? 6. J'en veux. 7. Veux-tu du bœuf gras ou du maigre? 8. J'en veux du maigre. 9. Pleut-il à présent? 10. Il ne pleut pas. 11. Est-ce que je confie trop d'argent à cet homme? 12. Vous lui en confiez trop. 13. Quand pensez-vous partir? 14. Je pense partir ce soir. 15. Avez-vous l'encrier carré et le rond? 16. Je n'ai que le carré. 17. Cette écriture est bien vieille. 18. Aimez-vous la lecture? 19. Je l'aime beaucoup. 20. Pourquoi cet homme riche est-il triste; n'a-t-il pas des amis et de l'argent? 21. Votre ami part à l'instant. 22. Je lui ai parlé. 23. Il a reçu votre lettre, et il va partir tout de suite, or à l'instant.

1. Do you feel the cold? 2. We feel it much. 3. Does the grocer feel the cold? 4. Yes, every body feels it. 5. Do you confide your secrets to your friend? 6. I confide them to him. 7. Do you buy the fine thread? 8. I buy the fine thread and the coarse. 9. When do you intend to depart? 10. I intend to depart forthwith. 11. Have you an apothecary's shop? 12. I have one on Water-street. 13. Do you go out when it rains? 14. I never go out when it rains. 15. Does it rain now? 16. It does not rain. 17. Where does the bird make his nest? 18. He makes it in that hole. 19. Do you wish for some salt fish or some fresh? 20. I wish for some salt. 21. Is the garden square or round? 22. It is square. 23. Who has made a chink in the door? 24. Some one has made a chink in the door, and a hole in the floor.



25. Do you wish for some fat beef and some lean? 26. I wish only for some lean, and that officer wishes only for some fat. 27. Dost thou fear the clap of thunder? 28. I fear it. 29. Dost thou depart instantly? 30. I depart instantly, and the Frenchman intends to depart to-morrow. 31. Art thou going any where? 32. I am going nowhere, but the traveler is going every where. 33. Do you speak French easily? 34. No, sir, I speak French, but not easily. 35. Is not that writing beautiful? 36. It is very beautiful. 37. Do you like reading? 38. I like it much. 39. Has the master given you blows? 40. No, he has given blows to that bad boy (*sujet*). 41. Dost thou smell those flowers from here? 42. I smell them. 43. Of what dogs are you afraid? 44. I am afraid of those of which you speak. 45. I take away that of which you are afraid.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. George, have you nothing to do? 2. Yes, sir, I have to do my exercise. 3. Well, why have you not done it? 4. Because I have no pen. 5. But where is your new pen? 6. I am looking for it, but I do not find it. 7. You do not take care of your pens. 8. I always put my pens in my portfolio, and some one takes (*prend*) them. 9. I doubt of it, because you do not take care of your things (*affaires*). 10. Have you some ink? 11. I have still a little, but not much. 12. I am going to give you another pen, and some ink, if you have need of them. 13. Where is your copy-book? I wish to see (*voir*) your writing. 14. Your copy-book is dirty; why do you not take care of your books? 15. Your brothers take care of theirs. 16. What is Peter (*Pierre*) doing? 17. He is studying his French lesson (*leçon de français*). 18. Peter is a very good child; he loves reading, and he takes good care of his books. 19. You do not hold your pen well; that is why (*c'est pourquoi*) you write (*écrivez*) so badly. 20. Now you can (*pouvez*) go out. Good morning (*bonjour*).

## 43.—QUARANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

## NOUNS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

<i>To see, seeing, seen.</i>			<i>Voir, voyant, vu, e (fem.).</i>		
<i>Je vois,</i>	<i>tu vois,</i>	<i>il voit,</i>	<i>nous voyons,</i>	<i>vous voyez,</i>	<i>ils voient,</i>
I see,	thou seest,	he sees,	we see,	you see,	they see.

---

31 37 123 20 10 30 12 21 20 12 6 27  
voir, vo-yant, voia, voit, vo-yons, vo-yez, voient.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The road.	The week.	Le chemin.	La semaine.
The drawer.	The rain.	Le tiroir.	La pluie.
A piece, bit.	In a moment, presently.	Un morceau.	Tout à l'heure.
Good fortune.	The skin.	Le bonheur.	La peau.
Bad fortune.	The sight.	Le malheur.	La vue.
The storm.	Wide, broad.	L'orage.	Large.
The forehead.	Bald.	Le front.	Chauve.
Bitter.		Amer.	Amère.
Narrow, tight.		Étroit.	Étroite.
High.		Haut.	Haute.
Thick.		Épais.	Épaisse.
The eye.	The eyes.	L'œil (sing.).	Les yeux (plur.).
That paper is thick.		Ce papier est épais.	
That plank is thick.		Cette planche est épaisse.	
That man's forehead is high.		Cet homme a le front haut.	
His skin is white.		Il a la peau blanche. (Less. 33, 2.)	
His sight is bad.		Il a la vue mauvaise.	
Your eyes are blue.		Vous avez les yeux bleus.	
This road is wide, and that one is narrow.		Ce chemin-ci est large, et celui-là est étroit.	
What do you put in that drawer?		Que mettez-vous dans ce tiroir?	
I put some pieces of cloth there.		J'y mets des morceaux de drap.	
Do you see the storm coming?		Voyez-vous venir l'orage?	
I see it.		Je le vois.	
The dog sees the birds, and the birds see the dog.		Le chien voit les oiseaux, et les oiseaux voient le chien.	
Have you some more fruit?		Avez-vous encore du fruit?	
I have some more.		J'en ai encore.	
Some more. No more.		Encore (de). Ne plus (de).	

1. *Encore* meaning *some more*, is not used with a negative. *Encore* and *plus* take *de* before the following noun.

He has some more money.	Il a encore de l'argent.
He has no more money.	Il n'a plus d'argent.
We have some more.	Nous en avons encore.
We have no more.	Nous n'en avons plus.

*To have the goodness, or kindness.* *Avoir la bonté.*

2. *Avoir la bonté* and other verbal expressions formed of *avoir* and a noun, take *de* before the following infinitive.

1. Cet homme a beaucoup de bonheur et peu de malheur. 2. Le médecin ne va-t-il pas faire une opération à ce malade? 3. Si,

14 7 12 30 22 13 16 17 18 1 11 15 11 17 1 11 23  
 che-min, se-maine, ti-roir, pluie, mor-ceau, tou-ta-l'heure, bon-heur, peau, mal-heur, vue,  
 16 1 1 21 17 1 7 1 7 20 2 20 17 17 2 7 9 13 9  
 o-rage, lar-ge, fron-t, chau-ve, a-mer, a-mère, é-troit, é-troite, haut, haute, é-pais, œil, yeux,  
 8 16 21 4  
 en-core, bon-té.

il compte la faire cette semaine. 4. Cet homme est chauve ; il a le front haut et large ; il a aussi la vue mauvaise. 5. Quels chiens ce garçon a-t-il ? 6. Il a ceux dont vous avez peur. 7. Quel homme voyez-vous ? 8. Nous voyons celui dont vous parlez. 9. Ce vin n'est-il pas amer ? 10. Il est bien amer. 11. Avez-vous mis les morceaux de papier dans votre tiroir ? 12. Je les y ai mis. 13. Quelles vaches avez-vous achetées ? 14. Nous avons acheté celles dont ce garçon a soin. 15. Voyez-vous ce dont le cheval a peur ? 16. Nous le voyons. 17. Votre frère a la bonté de venir souvent chez moi. 18. Il a toujours soin de bien étudier sa leçon. 19. Vois-tu la fleur dont je parle ? 20. Je la vois. 21. Avez-vous vu ma belle-sœur ? 22. Je l'ai vue.

1. Dost thou see the lady of whom we speak ? 2. I see the one of whom you speak, and those of whom your friend speaks also. 3. What birds do you see ? 4. We see those of which you have care. 5. Have you seen our beautiful flowers ? 6. I have not seen them. 7. Whom dost thou see ? 8. I see him of whose courage you doubt. 9. Do you go out at night all alone ? 10. I never go out alone ; I go out with my father and with my brother. 11. When do you go home ? 12. I go there forthwith. 13. Do you give that ox some blows with a whip (*de fouet*) ? 14. I give him some. 15. I admire the writing and the reading of that scholar. 16. This road is broad and that one is narrow. 17. I have not been to my friend's this week, but I intend to go there forthwith. 18. Some one has put a piece of cake in my drawer.

19. Have you had much bad fortune ? 20. No, sir, I have had much good fortune. 21. The ox has the skin thicker (*plus épaisse*) than the sheep. 22. Do those birds see the storm coming ? 23. They see it. 24. Is not that apple bitter ? 25. Yes, it is very bitter. 26. Is not that coat too tight ? 27. It is very tight, but these pantaloons are wide. 28. That man's forehead is high ; are not his eyes blue ? 29. His forehead is high and he is bald, but his eyes are black. 30. Have you some more wine ? 31. I have no more. 32. Our neighbor has the goodness to send us fruit and flowers. 33. Do you intend to depart this week ? 34. I intend to depart forthwith. 35. Do you wish for a piece of roast beef ? 36. Yes, sir, if you please.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Does your aunt intend to depart to-morrow for New Orleans (*pour la Nouvelle Orléans*)? 2. No, madam, she only intends to depart next (*prochaine*) week. 3. Does she always live at your house? 4. Yes, madam, she lives there, but she is not at home to-day; she is in the country, at the house of her sister. 5. When does she intend to return (*revenir*)? 6. To-morrow, madam. 7. I wish to see her to-day. 8. Do you often go to see your aunt who lives in the country? 9. I go there sometimes.
10. What is the matter with that little girl? 11. She is blind. 12. Poor child, how (*que*) I pity her! 13. It is a thick film (*taie*) which she has on the eyes; our physician says (*dit*) that he can (*peut*) take it away; he intends to perform (*faire*) the operation (*opération*) for her this week. 14. If it is only a film, the physician can restore her sight (to her the sight). 15. Do you speak of the general's good fortune? 16. I speak of his bad fortune. 17. What do you take away? 18. I take away that of which the child is afraid.

## 44.—QUARANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*To shut. To bring.**Fermer. Apporter.*

Do you shut the door?

Fermez-vous la porte?

I shut it.

Je la ferme.

The servant brings some good fruit.

Le domestique apporte de bon fruit.

1. THE IMPERATIVE MOOD of all French verbs, with very few exceptions, which will be given hereafter, has the first and second persons plural the same as those of the indicative present, and the second person singular the same as the first person singular of the indicative present, all omitting the subject. Thus:

Come (thou). <i>Viens.</i>	Shut (thou). <i>Ferme.</i>	Bring (thou). <i>Apporte.</i>
Let us come. <i>Venons.</i>	Let us shut. <i>Fermons.</i>	Let us bring. <i>Apportons.</i>
Come (you). <i>Venez.</i>	Shut (you). <i>Fermez.</i>	Bring (you). <i>Apportez.</i>
Come (thou) here. Come (you) here.	<i>Viens ici. Venez ici.</i>	
Go to the neighbor's.	<i>Allez chez le voisin.</i>	
Let us go to the neighbor's.	<i>Allons chez le voisin.</i>	
Shut the door.	<i>Ferme la porte, or, Fermez la porte.</i>	
Bring the book.	<i>Apporte le livre, or, Apportez le livre.</i>	
Shut the window. Shut it.	<i>Fermez la fenêtre. Fermez-la.</i>	

2. These persons of the imperative, when affirmative, take after the verb, and join to it by a hyphen, all those pronouns which usually come before the verb; the direct always preceding the indirect, *y* and *en* coming after the other pronouns.

Give him the bread.

Donnez (or donne)-lui le pain.

Give it to him.

Donne (or donnez)-le lui.

Let us give her some bread.

Donnons-lui du pain.

7 6 1 16 6 1 16 1 16 21 1 16 6 7 6  
fer-mer, ap-por-ter, ap-porte, ap-por-ton, ap-por-tes, ferme, fer-me.

Let us give her some.	Donnons-lui-en.
Give some to them.	Donnez-leur-en.
Let us give them the napkins.	Donnons-leur les serviettes.
Give them to us.	Donnez-les-nous.

8. With negative imperatives, the pronouns are placed, as usual, before the verb.

Do not carry them to him.	Ne les lui porte pas.
Let us not carry any to them.	Ne leur en portons pas.
Do not carry them there.	Ne les y portez pas.
Let us not carry any there.	N'y en portons pas.
Send them to the village.	Envoyez-les au village.
Send them there.	Envoyez (or envoie)-les-y.
Send some there.	Envoyez (or envoie)-y-en.

4. The second person singular imperative, if ending with a vowel, takes an *s* when followed by *y* or *en*, as in this last phrase.

Send some to thy father.	Envoies-en à ton père.
5. With affirmative imperatives <i>me</i> and <i>te</i> become <i>moi</i> and <i>toi</i> , and are placed after <i>y</i> .	
Bring me thy book.	Apporte-moi ton livre.
Take me there.	Menez-y-moi.
Make thyself a soldier.	Fais-toi soldat.
Lend me your pen.	Prêtez-moi votre plume.
Lend it to me.	Prêtez-la-moi.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The arm.	A box.	Le bras.	Une boîte.
The noise.	A person.	Le bruit.	Une personne.
The return.	A rule.	Le retour.	Une règle.
The honor.	Arithmetic.	L'honneur.	L'arithmétique.
Long.		Long.	Longue.
Happy, fortunate.		Heureux, fortuné.	Heureuse, fortunée.
Unhappy, unfortunate.		Malheureux, infortuné.	Malheureuse, infortunée.
A hair. To kindle, to light.		Un cheveu.	Allumer.
The hair. Yesterday, the day before yesterday.		Les cheveux.	Hier, avant-hier.
Day after to-morrow.		Après-demain.	

1. Allumez la chandelle. 2. Allumons la lampe. 3. Qui allume le feu? 4. Le domestique l'allume. 5. Allumez-vous la lampe? 6. Non, monsieur, j'allume la chandelle. 7. Allons à l'église. 8. Allez à l'école. 9. Apportez-moi la boîte d'ivoire. 10. Cet homme a le bras long et le pied grand; il a aussi les che-

1 20 22 12 7 15 4 18 7 16 11 1 12 6 12 21 21 9  
bras, boîte, bruit, per-sonne, re-tour, rè-gle, hon-neur, a-rit-h-mé-ti-que, long, longue, heu-  
10 9 9 15 22 6 10 22 6 1 9 9 9 14 16 22 6 13 22  
reux, heu-reux, for-tu-né, for-tu-né, mal-heu-reux, mal-heu-reux, in-for-tu-né, in-for-tu-  
6 4 10 4 10 1 22 6 12 7 1 8 12 7 1 6 14  
né, che-veu, che-veux, al-lu-mer, hier, avant-hier, a-près-de-main.

veux noirs. 11. Sentez-vous la pluie? 12. Je sens la pluie et l'air frais. 13. Cette demoiselle n'est-elle pas heureuse? 14. Elle est heureuse parce qu'elle est très-bonne, et son frère est malheureux parce qu'il est très-méchant. 15. Allez à votre chambre. 16. Allez-y tout à l'heure. 17. Demeurez-vous près d'ici? 18. Je demeure dans la rue Charles. 19. Donnez-moi cette boîte d'ivoire. 20. Qu'est-ce qui fait tant de bruit? 21. Le vent le fait. 22. Cet étranger est une personne d'esprit. 23. Je compte aller chez vous à mon retour de la ville. 24. Savez-vous les règles d'arithmétique? 25. Je les sais bien.

1. Shut the door. 2. Bring me thy copy-book. 3. Give me the butter. 4. Bring me the bread. 5. Bring it to me. 6. Give the master thy pen. 7. Give it to him. 8. Give the young lady the flowers. 9. Give them to her. 10. Bring the scholars their pens. 11. Bring them to them. 12. Carry the ladies the gloves. 13. Carry them to them. 14. Come here. 15. Let us look for our books. 16. Let us go to school. 17. Do not speak to that boy. 18. Do not speak to him. 19. Do not give those men the fruit. 20. Do not give it to them. 21. Do not bring it to me. 22. Is that road narrow? 23. That road is narrow, and this one is broad. 24. I saw your uncle yesterday, and I saw the general day before yesterday.

25. Will you please to give me a piece of cake? 26. Have you some more fruit? 27. I have no more. 28. That lady's arms are very white, her hair is black, and her eyes blue. 29. Put your papers in this box. 30. Do the children make that noise? 31. Yes, sir, they make much noise. 32. I am acquainted with that lady; she is a person of wit. 33. I saw your brother yesterday on (a) my return from the country, and I saw your father day before yesterday. 34. What are you studying? 35. I am studying the rules of arithmetic. 36. Has not the general much good fortune? 37. He has much good fortune and the captain has much bad fortune. 38. When did you see the general? 39. I saw him yesterday, and I saw the captain the day before yesterday. 40. I intend to go to your house day after to-morrow.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you not feel the rain? 2. Yes, sir, it rains already much. 3. I am going to look for my books which are under the

tree. 4. I am going with you. 5. Are you not cold? 6. No, I am neither warm nor cold; the wind is a little fresh, but it is not cold. 7. I like to hear the claps of thunder when I have nothing to do, but I do not like them too near. 8. Are you afraid of them? 9. I am not afraid of them. 10. My books are already a little wet; I am going to put them before the fire. 11. Who is in the house with John? 12. George is there. 13. I am going to see him. 14. Why? 15. Because I have his knife, and I wish to return it to him. 16. You need not go (*d'aller*) to the house for that; they are coming here in a moment. 17. Well, I remain here. 18. Have (*ayez*) the goodness to put my books on the table. 19. I am going to put them before the fire if you wish it. 20. I thank you; but they are not very wet. 21. Well, I am going to put them in the sun.

22. Lend me a pen. 23. I have none. 24. Who has one? 25. No one here; all the pens are in that room, and Mr. R. has the key. 26. Have you not a pencil? 27. I have none, but George has one. 28. I am going for it (*le chercher*).

## 45.—QUARANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## N'EST-CE PAS, PERSONNE, ETC.

To drink, drinking, drunk.

Boire, buvant, bu, e.

<i>Je bois,</i>	<i>tu bois,</i>	<i>il boit,</i>	<i>nous buvons,</i>	<i>vous buvez,</i>	<i>ils boivent,</i>
I drink,	thou drinkest,	he drinks,	we drink,	you drink,	they drink.

To translate.

Traduire (varied as Conduire, Les. 34).

To wait for, expect, expecting, expected.

Attendre, attendant, attendu, e.

To lose, losing, lost.

Perdre, perdant, perdu, e.

To hear, hearing, heard.

Entendre, entendant, entendu, e.

1. These last three verbs follow the model of the fourth conjugation, Lesson 34. When the infinitive only of a verb is given hereafter, it is to be understood that it follows the regular model of its conjugation.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The salt.	A line.	Le sel.	Une ligne.
A ribbon.	Easy.	Un ruban.	Facile.
Next (approaching).		Prochain.	Prochaine.
A month.	Geography.	Un mois.	La géographie.
Long (in time).	Some time.	Longtemps.	Quelques temps.
Difficult. Is it not? does it not? etc.		Difficile.	N'est-ce pas?

2. *N'est-ce pas*, at the end of an affirmation, like *is it not*, *does it not*, etc., in English, makes it interrogative.

This geography lesson is difficult, is it not? Cette leçon de géographie est difficile, n'est-ce pas?

boire, bu-vant, bois, boit, bu-vons, bu-vez, boivent, tra-duire, at-tendre, at-ten-dant, at-ten-du, per-dra, per-dant, per-du, en-tendre, en-ten-dant, en-ten-du, sel, ligne, ru-ban, fa-cile, pro-chain, pro-chainé, mois, gé-o-gra-phié, long-temps, n'est-ce pas.

That man drinks much wine; does he not?	Cet homme boit beaucoup de vin, n'est-ce pas?
You are waiting for the return of your relations; are you not?	Vous attendez le retour de vos parents, n'est-ce pas?
Those scholars do not translate French well; do they?	Ces écoliers ne traduisent pas bien le français, n'est-ce pas?
I hear the noise of the thunder.	J'entends le bruit du tonnerre.
To return. To have returned, to be back.	Revenir. Être de retour.
Our neighbor has returned home.	Notre voisin est de retour chez lui.
Perfectly. Intimately.	Parfaitement. Intimement.
On it, there on. Under it, there under.	Dessus. Dessous.
To recite. He recites well.	Réciter. Il récite bien.
Next year.	L'an prochain. L'année prochaine.
That. He says that it rains.	Que (conj.). Il dit qu'il pleut.

3. We have seen (Lesson 32) that *personne* without a verb, or with *ne* before the verb, means *nobody*. With a verb and without *ne*, it means *any body, any one*. It is always masculine singular. Without *ne*, and with an article or demonstrative adjective, however, it is a feminine noun, and means *person* (Lesson 44).

Does <i>any one</i> desire to do that?	<i>Personne</i> désire-t-il faire cela?
<i>Nobody</i> desires to do it.	<i>Personne ne</i> désire le faire.
<i>This person</i> desires to do it.	<i>Cette personne</i> désire le faire.

4. *No one*, in a general sense equivalent to *nobody*, is *personne*; meaning not one of a number referred to, is *aucun*.

I know <i>no one</i> here.	Je ne connais <i>personne</i> ici.
I know <i>no one</i> of those gentlemen.	Je ne connais <i>aucun</i> de ces messieurs.
I have none of your books.	Je n'ai <i>aucun</i> de vos livres.
I have translated that whole page.	J'ai traduit cette page entière.

1. Voyez-vous les lignes sur ce papier? 2. Je les vois. 3. Perdez-vous vos parapluies? 4. Je les perds souvent. 5. Buvez-vous de ce vin-ci ou de celui-là? 6. Nous buvons de celui-ci et notre ami boit de celui-là. 7. Nous étudions les règles de l'arithmétique. 8. Je doute de l'honneur de cet homme. 9. Qui attendez-vous? 10. J'attends la cuisinière, et la cuisinière attend la servante. 11. Traduisez ce livre français. 12. Traduisez-le. 13. Étudie ta géographie. 14. Cette dame a les yeux bleus et la peau très-blanche. 15. Sait-il, lui, que je désire le voir? 16. Combien de mois font un an (une année)? 17. Douze mois font une année (un an). 18. Le français connaît intimement votre frère. 19. Apportez-moi le sel. Donnez-moi le ruban. 20. Votre leçon est-elle facile? 21. Elle est bien facile. 22. Restez-vous ici longtemps? 23. Non, monsieur, je pars après-demain. 24. Combien de lignes récitez-vous bien? 25. Je

4 23 4 18 1 7 3 14 13 3 4 22 4 18 5 13 6 3 1 6  
 4 17 24  
 re-venir, re-tour, par-faite-ment, in-time-ment, des-sus, des-sous, ré-ci-ter, an, an-née,  
 ke, au-cun.



récite parfaitement bien une page entière. 26. Mettez-vous votre chapeau sur la table ou dessous? 27. Je ne le mets ni dessus ni dessous. 28. Votre frère compte-t-il revenir tout de suite? 29. Il est de retour à présent.

1. Do you drink tea or coffee? 2. I drink coffee and my sisters drink tea. 3. I know the doctor, and I know that he is a man of wit. 4. Are you waiting for any one? 5. I am waiting for the return of my brother. 6. Your brother has returned. 7. Do you sometimes lose your money? 8. I never lose it. 9. Do you hear what I say? 10. I hear it perfectly. 11. How many lines do those scholars translate? 12. They translate all the lines of that page. 13. I know that that man is intimately acquainted with your father. 14. Does your brother return home often? 15. He returns very often. 16. He has returned now. 17. Are the lessons easy or difficult? 18. Our lessons are difficult, but the one of that lazy little one is very easy.

19. Have you bought the blue ribbons? 20. I have bought them. 21. Have you recited your lesson well? 22. I recited it perfectly well. 23. Did you translate all the lines of that page? 24. I translated them all. 25. I intend to go out in a moment. 26. Give me the salt. 27. Bring me the ribbons. Show them to me. 28. Do not show them to him. 29. Do you depart next week or next month? 30. I depart day after to-morrow. 31. Is your hat on the bench or under it? 32. It is neither on it nor under it; it is here on the table. 33. Give me thy book. 34. Lend me your knife. 35. Let us drink the coffee. 36. Bring me that box. Bring it to me. 37. Carry it to her. 38. Do not carry it to them. 39. Give it to us. 40. Let us take the potatoes to the cellar. 41. Let us take some there. 42. Let us go to the church. 43. Let us go there. 44. Has any one my book? 45. No one has it. 46. You know my father; do you not? 47. I know no one of your relations.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you know any one of those gentlemen? 2. No, sir, my brother knows many persons (*monde*) here, but I know nobody and nobody knows me. 3. Who takes you to school? 4. Nobody; I go there alone. 5. Are you acquainted with none of the pupils? 6. Yes, I know them all. 7. Charles, lend me thy slate. 8. Yes, certainly; where is thine? 9. It is full of writing. 10. Well, wash it. 11. No, my friend. 12. Why not? 13. Because it is the

writing of my brother, and he has need of it. 14. Well, mine is there on the bench. 15. Hast thou need of a slate-pencil (*crayon d'ardoise*)? 16. Thank you, I have one. 17. Show me the lesson in (*de*) arithmetic. 18. What have we to do? 19. We have this rule to study. 20. That is not very difficult. 21. What art thou studying? 22. I am studying my lesson in geography, and I am going to study my lesson in reading.

23. Which of all thy lessons dost thou like the best (*le mieux*), John? 24. That of geography. 25. Because that lesson is less difficult than the others; is it not? 26. Yes, Charles; dost thou know any pupil who likes difficult lessons? 27. No, my little friend; children are a little lazy; but thou hast not to study only that which is easy. 28. No, I know it, I wish to study all; but I do not like what is too difficult. 29. Is thy father still in the country? 30. No, he has returned.

## 46.—QUARANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

### NEGATIVE WITH THE INFINITIVE, ETC.

<i>To read, reading, read.</i>			<i>Lire, lisant, lu, e (fem.).</i>		
<i>Je lis,</i>	<i>tu lis,</i>	<i>il lit,</i>	<i>nous lisons,</i>	<i>vous lisez,</i>	<i>ils lisent,</i>
<i>I read,</i>	<i>thou readest,</i>	<i>he reads,</i>	<i>we read,</i>	<i>you read,</i>	<i>they read.</i>
<i>To write, writing, written.</i>			<i>Écrire, écrivant, écrit.</i>		
<i>J'écris,</i>	<i>tu écris,</i>	<i>il écrit,</i>	<i>nous écrivons,</i>	<i>vous écrivez,</i>	<i>ils écrivent,</i>
<i>I write,</i>	<i>thou writest,</i>	<i>he writes,</i>	<i>we write,</i>	<i>you write,</i>	<i>they write.</i>
<i>To say, saying, said.</i>			<i>Dire, disant, dit.</i>		
<i>Je dis,</i>	<i>tu dis,</i>	<i>il dit,</i>	<i>nous disons,</i>	<i>vous dites,</i>	<i>ils disent,</i>
<i>I say,</i>	<i>thou sayest,</i>	<i>he says,</i>	<i>we say,</i>	<i>you say,</i>	<i>they say.</i>

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The <i>credit</i> . The tongue, language.	Le <i>crédit</i> .	La <i>langue</i> .
The <i>profit</i> . To be worth.	Le <i>profit</i> .	Être riche de.
To <i>sell</i> . He sells wine.	<i>Vendre</i> . Il vend du vin.	
The <i>tool</i> . Then.	L' <i>outil</i> . Alors, donc.	
That man is worth a hundred thousand dollars.	Cet homme est riche de cent mille dollars.	

1. *Then*, an adverb of time, is *alors* ; *then*, a conjunction of inference, is *done*.

I was at your house this morning, and J'ai été chez vous ce matin, et alors  
then I saw your brother. j'ai vu votre frère.

**My father is sick.                      Mon père est malade.**

*Then* he does not go out at present.      *Donc* il ne sort pas à présent.

*To have the appearance of, to look.*      *Avoir l'air (de).*

lire, il-zant, lia, lià, li-zone, li-zes, lizant, é-crise, é-cri-vant, é-crià, é-cris, é-cri-vona, é-cri-  
v-a, é-cri-vant, é-cri-zant, dià, dia, di-zone, di-zes, dizant, crò-dià, languex, pro-dià, riche,  
vendre, ou-til, a-lora, donc, air.

You look in good *health*.  
 She looks in good *humor*.  
 He looks in bad *humor*.  
 That lady looks proud.

Vous avez l'air d'être en bonne *santé*.  
 Elle a l'air de bonne *humeur*.  
 Il a l'air de mauvaise *humeur*.  
 Cette dame a l'air fier.

2. When an adjective following *avoir l'air* merely expresses *physical* qualifications, it is made to agree with the subject; but when applied to a *moral* faculty or *metaphysical* distinction, it most generally agrees with the word *air*. See page 439, 20.

That apple looks good.  
 That lady looks good.  
 That lady looks badly formed.

Cette pomme a l'air *bonne*.  
 Cette dame a l'air *bon*.  
 Cette dame a l'air *mal faite*.

3. We have seen (Lesson 20, 7) that one verb following another, and expressing its object, is put in the infinitive. This is often the case when the verbs in English are joined by a conjunction.

Come and read. Go and write.  
 Come and tell me thy name.

Venez lire. Allez écrire.  
 Viens me dire ton nom.

4. When a negative belongs particularly to the infinitive present, both parts (*ne rien, ne pas*, etc.) are placed before the verb.

They like to do nothing.  
 I wish not to write.  
 He takes good care not to go to school.

Ils aiment à ne rien faire.  
 Je désire ne pas écrire.  
 Il a bien soin de ne pas aller à l'école.

5. *A* is to be repeated before every infinitive depending on the same word or phrase.

I have something to study and recite. J'ai quelque chose à étudier et à réciter.  
 We like to read, write, and study. Nous aimons à lire, à écrire et à étudier.

1. Cet épicier a-t-il du crédit? 2. Il a du crédit et du profit.  
 3. Combien de langues le maître parle-t-il? 4. Il parle parfaitement l'anglais, le français et l'espagnol. 5. Ces marchandes ont l'air bien gai. 6. Elles ont même l'air distingué, mais leurs marchandises ont l'air bien mauvaises. 7. Que vends-tu? 8. Je ne vends rien, mais cet ouvrier vend ses outils. 9. Savez-vous ce que dit cette femme? 10. Elle dit que son fils sait parfaitement le français. 11. Je connais intimement son fils, et je dis qu'il sait parfaitement le français et l'espagnol. 12. Il est riche de soixante mille dollars. 13. Lis-tu ce livre français? 14. Je ne le lis pas, mais mon frère le lit et mes sœurs le lisent aussi. 15. Écris-tu beaucoup de lettres? 16. J'en écris beaucoup. 17. Dites-vous qu'il pleut? 18. Je dis qu'il pleut. 19. Vous avez l'air d'être malade; êtes-vous en bonne santé? 20. Je suis un peu malade. 21. Pourquoi cet élève a-t-il l'air de mauvaise humeur? 22. Parce qu'il trouve sa leçon un peu difficile. 23. Quand avez-vous écrit vos lettres? 24. Je les ai écrites avant hier.

1. What languages do you speak? 2. I speak English and French. 3. Which language do you like the best (*le mieux*)? 4.

It is the English. 5. Has that merchant profit? 6. He has neither profit nor credit. 7. Is he not rich? 8. Yes, sir, he is worth two hundred thousand dollars. 9. What is that workman selling? 10. He is selling his tools. 11. Do you read the letters which we write? 12. We read them. 13. Do the scholars write letters to their friends? 14. They write some to them. 15. What do you say? 16. We say that it rains. 17. Do those children tell you their names? 18. They tell them to us. 19. Tell me where is your father? 20. He is at home. 21. May (*mai*) is the fifth month of the year; is it not? 22. It is the fifth. 23. That man loses his money.

24. Do you hear the noise of the wind? 25. Yes, sir, and I hear the noise of the rain also. 26. That musician translates Spanish easily. 27. Does the doctor dwell near here (*près d'ici*)? 28. No, sir, he dwells near the market. 29. That scholar is a little lazy. 30. Then she does not like to study. 31. Do you read all that the master writes? 32. I read it all. 33. Has that old lady read the letters of her daughter? 34. Yes, sir, she received them this morning, and then she read them. 35. Have those children told you their names? 36. They have not told them to me. 37. Does any one know the name of that stranger? 38. No one knows it. 39. Have you read any one of these books? 40. I have read none. 41. Do you intend to remain long in this village? 42. No, sir, I depart forthwith; but my brother intends to remain here some time. 43. That scholar likes to do nothing. 44. Go and look for your copy-book. 45. Come and show me your writing.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you see that young lady who is going to Madame B.'s? 2. Yes, I see her. 3. Who is she? are you acquainted with her? 4. She is the sister of Charles; I see her sometimes at church. 5. She lives near our house, and she comes to see my mother frequently. 6. What is her name? 7. Her name is Mary (*Marie*); do you wish to make her acquaintance (*sa connaissance*)? 8. With much pleasure. 9. Well, one evening of this week I am going to take you to see her. 10. I thank you much.

11. George (*Georges*), what hast thou in that bag? 12. They are apples, sir; will you have one? 13. No, thank you; but where didst thou find so (*de si*) beautiful apples? 14. At the house of our grocer, where my father sends me to buy some sometimes. 15. They are superb; I am going to buy some also. 16. Where does

your grocer live? 17. On Royal-street, near the market; if you are not acquainted with the place, I am going to conduct you there. 18. Hast thou the time to (*de*) go there? 19. O, yes, I have nothing to do. 20. Thank thee, my friend, thou art very good.

21. The scholars recite their lessons perfectly to-day; they are not lazy. 22. Generally (*généralement*) you do not stay here long; do you intend to depart the day after to-morrow? 23. I intend to depart next month. 24. Do you always put your umbrella on the table? 25. I do not put it on it, I put it under it. 26. Why does the Spaniard look in ill humor? 27. Because he is not in good health.

## 47.—QUARANTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## FUTURE TENSE.

1. THE FUTURE of French verbs is formed from the infinitive by the following general rule: Change *e* final of the *first* and *second* conjugations, *oir* of the *third*, and *re* of the *fourth*, into the terminations,

RAI,      RAS,      RA,      RONS,      REZ,      RONT.

FIRST CONJUGATION. *AIMER*, TO LOVE.

*J'aimerai, tu aimeras, il aimera, nous aimerons, vous aimerez, ils aimeront,*  
I shall love, thou wilt love, he will love, we shall love, you will love, they will love.

SECOND CONJUGATION. *FINIR*, TO FINISH.

*Je finirai, tu finiras, il finira, nous finirons, vous finirez, ils finiront,*  
I shall finish, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

THIRD CONJUGATION. *RECEVOIR*, TO RECEIVE.

*Je recevrai, tu recevras, il recevra, nous recevrons, vous recevrez, ils recevront,*  
I shall receive, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

FOURTH CONJUGATION. *RENDRE*, TO RESTORE.

*Je rendrai, tu rendras, il rendra, nous rendrons, vous rendrez, ils rendront,*  
I shall give back, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

2. *AVOIR*, to have, and *ÊTRE*, to be, have the future irregular.

*J'aurai, tu auras, il aura, nous aurons, vous aurez, ils auront,*  
I shall have, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.  
*Je serai, tu seras, il sera, nous serons, vous serez, ils seront,*  
I shall be, thou wilt be, he will be, we shall be, you will be, they will be.

There are a few other verbs (fourteen) whose futures vary slightly from the above rule. These will be noted hereafter.

Will the scholars love the master?	Les écoliers aimeront-ils le maître?
They will love him.	Ils l'aimeront.
When will you finish your exercises?	Quand finirez-vous vos thèmes?
We shall finish them this evening.	Nous les finirons ce soir.
Will thou receive thy letters to-morrow?	Recevras-tu tes lettres demain?

7. 6 1 1 71 6 21 12 18 4 4 4 2 6 16 6 6  
aimerai, ras, ra, rons, res, ront, fi-ni-rai, re-cev-rai, ren-drai, au-rai, se-rai.

I shall receive them day after to-morrow.	Je les recevrai après-demain.
The gentleman will give back to you your money.	Monsieur vous rendra votre argent.
I shall be at your house to-morrow.	Je serai chez vous demain.
We shall have our money next week.	Nous aurons notre argent la semaine prochaine.

3. After adverbs of time, where the English employ other tenses for the future, the French employ the future; but after *si* conditional, they use the present.

When I <i>have</i> my money I shall be rich.	Quand j' <i>aurai</i> mon argent je serai riche.
When we <i>have</i> time we will write.	Quand nous <i>aurons</i> le temps nous écri- rons.

He will read when he <i>has</i> books.	Il <i>lira</i> quand il <i>aura</i> des livres.
If I <i>see</i> him I will speak to him.	Si je le <i>vois</i> je lui parlerai.

In all the above verbs the meaning is future, and in French the future is used in all except the one following *si*, if.

4. *Si*, meaning *whether*, is followed in such cases by the future.

I do not know whether he <i>sets out</i> to-morrow.	Je ne sais s'il <i>partira</i> demain.
Do you know whether we <i>recite</i> this evening?	Savez-vous si nous <i>réciterons</i> ce soir?

5. A future event, which is near, is sometimes expressed, in French as in English, by the present.

He arrives this evening.	Il arrive ce soir.
He departs to-morrow.	Il part demain.

1. Aimeras-tu tes leçons? 2. Je les aimerai toutes. 3. Aimerez-vous vos amis? 4. Nous les aimerons. 5. Sortiras-tu ce matin? 6. Non, mon ami, je sortirai ce soir. 7. Les enfants sortiront-ils ce soir? 8. Ils ne sortiront pas aujourd'hui. 9. Quand recevrez-vous votre argent? 10. Nous le recevrons le mois prochain. 11. Les négociants recevront-ils le leur demain? 12. Oui, monsieur, et le capitaine recevra le sien après-demain. 13. Où mettez-vous vos mouchoirs? 14. Je les mettrai dans ce tiroir. 15. Où les ouvriers mettront-ils leurs outils? 16. Ils les mettront sur le banc. 17. Nous mettrons nos livres sur le pupitre; où mettras-tu les tiens? 18. Je les mettrai dans mon tiroir. 19. Aurez-vous beaucoup d'argent demain? 20. Je n'en aurai pas beaucoup. 21. Quand les écoliers auront-ils leurs livres? 22. Ils les auront tout à l'heure. 23. Vos amis seront-ils ici demain? 24. Ils seront ici aujourd'hui. 25. Serez-vous chez vous ce soir? 26. J'y serai et mon frère y sera aussi. 27. Quand je serai à New York, je vous écrirai. 28. Si je reste à Boston, je vous le dirai.

1. When will you have your money? 2. I shall have it the day after to-morrow. 3. When wilt thou be in New York? 4. I shall be there next month. 5. When shall we have some fruit? 6. We shall have some next week. 7. Where will the general be next month? 8. He will be in the city. 9. Where will his sons be then? 10. They will be there also. 11. My father will have his money the day after to-morrow; will you have yours then also? 12. I shall not have mine this year. 13. That trader has no money. 14. Then he will have neither profit nor credit. 15. Will your brother go out this evening? 16. No, sir, he will remain at home. 17. When will your relations receive your letters? 18. They will receive them next week. 19. Will you put on your cloak? 20. I shall put it on if I am cold.

21. What does that lazy scholar like to do? 22. She likes to do nothing. 23. Will not the cook be pleased when she has that large fish? 24. She will be much pleased. 25. Where will you be to-morrow? 26. I shall be at school. 27. Will you have your money when we have ours? 28. I do not know when you will have yours; but we shall have ours day after to-morrow. 29. Then you will have yours very soon (*bientôt*). 30. Where is George? 31. Is he not in the yard? 32. No, no one of the boys is there. 33. John is there. 34. No, no one is there. 35. They are in the house. 36. Well, I am going there. 37. Have you bought the countryman's horses? 38. I have not bought them yet, but I shall buy them to-morrow.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Will you give back to John this knife, and bring me my book which is on my table? 2. I wish to write my exercises, I forget them sometimes; do you never forget yours? 3. No, never. 4. Does your brother ever forget his? 5. Yes, sometimes, but not often. 6. George, pick up your books and put them on the table. 7. If you know your lesson, come and recite it. 8. I know mine, but my brother does not yet know his. 9. Well, come and recite yours; how many lines do you know? 10. I know a page. 11. Well, very well, you are not lazy to-day. 12. Give me the book. 13. I have it not. 14. Where is it? 15. Charles has it. 16. Go and look for it. 17. Charles, give me my book; I am going to recite my lesson. 18. Lend it to me still a little. 19. I have need of it; Mr. A. wishes for it. 20. Well, take (*prenez*) it.

21. Well, George, hast thou thy book? 22. Yes, sir. 23. Give it to me and show me the lesson. 24. It is this one. 25.

Very well, recite it. 26. Thou knowest it perfectly; go (*va*) and write thy exercise. 27. Let (*laissez*) me carry this book to Charles, if you please. 28. Yes, carry it to him; but has he not his? 29. No, sir, his is at home. 30. Tell him that he will soon (*bientôt*) recite his lesson. 31. Permit (*permettez*) me to go for (*d'aller chercher*) some water. 32. Yes, if you wish for some. 33. Let John go (*venir*) with me, if you please. 34. Yes, go, but do not stay long. 35. We will be back soon.

## 48.—QUARANTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

**IRREGULAR FUTURES. DE BEFORE THE INFINITIVE.**

1. *Aller*, to go, and *envoyer*, to send, have the future irregular.

<i>J'irai,</i>	<i>tu iras,</i>	<i>il ira,</i>	<i>nous irons,</i>	<i>vous irez,</i>	<i>ils iront,</i>
I shall go,	thou wilt go,	he will go,	we shall go,	you will go,	they will go.
<i>J'envoierai,</i>	<i>tu enverras,</i>	<i>il enverra,</i>	<i>nous enverrons,</i>	<i>vous enverrez,</i>	<i>ils enverront,</i>
I shall send,	thou wilt, etc.,	he will, etc.,	we shall, etc.,	you will, etc.,	they will, etc.

Will you go to the city to-morrow?      Irez-vous à la ville demain ?  
 I shall go there.      J'irai.

2. Y is always omitted before the future and conditional of *aller* for euphony.

My brother will go there also.	Mon frère ira aussi.
We shall not go there.	Nous n'irons pas.
Wilt thou send me ten dollars?	M'enverras-tu dix dollars?
I will send them to thee.	Je te les enverrai.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The power.	The health.	Le pouvoir.	La santé.
The taste.	Good humor.	Le goût.	La bonne humeur.
The minister.	Ill humor.	Le ministre.	La mauvaise humeur.
A kingdom.	The company.	Un royaume.	La compagnie.
Latin.		Latin.	Latine.
Greek.		Grec.	Grecque.
The cheese.	To taste of.	Le fromage.	Avoir le goût de.

The cheese. To taste of.      Le fromage. Avoir le goût de.  
To beat, beating, beaten.      Battre, battant, battu, &c.

8. *Battre* is varied in the present like *mettre* (Lesson 80).

<i>To take, taking, taken.</i>			<i>Prendre, prenant, pris, &amp;c.</i>		
<i>Je prends,</i>	<i>tu prends,</i>	<i>il prend,</i>	<i>nous prenons,</i>	<i>vous prenez,</i>	<i>ils prennent,</i>
<i>I take,</i>	<i>thou takest,</i>	<i>he takes,</i>	<i>we take,</i>	<i>you take,</i>	<i>they take.</i>

*To recognize. To learn. Reconnaître. Apprendre (à def. inf.).*

4. *Reconnaître* and *apprendre*, compounds of *connaître* and *prendre*, are varied like them. Compounds generally follow the form of their simples.

<sup>12 6 8 7 6 15 16 8 6 22 11 12 12 20 12 17 11 1 12</sup>  
 i-rai, en-ver-rai, pou-voir, san-té, goût, hu-meur, mi-nistre, ro-yaume, com-pa-gnie,  
 la-tin, la-tine, grec, grecke, ro-mage, battre, bat-tant, bat-tu, prendre, pre-nant, pris, *prende*,  
<sup>3 4 4 21 4 16 7 1 2</sup>  
 prend, pre-nons, pre-nez, pre-nnent, re-con-naître, ap-prendre.



*To comprehend.**Will it rain?* It will rain.*Several.* Several men.

That soup tastes good.

It tastes of pepper.

Who beats the little boy?

The workmen beat him because he  
takes their tools.

What do you learn?

I learn to read the Latin language.

Do you recognize your old friend?

I recognize him.

*Comprendre* (compounded of *prendre*).*Pleuvra-t-il?* Il pleuvra.*Plusieurs.* Plusieurs hommes.

Cette soupe a bon goût.

Elle a un goût de poivre.

Qui bat le petit garçon?

Les ouvriers le battent parce qu'il  
prend leurs outils.

Qu'apprenez-vous?

J'apprends à lire la langue latine.

Reconnaissez-vous votre vieil ami?

Je le reconnais.

5. We have seen (Lesson 41) that some verbs and phrases require *à* before a following infinitive, and that others require no preposition. There are some verbs and phrases also which require *de*. *Dire* and *oublier*, already given, take *de* before the following infinitive. Such words will be marked, as they are given hereafter, by the abbreviation (*de bef. inf.*)

He tells me to do that.

Il me dit *de* faire cela.

He forgets to read the letter.

Il oublie *de* lire la lettre.

1. Où iras-tu? 2. J'irai à la rivière, et mes frères iront chez eux. 3. Cette homme a l'air de mauvaise humeur; est-il malade? 4. Non, monsieur, il est en bonne santé. 5. Que prenez-vous? 6. Je prends mes livres. 7. Apprenez-vous à lire la langue latine? 8. J'apprends à lire la langue latine et la grecque. 9. Le ministre n'a ni crédit ni profit. 10. Où irez-vous demain? 11. J'irai à la campagne. 12. Apprenez-vous à lire la langue espagnole? 13. J'apprends à la lire et à l'écrire. 14. Apprends-tu la langue grecque? 15. Je l'apprends. 16. Le ministre a-t-il du pouvoir? 17. Il n'a ni pouvoir ni argent. 18. Est-ce que vous battez ce chien? 19. Je le bats. 20. Pleuvra-t-il aujourd'hui? 21. Je crois qu'il ne pleuvra pas. 22. Combien de royaumes l'Europe comprend-elle? 23. Elle en comprend plusieurs. 24. Le président reçoit de la compagnie à la maison blanche ce soir. 25. Cet épicier a-t-il de bon fromage? 26. Il n'a ni fromage ni beurre. 27. Reconnaissez-vous cet homme? 28. Oui, c'est le ministre de la reine. 29. La France est un royaume riche et bien beau. 30. Le général recevra de la compagnie demain.

1. Will your brother go to school to-morrow? 2. No, sir, he will go to the city. 3. Will you not go there also? 4. No, sir, I shall go to my uncle's. 5. Will you send some money to that man? 6. We shall send some to him. 7. Who will send these letters to

the general? 8. His friends will send them to him. 9. The minister of the queen is not in good health. 10. This coffee tastes good; but that cake tastes of pepper. 11. What does your brother learn? 12. He learns Latin and Greek. 13. Does that cheese taste good? 14. No, sir, it tastes of pepper. 15. Has the minister power? 16. He has much power; he has also money; he is worth sixty thousand dollars.

17. Dost thou beat the dog? 18. I beat him. 19. Does the countryman beat his horse? 20. He beats him. 21. What do those children beat? 22. They beat the ugly cat. 23. Do you ever beat that child? 24. I never beat him. 25. Do you take what I give you? 26. I take it. 27. What do those scholars take? 28. They take their slates and books. 29. Why do you take your hats? 30. We take them because we are going home. 31. Does that child comprehend what he reads? 32. He comprehends it perfectly. 33. Do you comprehend that history? 34. I comprehend it. 35. Why does that little boy look in ill humor? 36. Because he does not comprehend what he studies. 37. Europe comprehends several large kingdoms. 38. Dost thou recognize thy friend? 39. I recognize him. 40. We shall receive company to-morrow. 41. Do you recognize your writing? 42. I recognize it.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. John, come with me. 2. Where are you going? 3. I am going to the grocer's for (*chercher*) some sugar. 4. I will go there with you; but let us not stay long. 5. No, I do not wish to stay there. 6. Have you a bag? 7. I have two. 8. Give me one. 9. Take this one. 10. What will you put in this bag? 11. I will put some sugar in that one and some coffee in the other. 12. To what grocer's are you going? 13. We will go to Mr. B.'s; he has a large store. 14. Do you sometimes go to his house? 15. Yes; I go there often; my father sends me there when he has need of something. 16. I never see you go there. 17. I often go there in the morning.

18. Good morning (*bonjour*), Mr. B., my father sends me for some sugar and some coffee. 19. Well, my friend, give me thy bags. 20. How much sugar dost thou wish for? 21. Fill the bag. 22. What sugar does thy father wish for? 23. Some white sugar. 24. And how much coffee? 25. Put ten pounds in this bag. 26. Dost thou not wish for some cheese or some butter to-day? 27. No, sir, we have some still at our house. 28. I have some good

on, corps, va-peur, nou-vel, de-voir, vite, cha-cun, cha-cune, sec, sèche, bas, basse, bien,  
dé-pense, tort, don-leur, peine, au-trui.

<i>The face.</i>	<i>Le visage.</i>	<i>La figure.</i>
<i>Precious.</i>	<i>Précieux.</i>	<i>Précieuse.</i>
<i>Swollen, swelled.</i>	<i>Enflé.</i>	<i>Enflée.</i>
From street to street. <i>The figure.</i>	De rue en rue. <i>La taille.</i>	
<i>To undertake.</i>	<i>Entreprendre</i> (comp. of <i>prendre</i> ).	

7. Which, referring to place, and following a preposition, is commonly rendered by *où*.

The village <i>in which</i> you dwell.	Le village <i>où</i> vous demeurez.
The city <i>from which</i> you come.	La ville <i>d'où</i> vous venez.
The place <i>to which</i> you go.	Le lieu <i>où</i> vous allez.
The street <i>by which</i> you will go.	La rue <i>par où</i> vous irez.
What do you undertake?	Qu'est-ce que vous entreprenez?
I undertake a great work.	J'entreprends un grand ouvrage.
I desire to do good to others.	Je désire faire du bien à autrui (or aux autres).

1. On dit que votre frère est malade. 2. On trouve beaucoup d'or ici. 3. On fait beaucoup de beurre dans ce village. 4. Cet homme vit aux dépens d'autrui. 5. Nous voulons faire du bien à autrui (aux autres). 6. Cet enfant a le visage sale. 7. Cet animal a le corps long, il a aussi le pied enflé. 8. La santé est un bien très-précieux. 9. Ce voyageur entreprend-il quelque chose? 10. Il entreprend un long voyage. 11. Qu'est-ce que vous entreprenez? 12. Nous entreprenons un grand ouvrage. 13. L'avez-vous entrepris seuls? 14. Nous ne l'avons pas entrepris seuls. 15. Qu'entreprennent ces messieurs? 16. Ils n'entreprennent rien. 17. Ce monsieur vous a-t-il fait du bien? 18. Non, monsieur, il m'a fait du tort. 19. Ce monsieur est trop gros; sa taille n'est pas belle. 20. Je vois la vapeur de ce bateau. 21. Cet homme vit de pain sec. 22. Ce banc est bas et cette chaise est basse aussi. 23. Avez-vous fait votre devoir? 24. Je l'ai fait. 25. Écrivez-vous vite? 26. Je n'écris pas très-vite. 27. J'ai acheté un chapeau neuf, et mon père m'a acheté des bottes neuves. 28. J'ai vu le nouvel ouvrage du docteur Jean. 29. Ce malade a le cou enflé, il a beaucoup de douleur.

1. What do they make in your village? 2. They make hats there. 3. That man is said to be rich. 4. Do you believe all that they tell you? 5. I do not believe all. 6. Are those cravats dry? 7. They are dry. 8. The gardener has some new fruit. 9. What have you new? 10. I have some new books. 11. Do you desire to do your duty? 12. Yes, sir, each one desires to do his duty.

13. I have some new horses; have you seen them? 14. I have seen them. 15. I shall always desire to do my duty. 16. What do they do at your house? 17. They read and study much there. 18. Have you seen the doctor's new works? 19. I have not seen them. 20. Are the streets dry? 21. They are very dry.

22. Is the river high or low? 23. It is very low. 24. Do you see the vapor on the river? 25. I see it. 26. This chair is low, and that bench is low also. 27. Does each one sometimes forget his duties? 28. Each one forgets them sometimes. 29. Do you live at the expense of others? 30. I live at the expense of my father. 31. Do you wish evil to any one? 32. Do you wish to do harm to any one? 33. I wish to do evil to no one; I wish to do good to every body. 34. What is the matter with you? 35. My face and my neck are inflamed. 36. Take good care of your health, for (*car*) it is very precious. 37. Does not that young girl read fast? 38. She reads too fast. 39. That lady's figure is very beautiful. 40. Have you learned your lesson? 41. I have not learned it yet, but I shall learn it this evening.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Which way are you going? 2. I am going by (*par*) the lake. 3. Come this way, sir. 4. Go that way, my friend. 5. Are you acquainted with Dr. B.? 6. Yes, sir; he is a good old man whom misfortune has made wise. 7. What is the matter with you? you look sick. 8. I am not sick, but in bad humor. 9. But why? 10. I need to (*de*) go out, and it is going to rain. 11. It will not rain much. 12. It rains already, and I had the fever last week. 13. It is unfortunate; but why have you to go out? 14. I have some money to give to Mr. Richard, and he has need of it to-day. 15. You have no need to (*de*) go out for (*pour*) that. 16. I shall go to his house this morning, and if you wish it, I am going to carry it to him. 17. Thank you; you do (*rendez*) me a great service. 18. It is no great thing (*grand'chose*). 19. It is a service which you render me, and for which I thank you much.

20. Were you long sick? 21. No, I had the fever only two days; but my physician tells me not to (*de*) go out when it rains. 22. He is right; if you do not take care of your health, you will be sick again. 23. I intend to stay in (*à*) the house during (*pendant*) a few days. 24. Have you had news from your brother lately (*dernièrement*)? 25. I had some last week; he is at New York. 26. When does he intend to return? 27. Next week.

28. Charles, lend me a cord, if you please. 29. What will you do with it? 30. I will go and put it on the garden-door. 31.

Take this which is on this plank, if it is good. 32. Thank you; I am going to put it on the door. 33. Have you seen John? 34. Yes, sir; he is in the garden. 35. Tell him to come here, and send me your hammer and a few big nails.

## 50.—CINQUANTIÈME LEÇON.

## IMPERFECT TENSE.

1. The imperfect tense is formed from the present participle, by changing *ANT* into the following terminations:

	AIS,	AIS,	AIT,	IONS,	IEZ,	AIENT.
<i>Parlant,</i> speaking.	{	<i>Je parlais,</i>		<i>il parlait,</i>		<i>vous parliez,</i>
		I was speaking,		he was speaking,		you were speaking,
		<i>tu parlais,</i>		<i>nous parlions,</i>		<i>ils parlaient,</i>
		thou wast speaking,		we were speaking		they were speaking.
<i>Recevant,</i> receiving.	{	<i>Je recevais,</i>		<i>il recevait,</i>		<i>vous receviez,</i>
		I was receiving,		he was receiving,		you were receiving,
		<i>tu recevais,</i>		<i>nous recevions,</i>		<i>ils recevaient,</i>
		thou wast receiving,		we were receiving,		they were receiving.

2. *Avoir* and *savoir*, the only exceptions, have the imperfect thus:

<i>J'avais,</i>	<i>tu avais,</i>	<i>il avait,</i>	<i>nous avions,</i>	<i>vous aviez,</i>	<i>ils avaient,</i>
I had,	thou hadst,	he had,	we had,	you had,	they had.
<i>Je savais,</i>	<i>tu savais,</i>	<i>il savait,</i>	<i>nous savions,</i>	<i>vous saviez,</i>	<i>ils savaient,</i>
I knew,	thou knewest,	he knew,	we knew,	you knew,	they knew.

3. This tense always denotes continuous past action. When, therefore, any thing is spoken of as once done and finished, without denoting continuance, this tense is not to be used.

*Cicero* was a great orator

*Cicéron était* un grand orateur.

Washington was a great man.

Washington *était* un grand homme.

We had much fruit when we lived in the country.

Nous *avons* beaucoup de fruit quand nous *demeurions* à la campagne.

I was looking for my penknife and I found my pencil.

Je *cherchais* mon canif et j'*ai trouvé* mon crayon.

We here see that where *continuous past action* is implied, the imperfect is used.\* So the following.

You were reading (continuous) while

Vous *lisiez* pendant que j'*écrivais*.

I was writing (continuous).

They were (continuous) here when we saw (not continuous) them.

Ils *étaient* ici quand nous les *avons vus*.

He had (continuous) the horses when I bought (not continuous) them.

Il *avait* les chevaux quand je les ai *achetés*.

\* Washington continued to be a great man, Cicero continued to be a great orator, but the finding of the pencil denotes no continuance; it is therefore not in the imperfect, but in the past indefinite.

- She was (continuous) at your house when I heard (not continuous) her sing. *Elle était chez vous quand je l'ai entendue chanter.*

The fog. The season.

A barber. A task.

During. While.

To play. A spot.

While I was playing.

As good bread, as good flour.

As good as. As rich as.

To weep. To mount, go up, ascend.

To laugh (at), laughing, laughed.

*Je ris, tu ris, il rit,*

I laugh, thou laughest, he laughs,

Do you laugh at that?

I laugh at it.

During this month.

Have you money still?

I have no more.

# MASCULINE

Le brouillard.

Un barbier.

Pendant.

Jouer.

Pendant que je jouais.

D'aussi bon pain, d'aussi bonne farine.

Aussi bon que. Aussi riche que.

Pleurer. Monter.

Rire (de), riant, ri (irregular).

*nous rions, vous riez, ils rient,*

we laugh, you laugh, they laugh.

Riez-vous de cela?

J'en ris.

Pendant ce mois.

Avez-vous encore (toujours) de l'argent?

Je n'en ai plus.

# FEMININE

La saison.

Une tâche.

Pendant que.

Une tache.

1. Étais-tu à Paris quand mon frère y était? 2. Je n'y étais pas. 3. Tu travaillais pendant que je jouais. 4. Ils jouaient pendant que vous étudiez. 5. Jouez-vous beaucoup? 6. Je joue quelquefois, mais non pas beaucoup. 7. Pleurez-vous quelquefois? 8. Je ne pleure pas souvent. 9. Ne riez-vous pas pendant que nous pleurons? 10. Nous ne rions pas. 11. Que faisiez-vous ce matin pendant que je lisais? 12. J'écrivais une lettre. 13. Cet homme avait-il beaucoup d'amis quand il était jeune? 14. Il en avait beaucoup. 15. Où alliez-vous ce matin quand je vous ai vu dans la rue? 16. J'allais chez mon oncle. 17. Votre frère voulait-il ses livres quand il était à la campagne? 18. Il les voulait. 19. Écoutez-vous l'orateur hier pendant qu'il parlait? 20. Nous l'écoutions, et nos frères l'écoutaient aussi. 21. Pourquoi avez-vous ri de cet homme? 22. Parce qu'il n'a pas de chapeau. 23. Montez-vous souvent dans votre chambre? 24. J'y monte souvent. 25. Avez-vous fini votre tâche? 26. Je l'ai finie. 27. Le brouillard est épais ce matin. 28. Le barbier va à la ville, où il restera toute la saison. 29. Avez-vous dans votre magasin d'aussi belle farine que celle-ci? 30. J'en ai de meilleure.

<sup>18</sup> brouill-lard, <sup>1</sup> sai-son, <sup>7</sup> bar-bier, <sup>21</sup> tâche, <sup>12</sup> pen-dant, <sup>5</sup> jou-er, <sup>18</sup> tache, <sup>1</sup> pleu-rer, <sup>9</sup> mon-ter, <sup>21</sup> rir, <sup>18</sup> ri-ant, <sup>12</sup> ris, <sup>1</sup> ri-ent, <sup>7</sup> ri-ent, <sup>12</sup> ri-ent.

1. Wast thou studying when the master spoke to thee? 2. I was studying my French lesson. 3. To whom were you speaking this morning when the boy gave you your letters? 4. We were speaking to our cousins. 5. Have you looked for your pens? 6. We were looking for them when the master spoke to us. 7. Were your brothers coming here when we saw them this morning? 8. No, they were going to the river. 9. What wast thou doing when thy father spoke to thee? 10. I was holding the horses of my brother. 11. Will not your father laugh if he sees that work? 12. He will laugh. 13. Will you not weep if you lose your money? 14. I shall not weep. 15. Will you go up to your room when the barber is here? 16. I shall go up to it. 17. Have you already finished your task? 18. I have not yet finished it.

19. Is your task easy? 20. It is very easy. 21. What is that scholar doing? 22. He is making spots on his book. 23. Were you playing when you received my letter? 24. I was not playing, I was reading the newspaper. 25. You will stay here during all the week; will you not? 26. I shall stay here during all the season. 27. Have you as good butter as this? 28. I have some better. 29. What made those spots on your paper? 30. That little boy made them. 31. Is it foggy (*fait-il du brouillard*)? 32. Yes, sir, the fog is very thick. 33. Were you listening while the orator was speaking? 34. I was listening. 35. Which season do you like? 36. I like all the seasons. 37. Will you go to the north before the beautiful season? 38. I shall not go there this year. 39. Had you much money when you bought that horse? 40. I had not much

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you seen Joseph this morning? 2. Yes, sir, he is coming. 3. I am going into the garden, if you have no need of me. 4. No, go there, if that pleases you; have you done any thing in the garden this morning? 5. I have done nothing there yet; I am going to work there. 6. If you find some beautiful roses there, bring me a few. 7. I saw some roses and some jonquils, and I am going to bring you some. 8. Had you many friends when you lived in (à) Paris? 9. We had many. 10. What wast thou doing this morning while we were playing? 11. I was studying my lesson. 12. Were you not reading while we were studying? 13. No, we were writing our exercises. 14. Have those scholars finished their tasks? 15. They have finished them. 16. What has made those black spots on those white stockings? 17. That little child made



them with ink. 18. Has not that workman labored much? 19. He has labored during the whole night. 20. Have you seen my new house? 21. I have not seen it, but I have been told that it is large and beautiful.

## 51.—CINQUANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

NOUNS COMPOUNDED WITH *A* AND *DE*.

1. When an infinitive depending on a verb has a personal pronoun for its object, the pronoun is generally placed before the infinitive; but sometimes it is placed before the first verb.

I wish to do it.	Je désire le faire.
He comes for me.	Il vient me chercher ( <i>or old style, Il me vient chercher</i> ).
He likes to do it.	Il aime à le faire ( <i>not, Il l'aime à faire</i> ).

2. Past participles are not varied to agree with *en*, it being an indirect object.

I give you these flowers.	Je vous donne ces fleurs.
I did not give any to my sister.	Je n'en ai pas donné à ma sœur.
I gave some to my cousin.	J'en ai donné à ma cousine.

3. When two nouns joined by a preposition form a compound, *à* is used to denote its moving power and purpose, *de* the material and sphere of use.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
A boat.	A coffee-cup.	Un bateau.	Une tasse à café.
A steamboat.	A tobacco-box.	Un bateau à vapeur.	Une boîte à tabac.
A mustardpot.	A schoolmistress.	Un pot à moutarde.	Une maîtresse d'école.
A bookseller.	A gold button.	Un marchand de livres.	Une bouton d'or.*
The steam-mills.	The coffee-cups.	Les moulins à vapeur.	Les tasses à café.
To pain, to ache, to hurt.		Faire mal.	
My finger pains me.		Le doigt me fait mal.	
His neck pains him.		Le cou lui fait mal.	
You hurt me.		Vous me faites mal.	
You hurt my foot.		Vous me faites mal au pied.	
He does me harm (an injury).		Il me fait du mal.	
To have a pain in, to be sore.		Avoir mal à.	
I have a pain in my finger, or a sore finger.		J'ai mal au doigt.	
He has a headache.		Il a mal à la tête.	
He has a violent headache.		Il a un violent mal de tête.	
Without. Without a hat.		Sans. Sans chapeau.	

4. *Sans* is not followed by the indefinite article, unless it be emphatic.

Without a coat.	Without a friend.	Sans habit.	Sans ami.
-----------------	-------------------	-------------	-----------

\* Such compounds, we have seen (Lesson 18), form the plural by changing the first noun.

*One's self, itself. For, in order to. Soi. Pour.*  
 For one's self. In order to do one's duty. *Pour soi. Pour faire son devoir.*

5. Pronouns referring to masculine and feminine nouns collectively, must be masculine plural.

Are your brother and sister sick? *Votre frère et votre sœur sont-ils malades?*

They are sick. *Ils sont malades.*

*To like better. To prefer. Aimer mieux. Préférer.*

I like tea better than coffee. *J'aime mieux le thé que le café.*

I prefer tea to coffee. *Je préfère le thé au café.*

6. *Meilleur* is an adjective, and qualifies a noun; *mieux* is an adverb, and generally modifies a verb.

This man is better than that. *Cet homme-ci est meilleur que celui-là.*

This man does better than that. *Cet homme-ci fait mieux que celui-là.*

*Better. Better than. Mieux. Mieux que.*

*Less. Less than. Moins (de bef. n.). Moins que.*

*So much. So much that. Tant (de bef. n.). Tant que.*

*So many. So many that. Autant (de bef. n.). Autant que.*

*As much. As much as.*

*As many. As many as.*

*Sufficient, sufficiently, enough. Assez (de bef. n.), SUFFISAMMENT (de bef. n.).*

1. Cet homme a assez de courage. 2. Il a suffisamment de bien pour vivre. 3. Ce marchand-ci n'a pas autant de profit que celui-là. 4. Ce marchand de livres a tant de biens qu'il sera toujours riche. 5. Cette dame est moins jolie que sa sœur. 6. Mon père a moins de fortune que mon oncle. 7. Aimez-vous mieux le thé que le café? 8. Non, j'aime autant le café que le thé, mais mon frère préfère le café. 9. Le visage vous fait-il mal? 10. Il me fait mal. 11. Qu'avez-vous? 12. J'ai mal au cou. 13. Qu'a cet homme? 14. Il a mal à la tête, et le pied lui fait mal. 15. Vous avez l'œil enflé, n'y avez-vous pas mal? 16. J'y ai mal. 17. Votre ami aime-t-il mieux le thé que le café? 18. Non, madame, il préfère le café au thé. 19. Ces bateaux à vapeur vont-il sur le lac? 20. Celui-ci va sur le lac et celui-là sur la rivière. 21. Qu'est-ce que la maîtresse d'école a acheté? 22. Elle a acheté des tasses à café, des pots à beurre et un pot à moutarde. 23. Votre père et votre mère sont-ils ici? 24. Non, ils sont à la maison.

1. Do you undertake that work without money? 2. We do not

undertake it without money. 3. What is the matter with you? 4. My finger is sore, and my foot pains me. 5. Is not your neck swollen? 6. It is swollen, and I have a pain in it. 7. Have they given you some fruit? 8. They have given me some. 9. Does each one live for himself? 10. No, no one lives for himself. 11. Have you bought the beautiful coffee-cups? 12. I have bought them. 13. Where will you go to-morrow? 14. I shall go in a steamboat on the river. 15. What does that countryman buy? 16. He buys some coffee-cups, some butter-plates, and a tobacco-box. 17. Are you acquainted with that man? 18. Yes, sir, he is a bookseller of our city, and that lady is a schoolmistress.

19. Have you a sore finger? 20. No, sir, it is my hand that (*à la main que*) is sore. 21. Your mouth looks swollen; have you a pain in it? 22. I have a pain in it. 23. Do you like the French better than the Spanish? 24. No, sir, I like the Spanish as much as the French. 25. Is that man as rich as the bookseller? 26. Yes, sir, he has so much money that he never counts it. 27. Was your brother here when you saw him? 28. No, sir, he has not been here yet, but he will be here to-morrow. 29. Why was your little sister weeping when we saw her the day before yesterday? 30. She wept because she had the headache. 31. Do you sometimes have the headache? 32. No, but I had the headache often last year. 33. Have you sufficient sugar? 34. I have sufficient. 35. Where will you be to-morrow? 36. I shall be at home.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. John, go into the yard; your father wants you. 2. Have you the hammer? 3. No, I have not seen it. 4. See if it is not in the box. 5. Yes, I have it. 6. Well, take a few big nails, and carry them to your father. 7. How many nails does he wish for? 8. He does not wish for many. 9. I am going to carry him the box. 10. No, leave the box; he wishes only a few; take them in your hand. 11. Shall you be in the yard? 12. No, I shall not be there; I have some work to do in the garden. 13. Well, I am going to carry the nails, and I will go into the garden also. 14. Come, if your father does not want you. 15. Will you be here? 16. Yes, you will have no trouble to (*peine à*) find me, I shall not be far off (*loin*). 17. Does my father wish for the hammer also? 18. Yes, carry him the hammer and the nails. 19. I comprehend.

20. Let us go and see Peter (*Pierre*). 21. Well, is he at home? 22. Yes, he is there. 23. Go for (*chercher*) your hat. 24. Come with me into the house. 25. No, I am going to stay here. 26.

Well, wait for me. 27. Do not stay long. 28. Have you your hat? 29. Yes; come, let us go (*allons partons*).

## 52.—CINQUANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

USE OF *C'EST*, PLACE OF ADVERBS, ETC.

1. We have seen (Lesson 30) that *ce* is used instead of *il*, *elle*, *ils*, *elles*, before *être*, when the predicate characterizes the subject, and is not an adjective merely with the verb. The following illustrate more fully this rule when the predicate contains a noun, a pronoun, an adverb, an article with an adjective, or a verb.

It is my book. It is your pen.	<i>C'est mon livre. C'est votre plume.</i>
They are the books.	<i>Ce sont les livres.</i>
It is he. It is she.	<i>C'est lui. C'est elle.</i>
It is they.	<i>Ce sont eux, ce sont elles.</i>
It is to-day. It is the first.	<i>C'est aujourd'hui. C'est le premier.</i>
It is to make a good use of one's fortune to employ it in good works.	<i>C'est faire un bon usage de sa fortune que de l'employer en bonnes œuvres.</i>

2. With an adjective alone in the predicate, *ce* is not used.

He is good. She is good.	<i>Il est bon. Elle est bonne.</i>
He is a good brother.	<i>C'est un bon frère.</i>
She is a good mother.	<i>C'est une bonne mère.</i>

3. *Il* *est*, referring to a preceding proposition, is *c'est*; referring to one following, is *il est*.

He has lost his book; it is a pity.	<i>Il a perdu son livre; c'est dommage.</i>
It is a pity that he has lost his friend.	<i>Il est dommage pour lui d'avoir perdu son ami.</i>
It is disagreeable to be always alone.	<i>Il est désagréable d'être toujours seul.</i>
Yes, you are right, it is very disagreeable.	<i>Oui, vous avez raison, c'est très-désagréable.</i>

4. When the pronoun referring to a proposition just stated is the object of a transitive verb or a preposition, it may be rendered by *cela* or *le*.

That man is rich; do you know it?	<i>Cet homme est riche; savez-vous cela (or le savez-vous)?</i>
-----------------------------------	---

5. *Soi*, used of persons, must refer only to a vague antecedent, as *on*, *chacun*, etc., except when perspicuity requires.

People love to speak of themselves.	<i>On aime à parler de soi.</i>
A benefaction carries with it its reward.	<i>Un bienfait porte sa récompense avec soi.</i>
When that young man does a pleasure to his father he works for himself.	<i>Quand ce jeune homme fait un plaisir à son père, il travaille pour soi.*</i>

\* In these last two sentences, the antecedents of *soi* are definite; but in the former, the reference is not to a person, and in the latter, the use of *soi* instead of *lui* avoids an ambiguity.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
A benefit, benefaction.	A recompense.	Un bienfait.	Une récompense.
That drunkard.	Drunk, tipsy.	Cet ivrogne.	Ivre, gris.
An accident.	Useful.	Un accident.	Utile.
The juice, gravy.	Study.	Le jus.	L'étude.
True.		Vrai.	Vraie.
Gay.		Gai.	Gaie.
Subject.		Sujet.	Sujette.
False, counterfeit.		Faux.	Fausse.
Displeased, discontented.		Mécontent.	Mécontente.

6. The futures of *venir* and *tenir* are irregular.

*Je viendrai, tu viendras, il viendra, nous viendrons, vous viendrez, ils viendront,*  
I shall come, thou wilt come, he will come, we shall come, you will come, they will come.  
*Je tiendrai, tu tiendras, il tiendra, nous tiendrons, vous tiendrez, ils tiendront,*  
I shall hold, thou wilt hold, he will hold, we shall hold, you will hold, they will hold.

7. Again, with a verb, is often expressed by the prefix *re* in French; as,

*To make again. To take again. Refaire. Reprendre.*  
*To come again. I shall return. Renvoyer. Je reviendrai.*  
*We will hold those horses. Nous tiendrons ces chevaux.*  
*He will come again (return) to-morrow. Il reviendra demain.*

8. After *as* and *than*, *I, thou, he, they*, are rendered *moi, toi, lui, eux, elles*.

*More than I. More than thou. Plus que moi. Plus que toi.*  
*More than he. More than she. Plus que lui. Plus qu'elle.*  
*As much as we. As much as you. Autant que nous. Autant que vous.*  
*As much as they. Autant qu'eux. Autant qu'elles.*

1. Viendrez-vous ici demain ? 2. J'y viendrai ce soir, et mes amis y viendront aussi. 3. Tiendrez-vous les chevaux ? 4. Non, nous tiendrons les livres, et les domestiques tiendront les chevaux. 5. Cet homme est-il plus riche que moi ? 6. Non, il est moins riche que toi. 7. Suis-je aussi grand que votre frère ? 8. Vous êtes plus grand que lui ; mais il apprend plus vite que vous. 9. Mon cousin lit plus que moi, mais j'étudie plus que lui. 10. Aimez-vous mieux le vin que l'eau ? 11. Nous aimons mieux l'eau que le vin. 12. Ta cousine lit-elle mieux que toi ? 13. Non, monsieur, je lis mieux qu'elle. 14. Est-ce que je travaille moins que mon cousin ? 15. Vous travaillez plus que lui, et il travaille plus que moi. 16. Ce monsieur n'est-il pas le monsieur que vous cherchez ? 17. C'est lui. 18. Ces enfants ne sont-ils pas vos cousins ? 19. Si, ce sont eux. 20. La vache est un animal plus utile que le chien. 21. Voulez-

<sup>12</sup> 15 <sup>13</sup> 12 1 12 8 22 13 23 6 23 7 7 6 6 23 8 23 5  
17 17 8 21 6 21 8 13 6 17 14 6 4 7 3 3 4 6 12  
faux, fausse, mé-con-tent, mé-con-tente, vien-drai, tien-drai, re-faire, re-prendre, reve-nir,  
re-vien-drai.

vous du jus sur votre bœuf rôti? 22. Oui, monsieur, s'il vous plaît. 23. Cet homme est un ivrogne, il est ivre à présent. 24. Notre vie est sujette à beaucoup d'accidents.

1. Dost thou work as much as I? 2. I work more than thou. 3. Does thy brother study less than thy sister? 4. He studies less than she, and she reads less than he. 5. Do you speak more than your sisters? 6. I speak less than they. 7. Do your sisters speak less than your brothers? 8. They speak more than they. 9. That young lady looks gay. 10. This bank-bill looks counterfeit. 11. That man's face is red; has he not drunk too much? 12. Yes, sir, he is a drunkard; he is drunk now. 13. Do you wish for some more of the gravy on your roast meat? 14. No, sir, I have enough. 15. That man is tipsy; is he not? 16. Yes, sir, he is a drunkard who is always drunk. 17. Are we not subject to many accidents? 18. Yes, sir, we are always subject to accidents.

19. Do you know the great accident? 20. Yes, sir, it is very deplorable (*déplorable*). 21. Why is that stranger discontented? 22. He is discontented because he has no money. 23. Will you come here to-morrow? 24. I will come here to-morrow morning (*demain matin*). 25. Wilt thou come to my house? 26. Yes, and my friend will come also. 27. Will you hold the horses? 28. I will hold them. 29. They say that you intend to depart to-morrow; is it true? 30. It is true. 31. It is said that Mr. A. is sick; is it true? 32. No, it is not true; he is in good health. 33. Your brother is here; do you know it? 34. I know it. 35. Has that peach much juice? 36. Yes, sir, it is full of juice. 37. Do you like study? 38. I like it much. 39. Does one confer (*répandez-vous*) benefits without a recompense? 40. No, sir; a benefit always carries its recompense with it. 41. Is not that young lady gay? 42. She is gay. 43. That little boy loves study, and he is very useful to his relations; do you know that? 44. I know it.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. I bought a penknife this morning. 2. Show it to me. 3. Tell me what you think of it. 4. It is very pretty; where did you buy it? 5. At Mr. D.'s; he has some very pretty knives. 6. I wish to buy a penknife also; mine is broken; but I wish for one bigger than yours. 7. Buy a knife and a penknife. 8. No, I do not need a knife. 9. Let me choose a penknife for you. 10. Well, choose me one; but do not take one too big. 11. If I do not choose

you a good one, do not take it. 12. Well, let us see if you know (how) to choose penknives.

13. Are you going to the country to-morrow? 14. No, I am not going there. 15. Who is going there? 16. No one is going there to-morrow. 17. Well, lend me your horse to-morrow if you do not need him. 18. Take him; but where do you intend to go? 19. I am going to my aunt's. 20. If you go there, bring (*apportez*) me some pretty roses. 21. Very well; she has many at her house. 22. Do not forget me. 23. Do you prefer flowers to fruits? 24. No, sir, I prefer fruits to flowers. 25. Does Miss P. know French? 26. Yes, miss, she speaks it very well. 27. She has had good masters, and she has taste for study. 28. I have heard Mr. R. say (*dire à monsieur R.*) that he has never seen any one learn French more easily. 29. Have you seen Miss P. this week? 30. I have seen her. 31. Has she not been sick? 32. She has been a little sick, but now she is in good health.

### 53.—CINQUANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

#### NUMERAL TITLES. *À* AFTER THE VERB.

1. In designating sovereigns, where the English employ the ordinal numbers with the article, the French employ the cardinal, with the exception of *the first* and sometimes *the second*, without the article.

John *the first*.

Jean *premier*.

William *the second*.

Guillaume *deux*, or *second*.

James *the third*. George *the fourth*.

Jacques *trois*. Georges *quatre*.

Philip *the sixth*. Henry *the eighth*.

Philippe *six*. Henri *huit*.

2. To go or come to a place is *aller à* or *venir à*; to go or come to a person is generally *aller trouver*, or *venir trouver*.

He is going to Charleston.

Il va à Charleston.

He is going to Charles.

Il va trouver Charles.

He comes to Louisville.

Il vient à Louisville.

He comes to Mr. Lewis.

Il vient trouver M. Louis.

3. In emphatic cases, as calling, or ordering help, and after *penser* and *songer*, to think, the pronoun is used after the verb, and preceded by *à*.

Come to me. Go to him.

Venez à moi. Allez à lui.

Run to them. Think of me.

Courez à eux. Pensez à moi.

I think of you. He thinks of her.

Je pense à vous. Il songe à elle.

4. This construction is generally employed when more than one indirect objective pronoun (*y* and *en* excepted) belong to the verb; as also when the pronoun is emphatic.

Do you speak to him or to me?

Parlez-vous à lui ou à moi?

I speak neither to him nor to thee; I speak to them.

Je ne parle ni à lui ni à toi; je parle à eux.

5. To hear is *entendre*; to hear of, or that, is *entendre dire* or *parler*; to hear from is *recevoir des nouvelles*.

I heard the noise. He heard it.

J'ai entendu le bruit. Il l'a entendu.

I heard of your friend.

J'ai entendu parler de votre ami.

I have heard that your friend is here.

J'ai entendu dire que votre ami est ici.

I have heard from your friend to-day.

J'ai reçu des nouvelles de votre ami aujourd'hui.

Have you heard that he is at my house?

Avez-vous entendu dire qu'il est chez moi?

I have not heard it.

Je n'ai pas entendu dire cela.

To be able, *can*, being able, been able.

Pouvoir, pouvant, pu.

Je peux or puis,\* tu peux, il peut,

nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent,

I can, thou canst, he can,

we can, you can, they can.

Can I be useful to you?

Puis-je vous être utile?

God can do all things.

Dieu peut faire toutes choses.

We cannot do that.

Nous ne pouvons (pas) faire cela.

6. *Pas* is often omitted after *pouvoir* negative.

I have not been able to study.

Je n'ai pu étudier.

		MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
The back.	The shoulder.	Le dos.	L'épaule.
The heart.	Attention.	Le cœur.	Attention.
The knee, knees.	The character, reputation.	Le genou, genoux.	La réputation.
God.	The moon.	Dieu.	La lune.
The (natural) disposition.	A star.	Le caractère.	Une étoile.
The bottom.	So.	Le fond.	Si.
Lame.		Boiteux.	Boiteuse.
A lame man.	So lame.	Un boiteux.	Si boiteux (m.).
Healthy.	Bent, curved.	Sain.	Courbé, voûté (m.).
Right, straight.	Left.	Droit.	Gauche.
To pay attention to.		Faire attention à.	
Soon.	Much, many.	Bientôt.	Bien.

7. Adverbs of quantity, we have seen, take *de* before the following noun; *bien*, meaning much, many, takes *de* and the article, making *du*, *de l'*, *de la*, *des*.

Much money. Few friends.

Beaucoup d'argent. Peu d'amis.

Much money. Many friends.

Bien de l'argent. Bien des amis.

Much courage. Much beauty.

Bien du courage. Bien de la beauté.

1. Avez-vous votre argent? 2. Je l'aurai bientôt. 3. Cet homme a-t-il bien de l'argent? 4. Il a bien de l'argent et bien

\* *Puis* is more used than *peux*.

18 20 18 2 22 9 18 21 18 6 9 128 17  
 pou-voir, pou-vant, pu, peux, puis, peut, pou-vons, pou-vez, peuvent, Dieu, des,  
 é-paule, ca-rac-tère, é-toile, fond, si, bot-teux, bot-teuse, sain, cour-bé, voû-té, droit, droite,  
 gauche, at-ten-tion, bien-tôt, bien.



des amis. 5. J'ai entendu dire que votre père est malade ; est-ce vrai ? 6. Ce n'est pas vrai, il est en bonne santé. 7. Donnez-vous des fleurs à mes frères et à mes sœurs ? 8. J'en donne à eux et à elles. 9. Ces vieillards peuvent-ils faire de l'ouvrage ? 10. Ils n'en peuvent pas faire beaucoup. 11. Pouvez-vous traduire ce livre français ? 12. Je peux le traduire. 13. Qu'a ce vieillard ? 14. Il a mal au dos et à l'épaule. 15. N'a-t-il pas le dos voûté ? 16. Si, il l'a voûté. 17. Pourquoi ce petit garçon est-il boiteux ? 18. Il est boiteux parce qu'il a mal au genou. 19. N'avez-vous pas mal à la main droite ? 20. Non, j'ai mal à la main gauche. 21. A-t-on trouvé le fond de ce lac ? 22. On ne l'a pas trouvé. 23. N'est-ce pas nouvelle lune aujourd'hui ? 24. Non, c'est pleine lune. 25. La lune et les étoiles sont belles. 26. Admirez-vous le caractère de Charles XII. ? 27. Non, monsieur, j'admire plus le caractère de Louis XIV. 28. Cet homme est sain de corps, mais il n'a pas le cœur content.

1. Canst thou study when thou art warm ? 2. I can study well when I am very warm. 3. Can the carpenters do their work to-day ? 4. They cannot do it to-day. 5. Do you admire the character of George the Fourth ? 6. I do not admire it. 7. What is the matter with that lame man ? 8. He has a pain in the left knee. 9. The fisherman's hammer is at the bottom of the lake. 10. Does not God know all hearts ? 11. God reads the bottom of all hearts, and can do all things. 12. Have you a pain in the knee ? 13. No, I have a pain in the back and in the shoulder. 14. Is that servant in good health ? 15. He is healthy in (*de*) body and mind, but he is a little lazy. 16. The cook is so lame that she cannot do her work.

17. Do you pay attention to what the master says ? 18. We pay attention to it. 19. Is that line straight or curved ? 20. It is straight. 21. Have you a pain in the right hand or in the left ? 22. I have no pain in the hand, I have a pain in the back and in the shoulder. 23. Do you like to look at the stars ? 24. I like to look at the stars and the moon. 25. I have heard that the general is sick ; do you know if it is true ? 26. It is true. 27. Is that history false ? 28. It is false. 29. Have you been able to learn that lesson ? 30. I have not been able to learn it. 31. Pay attention to what I say. 32. That man is English ; he is a subject of

the queen. 33. Could you speak the French when you were in Paris? 34. I could speak it a little. 35. Will you come to our house soon? 36. I am so lame that I cannot go there at present.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you seen my brother to-day? 2. I saw him in Mr. C.'s store. 3. I am looking for him every where. 4. I have heard that he is soon going to set out for France; is it true? 5. Yes, sir; he sets out next week by the steamer (*le vapeur*) America. 6. Does he intend to stay long in France? 7. He intends to stay there eighteen months. 8. He will have time to learn the French well in eighteen months. 9. He understands and reads it sufficiently well already. 10. I know it; he needs only practice (*pratique*) to (*pour*) speak it perfectly. 11. I know many gentlemen who read French, but do not know (how) to speak it. 12. The French is a language which is very difficult.

13. Is that child useful to his relations? 14. He is very useful to his father and mother. 15. That bank-bill looks counterfeit; is it not counterfeit? 16. It is counterfeit. 17. Has the carpenter been able to do his work? 18. He has not been able to do it. 19. When will you come here again? 20. I shall come here again to-morrow. 21. I have heard that the general is coming here; do you know if it is true? 22. It is true. 23. Why does your cousin look so sad? 24. Because he has a headache; his head pains him much. 25. Who makes so much noise? 26. It is some drunkards in the street.

## 54.—CINQUANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## IRREGULAR FUTURES, ETC.

1. The futures of *voir*, to see, and *faire*, to make, are irregular.

*Je verrai, tu verras, il verra, nous verrons, vous verrez, ils verront.*  
I shall see, thou wilt see, he will see, we shall see, you will see, they will see.

*Je ferai, tu feras, il fera, nous ferons, vous ferez, ils feront.*  
I shall make, thou wilt make, he will make, we shall make, you will make, they will make.

Will you see the general to-day? Verrez-vous le général aujourd'hui?

I have seen him already, and I shall see him again this evening. Je l'ai déjà vu, et je le reverrai ce soir.

You will do your duty, and we shall do ours. Vous ferez votre devoir, et nous ferons le nôtre.

To cause, to talk. To sing. Causer. Chanter.

MASOULINE. FEMININE.

A cent. A song. Un cent,\* (sou). Une chanson.  
The handle. The tooth. Le manche. La dent.

\* Cent (sou) sounds as in English.

7 6 6 17 6 3 6 3 31 3  
ver-rai, te-rai, cau-ser, chan-ter, chan-son, manche, dent.

A picture.	An affair, business.	Un tableau.	Une affaire.
Labor.	Strange.	Travail.	Étrange.
Extraordinary.	Against.	Extraordinaire.	Contre.
The day.	Past.	Le jour.	Passé (m.).
That American.		Cet américain.	Cette américaine.
For cash, cash down.		Comptant, au comptant, argent comp- tant.	
On credit.	A toothache.	À crédit.	Un mal de dent.

2. *Gré* is used chiefly to form verbal or adverbial expressions like the following:

To be grateful for.	Savoir gré de.
Against one's liking, unwillingly.	Contre son gré.
To my liking. To your liking.	À mon gré. À votre gré.
To my taste. To your taste.	À mon goût. À votre goût.
To that American's liking.	Au gré de cet américain.
To every body's liking.	Au gré de tout le monde.

3. When several verbs are connected by *nor* in English, *ni* is to be repeated before each verb in French.

He neither reads, nor writes, nor studies.	Il ne lit, ni n'écrit, ni n'étudie.
We neither buy nor sell.	Nous n'achetons ni ne vendons.

4. *Parler français* means to *speak in French*, or to *speak French*, *français* being used adverbially.\* *Parler le français* is less used. *Parler* is the only verb with which a rational designation can be used adverbially.

He speaks French (or in French).	Il parle français.
He speaks the French of good society.	Il parle le français de la bonne compagnie.

5. *Aimer mieux*, followed by two infinitives, takes no preposition before the former, but requires *de* before the latter.

I like better to read than to think, and I like better to think than to write.	J'aime-mieux lire que de penser, et j'aime mieux penser que d'écrire.
--	---

What causes that noise?	Qu'est-ce qui cause ce bruit?
She talks with her brother, and speaks to the child.	Elle cause avec son frère, et parle à l'enfant.

The past month. The past night.	Le mois passé. La nuit passée.
---------------------------------	--------------------------------

6. The verbs *venir* and *aller* have in some cases a use in French different from *come* and *go* in English. *Venir* denotes movement towards the individual who speaks, or to what he regards as his home, or accompanying when he considers himself as taking the lead.

Will you come here to-morrow?	Viendrez-vous ici demain?
I will come here with pleasure.	J'y viendrai avec plaisir.

\* Let it be borne in mind that *français*, an adverb, cannot be the antecedent of a pronoun.

1 17 1 7 5 8 5 116 12 7 21 1 6 31 3 1 6  
ta-bleau, a-f-faire, tra-vail, é-trange, ex-tra-or-di-naire, contre, pas-sé, comp-tant, a-mé-  
ri-cain, a-mé-ri-caine, cré-dit

When will you come to my house?	Quand viendrez-vous chez moi?
I will come and see you to-morrow.	J'irai vous voir demain.
Will you go along with me to Boston?	Voulez-vous venir à Boston avec moi?
I will go <i>willingly</i> .	J'irai <i>volontiers</i> .

1. Que feras-tu ce soir? 2. Je ne ferai rien. 3. Ferez-vous quelque chose demain? 4. Nous ferons beaucoup de choses. 5. Le paysan fera-t-il du beurre? 6. Il fera du beurre et du fromage. 7. Verras-tu ton oncle demain? 8. Non, je le verrai la semaine prochaine. 9. Quand verrez-vous vos amis? 10. Nous les verrons bientôt. 11. Combien de cents (sous) font une piastre? 12. Cent sous font une piastre. 13. Qui a cassé le manche de ce marteau? 14. Le domestique l'a cassé. 15. Qu'avez-vous? 16. J'ai mal aux dents. 17. C'est un bien mauvais mal. 18. Avez-vous quelque chose à faire? 19. J'ai bien des affaires. 20. Quelles chansons chantez-vous? 21. Nous chantons des chansons anglaises. 22. Avez-vous acheté ce tableau à crédit? 23. Je l'ai acheté comptant. 24. Ce petit garçon aime-t-il mieux l'étude que le travail? 25. Il aime mieux le travail que l'étude. 26. Je connais madame D.; c'est une femme extraordinaire. 27. Cet étranger est français; c'est un homme bien extraordinaire. 28. Cette femme chante à mon goût. 29. Ce garçon ne fera pas bien son ouvrage, parce qu'il le fera contre son gré. 30. Sept jours font une semaine. 31. Voulez-vous me vendre ce tableau? 32. Bien volontiers, monsieur.

1. When will you come to our house? 2. I will go there day after to-morrow. 3. Will you go (come) to New York with me? 4. I will go there with pleasure. 5. Will the soldiers see the general to-day? 6. They will see him. 7. We shall see the new picture to-day; will not the master see it also? 8. He will see it. 9. What caused so much noise this morning? 10. It is the wind which caused it. 11. What songs does the English woman sing? 12. The English woman sings French songs, and the German woman sings German songs. 13. What will you do to-morrow? 14. We shall do nothing. 15. How many cents will you give to that poor blind man? 16. I shall give him twenty-five cents. 17. The handle of this knife is of ivory. 18. I often had the teethache when I was in the country.

19. Will the American buy those pictures on credit or for cash?

20. He will buy them for cash. 21. That man likes to work better than to do nothing; is not that extraordinary? 22. It is not extraordinary that he loves labor. 23. Have they shown you something strange? 24. They have shown me nothing strange. 25. Do you buy on credit or for cash? 26. I sometimes buy on credit and sometimes for cash. 27. What is the matter with you? 28. I have a violent (*violent*) toothache and a distracting (*fou*) headache. 29. Has that merchant much business (*affaires*)? 30. He has much business, and he gives great attention to it. 31. Does that scholar study against his will? 32. Yes, sir; and the servant works against his will. 33. Are the nights longer than the days this month? 34. Yes; and the days will be longer than the nights next month. 35. Does the American know French better than I? 36. No; he neither reads, nor writes, nor speaks that language.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is not your face swollen? 2. Yes; I have the toothache. 3. Do your teeth pain you much? 4. Not much at present, but the toothache is a very bad pain (*mal*). 5. I know what it is, I have had it often enough. 6. Do you know any remedy (*remède*)? 7. I know only one good one (*de bon*), it is the cold iron (*le fer*). 8. I do not like that one much; I desire not to lose my teeth. 9. What do the merchants say? are they doing good business? 10. Not very (*trop*) good; they are not doing much business at present. 11. In (*dans*) two or three months, I intend to undertake some business. 12. What can you do? 13. I do not know yet; if I can find a good store for sale (*à vendre*), I intend to buy it.

14. I know one on Water-street which is for sale. 15. What store is it? 16. It is a wine-store which is on that street, and which you are acquainted with undoubtedly (*sans doute*). 17. You mean (*voulez dire*) that of Mr. C.? 18. Yes, it is the very same (*celui-là même*). 19. But why does Mr. C. wish to sell it? 20. His health is not good, and he wishes to make a journey in (*en*) England. 21. Well, I will go and see his store to-morrow.

## 55.—CINQUANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## ÊTRE AS AUXILIARY.

1. In forming the past definite and other compound tenses of the verbs *aller*, *venir*, and several others which will be given hereafter, the past participle is joined to the tenses of *être* instead of *avoir*, and then the participle always agrees with the subject of the verb.



She offers to buy that silk gown.	Elle offre d'acheter cette robe de soie.
He has opened the door.	Il a ouvert la porte.
I have offered to buy that house.	J'ai offert d'acheter cette maison.
I am grateful to the master that he has given me this good book.	Je sais gré au maître de ce qu'il m'a donné ce bon livre.

1. Voulez-vous bien me prêter ce livre? 2. Très-volontiers, monsieur. 3. On ne peut pas rappeler le temps passé. 4. Vos frères sont-ils allés à l'école? 5. Ils y sont allés. 6. Es-tu venu ici ce matin? 7. Non, je suis venu hier au soir. 8. Vos frères sont-ils venus hier aussi? 9. Non, ils sont venus la semaine (passée) dernière. 10. Ouvrez la porte. 11. Ouvrons la fenêtre. 12. Cette clef ouvre cette boîte-là. 13. Éteignez le feu. Éteignons-le. 14. La lune emprunte sa lumière. 15. Le pouce me fait mal. 16. Ce domestique n'a-t-il pas des défauts? 17. Il en a quelques-uns. 18. Avez-vous fait des fautes dans votre thème? 19. J'en ai fait quelques-unes. 20. Combien vendez-vous ce livre? 21. Je le vends un dollar. 22. Pourquoi éteignez-vous le feu? 23. Je l'éteins parce que je sors. 24. La lune emprunte-t-elle sa lumière du soleil? 25. Elle la lui emprunte. 26. Me promettez-vous de bien étudier? 27. Je vous le promets. 28. Cet enfant marche-t-il déjà? 29. Il ne marche pas encore. 30. Ma mère est allée chez la voisine. 31. Ce médecin est très-habile. 32. A-t-il emprunté de l'argent à votre père? 33. Non, il a emprunté deux mille dollars à mon cousin.

1. Do the children open the windows? 2. They open them. 3. Does the doctor extinguish the light when he goes out? 4. He extinguishes it. 5. Do you extinguish your candle when you go out at night? 6. I extinguish it frequently, but not always. 7. Do you walk more than I? 8. We walk less than you. 9. Do you offer some money to that poor man? 10. I offer him some. 11. Do you frequently recite your lessons to your father? 12. I recite them to him very frequently. 13. What do the scholars promise to the master? 14. They promise to show him their copy-books. 15. Do they offer to sell you their books? 16. They offer to sell them to us, and we offer to buy them of them (*les leur*). 17. Does your partner's niece promise to be studious? 18. She promises to be very studious.

19. Is not Doctor Jones an able man? 20. He is very able, and his brother is able also. 21. Hast thou more vegetables than I? 22. No, my friend, I have more fruit than thou, but I have not so

many vegetables. 23. Hast thou more vegetables than thy brother? 24. Yes, because the drought has injured (*fait mal*) his. 25. How many inches make a foot? 26. Twelve inches make a foot, and twenty-four inches make two feet. 27. Has your brother gone any where? 28. No, sir, he went to the city this morning, but he has returned (*revenu* \*) from there. 29. When did you return from the country? 30. I returned from there this morning. 31. Do the fixed stars borrow their light? 32. No, sir, the fixed stars are suns. 33. Is that man the husband of that lady? 34. No, sir, he is the husband of my partner's niece. 35. The wife of your cousin writes her exercise without a fault. 36. This drought will do harm to the vegetables.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Does that woman sing better than her husband? 2. She sings better than he, but he reads better than she. 3. Has the drought hurt the vegetables? 4. It has done them much harm. 5. Have you seen the peaches which I bought? 6. No, I have not seen them; where are they? 7. I have sent them to the cook; but I am going to tell John to bring me a few of them. 8. How do you find them? 9. They are superb; I have not seen so fine ones this year. 10. They are bringing much fruit to market now; whence do they bring it? 11. It comes from the country. 12. One does not see many vegetables at the market (*au marché*). 13. No, we have not had rain for (*depuis*) so long a time, that all the gardens are dried up (*desséchés*). 14. The gardeners say that they have never seen such a (*une telle*) drought; they are doing nothing at all (*du tout*).

15. They say that the rivers are very low. 16. I wish to make a short (*petit*) journey; but if the rivers are so low, I will not go in a (*en*) steamboat. 17. Where do you desire to go? 18. I desire to go as far as Cincinnati. 19. The small boats go as far as there; when do you think to set out? 20. Next week; I am waiting for the return of my father, who is in the country.

## 56.—CINQUANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

## PLUPERFECT TENSE.

1. The pluperfect tense is formed in French as in English, by joining the *past participle* to the *imperfect of the auxiliary*.† Thus,

*J'avais fini, tu avais fini, il avait fini, nous avions fini, vous aviez fini, ils avaient fini,*  
I had finished, thou hadst, etc., he had, etc., we had, etc., you had, etc., they had, etc.

\* Compounds generally take the same auxiliary as their simples.

† The only verbs, thus far given, which take *être* for auxiliary, are *aller* and *venir*; the others take *avoir*.



*J'étais venu, tu étais venu, il était venu, nous étions venus, vous étiez venus, ils étaient, etc.*  
I had come, thou hadst come, he had come, we had come, you had come, they had come.

Hadst thou learned thy lesson when the master came? *Avais-tu appris ta leçon quand le maître est venu?*

I had learned it.

*Je l'avais apprise.*

Had you written your exercises?

*Aviez-vous écrit vos thèmes?*

We had written them.

*Nous les avions écrits.*

They had gone to school, and he had gone there also.

*Ils étaient allés à l'école, et il y était allé aussi.*

2. In speaking of the weather, the French commonly employ *faire*, to make, impersonally.

What weather is it? how is the weather? *Quel temps fait-il?*

The weather is cold. The weather is cool. *Le temps est froid. Le temps est frais.*

It is cold. It is cool.

*Il fait froid. Il fait frais.*

It is warm. It is very warm.

*Il fait chaud. Il fait bien chaud.*

#### MASCULINE.

#### FEMININE.

Sorrow. A chain.

*Le chagrin. Une chaîne.*

His appetite. A match.

*Son appétit. Une allumette.*

The moonlight. A work.

*Le clair de lune. Une œuvre.*

3. *Travail* implies the act of working; *ouvrage*, the produce of the work; *œuvre*, the production of talent or merit.

An exercise. A long exercise.

*Un exercice. Un long exercice.*

Slippery. Dark.

*Glissant. Sombre, obscur.*

4. *Sombre* implies scarcity of light; *obscur*, absence of light.

[As the learner is now sufficiently acquainted with forming the feminine of adjectives and participles, they will be given only in the masculine, except in peculiar cases.]

Wet. Damp, moist.

*Mouillé. Humide.*

Agreeable. Amiable, lovely.

*Agréable. Aimable.*

To sleep, slept.

*Dormir, dormi (as sortir, Les. 29). p*

To refuse. To gain.

*Refuser (de bef. inf.). Gagner (à bef. inf.).*

On horseback. On foot.

*A cheval. A pied.*

This summer. In summer.

*Cet été. En été or l'été.*

This autumn. In autumn.

*Cet automne. En automne or l'automne.*

This winter. In winter.

*Cet hiver. En hiver or l'hiver.*

This spring. In spring.

*Ce printemps. Au printemps.*

5. *En* is used indefinitely with the names of the seasons, except *printemps*, which is never preceded by *en*. They are all masculine.

Do you sleep less in winter than in spring? *Dormez-vous moins en hiver (or l'hiver) qu'au printemps?*

Yes, and I sleep more in summer than in autumn. *Oui, et je dors plus en été (or l'été) qu'en automne.*

1 14 8 1 6 12 1 22 6 7 9 8 7 11 12 8 15 14  
cha-grin, chaîne, ap-pé-tit, al-lu-mette, clair, œuvre, eg-zer-cice, glie-sant, sombre, obs-  
22 12 1 5 1 7 1 10 12 16 12 4 21 6 1 8 6 16 21 12  
cure, au-mide. a-gré-able, ai-mable, dor-mir, dor-mi, re-fu-ser, ga-gner, été, au-tomne, hi-  
7 14 8  
ver, prin-temps.

Is it dry? No, it is wet.  
 Is it dark? No, it is moonlight.  
 It is fine weather. It is stormy.  
 It is good walking. It is slippery.  
 It is foggy. It is muddy.  
 It is night. It is day.  
 It has been windy and dusty.  
 It will be sunny.  
 The *mud*. The *dust*.  
 By. By mistake.

Fait-il sec? Non, il fait humide.  
 Fait-il obscur? Non, il fait clair de lune.  
 Il fait beau temps. Il fait de l'orage.  
 Il fait bon marcher. Il fait glissant.  
 Il fait du brouillard. Il fait de la *boue*.  
 Il fait nuit. Il fait jour.  
 Il a fait du vent et de la *poussière*.  
 Il fera du soleil.  
 La *boue*. La *poussière*.  
 Par. Par méprise.

1. Voulez-vous bien me prêter ces œuvres de Fénelon? 2. Très-volontiers, monsieur. 3. Combien vendez-vous cette chaîne? 4. Je la vends cinq dollars. 5. Avez-vous pris ma plume? 6. Je l'ai prise par mégarde. 7. Avais-tu appris ta leçon quand tu as lu le journal? 8. Je l'avais apprise. 9. Étiez-vous revenus de la campagne quand vous avez vu mon père? 10. Nous en étions revenus. 11. Votre frère avait-il lu cet ouvrage quand il me l'a prêté? 12. Il l'avait lu. 13. Vos frères étaient-ils allés à l'école quand vous êtes venu chez nous? 14. Ils y étaient allés. 15. Étais-tu allé à la campagne quand nous sommes allés chez toi? 16. J'y étais allé. 17. Vos frères avaient-ils appris le français quand ils ont étudié l'espagnol? 18. Ils pouvaient parler un peu français. 19. Avez-vous beaucoup d'appétit en automne? 20. J'ai beaucoup d'appétit en automne et en hiver (l'automne et l'hiver). 21. Irez-vous à la ville à pied ou à cheval? 22. Je n'irai ni à pied ni à cheval, j'irai en bateau à vapeur. 23. Ce pauvre homme n'a-t-il pas beaucoup de chagrin? 24. Si, madame, il est très-malheureux. 25. Que désirez-vous acheter? 26. Je désire acheter une chaîne d'or et une boîte d'allumettes. 27. Ces écoliers studieux refusent-ils de réciter leurs leçons? 28. Ils ne refusent pas de les réciter. 29. Gagnez-vous beaucoup d'argent? 30. Je n'en gagne pas beaucoup.

1. Do you promise to come and see me soon? 2. I promise to come (go) and see you to-morrow. 3. Is that studious man amiable? 4. He is very amiable. 5. How is the weather? 6. It is fine weather. 7. Is it not cold? 8. No, it is neither warm nor cold. 9. Is it not damp? 10. No, sir, it was damp this morning, but it is dry now. 11. Is it not dark this evening? 12. No, sir, it is moonlight. 13. Is it not slippery? 14. No, it is good walk-

ing. 15. Is it not muddy? 16. No, it is neither muddy nor dusty. 17. Is it very good walking? 18. No, sir, it is a little slippery. 19. Has not that poor man much sorrow? 20. He has had much sorrow, but he is happy now. 21. Will you buy a chain of gold or of silver? 22. I shall buy a gold chain. 23. Have you some matches? 24. I have a box of good matches.

25. Have you much appetite in autumn? 26. Yes, I have more appetite in autumn than in summer. 27. Do you sleep more in winter than in spring? 28. No, sir, I sleep as much in spring as in winter. 29. Do we sleep more than you? 30. No, you sleep less than we. 31. Do those scholars sleep much? 32. Yes, they sleep too much, but the master does not sleep enough. 33. Do those shop-keepers gain much money? 34. They gain much. 35. Do you gain more than they? 36. No, I gain less than they. 37. What weather is it? 38. It is very agreeable weather (*un temps*). 39. It was dark last night; will it not be dark to-night? 40. No, sir, it will be moonlight. 41. Do you take exercise frequently? 42. I take exercise morning and evening.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Has it been foggy this week? 2. Yes, sir, but it is dry now. 3. Is it good walking? 4. It is good walking, but it has been slippery. 5. Why do you extinguish the lights? 6. I extinguish them because it is day. 7. Did the American buy his pictures on credit or for cash? 8. He bought them for cash. 9. What is the matter with you? 10. I have a violent toothache, and my thumb pains me. 11. They speak much of the new work of Dumas; have you seen it? 12. I never read his works. 13. Why? do you not like them? 14. They are not to my taste. 15. I have heard that Dumas writes very well.

16. I am going to buy a lamp; I have broken mine. 17. Do you wish for a small one or a large one? 18. I wish for a large one. 19. How did you break yours? 20. I let it fall (*tomber*). 21. Is this one good? 22. Yes, it is exactly (*exactement*) what I wish. 23. For how much do you sell a lamp like (*comme*) this? 24. I will let you have it (at) two dollars. 25. Well, I take it; have you some matches? 26. Yes, I have some; how many boxes do you wish for? 27. Six or eight boxes (*ce*) will be enough.

## 57.—CINQUANTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

THE IRREGULAR IMPERSONAL VERB *FALLOIR*.

<i>Is it necessary?</i>	<i>Faut-il ?</i> or, <i>Est-il nécessaire ?</i>
It is necessary.	<i>Il faut</i> , il est nécessaire.
Was it necessary? It was necessary.	<i>Fallait-il ? Il fallait.</i>
Has it been necessary? It has been necessary.	<i>A-t-il fallu ? Il a fallu.</i>
Had it been necessary? It had been necessary.	<i>Avait-il fallu ? Il avait fallu.</i>
Will it be necessary? It will be necessary.	<i>Faudra-t-il ? Il faudra.</i>

1. *Falloir* and *être nécessaire* may be used alike, except negatively, but the former is a little stronger. When a person is used with *falloir*, if it be a pronoun, it is the indirect object; if a noun, it is preceded by *d*.

I need (must have) a string.	<i>Il me faut un cordon.</i>
He must have a horse.	<i>Il lui faut un cheval.</i>
They will need money.	<i>Il leur faudra de l'argent.</i>
That man must have money.	<i>Il faut de l'argent à cet homme.</i>
He must write a letter.	<i>Il lui faut écrire une lettre.*</i>
<i>To have a mind, desire, fancy (for).</i>	<i>Avoir envie (de) (de bef. n. and inf.).</i>
Have you a fancy for my pen?	<i>Avez-vous envie de ma plume?</i>
I have a desire to learn French.	<i>J'ai envie d'apprendre le français.</i>

*To run, running, run.*

*Courir, courant, cours.*

<i>Je cours,</i>	<i>tu cours,</i>	<i>il court,</i>	<i>nous courons,</i>	<i>vous courez,</i>	<i>ils courent,</i>
I run,	thou runnest,	he runs,	we run,	you run,	they run.

2. The future of *courir* is irregular by dropping the *t*.

<i>Je courrai,</i>	<i>tu courras,</i>	<i>il courra,</i>	<i>nous courrons,</i>	<i>vous courrez,</i>	<i>ils courront,</i>
I shall run,	thou wilt run,	he will run,	we shall run,	you will run,	they will run.

<i>To perceive, descry, perceiving, perceived.</i>	<i>Apercevoir, apercevant, aperçu.</i>
Do you perceive that light?	<i>Apercevez-vous cette lumière?</i>
I perceive it.	<i>Je l'aperçois.</i>

*To give pleasure. To please.*

*Faire plaisir. Plaire.*

3. These two verbs always govern the dative; i. e., they always take the noun preceded by *d*, or the indirect objective pronoun.

He pleases his father, his father is pleased with him.	<i>Il plaît à son père.</i>
He pleases him.	<i>Il lui plaît.</i>
You will please me by your good conduct.	<i>Vous me ferez plaisir par votre bonne conduite.</i>

\* When *falloir*, with a person, is followed also by a verb, the conjunction *que* with the subjunctive is generally preferred.

17 4 5 7 1 7 1 23 17 1 1 20 8 18 18 19 18 8 15 22 15  
 faut, né-ces-saire, fal-lait, fal-lu, fau-dra, fal-loir, en-vie, cou-rir, cou-rant, cou-ra, cours,  
 18 19 21 19 6 18 18 6 1 7 4 20 1 7 4 8 1 7 22 7  
 court, con-ront, cou-res, cou-rent, cour-rai, a-per-ce-voir, a-per-ce-vant, a-per-çu, plaira.

I am pleased with him.

If they come, will you perceive them?

I shall perceive them.

Il me plaît, *or*, Je suis content de lui.

S'ils viennent, les apercevrez-vous?

Je les apercevrai.

The *string*.

The *mode, fashion*.

A *mile*.

A *hoe*.

The *middle*.

The *spade*.

*Interest*.

The *shovel*.

The *least*.

An *ax*.

MASCULINE

Le *cordon*.

Un *mille*.

Le *milieu*.

L'*intérêt*.

Le *moindre, le moins*.

FEMININE

La *mode*.

Une *houe*.

La *bêche*.

La *pelle*.

Une *hache*.

4. *Moindre* is an adjective, and belongs to a noun; *moins* is an adverb, and modifies a verb, adjective, or adverb.

He has not the least courage.

He studies the least.

In the middle of the path.

*Cheap*.

A *plow*.

*Dear*.

A *cart*.

*Strong*.

A *wheelbarrow*.

*Interestedly, from interest. Disinterestedly.*

*To go a mile.*

I shall go ten miles.

They sell cheap, but I sell cheaper than they.

Il n'a pas le moindre courage.

Il étudie le moins.

Au milieu du chemin.

A *bon marché*.

Une *charrue*.

*Cher*.

Une *charrette*.

*Fort*.

Une *brouette*.

*Par intérêt. Sans intérêt.*

*Faire un mille.*

Je ferai dix milles.

Ils vendent à bon marché, mais je vends à meilleur marché qu'eux.

1. Que faut-il (est-il nécessaire de) faire? 2. Il faut apprendre nos leçons. 3. A-t-il fallu (été nécessaire de) travailler? 4. Il a fallu (été nécessaire de) travailler beaucoup. 5. Faudra-t-il (sera-t-il nécessaire de) aller à la rivière? 6. Il ne faudra pas y aller. 7. Il faut une houe au jardinier. 8. Il nous faut une charrette et une brouette. 9. Il a fait chaud la semaine passée, mais à présent il fait un temps agréable. 10. Ce marchand ne vend-il pas cher? 11. Non, il vend à bon marché. 12. Courez-vous plus vite que moi? 13. Je ne cours pas aussi (*or si*) vite que vous. 14. Cet étranger fait-il plaisir à votre ami par intérêt? 15. Oui, il ne rend pas le moindre service sans intérêt. 16. Apercevez-vous celui que vous cherchez? 17. Nous l'apercevons et il nous aperçoit. 18. Ces enfants courent parce qu'ils ont peur de la pluie. 19. Nous ne courons jamais, mais ces petits garçons courent beaucoup. 20. Vous faut-il quelque chose? 21. Il me faut un cordon et une bêche, et il faut au paysan une pelle et une hache. 22. Le jardinier a-t-il tout ce qu'il lui faut? 23. Non, il lui faudra encore un charrué,

16 21 15 12 19 13 12 9 8 14 5 5 5 1 23 1 5  
cor-don, mode, mille, houe, mi-lieu, bêche, in-té-rêt, pelle, hache, char-rue, char-rette,  
18 18 5  
fort, brou-ette.

une charrette et une grosse brouette. 24. Ce cheval est-il fort ? 25. Il est fort et bien doux. 26. Courrez-vous si vous voyez le gros chien ? Je courrai.

1. What does the blacksmith make ? 2. He makes hoes, spades, shovels, axes, and plows. 3. Why does that cat run ? 4. He runs because he perceives the dogs. 5. Why do you run ? 6. We run because we perceive the storm. 7. If you see your brother, will you not run to him ? 8. I shall run to him. 9. Of what has the washerwoman need ? 10. She has need of a cord or of a long string. 11. Will you go a mile this morning ? 12. I shall go two. 13. Where does the servant put the hoe and the ax ? 14. He puts the hoe in the middle of the garden, and he puts the ax in the middle of the yard. 15. Is not butter dear ? 16. Yes, every thing is dear now. 17. Does not the merchant sell dear ? 18. No, sir, he sells very cheap ; he has not the least profit.

19. Have you seen the sister of my friend ? 20. I have seen her ; she is pretty and very amiable. 21. Had you written your exercise this morning when the master came ? 22. I had written it. 23. Had your brothers gone to school when I saw you yesterday ? 24. They had gone there. 25. Of what have you need ? 26. I must have some candles or a lamp. 27. Do you perceive the traveler ? 28. I perceive him, and he perceives me. 29. Do you take much exercise ? 30. Yes, sir, I go two miles in the morning and two miles in the evening. 31. Is any thing the matter with you ? 32. I have a pain in my thumb. 33. Is the workman in want of any thing ? 34. He is in want of a wheelbarrow and a cart. 35. Labor is the least of evils, consequently (*conséquemment*) it is the one which I feel the least.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you read the works of Lamartine ? 2. I have read a few of them. 3. What will the weather be to-morrow ? 4. It will be cold. 5. Will it be good walking ? 6. It will be slippery. 7. Does that sailor like to go on foot ? 8. He likes better to go on foot than to go on horseback. 9. Whose is (*à qui est*) that dog which is following you ? 10. It is a dog that one has given me. 11. I have never seen him follow you. 12. He does not follow me often, but he has broken his cord this morning. 13. Why do you not buy him a chain ? 14. I have one which I bought, and which he cannot break.

15. Let us go and take the air in the country to-morrow. 16. I

am perfectly (*bien*) willing; the air of the city is not good. 17. It is not so good in summer as in winter. 18. What are you doing? 19. I am putting my linen in (*d*) the air. 20. Put it on this cord. 21. Let us open the door; the air of this room is warm. 22. Yes; but is not the air of the street too cold? 23. It is not very cold to-day. 24. Do not open the door; open the window. 25. Where are you going? 26. I am going into the yard to look for something. 27. Do not go in the air nor in the sun without a hat. 28. I am not going to stay long, and my hat is in the other room. 29. Put on mine; I do not want it. 30. Well, give it to me, if you please. 31. It is a little too small; put it on, however (*toujours*).

## 58.—CINQUANTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## TRANSLATION OF PARTICIPIAL NOUNS.

1. The English participial noun is commonly rendered into French by the infinitive.  
 Is *studying* much agreeable to you? Vous est-il agréable *d'étudier* beaucoup?  
*Reading* at night hurts my eyes. *Lire* la nuit me fait mal aux yeux.  
*Writing* at night is still worse. *Écrire* la nuit est encore plus mauvais.

2. Prepositions followed by verbal expressions in English take the infinitive in French. *En*, as will be seen hereafter, is an exception.

Do you gain much *by doing* that? Gagnez-vous beaucoup *à faire* cela?  
 I have a fancy *for learning* French. J'ai envie *d'apprendre* le français.  
 He recites his lesson *without making* a mistake. Il récite sa leçon *sans faire* de faute (or une faute).

3. *Pour* before a noun or pronoun means *for*; before an infinitive it means *to, or in order to*.

For me. For him. For them. Pour moi. Pour lui. Pour eux.  
 He will come to see you. Il viendra pour vous voir.  
 I study in order to learn. J'étudie pour apprendre.

4. Participles used as adjectives always agree with their nouns.

Clothes made in the new fashion. Des habits *faits* à la nouvelle mode.  
 A gown made in the old fashion. Une robe *faite* à la vieille mode.  
 In the fashion. In the French fashion. À la mode. À la mode française.

*Future of SAVOIR, to know. Irregular.*

*Je saurai, tu sauras, il saura, nous saurons, vous saurez, ils sauront,*  
 I shall know, thou wilt know, he will know, we shall know, you will know, they will know.

If it rains, will you know it? S'il pleut, le saurez-vous?

I shall know it. Je le saurai.

*To appear, appearing, appeared. Paraître, paraissant, paru* (as *connaitre*).

		MASCULE.	FEMININE.
This motion, impulse.	Early.	Ce mouvement.	De bonne heure.
A lawyer.	Sooner.	Un avocat.	Plus tôt.
A motive.	Rather.	Un motif, mobile.	Plutôt.

5. *Plutôt*, one word, means rather; *plus tôt*, two words, means sooner.

You will return sooner than I.	Vous reviendrez plus tôt que moi.
I will do good rather than evil.	Je ferai du bien plutôt que du mal.
An action, fact, deed. Earlier.	Un fait, acte. De meilleure heure.

6. *Fait* means something accomplished; *acte* expresses action, or the result of action.

Sunday, on Sunday.	Le dimanche, dimanche.
Monday, on Monday.	Le lundi, lundi.
Tuesday, on Tuesday.	Le mardi, mardi.
Wednesday, on Wednesday.	Le mercredi, mercredi.
Thursday, on Thursday.	Le jeudi, jeudi.
Friday, on Friday.	Le vendredi, vendredi.
Saturday, on Saturday.	Le samedi, samedi.
Almost. Perhaps.	Presque. Peut-être.

7. The article is used with the days of the week to denote what is habitual or periodical (when the plural may be used in English); also when they are used definitely. Used as adverbs, they take neither article nor preposition.

They return home Sundays.	Ils reviennent chez eux le dimanche.
I shall be here on Sunday.	Je serai ici dimanche.
She comes here Saturdays.	Elle vient ici le samedi.
We will return on Saturday.	Nous reviendrons samedi.

1. Est-ce que je parais malade? 2. Non, monsieur, vous paraîsez être en bonne santé. 3. Fait-il nuit? 4. Il fait nuit, et la lune et les étoiles paraissent. 5. Les faits de cette histoire sont extraordinaires. 6. Ce cheval a les mouvements beaux. 7. Reviendrez-vous lundi ou mardi? 8. Je reviendrai de bonne heure lundi. 9. Vous paraît-il agréable d'étudier beaucoup? 10. Cela me paraît agréable et utile. 11. Quand irez-vous chez l'avocat? 12. J'irai mercredi. 13. Revenez-vous de chez lui à présent? 14. J'en reviens. 15. Allez-vous au marché de bonne heure? 16. Oui, mais vous y allez de meilleure heure que moi. 17. Il n'a pas fait froid cette semaine; n'est-ce pas? 18. Si, presque toute la semaine, mercredi, jeudi, vendredi et samedi. 19. Cet homme vous rend-il service par intérêt? 20. Oui, l'intérêt est son seul motif (mobile). 21. Si mon frère vient ici, le saurez-vous? 22. Nous saurons la leçon plus tôt que vous, et mon cousin la saura plus tôt que nous. 23. J'apprends le français mais non pas l'espagnol. 24. Le maître

18 8 11 1 12 1 13 12 15 12 22 17 7 1 13 8 23 12 1  
mou-ve-ment, heu-re, a-vo-ca-t, mo-tif, mo-bile, plu-tôt, fait, acte, di-man-che, lun-di, mar-  
di, mer-cre-di, jeu-di, ven-dre-di, same-di, pres-que, peu-t-être.



est allé chez lui ; peut-être qu'il reviendra bientôt. 25. Silence, restez tranquille : cet enfant est le mouvement perpétuel.

1. Does the washerwoman wish for any thing? 2. She wishes for a long string and some soap. 3. What does the gardener need? 4. He needs a shovel, an ax, a plow, a cart, and a wheelbarrow. 5. Is that servant useful to you? 6. No, he does not render me the least service. 7. Does the shop-keeper sell cheap? 8. No; he sells very dear. 9. How is the weather? 10. It is cold this morning. 11. Is it not night? 12. It is night, and the stars appear. 13. Do those ladies appear to you amiable? 14. Yes, they appear to me very amiable. 15. Does that man appear to you lame? 16. Yes, sir, he is lame; he has a pain in the left foot. 17. Are you returning from the lawyer's? 18. I am returning from his house. 19. Has your partner gone to the lawyer's? 20. No; he went early this morning to the country; perhaps he will return to-day.

21. Is the motion of this boat agreeable to you? 22. No, it is not agreeable. 23. That man obliges (*rend service à*) every body; what is his motive? 24. Interest is his only motive. 25. Do you know any one without fault? 26. I know no one without fault. 27. This new history is extraordinary; it is full of strange facts. 28. Do you go out early in the morning? 29. Yes, but my brother goes out earlier than I. 30. Will you go to school earlier than your cousin? 31. I shall go earlier than he. 32. Had your brother gone to school when we saw you this morning? 33. He had gone there. 34. Had you recited your lesson when we recited ours? 35. I had recited it. 36. Has that child courage? 37. He has not the least courage. 38. Is it warm this evening? 39. No, it is almost always in the evening that it is the least warm.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. See that pretty little dog which follows that lady; he is very small and all white, the pretty little animal! 2. Do you like dogs? 3. I like them much; I like dogs and horses; they are good animals. 4. The horse is a very useful animal. 5. You are right, he is an animal very useful. 6. Is it healthy to (*de*) stay in the air without a coat? 7. It is not healthy. 8. Well, let us go and put on our coats. 9. Yes, I feel that the air is damp this morning. 10. Damp air is not healthy in the city (*en ville*); in the country we do not think of it.

11. Who gave you that great box? 12. No one gave it to me; I bought it. 13. What will you do with it? 14. I am going to

give it to the gardener to (*pour*) put his tools in (it) (*y*). 15. What tools will he put in it? 16. He will put in it his hoe, his spade, his shovel, his ax, and some other tools. 17. Is that box long enough to put a hoe or a spade in (it)? 18. Yes, it is long enough. 19. They say that you have a fine garden. 20. Yes; our new gardener has made (*rendu*) it very fine. 21. Have you a plow? 22. No, we have none. 23. I have one, and it is at your service, if you wish for it. 24. Thank you, but we have no need of it; we do every thing (*tout*) with (*d*) the spade.

25. Will you return from the river earlier than your brothers? 26. No; they will return earlier than we. 27. When wilt thou go to Boston? 28. I shall go there on Monday. 29. Wilt thou return on Tuesday? 30. No; I shall return on Wednesday or Thursday; my brother will return on Friday, and my cousin will return on Saturday or Sunday.

## 59.—CINQUANTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

## DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

1. There are three degrees of comparison, the *positive*, *comparative*, and *superlative*.

2. Of comparatives there are also those of *superiority*, *equality*, and *inferiority*.

3. The comparative is formed by placing before the adjective the adverbs *plus* for superiority, *aussi* for equality, and *moins* for inferiority, and *que* after it. Thus:

Small, *smaller*, *as small*, *less small*. Petit, *plus petit*, *aussi petit*, *moins petit*.

Elegant, *more elegant*, *as elegant*, *less elegant*. Éléant, *plus élégant*, *aussi élégant*, *moins élégant*.

4. Many adverbs are compared in the same way as adjectives.

Easily, *more easily*, *as easily*, *less easily*. Facilement, *plus facilement*, *aussi facilement*, *moins facilement*.

5. When quantities are compared, *plus*, *autant*, *moins* are used with *de* before the object compared, and *que de* before the one it is compared with; as,

More butter than bread. Plus de beurre que de pain.

As much of this as of that. Autant de celui-ci que de celui-là.

Less money than clothes. Moins d'argent que d'habits.

6. The superlative is formed by prefixing the article *le*, or a possessive adjective, to the comparative of superiority or inferiority.

Small, *smaller*, *smallest*. Petit, *plus petit*, *le plus petit*.

Cold, *less cold*, *least cold*. Froid, *moins froid*, *le moins froid*.

7. There are a few irregularities. *Mieux* and *le mieux* are sometimes used for the comparative and superlative of *bon*; *moindre* and *le moindre* for those of *petit*; *mieux* and *le mieux* for those of *bien*; *pire* and *le pire* for those of *mauvais*; *pis* and *le pis* for those of *mal*.

My foot is *smaller* than yours. Mon pied est *plus petit* que le vôtre.

His foot is *the smallest*. Il a *le plus petit* pied.

This scholar is *less studious* than that. Cet élève est *moins studieux* que celui-là.

That one is *the least studious* of all. Celui-là est *le moins studieux* de tous.  
It is *my best horse*; he is the best that I have. C'est *mon meilleur cheval*; c'est *le meilleur* que j'ai.

8. *Plus petit* more commonly applies to what is measured; *moindre*, to what is valued.

My brother is *smaller* than I. Mon frère est *plus petit* que moi.  
He is *the smallest* of the family. C'est *le plus petit* de la famille.  
His talents are *less than* yours. Ses talents sont *moindres* que les vôtres.

He is *the smallest* of small minds. C'est *le moindre* des petits esprits.  
*Sweet, sweetened. To answer.* *Sucré. Répondre* (de before nouns).  
*The side. The liquor, cordial.* *Le côté. La liqueur.*  
*The chin. The sweet liquor.* *Le menton. La liqueur douce.*  
On this side. On that side. De ce côté-ci. De ce côté-là.  
*The spectacle, play. To the play.* *Le spectacle. Au spectacle.*  
*His turn. In his (or her) turn.* *Son tour. À son tour.*  
*A pig, swine. A fat pig.* *Un cochon. Un cochon gras.*  
*Something else. Nothing else.* *Quelque autre chose. Rien autre chose.*  
*Consequently. I read the best.* *Conséquemment. Je lis le mieux.*  
*To keep. He keeps my letters.* *Garder. Il garde mes lettres.*  
*To fall.* *Tomber (être for auxiliary).*  
He has fallen from a horse. Il est tombé de cheval.  
Do they come on this side or on that side? Viennent-ils de ce côté-ci ou de ce côté-là?  
They come on this side. Ils viennent de ce côté-ci.  
Did you answer that man? Avez-vous répondu à cet homme?  
I answered him. Je lui ai répondu.

1. Avez-vous envie d'aller quelque part? 2. Oui, j'ai envie d'aller à la campagne. 3. Achetez-vous des habits faits à la mode française? 4. Non, j'achète des habits faits à la mode anglaise. 5. Avez-vous plus de fromage que de beurre? 6. Non, monsieur, j'ai autant de beurre que de fromage. 7. Avez-vous moins de pêches que de pommes? 8. Non, j'ai moins de pommes que de pêches. 9. Votre sœur n'est-elle pas plus grande que vous? 10. Elle est plus grande que moi, mais mon frère est le plus grand de la famille. 11. Votre cousin n'est-il pas moins studieux que vous? 12. Oui, il est le moins studieux de l'école. 13. Vous lisez mieux que moi, mais mon frère lit le mieux. 14. Qu'avez-vous? 15. J'ai mal au menton. 16. Buvez-vous la liqueur sucrée? 17. Je la bois. 18.

10 14 13 12 22 6 5 21 17 6 12 11 2 21 5 1 18 15 21  
moindre, pire, plus, su-cré, ré-pondre, cô-té, il-leur, men-ton, spec-tacle, tour, co-chon,  
con-sé-kan-mont, gar-dor, tom-ber.

Buvez-vous quelque autre chose ? 19. Je ne bois rien autre chose. 20. Tombez-vous souvent quand il fait glissant ? 21. Je tombe quelquefois, mais non pas souvent. 22. Ma plume est meilleure que la vôtre, conséquemment j'écris mieux que vous. 23. J'ai la meilleure des plumes, et c'est moi qui écrit le mieux. 24. Ma plume est mauvaise, celle de Charles est pire, la vôtre est la pire de toutes ; conséquemment j'écris mal, Charles écrit pis que moi, et vous écrivez le pis de tous.

1. Do you answer all the letters of the captain ? 2. I answer them (y). 3. Have you answered the doctor ? 4. I have not answered him. 5. When will you answer his letter ? 6. I shall answer it on Thursday. 7. Do you keep the money that you gain ? 8. I keep mine, but my brother does not keep his. 9. What have you a mind to do ? 10. I have a mind to write some letters. 11. Is this liquor sweeter than that ? 12. Yes, this liquor is sweeter than that, but that of the cook is the sweetest. 13. Is this pig as fat as that ? 14. No, this pig is less fat than that. 15. What does that man buy ? 16. He buys a coat made in the old fashion, and his wife buys a gown made in the new fashion. 17. Do you take your sister to the play ? 18. I take her there.

19. Is that scholar as studious as his cousin ? 20. He is more studious than his cousin, but he is less studious than his brother ; the son of the German is the most studious of all. 21. Do you speak in your turn ? 22. Yes, each one speaks in his turn. 23. That scholar's merit (*mérite*) is less than yours, but his brother's is the least of all. 24. My ink is bad, yours is worse, and this little boy's is the worst of all. 25. This little girl reads badly, her brother reads worse, and her cousin reads the worst of all the school. 26. Is not your chin swollen ? 27. My chin is swollen, and I have also the toothache. 28. Where is the roast pig ? 29. The cook has carried it to the kitchen. 30. Is your friend coming on this side ? 31. No, he is coming on that side. 32. You learn French and Spanish ; do you learn any thing else ? 33. I learn nothing else.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you seen the carriage which I have bought ? 2. No ; I have been told that you have bought a new one, but I have not yet seen it ; is it large ? 3. Not very large ; I have need of a cart also ; mine is all (*toute*) broken. 4. I have seen some very good ones at John the blacksmith's. 5. Are they large ? 6. I saw some

large ones and some small ones; you had better (*ferez bien de*) go and see them. 7. Yes, I will go to-morrow; I am in want also of a little wheelbarrow. 8. You will see some at his house. 9. They say that John is a very good workman. 10. Yes, his work is strong, and does not break like (*comme*) that of so many others. 11. The work which they make at present is none too (*pas trop*) good. 12. They do not always take care to choose good wood.

13. George, do you know where your little brother is? 14. He is in the middle of the road. 15. Can you tell me where my dictionary and my grammar are? 16. Yes; your brother has carried (*emportés*) them off into his room. 17. He is studying his lesson; but I do not yet know mine. 18. Have you not studied it yet? 19. I have studied it a little, but not enough. 20. Take my grammar if you have need of it. 21. You are very good; if I do not study, our master will be displeased (*mécontent*), and he will be right.

## 60.—SOIXANTIÈME LEÇON.

## PASSIVE VERB.

To reward. To punish.

To esteem. To despise.

To correct. To neglect.

The thief, robber. Ignorant.

Récompenser. Punir.

Estimer. Mépriser.

Corriger. Négliger (*de bef. inf.*).

Le voleur. Ignorant.

1. THE PASSIVE VERB is formed in French, as in English, by joining the past participle to the auxiliary *être*,—the past participle agreeing in gender and number with the subject of the verb.

I am loved.

Thou art loved.

He is loved. She is loved.

We are loved.

You are loved.

They are loved.

I was rewarded.

Thou hast been punished.

He had been neglected.

She had been esteemed.

We shall be despised.

You will be esteemed.

Je suis aimé or aimée.

Tu es aimé or aimée.

Il est aimé. Elle est aimée.

Nous sommes aimés or aimées.

Vous êtes { aimé or aimée.

{ aimés or aimées.\*

Ils sont aimés or elles sont aimées.

J'étais récompensé or récompensée.

Tu as été puni or punie.

Il avait été négligé.

Elle avait été estimée.

Nous serons méprisés or méprisées.

Vous serez { estimé or estimée.

{ estimés or estimées.

\* When *vous* refers to but one, the participle is singular; when to more than one, it is plural.

8 21 8 6 22 12 8 12 6 6 17 6 16 12 6 8 12 6 15 11 12 16 8  
ré-com-pen-sé, pu-ni, es-ti-mé, mé-pri-zé, cor-ri-gé, né-gli-gé, vo-leur, i-gno-rant,  
8 21 8 6 22 12 8 12 6 6 17 6 16 12 6 8 12 6 15 11 12 16 8  
ré-com-pen-sé, pu-ni, né-gli-gé, es-ti-mé, mé-pri-zé.

2. *By* before the agent of a passive verb is rendered by *de* when speaking of the sentiments of the heart; by *par*, of actions physical or mental.

They were loved by their friends.	Elles étaient aimées <i>de</i> leurs amis.
He will be punished by the master.	Il sera puni <i>par</i> le maître.
The exercises will be corrected by the master.	Les thèmes seront corrigés <i>par</i> le maître.

3. The passive verb is not often used in French when the agent is general or unknown. Expressions like the following, therefore, though passive in English, must be active in French.

This house is to be sold.	Cette maison est à <i>vendre</i> .
That poor man is to be pitied.	Ce pauvre homme est à <i>plaindre</i> .
That house is to be let.	Cette maison est à <i>louer</i> .
That is an animal to be feared.	C'est un animal à <i>craindre</i> .
It is said that he is sick.	<i>On dit</i> qu'il est malade.
We have been told that you are rich.	<i>On nous a dit</i> que vous êtes riche.
Instead of. To bring, to take to.	<i>Au lieu de. Amener.</i>

4. *Apporter* is to bring by carrying; *amener*, to bring without carrying; *emporter* also is to carry away; *emmener*, to load or take away.

<i>Is there, are there? There is, there are.</i>	<i>Y a-t-il? Il y a.</i>
<i>Has or have there been? was or were there?</i>	<i>Y a-t-il eu?</i>
<i>There has or have been, there was or were.</i>	<i>Il y a eu.</i>
<i>Will there be? There will be.</i>	<i>Y aura-t-il? Il y aura.</i>
<i>Was there? There was.</i>	<i>Y avait-il? Il y avait.</i>
<i>Had there been? There had been.</i>	<i>Y avait-il eu? Il y avait eu.</i>
He brings his sister.	Il amène sa sœur.
He brings his book.	Il apporte son livre.
Are there some people at your house?	Y a-t-il du monde chez vous?
There will be some to-morrow.	Il y en aura demain.
There have been many people at church this evening.	Il y a eu beaucoup de monde à l'église ce soir.

1. Cet homme néglige sa santé, il sera malade. 2. Ces écoliers négligent d'étudier, ils seront punis. 3. Cet élève sera-t-il récompensé? 4. Non, il est paresseux, il néglige ses leçons, et il sera puni au lieu d'être récompensé. 5. Ces enfants sages seront estimés au lieu d'être méprisés. 6. Par qui êtes-vous récompensés? 7. Nous sommes récompensés par le maître. 8. Nous serons aimés de nos parents. 9. Ce voleur a-t-il été puni? 10. Pas encore, mais il sera bientôt puni. 11. Ce gros garçon est très-ignorant. 12. Oui, il est si ignorant qu'il ne sait pas lire. 13. Vos thèmes sont-ils corrigés? 14. Non, mais ils seront bientôt corrigés par le maître. 15. J'ai amené ma sœur ici, et j'y ai apporté ma malle. 16. N'y a-t-il pas un livre sur votre pupitre? 17. Il y en a un.

18. Y a-t-il des papiers dans votre tiroir? 19. Il n'y en a pas.  
20. N'y a-t-il pas eu beaucoup de bruit dans la rue hier au soir?  
21. Il y en a eu beaucoup. 22. Y aura-t-il beaucoup de monde chez vous demain? 23. Il y en aura beaucoup. 24. Y avait-il beaucoup de fruit à la campagne, quand vous y étiez? 25. Il y en avait beaucoup.

1. Has the master given you any thing? 2. Yes, sir, he has given me a pretty book. 3. Has he given you any thing else? 4. No, he has given me nothing else. 5. Is that tea sweetened? 6. It is sweetened. 7. Are those pears good? 8. They are sweet and good. 9. Was your exercise finished when the master corrected mine? 10. Yes, I had finished it, and the master had corrected it. 11. Has that lazy scholar been punished? 12. Yes, sir, and that studious scholar has been rewarded. 13. Who will be esteemed and who will be despised? 14. The studious scholar will be esteemed, and the ignorant scholar will be despised. 15. When will the thief be punished? 16. He will be punished next week. 17. Is not that scholar ignorant? 18. He is very ignorant; he plays instead of studying, and he will be punished by the master.

19. Do you correct your exercises? 20. No, sir, the master corrects them. 21. Do you not neglect your health? 22. No, I do not neglect it. 23. Do you play instead of studying? 24. No, sir, I have learned my lesson, and now I am going to play. 25. Are there not thieves in this city? 26. There are a few. 27. Were there not some people at your house yesterday? 28. Yes, there were many there yesterday, and there will be many to-morrow. 29. Are there not some books on your table? 30. There are a few. 31. Do you answer all the letters that you receive? 32. I answer them. 33. Do you keep all the money that you gain? 34. I do not keep it all. 35. I have brought my little brother to school. 36. Have you brought his books also? 37. I have brought them. 38. Have you brought any thing else? 39. I have brought nothing else.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Show me (*faites-moi voir*) the lesson; let us see if it is that which I have studied. 2. It is this one. 3. Very well; it is the same. I know already the half of it; I can learn it easily. 4. Which is the more useful, the French or the Latin? 5. The French undoubtedly (*sans doute*); but I wish to know the Latin also; do you not intend to learn it? 6. I do not know yet; I prefer the

French. 7. But you can learn the Latin also. 8. Yes, if I have the time, for (*car*) I wish to learn also the Spanish and the German. 9. Do you sometimes speak French to your sister? 10. I speak French to her sometimes. 11. She comprehends French very well; does she not? 12. Yes, and she speaks it sufficiently well. 13. Why do you not always speak French to her? 14. I often forget to do it, and besides (*d'ailleurs*) it is a little difficult for me. 15. The more one speaks, the sooner one learns; does he not? 16. Certainly (*certainement*); one has need of study and of practice also.

17. Are the soldiers coming on this side or on that side? 18. They are coming on that side. 19. My father gives me money to go to the play. 20. Does he give you any thing else? 21. He gives me nothing else. 22. Has there been much fruit this summer? 23. There has been much. 24. Will there be much cotton this autumn? 25. There will not be much. 26. What do you buy? 27. I buy some apples. 28. Do you buy any thing else? 29. I buy nothing else. 30. Does that child fall often? 31. He falls very often. 32. Do you prefer the Spanish to the French? 33. No, I prefer the French to the Spanish.

## 61.—SOIXANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

COMPARATIVES WITH *NE* AND *LE*

<i>To touch. To owe, must, etc.</i>	<i>Toucher. Devoir.</i>
<i>Do you owe? I owe.</i>	<i>Devez-vous? Je dois.</i>
They owe me money.	Ils me doivent de l'argent.
He owes me gratitude.	Il me doit de la reconnaissance.

1. *Devoir* has many significations in English, all denoting obligation in future.

I must write. I should write.	} Je dois écrire.
I ought to write. I have to write.	
I am to write.	
<i>The breakfast. To breakfast.</i>	<i>Le déjeuner. Déjeuner.</i>
<i>The dinner. To dine.</i>	<i>Le dîner. Dîner.</i>
<i>The word. The word (spoken).</i>	<i>Le mot. La parole.</i>
<i>The cabbage. The earth, ground.</i>	<i>Le chou. La terre.</i>
<i>At breakfast. At dinner.</i>	<i>A déjeuner. A dîner.</i>
<i>Coffee with milk. Coffee without milk.</i>	<i>Café au lait. Café noir.</i>
<i>Malicious, cunning.</i>	<i>Malin. Maligne.</i>
<i>Short. Charming.</i>	<i>Court. Charmant.</i>
He is near-sighted.	Il a la vue courte (or basse).
That man cultivates the earth.	Cet homme cultive la terre.
Take away that man.	Éloignez cet homme.

<sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>17</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>12</sup>  
 tou-cher, de-voir, dois, de-ves, dé-jeu-ner, di-ner, mot, pa-rolé, terre, ma-lin, ma-ligne,  
<sup>12</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>9</sup>  
 court, char-mané.



*Joyous.*  
*Crazy.*

*Joyeux. Joyeuse.*  
*Fou. Folle.*

3. *Fou* becomes *fol* before a vowel or a silent *h*.

*Wheat, grain. A pancake.*

*Le blé, grain. Une crêpe.*

*Buckwheat.*

*Le sarrasin, le blé noir.*

*A buckwheat cake.*

*Une crêpe de sarrasin (or de blé noir).*

*He wishes for buckwheat cakes with butter and syrup.*

*Il veut des crêpes de sarrasin au beurre et au sirop.*

*It is good traveling. It is good living.*

*Il fait bon voyager. Il fait bon vivre.*

3. Comparatives of superiority or inferiority take *ne* before the following verb, unless the comparison be negative.

*You have more money than I have.*

*Vous avez plus d'argent que je n'en ai.*

*He drinks less than you drink.*

*Il boit moins que vous ne buvez.*

*I have no less courage than he has.*

*Je n'ai pas moins de courage qu'il en a.\**

4. Comparatives generally, when the following verb may have a participle, an adjective, or a verb understood, after it, require such verb to be preceded by *le*.

*He is not so sick as he believes.*

*Il n'est pas aussi malade qu'il le croit.*

*That is not so difficult as they think.*

*Cela n'est pas aussi difficile qu'on le pense.†*

5. When a comparative of this latter kind is also one of superiority or inferiority, and not negative, it takes of course both *ne* and *le* before the verb.

*They are richer than we are.*

*Ils sont plus riche que nous ne le sommes.*

*He is more skillful than you believe.*

*Il est plus habile que vous ne le croyez.*

6. The pronoun *le* is commonly used before *pouvoir*, and some other verbs, instead of a preceding verb repeated.

*He learns as fast as he can.*

*Il apprend aussi vite qu'il le peut.*

*He learns well when he will.*

*Il apprend bien quand il le veut.*

*The Future of VOULOIR, to be willing, is irregular.*

*Je voudrai, tu voudras, il voudra, nous voudrons, vous voudrez, ils voudront,*  
*I shall wish for, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.*

*Will you want some paper?*

*Voudrez-vous du papier?*

*I shall want some.*

*J'en voudrai.*

*He has carried away my book.*

*Il a emporté mon livre.*

1. Devez-vous beaucoup d'argent? 2. Nous n'en devons pas beaucoup. 3. Combien d'argent me dois-tu? 4. Je ne te dois rien. 5. Touchez-vous cet animal? 6. Je le touche avec un bâton, je ne le touche pas de la main. 7. Cette dame est charmante; elle a l'air aimable, mais sa sœur a l'air malin. 8. Déjeunez-vous chez votre

\* *Ne* is not inserted in this last sentence because the comparison is negative.

† In these sentences a verb may be supplied, thus: *He is not so sick as he believes (that he is), That is not so difficult as they think (it to be).*

ami ? 9. Non, monsieur, je dine chez lui, mais je déjeune chez moi. 10. Fait-il bon vivre en Europe ? 11. Il y fait bon vivre. 12. Fait-il cher vivre à Paris ? 13. Il fait aussi cher vivre à New York qu'à Paris. 14. L'Angleterre touche-t-elle à \* la France ? 15. Elle n'y touche pas. 16. Y a-t-il eu du café au lait à déjeuner ? 17. Il y a eu du café au lait à déjeuner, et il y aura du café noir à diner. 18. Il y aura du bœuf-rôti à diner. 19. Je sais mieux le français que mon frère ne le sait. 20. Nous avons de meilleurs fruits que vous n'en avez. 21. Il a été pire, bien pire qu'il n'était. 22. Nous sommes meilleurs qu'on ne le dit. 23. J'étudie quand je le puis. 24. Savez-vous tous les mots de votre leçon ? 25. Je les sais tous. 26. Allez voir cette pauvre femme, et dites-lui quelques bonnes paroles de *consolation*. 27. Fait-il bon marcher ? 28. Non, il fait beaucoup de boue.

1. Carry away these books. 2. Take away this child. 3. Does not that child fall often when it is slippery ? 4. He falls often when it is good walking. 5. My talents (*talents*) are less than yours, but this scholar's are the least. 6. Do those men owe you money ? 7. They owe me much. 8. Do you still owe us some ? 9. We owe you a hundred dollars. 10. What art thou to do to-morrow ? 11. I am to write many letters. 12. What is your little brother to do ? 13. He is to go to school. 14. Has the cook bought some cabbages ? 15. He has bought some cabbages and some lettuce. 16. Why is that scholar so joyous ? 17. He is joyous because he knows his lesson well. 18. Do you touch that dog ? 19. I do not touch him. 20. Does America touch England ? 21. It does not touch it. 22. That man owes more money than you owe.

23. That maid-servant looks cunning ; is she as cunning as she appears ? 24. She is more cunning than she appears. 25. That man looks crazy ; is he as crazy as he appears ? 26. He is less crazy than he appears. 27. My friend is very sick ; he has a malignant fever. 28. What is the matter with that man ? 29. He is near-sighted. 30. How many words have you learned ? 31. I have learned all the words of this page. 32. Is it always good traveling in summer ? 33. It is always better traveling in summer than in winter. 34. Is that lady as charming as she appears ? 35. She is more charming than she appears. 36. Will that gentle-

---

\* *Toucher*, meaning to border upon, takes *à* before its object.

man want coffee with milk or coffee without milk ? 37. He will want some without milk. 38. What will you want to-morrow at school ? 39. We shall want some books, some paper, some pens, and some ink. 40. Those gentlemen will want some coffee with milk, and some buckwheat cakes with butter and syrup.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Paris is not more beautiful than London ; is it ? 2. Yes, Paris is the most beautiful city in (*de*) Europe. 3. Have you recited your lesson in (*de*) French ? 4. Yes, I have recited it, and Charles has recited his also. 5. How many mistakes did you make ? 6. I made only one, but Charles made three. 7. He is not studious. 8. Not (*pas*) always ; but sometimes he recites his lesson well.

9. Show me (*faites-moi voir*) your exercise. 10. I have put it in my copy-book. 11. Have you written (*écrit*) it without a mistake ? 12. No, Mr. R. found in it two or three small mistakes. 13. I have not yet written my exercise ; I have a mind to go and write it now. 14. Why have you not yet done it ? 15. I have not had the time. 16. All my lessons are recited and I have nothing to do. 17. Go and write your exercise, and after that (*ensuite*) we will go to the city. 18. Wait for me, I shall not be long. 19. Where do you go Sundays ? 20. I go to church Sundays, and I go to school Mondays and the other days of the week. 21. Do you go to school Saturdays ? 22. There is no school Saturdays.

23. Will you see Mr. P. soon ? 24. I shall see him to-morrow in the country at Mr. A.'s, where we are both (*tous deux*) going. 25. Do me the pleasure to give him a note which I am writing him. 26. I will do it with much pleasure. 27. It is necessary to give it to me this evening, for (*car*) I must (*il me faudra*) set out to-morrow morning. 28. You must have a horse ; take mine, if you wish. 29. Thank you, I have one already. 30. Well, when you have need of one, mine is at your service. 31. You are very good.

## 62.—SOIXANTE-DEUXIEME LEÇON.

## NAMES OF COUNTRIES.

1. The future of *pouvoir*, to be able, is irregular.

*Je pourrai, tu pourras, il pourra, nous pourrons, vous pourrez, ils pourront.*  
I shall be able, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

*To pray.* I pray you.

*Prier.* Je vous prie.

*To freeze. To produce.*

*Geler. Produire* (as *conduire*, *Les. 34*).

2. The names of countries take the article, and those ending in *e* are, with few exceptions, feminine.

---

<sup>13 6</sup> <sup>4 6</sup> <sup>15 22 12</sup>  
pri-er, ge-ler, pro-duira.

France.	England.	La France.	L'Angleterre.
Switzerland.	Spain.	La Suisse.	L'Espagne.
Russia.	Prussia.	La Russie.	La Prusse.
Scotland.	Ireland.	L'Ecosse.	L'Irlande.
Sweden.	Italy.	La Suède.	L'Italie.
Turkey.	Greece.	La Turquie.	La Grèce.

3. Those of other terminations are generally masculine.\*

Denmark.	Portugal.	Le Danemark.	Le Portugal.
Canada.	Peru.	Le Canada.	Le Pérou.

Europe touches Asia.

L'Europe touche à L'Asie.

Africa does not touch America.

L'Afrique ne touche pas à L'Amérique.

Sweden produces iron.

La Suède produit du fer.

I set out to-morrow for France, Sweden, and Denmark.

Je pars demain pour la France, la Suède et le Danemark.

4. *At, in, to*, before names of countries, is *en, from* is always *de*; and after these prepositions (*en, de*), feminine names of countries, when without an adjective, omit the article.†

We are going to Germany.

Nous allons en Allemagne.

It freezes much in Russia.

Il gèle beaucoup en Russie.

They come from Spain.

Ils viennent d'Espagne.

5. Before some masculine names of countries (mostly distant ones) *au du* are used instead of *à de*, as *Je vais au Pérou*; *je vais au Canada*; *je viens du Japon*; *je reviens du Danemark*.

6. Names of cities do not take the article.

Paris is more beautiful than London.

Paris est plus beau que Londres.

He goes to Paris.

Il va à Paris.

New York is larger than Boston.

New York est plus grand que Boston.

He comes from Boston.

Il vient de Boston.

7. Those, however, derived from common nouns, or having an adjective or its equivalent for part of the name, take the article.

He dwells at (or in) Havre.

Il demeure au Havre.‡

He comes from New Orleans.

Il vient de la Nouvelle-Orléans.

8. *Le*, after a superlative, and equivalent to *of*, is rendered by *de*.

He is the richest man in our village.

C'est l'homme le plus riche de notre village.

France is the finest country in Europe.

La France est le plus beau pays de l'Europe.

9. After *mal*, as we have seen, *d* is used to denote the part affected, *de* the name of the ailment.

I have sore eyes.

J'ai mal aux yeux.

He has a pain in the back.

Il a mal au dos.

How is your headache?

Comment est votre mal de tête?

How comes on your earache?

Comment va votre mal d'oreille?

\* The two names of countries, *Mexique* and *Bengale*, are the only ones which are masculine with a feminine termination.

† *En Portugal, en Danemark*, also are generally used.

‡ *Havre* formerly meant harbor.

France, Suisse, Espagne, Russie, Écosse, Irlande, Suède, Italie, Turquie, Grèce, Danemark, Portugal, Canada, Pérou, Asie, Afrique, Londres, Havre, Orléans.

1. Il gèle plus en Russie qu'en Angleterre. 2. L'Espagne et le Portugal produisent du vin. 3. Pourrez-vous aller en Suède l'été prochain? 4. Je pourrai y aller. 5. Pourrons-nous aller en Prusse? 6. Oui, et nous pourrons aussi aller en Écosse et en Irlande. 7. Gèle-t-il plus en Suède qu'en Italie? 8. Oui, il ne gèle pas beaucoup en Italie. 9. La Turquie est-elle plus grande que la Grèce? 10. Oui, et la Prusse est plus grande que la Suisse. 11. Allez-vous au Canada? 12. Non, je vais en Portugal. 13. Le Canada produit-il du blé? 14. Oui, le Canada produit du blé, et le Pérou produit de l'or. 15. L'Asie touche-t-elle à l'Afrique? 16. Oui, elle y touche. 17. L'Asie est-elle plus grande que l'Afrique? 18. Oui, et l'Amérique est plus grande que l'Asie. 19. Allez-vous en Allemagne? 20. Non, je vais à Londres et au Havre. 21. Venez-vous de Marseille? 22. Non, je viens de la Nouvelle-Orléans. 23. Mes enfants, ne touchez pas à mes papiers ni aux fruits.

1. Will the workmen be able to do their work to-morrow? 2. No, they will not be able to do it this week. 3. Wilt thou be able to learn thy lesson well? 4. Yes, sir, and my brother will also be able to learn his well. 5. Take away this child, I pray you. 6. Take away this table also. 7. Is not that horse's neck too short? 8. Yes, his neck is too short, and his legs are too short also. 9. Do you wish for some syrup? 10. Yes, sir, if you please. 11. Do those trees produce any thing? 12. Yes, sir, they produce beautiful fruit. 13. Is not France the most beautiful country in Europe? 14. Yes, and Russia is the largest country in Europe. 15. Is not London larger than Paris? 16. Yes, London is the largest city in the world. 17. Is not New York larger than New Orleans? 18. Yes, New York is the largest city in America.

19. Does Scotland touch Ireland? 20. No, Scotland touches England, but it does not touch Ireland. 21. When will you be able to go to Europe? 22. I shall be able to go there when I have a mind. 23. Will you be able to go to Italy this summer? 24. I shall be able to go to Italy, to Turkey, and to Greece. 25. Do you dwell in Paris? 26. No, I dwell in Havre. 27. When will you go to New Orleans? 28. I shall go there when I can. 29. Is your friend from Baltimore? 30. No, he is from New Orleans. 31. Do you dine at the general's to-day? 32. No, I dine at my friend's; but I shall breakfast at the general's to-morrow. 33. Is there a

light in your room? 34. No, there is none. 35. That man cultivates (*cultive*) the earth. 36. There was coffee with milk at breakfast, and there will be coffee without milk at dinner.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is not that man rich? 2. Yes, he is richer than you think. 3. What do those children wish for? 4. They wish for buckwheat cakes with butter and syrup. 5. Is there a church in this village? 6. Yes, there are two. 7. Is there some wine at the bottom (*au fond*) of that barrel? 8. There is a little. 9. Is that man as sick as he thinks? 10. He is not so sick as he thinks. 11. When will you learn your lesson? 12. I shall learn it when I can.

13. How is the weather? 14. It is fine weather, but a little cold. 15. That is nothing, if it is not damp. 16. No, it is dry weather. 17. It is good walking when it is cold. 18. To-day it has been very windy (*beaucoup de vent*) and very dusty. 19. Go and write your exercise, and we will go to the city. 20. Come with me. 21. Why, have you need of me? 22. No, I can write it without you, but I like better to have company. 23. You can write it better without me, and I want (*j'ai besoin*) to go out a little. 24. Go, if you wish, but do not set out without me. 25. No, I intend to come for you (*vous chercher*). 26. I shall be in the room; return soon.

27. Are those ladies as amiable as they appear? 28. They are more amiable than they appear. 29. How many windows are there in your room? 30. There are four. 31. Will you be at home tomorrow? 32. No, sir, I am to go to the country.

## 63.—SOIXANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

## MONTHS, DATES, ETC.

*To pass. To gather.*

*Passer. Cueillir.*

1. *Cueillir* has its present and future like the first conjugation.

Do you gather pears and plums? Cueillez-vous des poires et des prunes?

I gather apples and pears. Je cueille des pommes et des poires.

*Je cueillerai, tu cueilleras, il cueillera, nous cueillerons, vous cueillerez, ils cueilleront,*

I shall gather, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

We shall gather flowers.

Nous cueillerons des fleurs.

The theater. Music.

Le théâtre. La musique.

The opera. A passion.

L'opéra. Une passion.

Are you going to the theater (play)? Allez-vous au théâtre (spectacle)?

2. Spectators who go for amusement would say *au spectacle* rather than *au théâtre*.

2 6 9 12 9 6 5 2 15 5 1 2 12 21  
pas-ser, cueil-lir, cueille-rai, thé-âtre, o-pé-ra, pas-sion.

3. When *parce que*, and other compound words ending in *que*, are repeated in a second clause, *que* only is used.

That man falls because he is drunk, and because it is slippery. Cet homme tombe parce qu'il est ivre, et qu'il fait glissant.

While you were breakfasting, and while you were reading, I studied. Pendant que vous déjeuniez, et que vous lisiez, j'étudiais.

4. *Que* is used in the same way also for *comme*, *quand*, and *si*, repeated in a second clause. As it is late, and as he is not here, we will go home. Comme il est tard, et qu'il n'est pas ici, nous irons chez nous.

When one is young, and when one is in good health, he ought to be happy. Quand on est jeune, et que l'on est en bonne santé, on doit être heureux.

5. The names of the months are masculine.

January.	February.	Janvier.	Février.
March.	April.	Mars.	Avril.
May.	June.	Mai.	Juin.
July.	August.	Juillet.	Août.
September.	October.	Septembre.	Octobre.
November.	December.	Novembre.	Décembre.

What day of the month is it to-day? { Quel jour du mois est-ce aujourd'hui?  
{ Quel *quantième* est-ce aujourd'hui?

It is the second.

{ C'est le deux.  
{ Nous sommes au deux.

It is the third.

C'est le trois.

6. The French use the cardinal numbers with all the days of the month except the first, and in dates generally employ figures.

It is the third. It is the fourth. C'est le trois. C'est le quatre.  
In store, stored. In the store. En magasin. Dans le magasin.

7. *Dans* has a sense precise, *en* more vague. Thus *dans* is always used with an article or determinative adjective; *en* generally without one.

I have some flour in that store.	J'ai de la farine dans ce magasin.
I have some in store (stored).	J'en ai en magasin.
He is in the prison.	Il est dans la prison.
He is in prison (imprisoned).	Il est en prison.
Philadelphia, December 15, 1861.	Philadelphie, le 15 décembre, 1861.
Late. He dines late.	Tard. Il dîne tard.
Before dining.	Avant de dîner (avant takes de bef. inf.).
He breakfasts earlier than I.	Il déjeune de meilleure heure que moi.

1. Votre cousin lit-il plus que vous? 2. Oui, pendant que j'écris et que j'étudie, il lit. 3. Avez-vous du cidre? 4. J'en ai beaucoup en baril. 5. N'y en a-t-il pas dans ce baril-ci? 6. Il y en a un peu. 7. Déjeunez-vous de meilleure heure que moi? 8. Oui, mais je déjeune plus tard que notre voisin. 9. New York, le

8 12 6 8 12 5 1 1 12 6 22 14 22 15 8 18 8 8 16 16 15 8  
Jan-vier, fé-vrier, mars, a-vril, mai, juin, juil-let, août, sep-tembre, oc-tobre, no-vembre,  
dé-cembre, kan-tième, tard.

5 Janvier, 1859. 10. J'ai reçu votre lettre du dix du mois dernier. 11. Boston, 12 Février, 1860. 12. Quel jour du mois est-ce aujourd'hui? 13. C'est le cinq. 14. Quel quantième du mois est-ce aujourd'hui? 15. C'est le sept. 16. Nouvelle-Orléans, 18 Mars, 1856. 17. Où passez-vous l'été? 18. Je le passe à la campagne. 19. Qu'est-ce que vos voisins cueillent? 20. Ils cueillent des fruits, et cette petite fille cueille des fleurs. 21. Aimez-vous la musique? 22. Oui, c'est ma passion. 23. Allez-vous au spectacle (au théâtre)? 24. Oui, je vais à l'opéra. 25. Quand cueillerez-vous vos pommes? 26. Je les cueillerai au mois d'octobre. 27. Je ne veux pas écrire mon thème à présent. 28. Vous ne devez pas dire *je veux* et *je ne veux pas*.

1. Is your sister going to the opera? 2. She is going there; I am going also to the play, but to another theater. 3. What flowers art thou gathering? 4. I am gathering roses and violets. 5. Wilt thou gather thy fruit to-day? 6. I shall not gather mine, but my brother will gather his, and our neighbors will gather theirs. 7. Do you pass the month of April here? 8. Yes, sir, but we shall pass the month of May in the country, and our neighbors will pass it there also. 9. March, April, and May are the months of spring, and June, July, and August are the months of summer. 10. I prefer September, October, and November to the months of winter. 11. Does your sister like music? 12. She likes it much; it is her passion. 13. Lend me this book, I pray you. 14. Very willingly, sir.

15. Do you like better to go to the French theater than to go to the opera? 16. I like better to go to the opera. 17. When will you gather your fruit? 18. I shall gather it in autumn. 19. Those little boys fall often because it has frozen much, and because it is slippery. 20. That man is afraid because he has enemies, and because he has no gun. 21. Why is that man discontented? 22. He is discontented because he has the headache, and his teeth pain him. 23. Do you breakfast late? 24. No, sir, I breakfast earlier than you. 25. Is there company at your house to-day? 26. There is none to-day, but there will be some to-morrow. 27. Will you please show me your letter? 28. I am quite willing. 29. I will not write my exercise now. 30. Children ought not to say, I will and I will not. 31. Some one has taken away my books.



## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. I have a fancy to go and work a little in the garden. 2. What do you wish to do there? 3. I wish to dig up (*bêcher*) a square (*un carré*) in order to put a few cabbages in it. 4. I will go with you; I like to work (*à*) the ground sometimes. 5. I have only one spade. 6. Send your boy to borrow that of the neighbor. 7. Yes, he has one. 8. Charles, go to Mr. B.'s and ask him (*demandez lui*) to lend me his spade, if he has no use for it, until (*jusqu'à*) this evening. 9. Very well, sir; have you not need of a hoe also? 10. Certainly (*sans doute*); but we have one: where is it? 11. It is at Mr. B.'s; he borrowed it yesterday morning. 12. Well, bring it if he has no need of it.

13. Do you often work in the garden? 14. The work which I do there is not extraordinary; I leave that to Charles. 15. This lettuce looks good (*a bonne mine*). 16. Yes, it is sufficiently fine. 17. I admire your garden; it is very pretty. It is not very large. 18. Sufficiently for you; you have no need of one very large; you keep (*tenez*) it very clean. 19. It is Charles who does all that; it is his work. 20. He does not look lazy. 21. No, he is a good fellow, and he has taste for work. 22. I see him coming (*venir*) with the tools; he did not stay long. 23. Well, gentlemen, take each one the tool which you wish, and let us see what you are going to do. 24. Give them to us. 25. I take the hoe; you are going to see something fine. 26. I like better to work alone. 27. As you please (*comme il vous plaira*), we can do this without you.

## 64.—SOIXANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## VERBS IN GER, CER, UER, AND IER.

*To seat, seating, seated.*

*Assoir, asseyant, assis, e.*

*J'assieds, tu assieds, il assied,*  
I seat, thou seatest, he seats,

*nous asseyons, vous asseyez, ils asseyent,*  
we seat, you seat, they seat.

*Will you seat? I shall seat.*

*Assièrez-vous? J'assièrai.\**

*To place, placing, placed.*

*Placer, plaçant, placé.*

*To eat. To travel.*

*Manger. Voyager.*

1. Verbs in *ger* insert a silent *e* after the *g*, and verbs in *cer* a cedilla under the *c*, in all terminations before *a* and *o*.

*Je mange, tu manges, il mange, nous mangeons, vous mangez, ils mangent,*  
I eat, thou eatest, he eats, we eat, you eat, they eat.

*Je voyageais, tu voyageais, il voyageait, nous voyagions, vous voyagiez, ils voyageaient,*  
I traveled, thou traveledst, he traveled, we traveled, you traveled, they traveled.

\* The forms *asseyerai* and *assoirai* are also used in the future.

1 20 1 5 17 8 1 13 1 13 5 1 17 5 1 5 13 23 1 5 13 5 1 7 13 1 13 5 6  
as-seoir, as-se-yant, as-sis, as-sieds, as-sied, as-se-yons, as-se-yez, as-se-yent, as-si-é-ral,  
1 6 1 3 1 4 3 6 20 12 1 6 3 5 12 1 7  
pla-cer, pla-çant, pla-cé, man-ger, vo-ya-ger, mange, ve-ya-geais.

Do you place? We place.

Placez-vous? Nous plaçons.

2. Verbs in *uer* take a dieresis over the *i* in the first and second person plural of the imperfect, as *nous jouions, vous jouiez*, we played, you played. Verbs in *ier* double the *i* in the same persons, as *nous étudions, vous étudiez*,\* we studied, you studied.

To suffer, suffering, suffered.

*Souffrir, souffrant, souffert, e.*

To cover, covering, covered.

*Couvrir, couvrant, couvert, e.*

3. *Souffrir, couvrir*, and their compounds, are varied like *ouvrir* (Lesson 55).

The sky, heaven. Each.

*Le ciel (pl. cieuz). Chaque, chacun.*

A cloud. Out of.

*Un nuage. Hors.*

An instrument. A flute.

*Un instrument. Une flûte.*

A violin. Practice.

*Un violon. La pratique.*

To play. To belong to.

*Jouer. Appartenir à, être à.*

4. *Jouer* takes *de* before the name of the instrument, and *à* before the game.

I play the violin, you play the flute.

*Je joue du violon, vous jouez de la flûte.*

To play ball. To play cards.

*Jouer à la balle. Jouer aux cartes.*

That violin belongs to my brother.

*Ce violon appartient (est) à mon frère.*

It belongs to him.

*Il lui appartient (il est à lui).*

Ready. Ready for dinner.

*Prêt. Prêt pour le dîner.*

5. *Prêt* takes *pour* before a noun, *à* before an infinitive.

He is ready to dine.

*Il est prêt à dîner.*

It requires much practice to speak French.

*Il faut beaucoup de pratique pour parler français.*

6. *Fâché* meaning *sorry* takes *de* before a noun, meaning *angry* it takes *contre*. It takes *de* before the infinitive.

I am sorry for your misfortune.

*Je suis fâché de votre malheur.*

He is angry at me.

*Il est fâché contre moi.*

I am very sorry to lose that.

*Je suis bien fâché de perdre cela.*

7. *Chaque* is an adjective, and always used with a noun; *chacun* is a pronoun, and always used without one.

Each scholar will come, and each one will have his lesson ready.

*Chaque élève viendra, et chacun aura sa leçon prête.*

8. All adjectives may be placed after their nouns when they are qualified by adverbs.

He has salt as fine as this.

*Il a du sel aussi fin que celui-ci.*

A very good book.

*Un livre bien bon.*

1. Où asseyez-vous cet enfant? 2. Je l'assieds sur cette chaise.  
3. Où le maître plaçait-il les enfants? 4. Il les plaçait sur les bancs.  
5. Nous plaçons ici les enfants. 6. J'ai les plumes que vous avez placées sur la table.  
7. Voyagez-vous plus que nous? 8. Non, monsieur, je voyage moins que vous.  
9. Votre frère voyageait-il l'été passé pendant qu'il était au Canada? 10. Il voyageait toujours.

\* This, however, is strictly according to the rule for forming the imperfect (Lesson 50).

*souf-frir, souf-frant, souf-fert, cou-vrir, cou-vrant, cou-vert, ciel, cieuz, chake, cha-cun, nu-age, hors, ina-tru-men-t, flûte, vi-o-lon, pra-ti-ke, jou-er, ap-par-te-nir, carte, prêt.*

11. Ne souffrez-vous pas du froid? 12. Je n'en souffre pas. 13. Ce pauvre homme n'a-t-il pas souffert du froid? 14. Il en a bien souffert. 15. De quoi couvrez-vous votre livre? 16. Je le couvre de papier. 17. De quoi le domestique a-t-il couvert les pommes de terre? 18. Il les a couvertes de terre. 19. Que mangez-vous? 20. Nous mangeons du fruit. 21. Mes papiers sont hors de leur place. 22. Ce pauvre enfant pleure de chagrin. 23. N'y a-t-il pas un nuage au ciel? 24. Il y en a plusieurs. 25. De quels instruments jouez-vous? 26. Nous jouons du violon et de la flûte. 27. Ces instruments vous appartiennent-ils (sont-ils à vous)? 28. Non, ils appartiennent (sont) au maître. 29. A qui (est cette flûte) cette flûte appartient-elle?

1. Is your task well done? 2. It is well done. 3. At (*de*) what is that lady laughing? 4. She is laughing at those children. 5. Are there not some clouds in the sky? 6. Yes, the sky is covered with clouds. 7. Has each scholar his task? 8. Each one has it all (*toute*) ready. 9. To whom does that instrument belong? 10. It belonged to the musician formerly (*autrefois*), but now it is mine. 11. Is the barber going up to his room? 12. He is going up there. 13. Were you playing on the flute while we were studying? 14. I was playing on the flute, and my brothers were playing on the violin. 15. Has each scholar his book? 16. Yes, sir, and each one studies well. 17. Are not your books out of their place? 18. My books are out of their place, and my papers also.

19. Did you eat much fruit when you dwelt in the country? 20. I did not eat much because I had not much. 21. Were you traveling last summer while I was going to school? 22. I traveled in the month of August. 23. Where will you seat that child? 24. I will seat him here in (*sur*) this chair. 25. That physician has much practice. 26. Are not December, January, and February the months of winter? 27. Yes, and March, April, and May are the months of spring. 28. June, July, and August also are the months of summer, and September, October, and November are the months of autumn. 29. Is that child weeping from rage (*rage*)? 30. No, sir, he is weeping from sorrow, because he has made some spots on my paper.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Where is Joseph? I have not seen him this morning. 2. He

is sleeping still. The lazy one! Go and call (*appeler*) him. 3. I have already called (*appelé*) him, but he did not answer me. 4. He did not hear you; did you open the door? 5. No; I am going to open it, and call him again. 6. Joseph, your father calls (*appelle*) you; come forthwith: what are you doing in bed (*au lit*)? 7. I am sleeping; it is good sleeping (*il fait bon dormir*) in the morning. 8. Yes, but it is not good sleeping all day (*toute la journée*). 9. Is it day already? 10. Is it day! do you not see the sun? 11. Is it not the moon? 12. Stay in bed, if you will; your father will come and call you, and make you know the difference (*différence*) that there is between (*entre*) the sun and the moon. 13. No, thank you; I see well that it is the sun. 14. Tell (*d*) my father that I am coming.

15. How is the weather out (*dehors*)? 16. It is very agreeable weather. 17. Did it rain (*a-t-il plu*) during the night? 18. No, sir, it was moonlight all night. 19. Open the window; it is a little dark in this room. 20. Will you have some fire? 21. No, it is too warm. 22. Had you finished your task when your father returned? 23. I had finished it.

## 65.—SOIXANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## FUTURE PERFECT TENSE.

1. THE FUTURE PERFECT tense is formed in French as in English, by joining the past participles to the future of the auxiliary: as,

*J'aurai eu, tu auras eu, il aura eu, nous aurons eu, vous aurez eu, ils auront eu,*  
I shall have had, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

*Je serai venu, tu seras venu, il sera venu, nous serons venus, vous serez venus,*  
I shall have come, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc.,  
*ils seront venus,* they will have come.

When I shall have received my money    *Quand j'aurai reçu mon argent, je vous paierai ce cheval.*  
I will pay you for this horse.

When he shall have breakfasted, he    *Quand il aura déjeuné, il sortira.*  
will go out.

You will have learned your lesson.    *Vous aurez appris votre leçon.*

We shall have gone home.    *Nous serons allés chez nous.*

They will have returned.    *Ils seront revenus.*

*To consent. To move.    Consentir (à bef. inf.). Remuer, mou-*  
*voir.\**

*Je meus, tu meus, il meut, nous mouvons, vous movez, ils meuvent,*  
I move, thou movest, he moves, we move, you move, they move.

\* *Mouvoir* means to set in motion; *se mouvoir*, to be in motion; *déménager* mean to change lodgings.

I consent to sell you my horse.

*To acquire. Acquired.*

Je consens à vous vendre mon cheval.

*Acquérir. Acquis, e.*

*J'acquiers, tu acquiers, il acquiert, nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils acquièrent,*  
I acquire, thou acquirest, he acquires, we acquire, you acquire, they acquire.

The merchant acquires credit.

*To die. Died.*

Le marchand acquiert du crédit.

*Mourir (être for auxiliary). Mort, e.*

*- Je meurs, tu meurs, il meurt, nous mourons, vous mourez, ils meurent,*  
I die, thou diest, he dies, we die, you die, they die.

The poor sometimes die of hunger.

Les pauvres meurent quelquefois de faim.

The carpenters are moving the school benches.

Les charpentiers meuvent les bancs de l'école.

You have acquired many friends.

Vous avez acquis beaucoup d'amis.

The sick man died this morning.

Le malade est mort ce matin.

The ball. A sickness, disease.

Le bal. Une maladie.

The lot. Anger.

Le sort. La colère.

That towel. Peace.

Cet essuie-main. La paix.

War. A just war.

La guerre. Une guerre juste.

During. Without doubt, certainly.

Durant. Sans doute.

2. *Durant* implies the whole time through; *pendant*, some period during that time.

The army will stay in Italy during the winter.

L'armée restera en Italie *durant* l'hiver.

They gained a battle during the winter.

Elle a gagné une bataille *pendant* l'hiver.

Does the barber appear angry?

Le barbier paraît-il fâché?

He appears so.

Il *le* paraît.

3. The pronoun *le* in French, like *so* in English, is often used in reference to a quality or circumstance previously mentioned. It may be taken as a general rule that when *so* of this kind is expressed, or can be understood in English, *le* is to be used in French.

Does she seem angry still?

Paraît-elle encore fâchée?

She seems so.

Elle *le* paraît.

4. When *le* used in this way represents an adjective, or a noun used adjectively, it is invariable; but when it represents a noun, or an adjective used as a noun, it agrees with it in gender and number.

Madam, are you sick? I am.

Madame, êtes-vous malade? Je *le*\* suis.

Are you the sick person? I am.

Êtes-vous la malade? Je *la*\* suis.

Are you ministers? We are.

Êtes-vous ministres? Nous *les*\* sommes.

Are you the ministers of the queen?

Êtes-vous les ministres de la reine?

We are.

Nous *les*\* sommes.

\* In the first of these four answers, *le* is invariable because it refers to an adjective, and in the third because it refers to a noun used adjectively; in the second it agrees because it refers to an adjective used as a noun, and in the fourth, because it refers to a noun.

1 5 12 1 12 1 127 1 127 1 5 21 1 127 12 12 16 11 12  
ac-ké-rir, ac-kia, ac-kiera, ac-kierf, ac-ké-rons, ac-kiérent, mou-rir, mort, meura, meurt,  
12 21 12 6 12 1 1 12 16 12 7 5 21 12 7 7 12 8  
mou-rons, mou-rez, meurent, bal, ma-la-die, sort, co-lère, es-sui-main, paix, guerre, du-rant.

1. Consentez-vous à me donner ces essuie-mains ? 2. Je consens à vous les donner. 3. Les charpentiers peuvent-ils mouvoir cette maison ? 4. Ils ne le peuvent pas. 5. Acquérez-vous beaucoup d'argent ? 6. Je n'en acquiers pas beaucoup. 7. Avez-vous acquis des amis ? 8. Nous en avons acquis quelques-uns. 9. Les pauvres meurent-ils quelquefois de froid ? 10. Quelques-uns meurent de froid en hiver. 11. Préférez-vous jamais la guerre à la paix ? 12. Non, je préfère toujours la paix à la guerre. 13. Voyagez-vous durant tout ce mois ? 14. Je voyagerai quelques jours seulement pendant l'été. 15. Allez-vous au bal ce soir ? 16. Non, monsieur, je vais au spectacle et ma sœur va au bal. 17. Ce petit garçon est-il en colère contre quelqu'un ? 18. Il est en colère contre son frère. 19. N'allez pas dans la ville ; la maladie y est. 20. Son sort est d'être malheureux. 21. Plaçons le malade sur cette chaise et asseyez l'enfant sur celle-là. 22. Sa maladie est longue. 23. Le médecin viendra sans doute ici ce soir. 24. Le voisin est mort hier ; et son fils est mort ce matin.

1. Can the servants move that cask ? 2. They can move it easily. 3. Does that man acquire credit ? 4. He acquires credit and profit. 5. Has he acquired money ? 6. He has acquired money and friends. 7. Do the poor often die of hunger ? 8. They often die of hunger in Ireland, and in (*dans*) other countries of Europe. 9. Do some die of cold ? 10. Some die of cold in winter. 11. He who has no courage dies a thousand times. 12. Are you going to the ball ? 13. No ; I am going to the theater, and my cousin is going to the ball. 14. Did you acquire much profit while you dwelt in the city ? 15. I did not acquire much. 16. Does anger move (*porte*) the soldier to that action (*action*) ? 17. Yes, sir, anger moves him to it. 18. Is your friend sick ? 19. Yes, and his disease is dangerous (*dangereuse*). 20. Do you wish for towels or napkins ? 21. I wish for towels.

22. Will your brother study much ? 23. Without doubt he will learn his lessons well. 24. There are some persons who prefer war to peace. 25. Does that scholar consent to sell his books ? 26. He consents to sell them. 27. Has that workman worked during all the week ? 28. He has worked all this month. 29. Do you like better to play cards than to play ball ? 30. No ; I prefer to play ball. 31. When I shall have finished my task, I will

play on the violin. 32. The scholar will have learned his lesson when the master comes. 33. Will you have read that book when I shall have need of it? 34. We shall have read it. 35. The scholars will have written their exercises when the master comes. 36. Madam, are you French? 37. I am. 38. Are you the sister of the Frenchman? 39. I am. 40. Gentlemen, are you soldiers? 41. We are. 42. Are you the soldiers of the king? 43. We are. 44. When did the general die? 45. He died this morning.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. It is (*il fait*) very agreeable in the country at present; there are many persons who are going there. 2. Yes, in summer the country is much more agreeable than the city. 3. The city is sad now; there are no amusements (*amusements*); every body is going to the country in order to pass the summer there. 4. The theater is shut, is it not? 5. Yes; I believe (*je crois*) that I have seen (*avoir vu*) the announcement (*l'annonce*) of a new theater which they are going to open next autumn. 6. I have not seen it, but I have been told that there will be one.

7. Do you often go to the theater? 8. No; I go there but rarely (*rarement*), but I go sufficiently often to the opera. 9. You love music. 10. It is my passion; there is nothing that I love so much. 11. Music is a thing very agreeable; but every body has not so much taste as you. 12. Do you not prefer the opera to the French theater? 13. I love them both (*tous deux*) sufficiently; but hardly know (*ne sais guère*) which I prefer. 14. How! you must not (*il ne faut pas*) say that. 15. I like a good play (*pièce*) better than a bad opera. 16. It is true that there is nothing more disagreeable (*désagréable*) to hear than bad music. 17. Wilt thou have written thy exercise when the master comes? 18. I shall have written it. 19. Are you English? 20. I am. 21. Are you the sister of Charles? 22. I am. 23. Are you the children of our neighbor? 24. We are.

## 66.—SOIXANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON

## IRREGULAR FUTURES.

*To hope. An action.*

*To fall to, becomes due. Fallen to.*

Your note falls due to-day.

*With all his might. Together.*

*Champagne wine. Life, living.*

*Espérer. Une action.*

*Échoir (defective). Échu.*

Votre billet échoit aujourd'hui.

*De toute sa force. Ensemble.*

Du vin de champagne. La vie.

---

<sup>6</sup> es-<sup>6</sup> pé-<sup>6</sup> rer, <sup>1</sup> ac-<sup>12</sup> tion, <sup>1</sup> é-<sup>21</sup> choir, <sup>5</sup> é-<sup>20</sup> chu, <sup>16</sup> force, <sup>8</sup> en-<sup>8</sup> semble, <sup>8</sup> cham-<sup>1</sup> pagne, <sup>12</sup> vie.

*Quite, perfectly.* Quite charming. *Tout à fait.* Tout à fait charmant.  
It is a note fallen due yesterday. C'est un billet échu depuis hier.

1. *De*, like *à*, before the infinitive, is to be repeated before every verb depending on the same word or phrase.

He refuses to eat and drink. Il refuse *de* manger et *de* boire.  
They have forgotten to read and write. Ils ont oublié *de* lire et *d'*écrire.  
It is he. It is not she. C'est lui. Ce n'est pas elle.

2. In phrases like these, where *ce* is the subject, *lui, elle, eux, elles*, are not to be used in the predicate in reference to animals and things, but *le, la, les*, must then be employed.

Is that your book? Yes, it is. Est-ce là votre livre? Oui, ce *l'est*.  
Are those your books? They are. Sont-ce là vos livres? Ce *les* sont.  
Are those your cousins? They are. Sont-ce là vos cousines? Ce sont *elles*.  
Are those the soldiers? They are. Sont-ce là les soldats? Ce sont *eux*.

3. The verb *être*, with *ce* for its subject, is plural only when followed by the third person plural.

It is we. It is you. It is they. C'est nous. C'est vous. Ce *sont* eux.  
It is he and his brother. C'est lui et son frère.  
I hope that he will come. J'espère qu'il viendra.

*To be worth, being worth, been worth.* *Valoir, valant, valu.*

*Je vaudrai, tu vaudras, il vaudra, nous vaudrons, vous vaudrez, ils vaudront,*  
I am worth, thou art worth, he is worth, we are worth, you are worth, they are worth.

*The future of VALOIR is irregular, thus :*

*Je vaudrai, tu vaudras, il vaudra, nous vaudrons, vous vaudrez, ils vaudront,*  
I shall be worth, thou wilt, etc., he will, etc., we shall, etc., you will, etc., they will, etc.

4. The learner has now had all the irregular futures. They are these :

INFINITIVE.	FUTURE.		INFINITIVE.	FUTURE.	
Asseoir,	<i>Assèrât,</i>	} in Lesson 64.	Pleuvr.,	<i>Pleuvra,</i>	} in Lesson 48.
	<i>Assèyerât,</i>		Pouvoir,	<i>Pourrà,</i>	
	<i>Assoirât,</i>		Savoir,	<i>Saurà,</i>	
Aller,	<i>Ira,</i>	" 49.	Tenir,	<i>Tiendra,</i>	" 52.
Avoir,	<i>Aura,</i>	" 47.	Valoir,	<i>Vaudrà,</i>	" 66.
Ouïllir,	<i>Ouïllera,</i>	" 68.	Voïr,	<i>Yerra,</i>	" 54.
Envoyer,	<i>Enverra,</i>	" 48.	Venir,	<i>Viendra,</i>	" 52.
Être,	<i>Sera,</i>	" 47.	Vouloir,	<i>Voudrà,</i>	" 61.
Falloir,	<i>Faudra,</i>	" 57.	and their compounds.*		
Faire,	<i>Fera,</i>	" 54.			

The terminating letters are always the same without any exception, as given in Lesson 47, *RAI, RAS, RA, RONS, REZ, RONT.*

5. *Acquérir, courir, and mourir*, drop *i* in the future, and make

*J'acquerrai, tu acquerras,* etc. *Je courrai, tu courras,* etc. *Je mourrai, tu mourras,* etc.  
I shall acquire, etc. I shall run, etc. I shall die, etc.

In these three futures the two *r*'s must both be sounded.

*Échoir*, to fall to, also makes the future *écherra*, etc.

I hope that the good lot will fall to J'espère que le bon lot lui *écherra*.  
him.

\* Except *prévoir* and *pouvoir*, compounds of *voir*, which have in the future *préverrai* and *pourverrai*.

1 20 1 8 1 22 17 17 1 21 1 6 1 17 6 1 7 6 18 6  
va-loir, va-lant, va-lu, vau-rai, vau-rai, va-lons, va-les, valent, vau-drai, ac-ker-rai, cour-rai,  
19 6 7 1  
mour-rai, é-cher-ra.



I shall die of this disease.  
 You will acquire many friends.  
 He will run with all his might.  
 A *bushel*. To turn.  
 His *due*. A bad cold.  
 The *brain*. The *breast*.  
 A cold in the head.  
 A cold on the chest.  
 A fever from a cold.  
 Do not move that table.

Je mourrai de cette maladie.  
 Vous acquerez beaucoup d'amis.  
 Il courra de toute sa force.  
 Un *boisseau*. Tourner.  
 Son *dû*. Un mauvais rhume.  
 Le *cerveau*. La *poitrine*.  
 Un rhume de cerveau.  
 Un rhume de poitrine.  
 Une fièvre de rhume.  
 Ne remuez pas cette table.

6. In phrases like the following, the measure of quantity, which takes *a* in English, takes *le* in French.

Apples are worth a dollar *a bushel*. Les pommes valent une piastre *le boisseau*.

Butter is worth twenty-five cents *a pound*. Le beurre vaut vingt-cinq sous *la livre*.

Flour will be worth ten dollars *a barrel*. La farine vaudra dix gourdes *le baril*.

1. Ce petit garçon court de toute sa force parce qu'il a peur de ce chien. 2. Ces enfants sont toujours ensemble, ils viendront sans doute ici ensemble. 3. Qu'avez-vous offert à cet homme? 4. Je lui ai offert du vin de champagne. 5. Espérez-vous qu'il pleuvra? 6. Nous espérons qu'il ne pleuvra pas. 7. Cet homme gagne-t-il sa vie à faire du beurre? 8. Non, il gagne sa vie à écrire. 9. Il fait beau temps. 10. Oui, il fait un temps tout à fait charmant. 11. Combien les pommes de terre valent-elles le boisseau? 12. Elles valent un dollar le boisseau. 13. Combien ce cheval peut-il valoir? 14. Il vaut cent dollars. 15. Vaudra-t-il un peu plus en hiver? 16. Non, il vaudra beaucoup moins en hiver. 17. Pourquoi tournez-vous la tête? 18. Je la tourne parce que je veux voir la personne qui vient. 19. Le commis vous donnera-t-il votre dû? 20. Il nous donnera toujours notre dû. 21. Votre billet échoit-il aujourd'hui? 22. Non, il écherra demain.

1. Will you have written your letters when the boy comes? 2. I shall have written them. 3. Do you hope to see your friends to-morrow? 4. I hope to see them this evening. 5. Will that workman do much work? 6. Without doubt he will work with all his might. 7. How does he gain his living? 8. He gains his living by making bricks. 9. You do not admire that lady; do you? 10. Yes, madam, she is perfectly amiable and perfectly beautiful. 11. How much may (*peut*) that ox be worth? 12. He is worth

only fifty dollars now, but he will be worth sixty in the spring. 13. What will that man drink? 14. He will drink some champagne wine.

15. Why do you turn your head? 16. I turn it because I hear a (*du*) noise. 17. Do you turn your head because one speaks to you? 18. No, sir, I turn it because I wish to see the man who is coming. 19. Does the shopkeeper give you your due? 20. Yes; he always gives each one his due. 21. How much is wheat worth a bushel? 22. It is worth a dollar a bushel. 23. Have you a cold in the head, or a cold on the chest? 24. I have a cold on the chest. 25. If you offer champagne wine to those men, will they drink it? 26. They will drink it. 27. What is the matter with that man? 28. He has a bad cold in the head. 29. Do not move those chairs. 30. Do not move them. 31. Will those children go to school together? 32. They will go there together. 33. Will you have dined when your friend comes? 34. We shall have dined. 35. We breakfast a little late, but we always dine early. 36. Did your friend die this week? 37. Yes, he died this morning.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What instrument of music do you prefer? 2. The violin, when it is well played. 3. It is an instrument so difficult that there are not many persons capable of (*capables de*) playing it well. 4. Whose (*à qui*) is that flute? 5. It is mine. 6. I have one, but mine is not so beautiful as yours. 7. Do you play? 8. Very little. 9. Who gives you lessons? 10. Mr. G.; I go to his house three times a (*par*) week. 11. It needs time in order to learn even (*même*) the flute. 12. If I know (how) to play it well in two years I shall be pleased. 13. It needs much practice in order to play well.

14. Good morning (*bonjour*), gentlemen; are you making music? 15. No, we are speaking of it, that is all. 16. Are you (an) amateur (*amateur*) of music, Mr. Charles? 17. Not much; I like reading better than the opera. 18. Music, however (*cependant*), is a thing very agreeable. 19. That is true; but you will not often see me put aside (*de côté*) a good book to listen to the best musician in the world. 20. There are few persons who think like (*comme*) you.

21. On what instruments do you play? 22. I play on the violin, and my friend plays on the flute. 23. Does this instrument belong to you? 24. Yes; it belongs to me. 25. Are you the relations of my friend? 26. We are. 27. Are these your papers? 28. They are. 29. Are these your brothers? 30. They are.

## 67.—SOIXANTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## NOUNS OF EPOCH AND QUANTITY.

To pay the labor of a day. Payer le travail d'une journée.

1. *Jour* is the epoch, day merely; *journée* is a quantity, all the day through.  
He will surely come the day that he Il viendra certainement le jour qu'il a  
has said, and will pass the whole dit, et il passera toute la journée  
day at your house. chez vous.

There is the same distinction in the following.

The morning. The morning (through). Le matin. La matinée.  
The evening. The evening (through). Le soir. La soirée.  
He will read all the morning. Il lira toute la matinée.  
They will sing all the evening. Elles chanteront toute la soirée.  
To succeed, attain to. Succeeded. Parvenir (à bef. inf.). Parvenu.

2. To succeed, to have success, is *réussir*; to come after, *succéder* à; to attain to, *parvenir*.

He succeeds well in his studies. Il réussit bien dans ses études.  
Louis Philip succeeded Charles X. Louis Philippe a succédé à Charles X.  
We succeeded in learning that. Nous parvenons à apprendre cela.  
He attains to the foot of the mountain. Il parvient au pied de la montagne.

But little, but few, scarcely any.

{ Ne before the verb, *guère* after it;  
without a verb, *guère* (de bef. a  
noun).

That man has hardly any money. Cet homme n'a guère d'argent.  
He has hardly any. Il n'en a guère.  
I have but few books. Je n'ai guère de livres.  
More, further, furthermore. No more. Plus, davantage. Ne plus.

3. *Plus* is used in the middle of a sentence, and *d'avantage* always at the end; *plus*, meaning *no more*, may be placed at the end. *D'avantage* is never followed by a noun, but is always used absolutely.

I study more than you. J'étudie plus que vous.  
That pleases me more. Cela me plaît davantage.  
Have you still more money? Avez-vous encore de l'argent?  
I have no more. Je n'en ai plus.  
He can do for you further. Il peut faire davantage pour vous.  
To be born. Born. Naître (être for auxiliary). Nê. Nê.

Je nais, tu nais, il naît, nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent.  
I am born, thou art born, he is born, we are born, you are born, they are born.  
I was born in America, you were born Je suis né en Amérique, vous êtes né  
in Europe. en Europe.

To clothe, clothed. To change. Vêtir, vêtu. Changer.

4. *Changer*, to lay aside one thing and take another, is followed by *de*; meaning to exchange, by *pour* or *contre*; and meaning to convert, by *en*.

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43 44 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53 54 55 56 57 58 59 60 61 62 63 64 65 66 67 68 69 70 71 72 73 74 75 76 77 78 79 80 81 82 83 84 85 86 87 88 89 90 91 92 93 94 95 96 97 98 99 100  
ma-ti-nê, soi-rê, par-ve-nir, par-ve-nu, rô-us-sir, suc-cé-der, guê-re, da-van-tage, naître,  
né, nais, naît, nais-sont, nais-ses, nais-sent, vê-tir, chan-gor.

He changes his hat.

We change our books for some pictures.

He changes water into wine.

*Weak.* His stomach is weak.

*Pure.* Nature.

*Credulous.* Beauty.

*Incredulous.* A question.

To ask questions. The beard.

*With good will, heartily.*

Il change de chapeau.

Nous changeons nos livres *pour* (or *contre*) des tableaux.

Il change de l'eau en vin.

*Faible.* Il a l'estomac faible.

*Pur.* La nature.

*Crédule.* La beauté.

*Incrédule.* Une question.

Faire des questions. La barbe.

*De bon cœur, de bon gré.*

1. Voyagerez-vous cet été? 2. Je voyagerai toute l'année. 3. Voulez-vous beaucoup de bœuf? 4. Je n'en veux guère. 5. Tout ce qui naît est sujet à mourir. 6. N'êtes-vous pas né en Europe? 7. Non, monsieur, je suis né en Amérique. 8. Le vieux soldat est-il mort ce mois-ci? 9. Non, madame, il est mort le dix juillet. 10. Où êtes-vous né? 11. Je suis né à New York. 12. Ces fleurs ne naissent-elles pas au printemps? 13. Si, monsieur, elles naissent au mois d'avril. 14. Cet homme riche a-t-il vêtu tous ses domestiques? 15. Il les a bien vêtus. 16. J'admire toutes les beautés de la nature. 17. Tous les enfants ne sont-ils pas crédules? 18. Ils sont bien crédules. Ces hommes sont bien incrédules. 19. Je cherche le barbier parce que j'ai la barbe longue. 20. Cette eau est-elle pure? 21. Elle est très-pure. 22. Cet enfant fait bien des questions. 23. Cet ouvrier travaille-t-il de bon cœur? 24. Il travaille de bon cœur toute l'année. 25. Combien de temps votre grand-père a-t-il vécu? 26. Il a vécu cent ans. 27. Apportez-moi un peu d'eau fraîche, je vous prie.

1. Where is the old soldier? 2. He is dead. 3. When did he die? 4. He died this year. 5. Where was that young man born? 6. He was born in Germany, the sixth of August, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-eight. 7. Are not all animals born feeble? 8. Yes, sir, all animals are born feeble. 9. Why do those travelers change their clothes (*habits*)? 10. They change them because they are wet. 11. Do you change your French book for English books? 12. No, sir, I change them for pictures. 13. Does not cold change water into ice (*glace*)? 14. Yes, it frequently changes it into ice in winter. 15. When will you receive more money? 16. I shall receive no more. 17. Have you much? 18.

I have hardly any. 19. Do you ask questions of the (*au*) master? 20. I ask him many questions. 21. Do you admire the beauties of nature? 22. I admire much the beauties of the earth and of the sky.

23. That man is looking for a barber because his beard is very long. 24. That child is too credulous, he believes all that they say to him. 25. Is not that man incredulous? 26. Yes, he does not believe what you have told him. 27. Does not that lady sing much? 28. She sings all the morning and all the evening. 29. Does her sister sing much? 30. No, she sings scarcely any, but she reads all day. 31. Does the barber work all the day? 32. He works all the year. 33. Do you drink much wine? 34. I drink scarcely any. 35. Will you travel next month? 36. No, I shall not travel any more; I prefer to stay at home; that pleases me more. 37. Spring succeeds to winter, and autumn to summer. 38. Has that merchant succeeded in becoming (*devenir*) rich? 39. Yes, he has attained to a great fortune (*fortune*). 40. Does the general succeed in (*d*) war? 41. No, he will succeed in nothing.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is there any news from Europe to-day? 2. Yes, they say that there has been a great fire (*incendie*) in London. 3. I have not heard that; what do they say of it? 4. That is all that I know of it; Mr. L. told it to me. 5. Do they speak of peace? 6. They say that peace is made. 7. I am delighted at it (*j'en suis charmé*); we need peace, for business (*car les affaires*) suffers much. 8. That is true; it will need time to bring them back to the condition in which (*la condition où*) they were before the war. 9. Do they know the conditions of the peace? 10. They have not yet learned them. 11. All merchandise is (*marchandises sont*) very dear, but if we have peace they will be cheaper.

12. Have they made a (*une*) good crop (*récolte*) of cotton this year? 13. Yes, pretty good. All the crops have been good. 14. Flour will be cheap next winter. 15. Without doubt; and if there is no war in Europe, cotton will be dear. 16. What will you say if we have war with England or France before one year (*an*)? 17. We must (*il faut*) hope that that will not be. 18. War will do no good to any one, and it can do us much evil.

19. Do those shopkeepers succeed in becoming rich? 20. They succeed in it. 21. Have you not a cold in the head? 22. No; I have a cold in the chest. 23. Has your sister gone to the theater? 24. No, she has gone to the ball.

## 68.—SOIXANTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST DEFINITE TENSE.

*Past definite of PARLER, to speak.*

*Je parlai, tu parlas, il parla, nous parlâmes, vous parâtes, ils parlèrent,*  
 I spoke, thou speakest, he spoke, we spoke, you spoke, they spoke.

1. All verbs of the first conjugation follow this model in the past definite.

2. This tense is used only of time which is limited to the past, and separated from the present by at least one day. If the time spoken of therefore does not exclude the present day, the past indefinite must be used, and not the past definite; thus,

I spoke (have spoken) to your brother. *J'ai parlé* à votre frère.  
 I spoke to him this week. *Je lui ai parlé* cette semaine.  
 I spoke to him last week. *Je lui parlai* la semaine dernière.

In the first of the above phrases the present day is not excluded, for nothing is said of the time. In the second phrase it is not excluded, for this week includes the present day. In these therefore the past indefinite is used. In the last, the past week excludes the present day, and the past definite is therefore used.

The same distinction is illustrated in the following, where (*ex.*) denotes *present day excluded*, and (*n. ex.*) *present day not excluded*.

I was at your house this morning ( <i>n. ex.</i> ).	<i>J'ai été</i> chez vous ce matin.
I went to your house on Thursday ( <i>ex.</i> ).	<i>J'allai</i> chez vous jeudi.
He mended my coat ( <i>n. ex.</i> ).	Il <i>a raccommodé</i> mon habit.
He mended it last week ( <i>ex.</i> ).	Il <i>le raccommoda</i> la semaine dernière.
He broke his pen to-day ( <i>n. ex.</i> ).	Il <i>a cassé</i> sa plume aujourd'hui.
I broke mine on Friday ( <i>ex.</i> ).	<i>Je cassai</i> la mienne vendredi.
They bought my horse ( <i>n. ex.</i> ).	Ils <i>ont acheté</i> mon cheval.
They bought him last summer ( <i>ex.</i> ).	Ils <i>l'achetèrent</i> l'été passé.
We found your pencil ( <i>n. ex.</i> ).	Nous <i>avons trouvé</i> votre crayon.
We found it on Saturday ( <i>ex.</i> ).	Nous <i>le trouvâmes</i> samedi.
You traveled this summer ( <i>n. ex.</i> ).	Vous <i>avez voyagé</i> cet été.
You traveled last summer ( <i>ex.</i> ).	Vous <i>voyagâtes</i> l'été dernier.
<i>To cost. To ask.</i>	<i>Coûter. Demander</i> (à or de bef. inf.).
<i>To pay, to pay for. To steal, rob.</i>	<i>Payer. Voler.</i>

3. These last three verbs, as also *acheter*, to buy, and *prendre*, to take, when followed by objects both of the person and thing, take the thing for the direct, and the person for the indirect object.

Do you pay that man for the carriage?	Payez-vous la voiture à cet homme?
I pay him for it.	Je la lui paie.
I ask the scholar for the book.	Je demande le livre à l'écolier.
I ask him for it.	Je le lui demande.
I take it from him.	Je le lui prends.
He buys it for them.	Il le leur achète.
They have stolen it from me.	On me l'a volé.

4. The above-mentioned verbs with a single object always take the direct; and *demand* then means to ask for.

<sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
 par-lai, las, la, lâmes, lâtes, lèrent, coû-ter, de-man-der, pa-yer, vo-ler.

Ask for my father.  
The neighbor has been robbed.  
His fruit has been stolen.  
Pay the man. Pay for it.  
How much does he pay for it?  
It costs him a hundred dollars.  
It is a good *price*.

Demandez mon père.  
On a volé le voisin.  
On a volé son fruit.  
Payez l'homme. Payez-le.  
Combien le paie-t-il?  
Il lui coûte cent gourdes.  
C'est un bon *prix*.

1. Le maître vous a-t-il donné ce livre? 2. Oui, il me le donna vendredi. 3. Quand avez-vous acheté cette maison? 4. Je l'achetai l'hiver passé *or* dernier. 5. Où allâtes-vous lundi? 6. Nous allâmes à l'école, et nos cousins y allèrent aussi. 7. Où allas-tu dimanche? 8. J'allai à l'église. 9. Quand avez-vous trouvé le livre que vous aviez perdu? 10. Je le trouvai la semaine dernière. 11. Combien vous coûte ce cheval? 12. Il me coûte deux cents dollars. 13. Avez-vous payé la vache au paysan? 14. Je la lui ai payée. 15. Le prix de ce drap, n'est-il pas élevé? 16. Non, le prix est bas. 17. Avez-vous demandé le fruit au jardinier? 18. Je le lui ai demandé. 19. On a volé le manteau au jardinier? 20. On le lui a volé. 21. Combien cette voiture vous coûte-t-elle? 22. Elle me coûte cinq cents gourdes. 23. C'est un prix très élevé.

1. Did you buy the countryman's apples? 2. I bought them of him. 3. When did you buy them? 4. I bought them last month. 5. Did you pay him for them then? 6. No, I paid him for them last week. 7. When did you ask the master for his book? 8. We asked him for it on Tuesday. 9. Did you ask for the newspapers at the same time? 10. We did not ask for them. 11. Has that man lost any thing? 12. Some one has stolen from him his cloak. 13. Do not those horses cost more than they are worth? 14. No, they are worth more than they cost. 15. Where is your horse? 16. It has been stolen from me. 17. Was it stolen last week? 18. Yes, it was stolen last week, on Wednesday. 19. What day of the month is it? 20. It is the eleventh. 21. Has the servant robbed his master? 22. Yes, he has stolen from him much money.

23. How much may (*peut*) that cow be worth? 24. She is worth only thirty dollars. 25. How much are peaches worth a bushel? 26. They are worth two dollars a bushel. 27. Is it not a high price? 28. No, it is not high. 29. When did your cousins buy those beautiful pictures? 30. They bought them last summer. 31. When did the tailor mend your coat? 32. He mended it on

Thursday. 33. Are these your books? 34. Yes, they are. 35. Are these your little sisters? 36. Yes, they are. 37. Miss, are you French? 38. Yes, sir, I am. 39. Are you the sister of that Frenchman? 40. Yes, sir, I am. 41. Does not that lady appear perfectly amiable? 42. She appears so. 43. Your brother likes music; on what instrument does he play? 44. He plays on the flute and on the violin.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Does Peter B. live near here (*près d'ici*)? 2. Yes, he lives in this street; are you acquainted with him? 3. Very well; we have been together at school during more than (*de*) a year, and I have still some books that are his. 4. He is a young man of an excellent character (*caractère*), and quite charming. 5. We have always been good friends, and I have a great desire (*bien envie*) to see him. 6. If you wish it, I will take you to his house this evening. 7. I thank you, that will be impossible for me; I expect this evening a friend; but I will go with you another evening of this week. 8. Well, what day is it to-day? 9. It is Tuesday. 10. I cannot go to-morrow, but Thursday or Friday I shall be at your service. 11. Thank you; Thursday, then, if it be not bad weather, we will go to see him.

12. What do you think of London? 13. It is an immense (*immense*) city, but it is not a beautiful city. 14. Are not the houses beautiful there? 15. There are some beautiful and very large ones, but those of Paris are still more so. 16. I must go to Paris one day; I desire much to see it.

## 69.—SOIXANTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST DEFINITE CONTINUED.

The past definite is generally treated by French grammarians as a primitive tense. Rules for its formation, however, will be useful to the English learner.

1. The past definite of all French verbs may be formed as follows: In the FIRST CONJUGATION, as we have seen, change *er* final of the infinitive into

AI, AS, A, ÂMES, ÂTES, ÉSENT.

In the SECOND and FOURTH, *ir* and *re* final, into

IS, IS, IT, ÎMES, ÎTES, ÎRENT.

Thus *finir*, to finish, and *vendre*, to sell, make

<i>Je finis,</i>	<i>tu finis,</i>	<i>il finit,</i>	<i>nous finîmes,</i>	<i>vous finîtes,</i>	<i>ils finirent,</i>
I finished,	thou finishedst,	he finished,	we finished,	you finished,	they finished.
<i>Je vendis,</i>	<i>tu vendis,</i>	<i>il vendit,</i>	<i>nous vendîmes,</i>	<i>vous vendîtes,</i>	<i>ils vendirent,</i>
I sold,	thou soldest,	he sold,	we sold,	you sold,	they sold.

finis, finit, finîmes, finîtes, finirent.



In the third, *revoir*, into

	US,	US,	UT,	ÊTES,	ÊTES,	URENT.
Thus, <i>recevoir</i> , to receive, makes						
<i>Je reçus,</i>	<i>tu reçus,</i>	<i>il reçut,</i>	<i>nous reçûmes,</i>	<i>vous reçûtes,</i>	<i>ils reçurent,</i>	
I received,	thou receivest,	he received,	we received,	you received,	they received.	

2. To the above rule must be added the three following remarks :

First, verbs which have the past participle in *is* or *it* make the past definite by changing the *is* or *it* into the terminations of the second and fourth conjugations, *is*, *it*, *it*, etc.

Thus *mettre*, past part. *mis*, and *dire*, past part. *dit*, make

<i>Je mis,</i>	<i>tu mis,</i>	<i>il mit,</i>	<i>nous mîmes,</i>	<i>vous mîtes,</i>	<i>ils mirent,</i>
I put,	thou puttest,	he put,	we put,	you put,	they put
<i>Je dis,</i>	<i>tu dis,</i>	<i>il dit,</i>	<i>nous dîmes,</i>	<i>vous dîtes,</i>	<i>ils dirent,</i>
I said,	thou saidst,	he said,	we said,	you said,	they said

Second, all irregular verbs of the second and fourth conjugations, which have the past participle in *u*, except *ôûir*, *battre*, *rompre*, and their compounds, have this tense like the third conjugation, changing *u* final into *us*, *us*, *ut*.

Thus *courir*, past part. *couru*, and *boire*, past part. *bu*, make

<i>Je courus,</i>	<i>tu courus,</i>	<i>il courut,</i>	<i>nous courûmes,</i>	<i>vous courûtes,</i>	<i>ils coururent,</i>
I ran,	thou rankest,	he ran,	we ran,	you ran,	they ran.
<i>Je bus,</i>	<i>tu bus,</i>	<i>il but,</i>	<i>nous bûmes,</i>	<i>vous bûtes,</i>	<i>ils burent,</i>
I drank,	thou drankest,	he drank,	we drank,	you drank,	they drank.

Third, all verbs in *aindre*, *etndre*, *otndre*, and *utre*, form this tense by changing *ant* of the present participle into *is*, *is*, *it*, etc.

Thus *craindre*, to fear, present participle, *craignant*, make

<i>Je craignis,</i>	<i>tu craignis,</i>	<i>il craignit,</i>	<i>nous craignîmes,</i>	<i>vous craignîtes,</i>	<i>ils craignirent,</i>
I feared,	thou fearest,	he feared,	we feared,	you feared,	they feared.

*Atteindre*, to attain to, *atteignant*, makes *s'atteignis*, *tu atteignis*, etc.

*Joindre*, to join, *joignant*, makes *je joignis*, *tu joignis*, *il joignit*, etc.

*Cuire*, to cook, *cuisant*, makes *je cuisis*, *tu cuisis*, *il cuisit*, etc.

To sew. *Sewer.*

*Coudre. Cousu.*

<i>Je couds,</i>	<i>tu couds,</i>	<i>il coud,</i>	<i>nous cousons,</i>	<i>vous cousez,</i>	<i>ils cousent,</i>
I sew,	thou sewest,	he sews,	we sew,	you sew,	they sew.

That tailor sews well. He has sewed Ce tailleur coud bien. Il a cousu des boutons à mon habit.

To resolve, to solve. *Resolved.*

*Résoudre. Résolu, and résous.\**

<i>Je résolus,</i>	<i>tu résolus,</i>	<i>il résolut,</i>	<i>nous résolûmes,</i>	<i>vous résolûtes,</i>	<i>ils résolurent,</i>
I resolve,	thou resolvest,	he resolves,	we resolve,	you resolve,	they resolve.

It is fog changed into rain.

C'est du brouillard résous en pluie.

Have they resolved upon peace or war?

A-t-on résolu la paix ou la guerre?

He has solved the question.

Il a résolu la question.

1. Ces servantes cousent-elles bien ?
2. Elles cousent tout aussi bien que le tailleur.
3. Le tailleur a-t-il cousu vos pantalons ?
4. Il les a cousus.
5. Qui a cassé la croisée ?
6. Le domestique la

\* *Résous* is used only in the sense of *changed into*. It is not used in the feminine.

4	22	23	24	25	26	12	13	22	7	12	13	24	25	26	12
re-çus,	en-çus,	cûmes,	cûtes,	curent,	mis,	cou-rus,	bus,	cral-gais,	joindra,	joignant,	joignis,				
1	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20	21
at-teindre,	at-tei-gnant,	at-tei-gnis,	cuire,	cui-zant,	cui-zis,	coudre,	cou-su,	couds,	coud,	cous-					
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31	32	33	34	35	36
sons,	cou-sez,	cousent,	ré-zoudre,	ré-zo-lu,	ré-zous,	ré-zout,	ré-zol-vons,	ré-zol-vez,	ré-zolvent.						

cassa mardi. 7. Avez-vous lu le livre allemand que je vous ai prêté? 8. Oui, monsieur, je le lus le mois dernier. 9. Le traduisites-vous en même temps? 10. Non, je l'ai traduit cette semaine. 11. Conduisites-vous l'étranger à l'église dimanche? 12. Nous l'y conduisimes dimanche, et mon frère le conduisit au spectacle lundi. 13. Parlas-tu au général quand tu le vis à Londres l'été dernier? 14. Je ne lui parlai pas. 15. Reçûtes-vous ma lettre la semaine dernière? 16. Nous la reçûmes lundi, et nous la lûmes aussitôt, et nos amis la lurent aussi. 17. Vendis-tu tes chevaux samedi? 18. Oui, et mes cousins vendirent les leurs en même temps? 19. Quand as-tu lu ce livre français? 20. Je le lus samedi, et mon frère le lut dimanche. 21. Que coude ce tailleur? 22. Il coude mon habit.

1. Do those maid-servants sew well? 2. They do not sew so well as the tailor. 3. Have they sewed any thing for you? 4. They have sewed some buttons on my coat. 5. Have you been to the neighbor's this week? 6. Yes, sir, I went there on Monday, and I went there again yesterday. 7. Didst thou speak to the general on Tuesday? 8. I spoke to him, and my brother spoke to him also. 9. When did you find those beautiful flowers? 10. We found them last week in the woods. 11. Hast thou drunk the wine which I sent thee yesterday? 12. I drank of it yesterday, and my brother drank of it also; we found it very good. 13. Didst thou finish thy writing yesterday? 14. Yes, I finished it early.

15. When did you read the first volume of that history? 16. We read it last winter, and my father read it also. 17. Did you read the second volume at the same time (*époque*)? 18. We did not read it, but our sisters read it. 19. Have you translated that exercise into French? 20. I translated it yesterday, and my brother translated it also. 21. Did you translate it into Spanish the same day? 22. We translated it, and our cousins translated it also. 23. How old is your brother? 24. He is not quite twenty-five years old. 25. Has the gardener many apples? 26. He has hardly any. 27. Do you study German? 28. No, sir, I do not study it any more. 29. Does your brother study it still? 30. Yes, he studies German and French.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What will you do when you are in the country? 2. We

shall read much, and we shall write many letters. 3. When the gardener offers you fruit, will you take it? 4. I shall take it. 5. I am going to tell you the names of the months, and to count them at (*en*) the same time. 6. January, one; February, two; March, three; April, four; May, five; June, six; July, seven; August, eight; September, nine; October, ten; November, eleven; December, twelve. 7. In the (*au*) month of January it is very cold, and the days are very short. 8. In the month of February it is very cold still, but the days are a little longer; the night does not come so quick (*vite*), and in the morning it is day a little sooner. 9. The country is still very sad. 10. Do you know that this month is the shortest of all? 11. It has only twenty-eight days, while (*tandis que*) the others have thirty, and some thirty-one. 12. January is the first month, and February is the second.

13. Did your cousin read much while he was at your house? 14. He read much, and he wrote many letters. 15. When I come to the city, will you know it? 16. I shall know it. 17. When thou hast a master, wilt thou learn the French language? 18. I shall learn it, and my brother will learn it also. 19. When the master speaks to the scholars in French, will they comprehend him? 20. They will comprehend him.

## 70.—SOIXANTE-DIXIÈME LEÇON.

### PAST DEFINITE CONTINUED.

The learner has now been made acquainted with the imperfect, past indefinite, and past definite tenses. As these divisions of past time do not correspond to any English tenses, they require especial attention, and the following additional rule and illustrations will serve to explain more clearly their use.

1. If the verb expresses something past, which is *habitual*, *repeated*, or *continuous*,\* it must be in the *imperfect tense*; if it do not express that, and refers to a time including the present day,† the *past indefinite* must be used; but if it refer to a time excluding the present day, the *past definite* is to be used.

Did you ever see ( <i>n. ex.</i> ) President T.?	<i>Avez-vous jamais vu le président T.?</i>
Yes, when I was ( <i>cont.</i> ) in Washington last winter I saw ( <i>ex.</i> ) him.	Oui, quand j'étais à Washington, je le vis l'hiver dernier.
When did you find ( <i>n. ex.</i> ) your glove?	Quand avez-vous trouvé votre gant?
Yesterday; as I was looking ( <i>cont.</i> ) for my handkerchief, I found ( <i>ex.</i> ) my glove.	Hier, comme je cherchais mon mouchoir, je trouvais mon gant.
Who broke ( <i>n. ex.</i> ) your mirror?	Qui a cassé votre miroir ( <i>glace</i> )?
My brother broke it last week ( <i>ex.</i> ); he was playing ( <i>cont.</i> ) with his	C'est mon frère qui le cassa la semaine dernière; il jouait avec sa balle,

\* These three qualities are essentially the same; for what is *habitual*, and what is *repeated*, may be regarded as *continuous* or *unfinished*. Hence the name IMPERFECT.

† If the time referred to be the present day, the present week, month, year, or age, or, if the time be not specified, the present day is included.

ball, and he threw (*ex.*) it just in the middle of my glass.

et il la *jeta juste* au milieu de ma *glace* (mon miroir).

2. *Glace* is a *mirror* of a large size.

Did you receive (*n. ex.*) my note?

*Avez-vous reçu* mon billet?

We received it Saturday (*ex.*) while we were breakfasting (*cont.*).

Nous le *reçûmes* samedi pendant que nous *déjeunions*.

3. In conversation, when no importance is attached to the time, the past indefinite is often used for the past definite,—i. e., it is used when the present day is excluded; but not the opposite,—the past definite is not to be used when the present day may be included. We may say, *Je lui AI PARLÉ hier,\* la semaine dernière*, etc., but not, *Je lui PARLAI aujourd'hui cette semaine*, etc.

4. In historical writing, and in narratives of events long past,† the past indefinite is not to be used; as,

Napoleon, the first consul, gained the celebrated victory of Marengo over the Austrians, the 14th of June, 1800.

Napoléon, premier consul, *remporta* la célèbre victoire de Marengo sur les Autrichiens, le 14 Juin, 1800.

Cæsar reduced Spain, and conquered Gaul; he penetrated even into Germany; he subdued Egypt.

César *réduisit* l'Espagne et *conquit* la *Gaule*; il *pénétra* jusqu'en Allemagne; il *soumit* l'Égypte.

A remedy. To look at.

Un *remède*. *Regarder*.

To be right. To be wrong.

*Avoir raison* (*de bef. inf.*). *Avoir tort* (*de bef. inf.*).

The shore. The sea.

Le *rivage*. La *mer*.

Learned. Interesting.

*Savant*. *Intéressant*.

Ingenuous. Along.

*Ingénieux*. *Le long de*.

Hardly, scarcely. Without the knowledge of.

*À peine*. *À l'insu de*.

Without his knowledge.

*À son insu*.

4. To be worth, to possess, we have seen, is *être riche de*; to be worth in intrinsic value is *valoir*.

To be worth more, to be better.

*Valoir mieux*.

You are worth more (better) than he.

Vous valez mieux que lui.

\* The use of the past indefinite for the past definite takes place by a kind of syllepsis with the word *recently*, or some one equivalent; hence when the time is meant to be definitely and prominently stated, the change is not made.

† In continued narration of events, even of the present day, the past definite may be used, as seen in the following:

This morning I met Mr. A. in the park. I saluted him, he returned my politeness, and continued his way; I followed him with my eyes. At the moment when he arrived in Beacon-street, I saw him overthrown by a horse which was excited. I was very much frightened. I ran up the steps. I rushed toward my friend, I raised him, and asked him if he was not wounded. "No," he replied to me, laughing. "thank God, I have had no harm but the harm of fear."

Ce matin j'ai rencontré monsieur A. dans le parc, je l'ai salué, il m'a rendu ma politesse, et il a continué son chemin. Je le *suis* des yeux. Au moment où il *arriva* dans Beacon-street, je le *vis* renverser par un cheval qui s'était emporté. Je *fus* très-effrayé, je *montai* l'escalier en courant, je me *précipitai* vers mon ami, je le *relevai*, et je lui *demandai* s'il n'était point blessé. "Non," me *répondit-il*, en riant, "Dieu merci, je n'ai aucun mal que le mal de peur."

1 10 2 21 5 1 17 6 12 4 7 4 1 6 12 1 7 1 2 14 8 5  
Na-po-lé-on, Cé-zar, Gau-le, É-gypt, re-mède, re-gar-der, ri-vage, mer, an-vant, in-té-res-  
sant, in-gé-nieux, peine, in-su.

He is worth fifty thousand dollars. Il est riche de cinquante mille dollars.  
 He is worth more (better) than his brother. Il vaut mieux que son frère.

1. Avez-vous lu mon nouveau livre? 2. Oui, quand j'étais à la campagne l'été dernier, je le trouvai chez mon ami, et je le lus.  
 3. Quand avez-vous fini d'écrire votre thème? 4. Hier, pendant que vous récitiez votre leçon, je le finis. 5. Avez-vous des chevaux?  
 6. Je n'en ai pas à présent, j'en avais trois le mois passé; mais, j'en vendis un la semaine dernière, j'en donnai un aussi dimanche à mon ami et l'on m'a volé le troisième hier au soir. 7. Que regardez-vous?  
 8. Je regarde ces tableaux. 9. N'avez-vous pas tort de parler à cet homme? 10. Non, j'ai raison de lui parler, parce qu'il est mon ami.  
 11. Est-ce que je ne vaudrais pas autant que mon frère? 12. Vous valez mieux que lui. 13. Où désirez-vous aller? Je désire aller le long du rivage de la mer.  
 14. Avez-vous demeuré longtemps à New York? J'y ai été à peine deux jours. 15. Le malade a-t-il pris son bain? 16. Il le prit (l'a pris) hier matin.  
 17. Cet homme est-il savant? 18. Il est fort savant dans l'histoire.  
 19. Mon cousin partit hier à mon insu.

1. Do you sometimes go along the shore of the sea? 2. Yes, sir, I often go on the shore of the sea; I like to look at the sea and the sky.  
 3. Have you thrown away your gloves? 4. Yes; I threw them away yesterday, because they were worth nothing. 5. That man is studious; is he not learned?  
 6. Yes, he is well versed (*versé*) in history. 7. Who broke that glass? 8. That child let it fall yesterday.  
 9. That lady looks interesting. 10. Yes, she is interesting and beautiful; she is not so tall as she appears, but her brother is taller than he appears.  
 11. Has the sick man taken the remedy? 12. He took it day before yesterday, and it has done him good.  
 13. Am I not worth as much as my cousin? 14. You are worth more than he.  
 15. Will you be long in the country? 16. I shall be there hardly two days.

17. Is that workman ingenious? 18. He is very ingenious.  
 19. Did your brother buy that horse without your knowledge? 20. He bought him without my knowledge, and without the knowledge of my father.  
 21. When thou wast dining with (*chez*) the general on Saturday, didst thou taste his best wine? 22. I did not taste it, because I never drink wine; but the captain drank of it, and found it very good.  
 23. That man looks interesting; are

you acquainted with him? 24. Yes, sir; he is learned, ingenious, and interesting. 25. Madam, are you sick? 26. I am. 27. Are you the wife of the captain? 28. I am. 29. Gentlemen, are you physicians? 30. We are. 31. Are you the physicians of the king? 32. We are.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. London is the principal (*principale*) city or the capital (*la capitale*) of England. 2. Edinburgh (*Edinbourg*) is the capital of Scotland, and Dublin is the capital of Ireland. 3. These three kingdoms belong to the same prince, whom they call (*appelle*) king of England. 4. To the east of England one finds Denmark, of which the capital is Copenhagen (*Copenhague*). 5. The capital of Sweden is Stockholm. 6. To the east of Sweden one finds Russia, which is a very large country, of which the capital is Moscow.

7. Where were you yesterday evening? I looked for you every where. 8. I was at the theater; had you need to see me? 9. No; I had nothing to do, and I desired to take a walk (*faire une promenade*). 10. Where did you wish to go? 11. I had a desire to go and see the Miss C.'s. 12. Well, let us go there this evening. 13. Very willingly; have you seen them lately (*dernièrement*)? 14. I saw them the past week in the street, as they were going to my sister's. 15. I have not had the time to go and see them often this winter. 16. I am very much occupied (*très-occupé*) all day, and often it is necessary for me to pass the evening in writing (*à écrire*).

## 71.—SOIXANTE-ET-ONZIÈME LEÇON.

## VOICI AND VOILÀ.

1. When something present is pointed out, *there is, there are, here is, here are, this is, that is, these are, those are*, are rendered as follows:

*Here is, here are, this is, these are, behold.*      *Voici* (contraction of *vois ici*).

*There is, there are, that is, those are, behold.*      *Voilà* (contraction of *vois là*).

There is your cloak. There it is.      *Voilà votre manteau. Le voilà.*  
Here are your spectacles. Here they are.      *Voici vos lunettes. Les voici.*

There he is. There is some.

*Le voilà. En voilà.*

Here I am. Here we are.

*Me voici. Nous voici.*

He is looking for the towel which is here.

*Il cherche l'éponge-main que voici.*

I seek him who is there.

*Je cherche celui que voilà.*

Here she comes.

*La voici qui vient.*

There is what he wishes for.

*To fatigue, to tire. Yes, indeed.*

Voilà ce qu'il veut.

*Fatiguer. Si or si fait.*

2. *Si fait* is used familiarly (and rather inelegantly) to affirm a fact which another denies or calls in doubt; as we use *yes, it is; yes, he does*, etc. It is regarded by some as a vulgarism; and *et* alone, or *pardonnez-moi*, is to be preferred.

You have not seen my brother.

Vous n'avez pas vu mon frère.

Yes, I have; I saw him this morning.

Si (or si fait), (or pardonnez-moi); je l'ai vu ce matin.

You do not know me.

Vous ne me connaissez pas.

Yes, I do; I know you well.

Si, madame, je vous connais bien.

I believe that he never comes here.

Je crois qu'il ne vient jamais ici.

Yes, he does; he comes here often.

Si, monsieur (or pardonnez-moi), il y vient souvent.

*At your service, at your disposal, at your command.*

*A votre service, à votre disposition, à vos ordres.*

*From time to time, occasionally.*

*De temps en temps.*

*At least. Some good spectacles.*

*Au moins. De bonnes lunettes.*

*The grain. To accept.*

*Le grain, les grains. Accepter.*

3. *Grain*, as a collective noun, is used in the plural to express different qualities or kinds of grain.

A dollar more. A dollar less.

Un dollar de plus. Un dollar de moins.

A sou too much. A sou too little.

Un sou de trop. Un sou de moins.

Do not give him a cent more, nor a cent less.

Ne lui donnez pas un sou de plus ni un sou de moins.

He has neither too much nor too little.

Il n'a ni trop ni trop peu.

A rock. What distance, how far?

Un rocher. Quelle distance

A quarter. An hour.

Un quart. Une heure.

A step, pace. Half.

Un pas. Demi.

Almost. Come then.

Presque. Venez donc.

4. *Donc* is sometimes used for mere emphasis.

*Far. About, nearly.*

*Loin. Environ.*

How far is it from here to that rock?

Quelle distance y a-t-il d'ici à ce rocher?

5. In speaking of the distance to any place, meaning *from here* to the place, *d'ici* must not be omitted in French, unless *jusques* be used.

Is it far to the hotel?

Y a-t-il loin d'ici à l'hôtel?

It is about two miles and a quarter.

Il y a environ deux milles et (un) quart.

I am going as far as the river.

Je vais jusqu'à la rivière.

6. *Demi* is an adjective, and is invariable when placed before its noun, to which it is then always joined by a hyphen; when placed after the noun, it agrees with it in gender, and is always singular; as,

Half an hour. An hour and a half.

Une demi-heure. Une heure et demie.

1. Vous cherchez de l'eau pure, en voici. 2. Quel livre voulez-

1 12 6 7 12 14 1 8 6 15 8 12 3 1 11 1 4 12 20 16  
fa-ti-guer, ser-vice, grain, ak-cep-ter, ro-cher, dis-tance, karé, heure, pas, de-mi, loin,  
8 12 21 17 6  
en-vi-ron, té-tel.

vous ? 3. Je veux celui que voilà. 4. Voici ce que je cherche. 5. Voilà un arbre sur lequel il y a des oiseaux. 6. Voici un jardin où il y a du fruit. 7. Voilà votre ami ; est-il venu ici ce matin ? 8. Il y est venu de très-bonne heure. 9. Voici de l'eau pure et fraîche ; en voulez-vous ? 10. Cette homme lit-il sans lunettes ? 11. Non, il ne peut pas lire sans lunettes. 12. Ce garçon a l'air fatigué ? 13. Il est fatigué parce qu'il a couru toute la journée. 14. Voulez-vous du vin ? en voici à votre service. 15. Acceptez-vous ce que je vous donne ? 16. Je l'accepte. 17. Avez-vous dix dollars de plus à ma disposition ? 18. Oui, j'en ai cent de plus, qui seront à vos ordres quand vous en aurez besoin. 19. Cette femme a six fils et quatre filles. 20. Allez-vous quelquefois au spectacle ? 21. J'y vais de temps en temps. 22. Y a-t-il loin d'ici à l'hôtel ? 23. Il y a près d'un mille et demi. 24. Il y a environ cent pas d'ici à ce rocher.

1. There is my exercise ; it is short. 2. There is a pure sky and without a cloud ; it is very beautiful. 3. Here is the man whom you are looking for. 4. Here he is. 5. Here I am. 6. Here we are. 7. You are looking for the servants ; there they are. 8. There is the school to which my brother goes. 9. Are you looking for the man who is here ? 10. No ; I am looking for him who is there. 11. Are you not fatigued ? 12. I am fatigued because I have run all the morning. 13. There is what I have at your service ; do you accept it ? 14. I accept it. 15. Do you read without spectacles ? 16. No, I cannot read without spectacles. 17. Are you not wrong in buying that horse ? 18. No, I am right in buying him, because I have need of him.

19. Does that man still owe you money ? 20. He owes me a hundred dollars at least. 21. Does the doctor see you sometimes ? 22. He sees me occasionally. 23. Do you ever go to the opera ? 24. I go there occasionally. 25. Give me five dollars more. 26. Give him a dollar less. 27. I have given you a dollar too much, and you have given me a dollar too little. 28. Is there too much sugar in your tea ? 29. There is neither too much nor too little. 30. There is some fruit at your service ; do you accept it ? 31. I accept it. 32. Do you wear spectacles ? 33. Yes ; I am near-sighted. 34. That countryman has at least ten goats. 35. What distance is it to that hotel ? 36. It is about a mile and a quarter.



37. Is it far to your house? 38. It is hardly three hundred paces.  
39. It is about two miles and a quarter to the church.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. I believe that you do not like music. 2. Yes, sir, I like it much. 3. Do you not prefer reading to music? 4. They are both (*toutes deux*) good; but if it is necessary to choose one or the other, I say that it is necessary to choose the most useful. 5. You are wrong. 6. How! do you not like better to read than to listen to a violin? 7. Not at all; reading fatigues me sometimes, but music never fatigues me. 8. There is Mr. H. coming (*qui vient*); let us see what is his opinion (*opinion*). 9. Good morning (*bonjour*), Mr. H.; come in (*entrez*), there is a chair. 10. You are acquainted with Mr. Charles, I believe. 11. Perfectly.

12. What are you doing, gentlemen? 13. Almost (*à peu près*) nothing; we are speaking of music and of reading; tell us which of the two you prefer. 14. That is not difficult. 15. I prefer reading in the morning, and music in the evening. 16. I understand; you love music when you are fatigued with (*de*) reading. 17. Exactly so (*tout juste*). 18. But if it is necessary to choose one or the other, which of the two will you choose? 19. Reading, without doubt. 20. Mr. Albert is not of your opinion; he gives the first place to music. 21. Each one to his taste; and every thing ought to have its place. 22. Innocent amusements (*amusements innocents*) are without doubt very useful; and as (*comme*) there is more than (*de*) one, every body will not be obliged (*obligé*) to choose the same.

## 72.—SOIXANTE-DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

## IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES.

1. Almost all the irregular past participles, that is, those differing from the rules given in Lessons 23, 28, 82, 84, 85, have now been given. They are these:

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLE	INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLE	INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLE
Acquérir, <i>Acquis</i> ,* acquired.	Mettre, <i>Mis</i> , put.	Résoudre	{ <i>Résolu</i> , } { <i>Résous</i> , } resolved.		
Courir, <i>Couru</i> , run.	Mourir, <i>Mort</i> , died.	Souffrir, <i>Souffert</i> , suffered.			
Coudre, <i>Cousu</i> , sewed.	Naitre, <i>Né</i> , born.	Suivre, <i>Suivi</i> , followed.			
Couvrir, <i>Couvert</i> , covered.	Offrir, <i>Offert</i> , offered.	Vêtir, <i>Vêtu</i> , clothed.			
Dire, <i>Dit</i> , said.	Ouvrir, <i>Ouvert</i> , opened.	Vivre, <i>Vécu</i> ,† lived.			
Écrire, <i>Écrit</i> , written.	Prendre, <i>Pris</i> , taken.				
Faire, <i>Fait</i> , done.	Rire, <i>Ri</i> , laughed.				

\* The other compounds of *quérir*, viz., *conquérir*, *enquérir*, and *requérir*, form this participle in the same way as *acquérir*.

† The following complete the list of irregular past participles:

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLE	INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLE
Asseoir, to seat,	Assis, seated.	Luire, to shine,	Luit, shone.
Surveoir, to respite,	Survis, respited.	Moudre, to grind,	Moulu, ground.
Bénir, to bless,	Béni, blessed.	Nuire, to injure,	Nui, injured.
Circoncire, to circumcise,	Circoncis, circumcised.	Reluire, to glitter,	Reluit, glittered.
Clore, to close,	Clos, closed.	Suffire, to suffice,	Suffit, sufficed.
Frire, to fry,	Frit, fried.	Traire, to milk,	Trait, milked.

2. Words are often REPEATED IN FRENCH when they are not in English. The article and possessive adjective were spoken of, Lesson 23. We may add that adjectives generally which precede the noun, are to be repeated before each noun to which they belong; as,

I buy some good gloves and stockings. J'achète de *bons* gants et de *bons* bas.  
 He has the best butter and cheese. Il a le *meilleur* beurre et le *meilleur* fromage.

3. The subject-pronouns, when *et* or *ou* used alone connect the verbs, may be repeated or not.

I fear and hate him. Je *le* crains et (je) *le* hais.

4. When the verbs connected by *et* or *ou* are not in the same tense, or have many words intervening; or if the object of the first verb be not a personal pronoun, the subject-pronoun is repeated.

I am going to see him, and shall speak to him. Je vais *le* voir, et *je* lui parlerai.

I will go and tell him that you have come, and will give him your letter. J'irai lui dire que vous êtes venu, et *je* lui donnerai votre lettre.

I have received your letter, and have read it. J'ai reçu votre lettre, et *je* l'ai lue.

5. The objective pronoun is repeated in simple tenses, not usually in compound ones.

I desire to see, persuade, and bring him. Je désire *le* voir, *le* persuader et l'amener.

I have seen, persuaded, and brought him. Je l'ai vu, persuadé et amené.

6. When the second verb is a compound of the first, the objective pronoun is not repeated, except when the actions are different.

He does it and does it again without ceasing. Il *le* fait et *refait* sans cesse.

He does it and undoes it without ceasing. Il *le* fait et *le défait* sans cesse.

7. The prepositions *à* and *de* are to be repeated before each of their objects.

I speak to the man and his son. Je parle *à* l'homme et *à* son fils.

We speak of you and him. Nous parlons *de* vous et *de* lui.

As. Cold as ice. Comme. Froid comme glace.

To build. A country-house. Bâtir. Une maison de campagne.

What age? To load. Quel âge? Charger.

A bouquet. To burn. Un bouquet. Brûler.

A moment. Ripe. Un moment. Mûr.

To clean. To cough. Nettoyer. Tousser.

The danger. Now. Le danger. Maintenant.

To avoid. To arrive, happen. Éviter (de bef. inf.). Arriver.

8. *Arriver* takes *être* for its auxiliary.\*

\* Of verbs taking *être* for auxiliary, the following have now been given: *aller, mourir, naître, parvenir, revenir, tomber, venir, and arriver.*

15 3 12 9 18 5 22 6 15 8 23 5 20 13 6 18 6 3 5 14  
 comme, bâ-tir, â-ge, bou-ket, brû-ler, mo-mené, mûr, net-to-yer, tous-ser, dan-ger, mainte-  
 nant, é-vi-ter, ar-ri-ver.

When did you arrive?

Quand êtes-vous arrivé?

I arrived this morning.

Je suis arrivé ce matin.

9. In speaking of age, the French use the verb *to have*, the English the verb *to be*.

How old are you?

Quel âge avez-vous?

I am less than sixteen years old.

J'ai moins de seize ans.

10. *Than* before a number is rendered in French by *de*.

He is more than fifteen years old.

Il a plus de quinze ans.

More than two hours and a half.

Plus de deux heures et demie.

1. Bâissez-vous une maison de briques? 2. Non, j'en bâtis une de bois; mais mon voisin en bâtit une de brique. 3. Combien de milles y a-t-il d'ici à votre maison de campagne? 4. Il y a près de deux milles et demi. 5. De quoi chargez-vous ce cheval? 6. Je le charge de grain. 7. Ce bateau est-il chargé de vin? 8. Non, il est chargé de sel. 9. Pourquoi évitez-vous cet homme? 10. Je l'évite parce que c'est mon ennemi. 11. Nettoyez-vous vos bottes le matin? 12. Non, le domestique les nettoie le soir. 13. Cet enfant tousse-t-il beaucoup? 14. Non, il ne tousse pas beaucoup. 15. Avez-vous un bouquet de fleurs? 16. Oui, j'ai un bouquet de roses et de violettes. 17. Que brûle cet écolier? 18. Il brûle ses papiers. 19. Voilà des pommes mûres; en voulez-vous? 20. J'en mangerai une dans un moment. 21. Y a-t-il du danger à rester ici? 22. Il n'y a pas de danger. 23. J'ai fini ma tâche et je vais maintenant chez moi. 24. Revenez demain, je ne puis pas vous recevoir aujourd'hui. 25. Je n'ai jamais vu une fleur comme celle-là; en avez-vous d'autres? 26. J'en ai beaucoup.

1. Do they build the houses of (*en*) stone in your village? 2. They do not build many of stone, they build more of brick and of wood. 3. Is that scholar studious? 4. Yes, sir, he studies as well as his brother. 5. Is that iron cold? 6. It is cold as ice. 7. How far is it to that country-house? 8. It is more than two miles and a quarter. 9. What are you building? 10. I am building a handsome country-house. 11. How old are you? 12. I am hardly twelve years old. 13. How old is your brother? 14. He is more than fifteen years old. 15. With what do they load that vessel? 16. They load it with cotton. 17. Give the bouquet to that lady. 18. Make me a bouquet of roses and violets. 19. Here are some ripe apples; will you eat some? 20. In a moment. 21. What are you burning? 22. We are burning these old papers.

23. Are those peaches ripe? 24. No, they are not yet ripe.

25. Is it far to your house? 26. It is not more than a mile and three quarters. 27. Wait then a moment, and I will go with you. 28. Had the servant cleaned your boots when you spoke to him this morning? 29. He had cleaned them. 30. Does he clean them well? 31. He does not clean them very well. 32. Do you cough much? 33. No, I do not cough much. 34. Do you avoid those men? 35. I avoid them. 36. Is there danger in going on the river? 37. There is no danger. 38. I have read this book, and now I have a desire to read that one. 39. Has your brother arrived? 40. He has arrived. 41. When did he arrive? 42. He arrived yesterday morning. 43. Is it far to those rocks? 44. It is almost two miles. 45. How far is it to the hotel? 46. It is about half a mile. 47. Will you be here two hours? 48. I shall be here more than three hours.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. There is the moon beginning (*qui commence à*) to appear. 2. It is full moon this evening. 3. It is very fine weather now. 4. The evenings are very beautiful. 5. There is some fog in the morning, but that is not bad. 6. We have a superb season, and there will be much fruit this year. 7. Yes, if it is not too dry. 8. We shall have some rain before one week. 9. I believe as you that the weather is going to change soon. 10. There are some clouds around (*autour de*) the moon. 11. Yes, each night one sees more. 12. It has been very warm during three or four days. 13. Until (*jusque*) now, the nights have been cool enough. 14. Last night it was very warm; there was no wind. 15. I am subject to the headache when it is warm at night, and then I cannot sleep.

16. How far is it from here to the church? 17. It is not quite half a mile. 18. How far is it to that rock? 19. It is only two hundred paces. 20. Did you not pay too much for that horse? 21. I paid neither too much nor too little for him. 22. Did you not pay that man more than you owed him? 23. No; I paid him neither a cent more nor a cent less than his due. 24. This watch costs me more than it is worth; I paid three hundred dollars for it. 25. Have you much money? 26. No; I have hardly five dollars. 27. Were you right in buying that horse? 28. No, I was wrong; for (*car*) the price was too high.

## 73.—SOIXANTE-TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

## HOURS OF THE DAY.

1. For the hours of the day, *one o'clock, two o'clock, half past two*, etc., the French use merely the number with the hour, and say, *one hour, two hours, two hours and a half*.

*What o'clock is it?*

It is one o'clock. It is two o'clock.

It is half past three.

Is it not five o'clock?

It is a quarter past ten.

*Quelle heure est-il?*

Il est une heure. Il est deux heures.

Il est trois heures et demie

N'est-il pas cinq heures?

Il est dix heures et quart (*or un quart*).

2. The fractional part of the time is always after the number in French, and joined to it by *et*, expressed or understood, when past the hour, and by *moins* when before it; thus,

It is a quarter before nine.

Il est neuf heures moins un quart.

It is ten *minutes* before ten.

Il est dix heures moins dix *minutes*.

It is twenty minutes after eleven.

Il est onze heures (*et*) vingt *minutes*.

It is twelve o'clock, *noon, midday*.

Il est *midi*.

It is half past twelve (at noon).

Il est *midi et demie*.

It is twelve o'clock *midnight*.

Il est *minuit*.

It is half past twelve (at night).

Il est *minuit et demie*.

3. *Douze heures* is used only to express the period of twelve hours.

It is twenty minutes before twelve (at night). Il est *minuit moins vingt minutes*.

It is a quarter to seven.

{ Il est six heures, trois quarts.

{ Il est sept heures moins un quart.

The *top*. A *minute*.

Le *haut, sommet*. Une *minute*.

The *bottom*. *Elsewhere*.

Le *bas, fond*. *Ailleurs*.

The *number*. A *party, a game*.

Le *nombre*. Une *partie*.

The *number*. *Novelty*.

Le *numéro*. La *nouveauté*.

4. *Nombre* is a collection of units, *numéro* is one of a marked series.

The number ten.

Le nombre dix.

He lives at number six.

Il demeure (No. 6) *numéro six*.

5. A noun used in an attributive sense, in apposition, or as subject predicate, takes no article in French, though it does in English.

He passes for a *soldier*.

Il passe pour *soldat*.

We have the king for a *friend*.

Nous avons le roi pour *ami*.

Cicero, a celebrated Roman *orator*.

Cicéron, célèbre *orateur romain*.

Charles, the king of Sweden.

Charles, *roi de Suède*.

I am an *Englishman*.

Je suis *anglais*.

He is a *physician*.

Il est *médecin*.

You are a *merchant*.

Vous êtes *négociant*.

6. When the noun thus used is limited by an adjective or other word, the article is used, and *he is, it is*, etc., are rendered *c'est*. (See Lessons 80 and 52.)

Is that man a *lawyer*?

Cet homme est-il *avocat*?

No, he is a rich merchant.

Non, c'est un riche *négociant*.

He passes for a soldier of the king.

Il passe pour un soldat du roi.

He is a good physician.

C'est un bon *médecin*.

7. After verbs of motion, *for* is rendered in French by *chercher*.

12 23 12 19 12 22 12 17 15 5 2 21 7 11 21 1 13 22 5 17  
mi-nute, mi-di, mi-nuit, haut, som-met, bas, fond, ail-leurs, nombre, par-tie, nu-mé-ro,  
18 17  
nou-veau-té.

*To go for. To come for.*

*To send for. To run for.*

Go for some water. I am going for some.

I come back for my book.

Do you send for the horses?

We send for them.

*Aller chercher. Venir chercher.*

*Envoyer chercher. Courir chercher.*

Allez chercher de l'eau. J'en vais chercher.

Je reviens chercher mon livre.

Envoyez-vous chercher les chevaux?

Nous les envoyons chercher.

8. *Every* before a noun of time is rendered by *tout* and the article with the noun plural.

*Every year. Every day.*

*Tous les ans. Tous les jours.*

*Every hour. Every minute.*

*Toutes les heures. Toutes les minutes.*

1. Quelle heure est-il? 2. Il n'est pas tard; il est neuf heures. 3. Est-il midi? 4. Non, il est onze heures et demie. 5. N'est-il pas minuit? 6. Il est minuit et dix minutes. 7. Est-il tard? 8. Il est dix heures trois quarts. 9. Il est midi moins un quart. 10. Est-il onze heures? 11. Il est onze heures moins cinq minutes. 12. Allez-vous au haut de cette montagne? 13. J'y vais. 14. Y a-t-il loin d'ici au bas de la montagne? 15. Il y a environ trois milles. 16. Vous ne trouverez pas ailleurs du fruit comme celui-ci. 17. Il y a un grand nombre de soldats sur ce navire. 18. Demeurez-vous au numéro huit? 19. Non, je demeure au numéro quinze. 20. Y a-t-il une partie de plaisir chez vous ce soir? 21. Non, il n'y en a pas aucune ce soir; mais il y en aura une demain soir. 22. Allez-vous chercher quelque chose? 23. Je vais chercher mon livre. 24. Envoyons chercher du vin. 25. Voyez-vous souvent le médecin? 26. Je le vois tous les jours. 27. Allez-vous à la ville tous les mois? 28. J'y vais toutes les semaines. 29. Voyez-vous votre ami tous les jours? 30. Je le vois tous les matins et tous les soir.

1. Is there danger in (d) going up to the top of that mountain? 2. There is no danger. 3. We had arrived at the bottom of the mountain when we saw your friend. 4. I dwell in Dauphin-street, at number twenty-five. 5. We have arrived at the bottom of the mountain, and now we wish to ascend to the (en) top. 6. Is there elsewhere better fruit than this? 7. There is none better. 8. Is that scholar going for his books? 9. No, sir, he is going for his papers. 10. Do not children love novelty? 11. Yes, every body loves novelty. 12. What does that workman come for? 13. He comes for his money. 14. Have you sent for some coffee? 15. I have sent for some coffee and some sugar. 16. Do you cough much? 17. I cough every five minutes. 18. That child drinks every hour. 19. I go to the market every morning and every evening.

20. What time is it? 21. It is half past six. 22. At what hour do you breakfast? 23. I breakfast at a quarter past seven. 24. Is it twelve o'clock (at noon)? 25. It is ten minutes after twelve. 26. Do you dine at half past two? 27. I dine at a quarter before three. 28. Did you return from the ball at midnight? 29. I returned at a quarter past twelve. 30. What do you buy? 31. I buy some good gloves and stockings. 32. Our neighbor has the best apples and peaches. 33. I will borrow this book and read it to my brother. 34. Will you read that book? 35. I shall read and translate it. 36. To whom do you speak? 37. I speak to that man and his son. 38. Do you often go to church? 39. I go there every Sunday. 40. Is not that sick man weak? 41. He is weak as a child.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What are you looking for? 2. I am looking for my (*canne*) cane. 3. This is yours, is it not? 4. No, it does not belong to me; mine is black. 5. Then whose (*à qui*) is this? for it is not mine. 6. I saw your cousin with a cane like (*comme*) that. 7. That is true, it is his; he left it this morning, and he has taken mine. 8. There is (*en voilà*) another; whose is it? 9. It is mine; my cousin forgot his, and he has not taken (*pris*) mine. 10. But where is yours? I put it here under the table. 11. Wait, I am going to ask the boy if he has seen it. 12. George, do you know where the gentleman's cane is? 13. I believe that he has left it in the garden; I am going for it. 14. Thank you; I believe that you are right.

15. Hadst thou arrived when the doctor came here? 16. I had not arrived. 17. Had your brother arrived in the city when you saw him? 18. He had arrived there. 19. See the beautiful strawberries which I have. 20. Where did you find them? 21. I picked (*prises*) them in the garden. 22. How! I have not seen any there yet. 23. There are no more ripe, but there will be before long (*avant peu*), wherewith to fill a plate. 24. What are you going to do with these? 25. Nothing; do you wish for them? 26. If you please; I will send them to Mrs. C. I know that she likes them much. 27. There are exactly (*toute juste*) enough. Send her at the same time a few flowers. 28. I am going to make her a bouquet. 29. Wait a moment; I will go with you.

## 74.—SOIXANTE-QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

## PRESENT PARTICIPLE USED.

1. The present participle is less used in French than in English, it being, as we have seen (Lesson 56), often rendered into French by the infinitive.

When, however, two actions are spoken of as performed at the same time, the more enduring of the two may generally be rendered by this participle, preceded by the preposition *en*.

He eats *while he is reading*.

Il mange *en lisant*.

We talk *while we are working*.

Nous causons *en travaillant*.

You talk *while you sleep*.

Vous parlez *en dormant*.

I read the letter while dining.

J'ai lu la lettre *en dînant*.

2. The participle used in this way always belongs to the subject of the verb. Belonging to the subject, it is sometimes used also without the preposition *en*.

Doing nothing, do you hope to succeed? Ne *faisant* rien, espérez-vous réussir?

Never studying, can you learn French? N'*étudiant* jamais, pouvez-vous apprendre le français?

3. The present participle, without the preposition, may belong also to the object of the verb, when the connection is intimate and free from ambiguity; but the infinitive or other construction is even then to be preferred.

I saw the boy stealing my fruit.

J'ai vu le petit garçon *volant* mes fruits,  
(or better) *voler* (or *qui volait*) mes fruits.

I see them running toward the city.

Je les vois *courant* (better *courir*) vers la ville.

4. *En*, as already seen (Lesson 56), is the only preposition in French which can be followed by this participle. Participles and participial nouns, therefore, following a preposition which cannot be translated by *en*, as in No. 1 above, must be rendered by the infinitive, or by a noun, or by a change of construction.

Writing at night hurts the eyes.

Écrire la nuit fait mal aux yeux.

He likes reading very much.

Il aime beaucoup à lire (or la lecture).

What do you gain by doing that

Que gagnez-vous à faire cela?

We study without saying a word.

Nous étudions *sans dire* un mot.

*The past definite of ÊTRE, to be, is irregular.*

<i>J'eus,</i>	<i>tu fus,</i>	<i>il fut,</i>	<i>nous fûmes,</i>	<i>vous fûtes,</i>	<i>ils furent,</i>
I was,	thou wast,	he was,	we were,	you were,	they were.

I was too good for thee last week, but my brother was not good enough.

Je *fus* trop bon pour toi la semaine dernière, mais mon frère ne *le fut* pas assez.

Were you pleased to see the general on Monday?

*Fûtes* vous contents de voir le général lundi?

We were pleased to see him, and our cousins were pleased also.

Nous *fûmes* contents de le voir, et nos cousins *le furent* aussi.

*The past definite of AVOIR, to have, is irregular.*

<i>J'eus,</i>	<i>tu eus,</i>	<i>il eut,</i>	<i>nous eûmes,</i>	<i>vous eûtes,</i>	<i>ils eurent,</i>
I had,	thou hadst,	he had,	we had,	you had,	they had.

Thou hadst my book day before yesterday; hadst thou not?

Tu *eus* mon livre avant-hier; n'est-ce pas?

I had it not, my brother had it.

Je ne *l'eus* pas, c'est mon frère qui *l'eut*.



Had you my pens?

We had them not; your brothers had them.

To praise. To blame.

Industrious. Diligent.

A globe. The form, figure.

Good morning, good day, good afternoon.

Good evening. Good night.

Negligent. Strength.

Yonder. My faith.

Surprised. Pleased, much pleased.

Êtes-vous mes plumes?

Nous ne les eûmes pas; vos frères les eurent.

Louer. Blâmer.

Industrieux, laborieux. Diligent.

Un globe. La forme, figure.

Bonjour.

Bonsoir. Bonne nuit.

Négligent. La force.

Là-bas. Ma foi.

Surpris. Aise, bien aise.

1. Fûtes-vous bien reçu à New-York l'été dernier? 2. J'y fus bien reçu. 3. Nous fûmes surpris de vous voir dimanche, et nos frères le furent aussi. 4. Mon frère fut bien aise de recevoir votre lettre mardi. 5. J'eus votre livre la semaine passée; n'est-ce pas? 6. Non, vous eûtes ma plume, et votre frère eut mon livre. 7. Ce chien mange en courant. 8. Ces écoliers ne parlent-ils pas en étudiant? 9. Ils parlent en étudiant et en récitant leurs leçons. 10. Cet homme ne chante-il pas en travaillant? 11. Il chante en travaillant et aussi en marchant. 12. Cet homme n'est pas honnête; je l'ai surpris (volant) à voler mon fruit. 13. Ne connaissant pas cet homme lui faites-vous crédit? 14. Je ne lui fais pas crédit. 15. Je loue l'homme laborieux, et je blâme celui qui est négligent. 16. La terre a la figure d'un globe. 17. J'ai acheté un bon cheval; il a beaucoup de force. 18. Pourquoi le maître loue-t-il cet écolier? 19. Il le loue parce qu'il est diligent et il blâme son frère parce qu'il est négligent. 20. J'aime beaucoup cette maison; elle est très-belle. 21. Est-il tard? 22. Il est minuit et quelques minutes. Bonne nuit.

1. Good morning, sir; I am delighted to see you. 2. Is that sick man very weak? 3. Yes, he has lost all his strength. 4. Whom does the master praise? 5. He praises that industrious scholar. 6. Does he blame any one? 7. He blames him who is negligent. 8. Is that scholar diligent? 9. He is diligent, but his sister is negligent. 10. Has the sun the form of a globe? 11. The sun has the form of a globe, and the moon also. 12. Good morning, madam; I am much pleased to see you; have you recovered

18 6 9 6 14 22 19 10 1 18 17 10 12 18 8 15 16 12 22 21 20  
lou-er, blâ-mer, in-dus-tri-eux, la-bo-rieux, di-li-gent, globe, forme, fi-gure, bon-jour,  
21 10 5 19 2 16 22 18 7  
bon-soir, né-gli-gent, force, sur-prie, aise.

(*repris*) your strength? 13. Yes, sir, I am in good health now. 14. Are there not some soldiers yonder? 15. There are a few: 16. Do you ever read while you are eating? 17. No, I never read while I am eating. 18. That man talks while he is sleeping, and those children sing while they are studying.

19. Wast thou not much pleased to see thy friend on Wednesday? 20. I was surprised and delighted, and my brothers were so likewise. 21. Had you not the master's inkstand on Friday? 22. We had it not; those little boys had it. 23. Hadst thou not his penknife? 24. Yes, I had his penknife and his pen, and my brother had his pencil. 25. How old is your father? 26. He is almost (*près de*) fifty years old, and my grandfather is more than seventy-eight. 27. Had you finished your exercise when the master came? 28. I had finished it. 29. Did your friend return from the ball at midnight? 30. No, he returned a quarter before one. 31. There are many people yonder. 32. Will you send for some wine? 33. The servant has gone for some. 34. Have you lost your money? 35. My faith, I have lost it all. 36. Is it late? 37. It is half past eight. Good evening.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. There will be much fruit this year, I believe. 2. All the trees are loaded with flowers and young fruit. 3. Your uncle dwells in the country; does he not? 4. Yes, but the house in which (where) he dwells is not his. 5. To whom then does it belong? 6. To Mr. C. 7. I thought (*croyais*) that your uncle had a country-house of his own (*à lui*). 8. That in which he dwelt last year was his, but it is burnt. 9. I did not know it; does he not intend to build another? 10. Yes, they were working on it (*y*) the last time that I saw him. 11. Have you seen the new house which he is building? 12. No, I have not seen it; but my uncle has told me that it will be larger than the old one. 13. Is not your sight weak? 14. Yes, sir; I can not study as I did last year. 15. Is it far to the doctor's? 16. It is not quite a mile.

17. Have you any thing to do this evening? 18. No; why do you ask me that? 19. Come and pass the evening with me; you will make the acquaintance of the gentleman of whom I have spoken to you, and who is a very amiable fellow. 20. With much pleasure; I have nothing to do, and I shall be delighted to pass the evening in a manner (*d'une manière*) so agreeable. 21. Bring your cousin with you. 22. Well, I will bring him, if I see him. I shall be at the store a little late. 23. We can wait for you a little. 24. You are very amiable.

25. Does that carpenter work much? 26. Yes, he is very laborious. 27. Do you see the soldiers yonder? 28. I see them. 29. Are you a Frenchman? 30. No, sir, I am an Englishman.

## 75.—SOIXANTE-QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST DEFINITE CONTINUED.

*The past definite of FAIRE, to make or do, is irregular; thus,*

<i>Je fis,</i>	<i>tu fis,</i>	<i>il fit,</i>	<i>nous fîmes,</i>	<i>vous fîtes,</i>	<i>ils firent,</i>
I did,	thou didst,	he did,	we did,	you did,	they did.

Didst thou do thy exercise well on Monday? *Fis-tu bien ton thème lundi?*

I did it well, and Charles did his well; Je le *fis* bien, et Charles *fit* bien le sien; *fîtes*-vous bien les vôtres?

We did them well, but those little boys did not do any at all. Nous les *fîmes* bien, mais ces petits garçons n'en *firent* pas du tout.

*The past definite of VOIR, to see, is irregular; thus,*

<i>Je vis,</i>	<i>tu vis,</i>	<i>il vit,</i>	<i>nous vîmes,</i>	<i>vous vîtes,</i>	<i>ils virent,</i>
I saw,	thou sawest,	he saw,	we saw,	you saw,	they saw.

Did you see Prince Albert, last year, when you were in London? *Vîtes-vous le Prince Albert, l'année passée, quand vous étiez à Londres?*

I saw him, and my brother saw him also; our friends saw the queen, but we did not see her. Je le *vis*, et mon frère le *vit* aussi; nos amis *virent* la reine, mais nous ne la *vîmes* pas.

To go to meet. *Aller au devant de, or Aller à la rencontre de.*

To meet. The meeting. *Rencontrer. La rencontre.*

To deceive. To begin. *Tromper. Commencer (à or de bef. inf.).*

Thank God. Charmed, delighted. *Dieu merci. Charmé (de bef. inf.).*

Yesterday evening, last evening. *Hier au soir, hier soir.*

Your cousin is yonder; let us go to meet him. Votre cousin est là-bas; allons au-devant de lui (or à sa rencontre).

1. *Commencer* takes *à* before the infinitive when progress is denoted, *de* when it is not.

He begins to speak French. Il commence à parler français.

He begins to dine at two o'clock. Il commence de dîner à deux heures.

2. The verb *aller* with an infinitive expresses an immediate future; *venir de* with an infinitive expresses an immediate past.

We are just going (will go) for our books. Nous allons chercher nos livres.

I am just going to (or will now go and) finish my exercise. Je vais finir mon thème.

We have just been for our books. Nous venons de chercher nos livres.

I have just finished my exercise. Je viens de finir mon thème.

13 12 9 21 21 6 15 8 6 7 17 5 6  
*vis, vit, virent, vîmes, vîtes, vîmes, vîmes, vîmes, vîmes, vîmes, vîmes, vîmes.*

<i>To hate. Hated.</i>			<i>Hair (à bef. inf.). Hat.</i>		
<i>Je hais,</i>	<i>tu hais,</i>	<i>il hait,</i>	<i>nous haïssons,</i>	<i>vous haïssez,</i>	<i>ils haïssent,</i>
I hate,	thou hatest,	he hates,	we hate,	you hate,	they hate.
<i>To swim. An offer.</i>			<i>Nager. Une offre.</i>		
<i>To smoke. The afternoon.</i>			<i>Fumer. L'après-midi.</i>		

3. *Midi* is masculine gender, *après-midi* is feminine.

4. The present participle, like the past, used as an adjective, becomes one in all respects, and is varied accordingly; but as a participle it is always invariable.\*

They are persons *loving* every body. Ce sont des personnes *aimant* tout le monde.

They are *loving* (affectionate) persons. Ce sont des personnes *aimantes*.

Read the pages *following* this lesson. Lisez les pages *suivant* cette leçon.

Read the following pages. Lisez les pages *suivantes*.

Sleeping waters are dangerous. Les eaux *dormantes* sont dangereuses.

I saw them sleeping extended beneath a tree. Je les ai vus *dormant* étendus sous un arbre.

1. Ne fites-vous pas du thé samedi? 2. Je fis du thé, mon frère fit du café, et nos sœurs firent des gâteaux. 3. Vites-vous le général, dimanche? 4. Nous le vîmes, et nos cousins le virent aussi. 5. Ne le vis-tu pas? 6. Je le vis samedi et mon frère le vit vendredi. 7. Allez-vous au-devant de votre oncle? 8. Oui, je vais au-devant de lui. 9. Cet écolier trompe-t-il le maître? 10. Non, il ne le trompe jamais. 11. Cet enfant commence-t-il à parler? 12. Il commence à parler un peu. 13. Êtes-vous malade? 14. Non, Dieu merci, je suis en bonne santé. 15. Quand avez-vous vu le médecin? 16. Je le vis hier au soir. 17. Où allez-vous? 18. Je vais chercher mon livre. 19. Votre ami est-il arrivé? 20. Oui, il vient d'arriver. 21. Fumez-vous du tabac? 22. Non, monsieur, je hais le tabac. 23. Cet enfant n'a que sept ans, mais il nage très-bien. 24. Ce monsieur m'a fait une belle offre, mais je ne puis pas l'accepter. 25. Serez-vous chez vous cette après-midi? 26. J'y serai toute la journée. 27. Alors, j'irai chez vous cette après-midi à quatre heures. 28. Nous haïssons le temps froid. 29. Ce mauvais écolier n'étudie jamais; il sera haï et méprisé.

1. Didst thou not make too much noise yesterday evening in thy room? 2. I did not make any at all; but the little boys made too much. 3. Did you make a (*du*) noise on Thursday? 4. We did

\* The learner will of course distinguish between the participle and adjective in French the same as in English. If the word merely express the quality of the noun, it is an adjective; but if it takes an object, or expresses action like a verb, it is a participle.

1 12 1 12 7 7 1 12 21 1 12 6 1 12 1 6 12 22 6 1 7 12 12  
ha-ir, ha-i, hais, haït, ha-le-sons, ha-le-tes, ha-ïssent, na-ger, offre, fu-mer, a-près-mi-di.

not make any; your cousin made some. 5. When have you seen my brother? 6. I saw him last evening, and my brothers saw him on Saturday. 7. Did you see the general on Wednesday? 8. We saw him on Wednesday, and the captain saw him on Thursday. 9. What did you do on Friday afternoon in the country? 10. I did nothing. 11. Are you going to meet your friend? 12. Yes, I am going to meet him. 13. Do you ever deceive the master? 14. I never deceive him. 15. Did your friend arrive at noon? 16. No, he arrived in the afternoon at three o'clock.

17. Does that child begin to walk? 18. He begins to walk a little. 19. Have you many relations? 20. No, sir, I have none at all; but, thank God, I have good friends. 21. I have just seen your brother; have you seen him? 22. Yes, he has just arrived from the country. 23. Is that scholar ignorant? 24. Yes, he is ignorant; he plays instead of studying, and he is hated and despised. 25. Do you hate any one? 26. No, sir, I hate no one. 27. We hate the cold, and our friends hate it also. 28. Do you like to swim? 29. I like to swim sometimes. 30. Do you smoke tobacco? 31. No, sir, I do not smoke at all; I hate tobacco. 32. Is that man a merchant? 33. No, sir, he is a physician. 34. Are you a Frenchman? 35. No, sir, I am a German. 36. Are you hungry? 37. No, sir, I have just dined. 38. It is late; good evening, sir.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Whose is that white horse? is it yours? 2. No, it is my cousin's; the black one belongs to me. 3. I find his more beautiful than yours. 4. Yes, he is a handsome horse; there are few as handsome. 5. How much did he pay for him? 6. He cost him two hundred and fifty dollars; it is not dear. 7. It is a good price for a horse; but there are some horses which cost still more, and which are not as good as that one. 8. He looks very gentle. 9. What have you done with the (*du*) little horse that you bought of (*d*) Mr. Charles? 10. I have him yet. 11. Have you him here? 12. No, I left him in the country. 13. Do you not desire to sell him? 14. No, I have no mind to be without a horse. I have need of one in winter, and I like always to have a horse of my own (*à moi*), when the desire takes me to make a tour (*un tour*) in the country. 15. You are right; I do not like horses that I am not acquainted with.

16. Where is your sister? She has gone to a party of pleasure in the city. 17. Is there danger in passing that river? 18. There is no danger. 19. I have hardly any money about me (*sur*

*moi*) ; lend me a few dollars. 20. Here are three ; I can lend them to you. 21. Do not the French love novelty ? 22. Yes, all men love novelty. 23. Does your friend smoke ? 24. No, sir, he does not like tobacco. 25. Does he know how to swim ? 26. Yes, he swims very well.

## 76.—SOIXANTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST ANTERIOR TENSE.

1. THE PAST ANTERIOR is formed by annexing the past participle to the past definite of the auxiliary ; thus,

*Past anterior of DÎNER, to dine, and VENIR, to come.*

*J'eus dîné, tu eus dîné, il eut dîné, nous eûmes dîné, vous eûtes dîné,*  
I had dined, thou hadst dined, he had dined, we had dined, you had dined,  
*ils eurent dîné, they had dined.*

*Je fus venu, tu fus venu, il fut venu, nous fûmes venus, vous fûtes venus,*  
I had come, thou hadst come, he had come, we had come, you had come,  
*ils furent venus, they had come.*

2. This tense denotes that a past action had been done *immediately before* another action, also past. It is generally preceded by an adverb or conjunction expressing immediate time, and attended by another verb in the past definite or indefinite. (See previous rules, pages 237 and 242.) *Aussitôt que j'eus dîné je sortis ; J'ai écrit cette lettre aujourd'hui aussitôt que j'eus dîné.*

3. The adverbs and conjunctions generally preceding this tense are these :

As soon as, { <i>Aussitôt que.</i>	When. <i>Lorsque, quand.</i>
{ <i>Sitôt que. Dès que.</i>	After. <i>Après que.</i>
Hardly. <i>À peine.</i>	No sooner. <i>Pas plus tôt.</i>
Yesterday as soon as I had breakfasted I went to school.	Hier aussitôt que j'eus déjeuné j'allai à l'école.
Yesterday evening, as soon as we had received the news, we went home.	Hier soir, dès que nous eûmes reçu la nouvelle, nous allâmes chez nous.
This morning, when he had breakfasted, he set out.	Ce matin quand il eut déjeuné, il est parti.

4. This tense may also be used without any other verb, when accompanied by some phrase denoting immediate time, or when it expresses the completion of an action at a precise time.

They had soon finished.	Ils eurent bientôt fini.
We had finished before them.	Nous eûmes fini avant eux.

5. When something continuous or habitual is spoken of, instead of this tense with the past definite, the pluperfect with the imperfect is used.

He used to read as soon as he had supped.	Il lisait aussitôt qu'il avait soupé.
You used to go out when you had dined.	Vous sortiez quand vous aviez dîné.

<i>To fit, to become.</i>	<i>Aller bien, seoir</i> (not used in the inf.).
<i>Not to fit.</i>	<i>Aller mal, ne pas bien aller.</i>

*To salt.* A fig.

*The volume.\** The cause.

*To enter.* A revolution.

*Saler.* Une figue.

*Le volume.* La cause.

*Entrer.* Une révolution.

*Entrer* takes *être* for auxiliary.

*Certain.* A head-dress.

*The supper.* A toilet.

*To sup.* Too soon.

*Immediately.* Soon enough.

*Certain.* Une coiffure.

*Le souper.* Une toilette.

*Souper.* Trop tôt.

*Aussitôt.* Assez tôt.

Does that head-dress fit that lady? or

Does that style of hair-dressing

become that lady?

Cette coiffure va-t-elle bien (sied-elle)

à cette dame?

It does not fit her.

Elle lui va mal (ne lui sied pas bien).

1. Cette coiffure ira bien à cette dame. 2. Le garçon sera ici assez tôt pour aller chercher du sel et saler les poissons. 3. Combien de volumes de cette histoire y a-t-il? 4. Il y en a trois. 5. Savez-vous la cause de la révolution anglaise? 6. Je la connais fort bien. 7. La nouvelle est-elle certaine? 8. Elle est certaine et très agréable. 9. Cette ouvrier est-il fatigué? 10. Il est bien fatigué. 11. A quelle heure soupez-vous? 12. Quand j'ai bien dîné, je ne soupe point. 13. Voilà de bonnes prunes et de bonnes figues, en voulez-vous? 14. Je veux des figues mais non pas des prunes. 15. A quelle heure entrez-vous dans votre chambre? 16. J'y entre à huit heures. 17. Je fais ma toilette de bonne heure. 18. Aussitôt que vous fûtes arrivés la semaine passée allâtes-vous voir le général? 19. Non, aussitôt que nous fûmes arrivés, nous allâmes chez notre ami. 20. Quand avez-vous reçu ma lettre? 21. Hier dès que je fus entré dans ma chambre je la reçus. 22. Votre frère est-il allé à la campagne? 23. Oui, à peine fut-il arrivé hier qu'il repartit pour la campagne. 24. Vos amis sont-ils arrivés? 25. Oui, monsieur, ce matin, à peine eûmes-nous déjeuné qu'ils sont arrivés.

1. Did Charles go to school on Monday? 2. Yes, madam; when he had breakfasted, he went to school. 3. Are the masons here? 4. No; last Saturday, as soon as they had finished their work, they departed. 5. Did you go to your uncle's early on Saturday? 6. We went there as soon as we had dined. 7. What didst thou do yesterday? 8. Yesterday, after I had breakfasted,

\* In books, *volumes* denotes that which is bound into one;  *tome*, the division of a work made by the author. The former may contain several of the latter. They are sometimes synonymous. *Tome* is less used.

I read; and after I had dined, I went to my aunt's. 9. As soon as I had received your letter, the other day, I carried it to your brother's. 10. As soon as the countryman had bought those fish last week, did he not salt them? 11. He salted them all. 12. Where did you go yesterday? 13. As soon as we had breakfasted, we went to the country. 14. Is the Frenchman at your house? 15. No, sir; when he had arrived yesterday, he went to my brother's.

16. What does the cook send for? 17. He sends for some salt to salt the meat. 18. Has he salted the soup? 19. He has salted it too much. 20. That head-dress becomes that lady; do you not admire it? 21. I admire it much. 22. Do you know the causes which brought (on) the French revolution? I am not acquainted with them all. 23. Do you like figs better than peaches? 24. No; I like peaches as much as figs. 25. That coat does not fit you. 26. At what o'clock does the scholar enter into his room? 27. He enters there at eight o'clock every morning. 28. Is that house to be sold? 29. No, it is to be let. 30. I do not wish to go to church too soon; if we go there at eleven o'clock it will be soon enough, and not too soon. 31. I shall go there as soon as you. 32. My brother will make his toilet immediately.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What were your brothers doing when you left them? 2. They were writing letters to their friends. 3. I have some letters to write before supper, and I had almost forgotten it. 4. I write my letters in the evening. 5. I cannot; my sight is a little weak at present. 6. What has made your sight weak? 7. I believe that it is from having read too much at night, as I did the winter past. 8. That is bad; it is necessary to take care of your sight.

9. Next week we are going to make a party of pleasure in the country; you will go (*viendrez*) also, will you not? 10. Certainly (*certainement*); who will be of the party? 11. Miss B., George C. and his sister, our cousins, and several other persons. 12. That will be very agreeable; where shall we go? 13. We do not know yet; but I think we shall go to the same place where we usually (*ordinairement*) go. 14. I know a place which is quite (*tout*) as beautiful as that where we were the last time, and I like better to go there (*là*) this time, if the others consent to it (*y*). 15. Well, we will see what they think of it; as for me (*quant à moi*), I like novelty. 16. That is just (*tout juste*) my reason; I believe that it will be more agreeable than to go always to the same place; and



as that of which I speak to you is near the river, we shall be able to make a turn (*un tour*) in a boat (*en bateau*). 17. Very well, we shall have one pleasure more.

## 77.—SOIXANTE-DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

### PAST ANTERIOR INDEFINITE TENSE.

1. THE PAST ANTERIOR INDEFINITE has the same relation to the past anterior that the past indefinite has to the past definite. It is used when the accompanying words are such as to require the past anterior, and the time such as to require the past indefinite, i. e., not excluding the present day; and it is accompanied by a verb in the past indefinite.

2. It is formed by annexing the past participle to the past indefinite of the auxiliary; thus,

*J'ai eu diné, tu as eu diné, il a eu diné, nous avons eu diné, vous avez eu diné,*  
I had dined, thou hadst dined, he had dined, we had dined, you had dined,  
*ils avaient eu diné,* they had dined.

When I had breakfasted this morn- Quand j'ai eu déjeuné ce matin, je  
ing, I came here. suis venu ici.

3. This tense, however, is but little used, and in the above phrase a different construction would generally be preferred; as, *Après avoir déjeuné ce matin, je suis venu ici.*

The past definite of *VENIR*, to come, and *TENIR*, to hold, is irregular; thus,

<i>Je vins,</i>	<i>tu vins,</i>	<i>il vint,</i>	<i>nous vinmes,</i>	<i>vous vîmes,</i>	<i>ils vinrent,</i>
I came,	thou camest,	he came,	we came,	you came,	they came.
<i>Je tins,</i>	<i>tu tins,</i>	<i>il tint,</i>	<i>nous tinmes,</i>	<i>vous tîmes,</i>	<i>ils tinrent,</i>
I held,	thou heldest,	he held,	we held,	you held,	they held.

Did you come here last week?	<i>Vîntes-vous ici la semaine dernière?</i>
We came here, and our brothers came also.	<i>Nous y vinmes, et nos frères y vinrent aussi.</i>
Didst thou come here early?	<i>Vîns-tu ici de bonne heure?</i>
No, I came here late.	<i>Non, j'y vins tard.</i>
Did you hold the horses?	<i>Tîntes-vous les chevaux?</i>
We did not hold them, the servants held them.	<i>Nous ne les tîmes pas, les domestiques les tinrent.</i>
Can there be? There can be.	<i>Peut-il y avoir? Il peut y avoir.</i>
There cannot be.	<i>Il ne peut pas y avoir.</i>
To offend. Riches.	<i>Offenser. La richesse, les richesses.</i>
To wish. The look.	<i>Souhaiter. La mine.</i>
To take place. The ceremony.	<i>Avoir lieu. La cérémonie.</i>
It takes place. Immediately.	<i>Il a lieu. Immédiatement.</i>
To try. The lip.	<i>Essayer (de bef. inf.). La lèvre.</i>
Commendable. The cheek.	<i>Louable. La joue.</i>
The coin, change, money.	<i>La monnaie.</i>
Dangerous.	<i>Dangereux. Dangereuse.</i>
Occupied. Places occupied.	<i>Occupé. Des places occupées.</i>

10 14 14 14 14 15 8 6 12 6 13 7 6 13 8 13  
vins, vinmes, vîmes, vinrent, tins, of-fen-ser, ri-chesse, sou-hai-ter, mine, cé-re-mo-nie,  
13 8 13 8 8 8 12 7 10 1 12 15 7 8 10 10 14 23 6  
im-mé-di-at-ment, es-sa-yer, lèvre, lou-able, joua, mon-naie, dange-reux, dange-reuze, oc-cu-pé.

It will take place immediately.	Il aura lieu immédiatement.
I wish you a good morning.	Je vous souhaite le bonjour.
He wishes us a good evening.	Il nous souhaite le bonsoir.
Lend me the change of a dollar.	Prêtez-moi la monnaie d'un dollar.
That roast meat looks good.	Ce rôti a bonne mine.
He is a good-looking man.	C'est un homme de bonne mine.

4. We have seen (Lessons 81, 83, 84, and 42), that negative partitives, when the meaning is affirmative, do not omit *le*, but take *du*, *de la*, or *des*, as if affirmative. We may add further, that affirmative partitives, when the meaning is negative, omit the article; they take *de* only, as if negative. This is seen in the following phrases:

He has written his exercise without making any mistake.	Il a écrit son thème sans faire <i>de</i> faute.
He cannot write his exercise without making mistakes.	Il ne peut pas écrire son thème sans faire <i>des</i> fautes.*

5. Negative partitives which are limited by an adjective or following clause, may have an affirmative character, and will then take the partitive article; thus,

Do not lend him any change.	Ne lui prêtez pas <i>de</i> monnaie.
Do not lend him counterfeit coin.	Ne lui prêtez pas <i>de la</i> fausse monnaie.†

1. Êtes-vous venu ici la semaine passée? 2. J'y vins (suis venu) hier et mon frère aussi. 3. Vintés-vous ici la semaine dernière? 4. Nous n'y vinmes pas, mais nos cousins y vinrent. 5. Cet homme n'offense-t-il pas ses amis? 6. Si, monsieur, il offense fréquemment ses meilleurs amis. 7. Peut-il y avoir du danger à aller sur le lac? 8. Il n'y a pas le moindre danger. 9. Je vous souhaite une bonne santé et de grandes richesses. 10. La cérémonie aura lieu cette après-midi. 11. Votre joue est enflée; y avez-vous mal? 12. Non, j'ai mal aux dents. 13. Avez-vous essayé votre nouvelle plume? 14. Je l'ai essayée, elle est bonne. 15. On m'a dit que cet homme est dangereux. 16. La fille de notre voisin est une demoiselle de bonne mine, elle a les joues fraîches et les lèvres vermeilles. 17. Faire du bien à autrui est une action louable.

1. When did you come here? 2. I came here on Tuesday. 3.

\* In the former of these two phrases, the idea is negative, that he makes no mistakes and *de* only is used; in the latter, it is affirmative, that he makes some mistakes, and the partitive article is used.

† The idea in this latter phrase is affirmative in character: *Lend him some money, but not counterfeit.*

I will make you no reproaches.	Je ne vous ferai pas <i>de</i> reproches.
I will make you no frivolous reproaches.	Je ne vous ferai pas <i>des</i> reproches frivoles.
I have no money.	Je n'ai pas d'argent.
I have no money to spend madly.	Je n'ai pas <i>de</i> l'argent pour la dépenser follement.

Here is the same distinction. First, *I will make you no reproaches* (negative). Second, *I will make you reproaches, but not frivolous ones* (affirmative in effect). Third, *I have no money* (negative). Fourth, *I have money, but not to spend madly* (affirmative in effect). Thus we see that an adjective or limiting clause may give a kind of affirmative meaning to negative partitives, when they take the partitive articles, *du*, *de la*, *des*.

Did your brothers come also? 4. No; Charles came with me. 5. Did you come in the morning? 6. No, we came in the evening at half-past seven. 7. Why didst thou hold thy cousin by the arm yesterday, when I saw thee in the street? 8. I held him by the arm in order to speak to him. 9. Can there be danger in staying here? 10. There can be much danger. 11. Have you not offended that lady? 12. I do not know, but I did not wish to offend her. 13. Do you wish for great riches? 14. No, sir; I wish for good health, but not for great riches. 15. Did your neighbor wish you a good evening? 16. Yes, sir, and he wished me all kind (*toutes sortes*) of prosperity (*prospérité*). 17. Will the ceremony take place early? 18. It will take place immediately. 19. Do not offend the master.

20. Your cheek is swollen; have you a pain in it? 21. Yes, I have a pain in the right cheek. 22. Have you tried my knife? 23. I have tried it, and I find it very good. 24. Does that sick man try to walk? 25. He tries, but he cannot walk much. 26. Do you do good to those who have offended you? 27. Yes, sir; it is an action very commendable. 28. Does the Frenchman smoke? 29. He never smokes, but the German smokes all day. 30. Do you know how to swim? 31. Yes, sir; I swim every evening. 32. Does that head-dress fit your cousin? 33. It does not fit her. 34. When will you come for your money? 35. I come for it now. 36. I have just given some money to your brother; you have not seen him? 37. Yes, I have just seen him in the street.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. How many shall we be in all at that party of pleasure? 2. Twelve or fifteen at least. 3. That is enough; when there are too many persons (*de monde*) it is not so agreeable. 4. Have you spoken of it to Miss B.? 5. Yes; she will come, and she is (*doit*) to bring her cousin. 6. I have told her that you will go for them. 7. Very willingly; they dwell on my road; but how will they go? 8. On horseback. But I (*moi je*) shall go in a carriage with my sister. 9. Not at all; I shall have myself (*moi-même*) the pleasure of conducting (*mademoiselle*) your sister, and she will go on horseback also. 10. Then I will go on horseback; I prefer it. 11. At what o'clock shall we return? 12. A little late in the afternoon.

13. Is it not John who is coming yonder? 14. Yes; I am certain that it is he. 15. He was sick the other day. 16. He is still weak; let us go to meet him. 17. Good morning, John; we are

delighted to see you. 18. You have been very sick, have you not? 19. My faith, yes; the physician believed that I was going to die, but I have had the good fortune to deceive him. 20. What was the matter with you? 21. I had the fever; and I suffered much from the headache during all the time that I was sick. 22. Do you begin to regain (*reprendre*) your strength? 23. Yes, I gain some every day. 24. Then you are no more in danger? 25. No, thank God.

## 78.—SOIXANTE-DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST DEFINITE CONTINUED.

*The past definite of ÉCRIRE, to write, is irregular; thus,*

*J'écrivais, tu écrivais, il écrivait, nous écrivions, vous écriviez, ils écrivaient,*  
I wrote, thou wrotest, he wrote, we wrote, you wrote, they wrote.

Did you write to your friends last week? *Écrivîtes-vous à vos amis la semaine dernière?*

We wrote to them, and they wrote to us. *Nous leur écrivîmes, et ils nous écrivirent.*

Didst thou write to thy father? *Écrivis-tu à ton père?*

I wrote to him, and my brother wrote to him also. *Je lui écrivis, et mon frère lui écrivit aussi.*

*The past definite of COUDRE, to sew, is irregular; thus,*

*Je cousais, tu cousais, il cousait, nous cousions, vous cousiez, ils cousaient,*  
I sewed, thou sewedst, he sewed, we sewed, you sewed, they sewed.

Didst thou sew thy copy-book yesterday? *Cousis-tu ton cahier hier?*

I sewed mine and Charles sewed his. *Je cousis le mien et Charles cousit le sien.*

Did you sew the buttons on your coats? *Cousîtes-vous les boutons de vos habits?*

We did not sew them, the tailors sewed them. *Nous ne les cousîmes pas, les tailleurs les cousirent.*

An enemy. *Snow.* *Un ennemi. La neige.*

A looking-glass. A mirror (large). *Un miroir. Une glace.*

A pie. *Astronomy.* *Un pâté. L'astronomie.*

A metre. *Mathematics.* *Un mètre. Les mathématiques.*

The college. *For (conj.).* *Le collège. Car.*

*Ciphering, computation. Different.* *Le calcul. Différent.*

*To call. To throw, throw away.* *Appeler. Jeter.*

1. Verbs in *eler* and *eler* double the *s* and *t* when these letters are followed by *e* muta. (*Acheter* and *geler*, we have seen, Lessons 27 and 62, are exceptions.\*)

\* I have here followed the academy. It makes six exceptions, *acheter, bourseler, déceler, geler, harceler, and peler.*

<sup>6</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>70</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>18</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
<sup>12</sup> é-cri-vais, cou-sais, enne-mi. neige, mi-roir, glace, pâ-té, as-tro-no-mie, mè-tre, ma-thé-ma-  
<sup>12</sup> tika, col-lège, cal-cul, dif-fé-rent, appe-ler, jeter.

*J'appelle, tu appelles, il appelle, nous appelons, vous appelez, ils appellent,*  
 I call, thou callest, he calls, we call, you call, they call.

Do you throw away your gloves? *Jetez-vous vos gants?*  
 I do not throw them away. *Je ne les jette pas.*  
 It is two hours since I finished. *Il y a deux heures que j'ai fini.*  
 It is two years since I have been there. *Il y a deux ans que je n'y ai été.*

2. *Que* used as above in the sense of *depuis que*, since, requires *ne* before the following verb, when the phrase can be made negative in English.\*

It is an hour since I dined. *Il y a une heure que j'ai dîné.*  
 It is two months since I saw him. *Il y a deux mois que je ne l'ai vu.*

3. The various meanings of *devoir* have been spoken of (Lesson 61).

My brother is to arrive to-morrow. *Mon frère doit arriver demain.*  
 They are to go home this evening. *Ils doivent aller chez eux ce soir.*  
 Something is to happen. *Quelque chose doit arriver.*  
*Is there to be? are there to be?* *Doit-il y avoir?*  
*There is to be, must be.* *Il doit y avoir.*  
*There must have been.* *Il doit y avoir eu.*  
 Is there to be a ball at your house? *Doit-il y avoir un bal chez vous?*  
 There is to be one. *Il doit y en avoir un.*  
 The ceremony is to take place to-morrow. *La cérémonie doit avoir lieu demain.*

That man's lips are thick. *Cet homme a les lèvres épaisses.*

1. Quand avez-vous écrit votre thème? 2. J'écrivis le mien hier, mon frère écrivit le sien avant hier, et mes cousins écrivirent les leurs mardi; écrivites-vous les vôtres hier? 3. Nous les écrivîmes lundi. 4. Cousis-tu ton pantalon hier? 5. Je ne le cousis pas, le tailleur le cousit. 6. Ne cousites-vous pas vos cahiers hier? 7. Nous cousîmes les nôtres et nos cousins cousirent les leurs. 8. Cet homme est généreux, il fait du bien à ses ennemis. 9. M'appellez-vous? 10. Je vous appelle. 11. Jetez-vous votre argent? 12. Je ne le jette pas. 13. Que jette cet écolier? 14. Il jette ses vieux papiers. 15. Qu'achète ce jeune homme? 16. Il achète un pâté, une boule d'ivoire et un petit miroir. 17. Y a-t-il beaucoup de neige au Canada cet hiver? 18. Oui, il y a deux pieds de neige sur la terre. 19. Cet élève sait-il l'arithmétique? 20. Il sait toutes les mathématiques et l'astronomie. 21. Savez-vous ce qui doit arriver? 22. Il doit arriver quelque malheur. 23. Quand irez-vous

\* In the former of the above phrases we cannot say with propriety, *It is two hours that I have not finished*; but in the latter we may say, *It is two years that I have not been there*. So in the following we cannot say, *It is an hour that I have not dined*, but we may say, *It is two months that I have not seen him*. Hence in two of the phrases *ne* is used.

au collège? 24. J'irai bientôt. 25. La cérémonie doit-elle avoir lieu aujourd'hui? 26. Non, elle doit avoir lieu demain soir. 27. Charles et son frère ne sont-ils pas très-différents? 28. Ils sont très-différents.

1. Do you try the steel pen or the gold one? 2. I try the gold one. 3. At what o'clock is the company to arrive? 4. It is to arrive before ten. 5. Is there to be a ball at your house to-night? 6. There is to be one. 7. Has your friend recovered (*repris*) his strength? 8. No, sir, he does not walk much yet; it is more than two weeks since he has gone out of his room. 9. Do those lazy scholars try to learn their lessons? 10. They do not try much; it is three days since they have learned a lesson well. 11. Is there to be a party of pleasure at your aunt's this evening? 12. There is to be one. 13. How many metres of this cloth do you wish for? 14. I wish for four metres of this cloth, and six of that. 15. Is this computation of interest exact (*exact*)? 16. No, that computation is false (*faux*), but this is exact.

17. You will not find your friend at home, for he has just gone out. 18. Has your brother gone to college? 19. He has not gone yet, for he is only thirteen years old. 20. Are you studying astronomy? 21. I am studying astronomy and all the mathematics. 22. Do you wish for some chicken pie? 23. No, sir, I thank you; I have just dined; but this little boy wishes for some, for he is very hungry. 24. At what hour will you have supped? 25. I shall have supped at eight. 26. Who has broken your beautiful mirror? 27. The neighbor's son broke it with his ball. 28. Do you like to throw snow-balls? 29. I like sometimes to throw snow-balls and to run in the snow. 30. The metre \* is the element (*élément*) of all other measures (*mesures*). 31. Those men are very different in opinion (*d'opinion*); they are enemies. 32. Did you write to your father yesterday? 33. I wrote to him yesterday, and my sister wrote to him Saturday. 34. Did the tailors sew your coat on Thursday? 35. They sewed it on Friday, and the seamstress sewed my pantaloons on Saturday.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you seen the gentleman of whom we were speaking

\* A *mètre* is the ten millionth part of the arc of a meridian, extending from the equator to the pole, and is the basis of all other measures to the French. It exceeds the English yard, being equal to 39.38 English inches.

yesterday? 2. I have seen him, and asked him the question that you desired. 3. What says he of it? 4. He accepts the offer which you make him. 5. Then it is an affair settled (*arrangée*). 6. I will go and see him to-day or to-morrow. 7. You know where he dwells? 8. He dwells, I believe, in one of the brick houses which Mr. R. had built in the spring; but I do not know in which. 9. It is the largest. 10. That in which Mr. B. lived? 11. Exactly; it is the same. 12. I will go to his house to-morrow morning. 13. Go there early, for he goes to his store as soon as he has breakfasted. 14. I will go there at half-past seven.

15. When I dwelt in the country, I had always a dish of fruit in the morning; and I made my breakfast on fruit and bread. 16. There is nothing better; but one cannot have fruit in the city. 17. No, it is difficult to find any good, and it is very dear. 18. I like much peaches or figs with milk. 19. I prefer strawberries with a little sugar and cream. 20. Have you written to the doctor? 21. Yes, sir; on Tuesday, as soon as I had read his letter, I wrote one to him. 22. After the tailor had finished my coat on Monday, he sewed my pantaloons. 23. Is the captain at your house? 24. No; hardly had he arrived on Thursday, when he set out again for the country.

## 79.—SOIXANTE-DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST DEFINITE CONTINUED.

*The past definite of NAÎTRE, to be born, is irregular; thus,*

*Je naquis, tu naquis, il naquit, nous naquîmes, vous naquîtes, ils naquirent,*  
I was born, thou wast born, he was born, we were born, you were born, they were born.

I was born in January, 1830. *Je naquis (or suis né) en janvier, 1830.*

Were you born the same year? *Naquîtes-vous (êtes-vous né) la même année?*

We were born the same year. *Nous naquîmes (sommes nés) la même année.*

1. In speaking of living persons, the *past indefinite* of *naître* is more generally used; but the *pluperfect* must be employed of those known to be dead.

That soldier is brave, where was he born? *Ce soldat est brave, où est-il né?*

The old soldier is dead, where was he born? *Le vieux soldat est mort, où était-il né?*

My brothers were born in America. *Mes frères sont nés en Amérique.*

His ancestors were born in England. *Ses ancêtres étaient nés en Angleterre.*

*The past definite of MOURIR, to die, is irregular; thus,*

*Je mourus, tu mourus, il mourut, nous mourûmes, vous mourûtes, ils moururent,*  
I died, thou diedst, he died, we died, you died, they died.

After having lived seventy years, that great man died.      Après avoir vécu soixante-dix ans, ce grand'homme mourut.

His brothers died at the same time.      Ses frères moururent (or sont morts) dans le même temps.

To conquer.

Conquérir (as acquérir, Lesson 65).

To vanquish.

Vaincre.

2. *Conquérir* applies to a country; *vaincre*, to an opponent or a people.

<i>Je vaincs,</i>	<i>tu vaincs,</i>	<i>il vainc,</i>	<i>nous vainquons,</i>	<i>vous vainquez,</i>
I overcome,	thou overcomest,	he overcomes,	we overcome,	you overcome,
		<i>ils vainquent,</i>	they overcome.	

We overcome all our enemies.

Nous vainquons tous nos ennemis.

He overcomes his anger.

Il vainc sa colère.

Alexander conquered Asia.

Alexandre conquît l'Asie.

3. The irregularity of *vaincre* and its compounds consists in changing *c* into *qu* before all vowels except *u*. So THE PAST DEFINITE is

<i>Je vainquis,</i>	<i>tu vainquis,</i>	<i>il vainquit,</i>	<i>nous vainquîmes,</i>	<i>vous vainquîtes,</i>
I overcame,	thou overcamest,	he overcame,	we overcame,	you overcame,
		<i>ils vainquirent,</i>	they overcame.	

Cæsar vanquished the Britons.

César vainquit les Bretons.

The Romans vanquished the Gauls.

Les Romains vainquirent les Gaulois.

The shade. A difficulty.

L'ombrage, l'ombre. Une difficulté.

*Ombfrage* is the object intercepting the light; *ombre*, the effect of such interception.

Towards. Thus.

Vers, envers. Ainsi.

4. *Vers* denotes towards in a physical sense; *envers*, in a moral sense.

He runs towards the river.

Il court vers la rivière.

You are always good towards me.

Vous êtes toujours bon envers moi.

On the contrary. A shop.

Au contraire. Une boutique.

5. *When*, interrogative, is always *quand*; otherwise, *lorsque* and *quand* have nearly the same use.

When will you have your money?

Quand aurez-vous votre argent?

When I shall see my partner.

Lorsque (quand) je verrai mon associé.

Rain falls.

Il tombe de la pluie (better *il pleut*).

Snow falls.

Il tombe de la neige (better *il neige*).

To trust. To oblige.

Faire crédit. Obliger.

6. *Obliger*, to compel, takes *d* before the infinitive; meaning to do a favor, it takes *de*.

His study obliges him to do that.

Son devoir l'oblige à faire cela.

You will oblige me much by doing that for me.

Vous m'obligerez beaucoup de faire cela pour moi.

To do well. To do badly.

Bien faire. Mal faire.

To do good. To do evil.

Faire du bien. Faire du mal.

To foresee. Foreseen.

Prévoir. Prévu.

Generous.

Généreux. Génèreux.

con-ké-rir, vaincre, vaince, vain-kons, vain-kes, vainkent, A-lek-sandre, vain-kia, om-brage, ombra, dif-fi-cul-té, vers, en-vers, ain-al, con-traire, bou-tika, ob-il-ger, pré-voir, pré-vu, gé-né-reux, gé-né-reux, Cé-sar, Bre-tons, ro-main, Gau-lois.



1. Où es-tu né? 2. Je suis né en Amérique. 3. Mon père était né en Angleterre; il mourut en janvier 1846. 4. Ses frères sont-ils morts? 5. Oui, ils moururent la même année. 6. Où étaient-ils nés? 7. Ils étaient nés en Angleterre. 8. Où est votre frère? 9. Il vient de sortir. 10. Napoléon vainquit beaucoup d'ennemis. 11. Ces arbres font un bel ombrage. 12. Je trouve de la difficulté à apprendre cette leçon. 13. Vous pensez que cet officier réussira à la guerre; moi, je pense au contraire qu'il ne réussira pas. 14. Où est le charpentier? 15. Il est dans sa boutique. 16. Cette chose est-elle ainsi? 17. Elle est ainsi. 18. Le charpentier est allé vers sa boutique. 19. Cet homme est bon envers tout le monde. 20. Neige-t-il? 21. Il tombe de la neige et de la pluie. 22. La pluie ne fera-t-elle pas du mal aux fruits? 23. Non, elle fera du bien aux fruits et aux fleurs. 24. Avez-vous prévu cet accident? 25. Je ne l'ai pas prévu. 26. Votre voisine est une femme obligeante; n'est-ce pas? 27. Oui, c'est une bonne femme, obligeant toujours ses amis lorsqu'elle peut le faire.

1. Do you trust that man? 2. I trust him, for he is very honest. 3. Does your father oblige you to study? 4. He does not oblige me; I study with good will. 5. Does the neighbor oblige you when he lends you books? 6. He obliges me much. 7. Those trees are large, and they make a fine shade. 8. Yes, and I find their shade (*l'ombre*) very agreeable when it is warm. 9. I learn my lessons without any difficulty; do you find difficulty in learning your lessons? 10. On the contrary, I learn them very easily. 11. Where is the barber going? 12. He is going to his shop. 13. Where is his shop? 14. It is in Royal-street. 15. Look towards the east, and you will see the moon.

16. Does the rain fall? 17. It does not rain, but much snow falls. 18. Does your brother often write thus? 19. No; he never writes thus. 20. Do the wise foresee events (*événements*)? 21. No, not always; God alone foresees what is to happen. 22. Did you foresee your misfortunes? 23. I did not foresee them. 24. Is not that man generous? 25. He is very generous. 26. Those ladies are generous toward the poor; they give them much alms. 27. The bad weather has done harm to the fruit, but the fine weather which there is at present will do it good. 28. When did your father die? 29. He died March 4, 1855. 30. Was he born

in 1800? 31. He was born May 5, 1798. 32. Was he born in England? 33. He was born in England, and died in the United States (*les Etats-Unis*). 34. Where were you born? 35. We were born in New York. 36. My brothers died in Boston; they were born in London. 37. Cæsar vanquished the Gauls. 38. Did he overcome all his enemies? 39. He did not overcome them all.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Let us go to the house; it must be time to sup now, and I am going to put on another coat. 2. You can put it on after supper. 3. I like better to make my toilet before supper. 4. As you please; mine is already made. 5. We shall go out as soon as we shall have supped, shall we not (*n'est-ce pas*)? 6. Yes; it is necessary to go a little early to the house of those young ladies, if we wish to be certain to find them at home. 7. I do not wish to go there too soon either (*non plus*). 8. If we arrive there at eight it will be soon enough, and not too soon. 9. Well, it is eight o'clock wanting five minutes, and here is the house; let us go in.

10. How long (how much time) were you in college? 11. About two years and a half. 12. I was not quite seventeen years old when I entered. 13. Then you came out (of it) before the age of twenty years. 14. Yes; I finished my studies very young, that is to say at college, for I have always studied since. 15. How old are you? 16. I am twenty-eight years old. 17. When have you seen the professor? 18. It is eight years since I have seen him. 19. He is dead. 20. When did he die? 21. He died the 8th of February, 1858; he was born in Boston, 10th March, 1801. 22. Where were you born? 23. I was born in New York.

## 80.—QUATRE-VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

## IRREGULAR PAST DEFINITES.

1. The irregular past definites, all of which have now been given, are the following, with their compounds.

INFINITIVE.	PAST DEF.	INFINITIVE.	PAST DEF.	INFINITIVE.	PAST DEF.
Avoir,	<i>eus</i> , Les. 74.	Faire,	<i>fis</i> , Les. 75.	Vaincre,	<i>vainquis</i> , Les. 79.
Condre,	<i>cousis</i> , " 79.	Mourir,	<i>mourus</i> , " 79.	Venir,	<i> vins</i> , " 77.
Écrire,	<i>écrivis</i> , " 78.	Naitre,	<i>naquis</i> , " 79.	Voir,	<i>vis</i> , " 75.
Être,	<i>fus</i> , " 74.	Tenir,	<i>tins</i> , " 77.		

2. In English, any adjective preceded by the definite article may be used as a noun. This cannot always be done in French. Hence adjectives used in this way are very commonly translated into French by the adjective with the noun *gens*, *homme*, or some other general term.

The young. The diligent.

Les jeunes gens. Les gens diligents.

The studious. The courageous.

Les hommes studieux. Les gens courageux.

The industrious become rich.  
The studious become learned.

Les gens industriels deviennent riches.  
Les écoliers studieux deviennent s-  
vants.

3. We have seen that the past indefinite may *generally* be used for the past definite. When, therefore, the learner is in doubt which of the two to use, it will be safe to employ the past indefinite, except in narratives.

That event. Bare-headed.  
Barefoot.

Cet événement. Nu-tête or tête nue.  
Nu-pieds or pieds nus.

4. When the adjective *nus* precedes the noun, and forms with it an adverbial expression, it is invariable; but when it follows the noun, and does not form an adverbial expression, it agrees in gender and number.

He goes out barefoot.  
The bare property of an estate.  
To cut, cut off. To split.  
To steal, take away (from). To surprise.

Il sort nu-pieds or pieds nus.  
La nue propriété d'un bien.  
Couper. Fendre.  
Dérober (à). Surprendre.

*Surprendre*, a compound of *prendre*, takes *à* before the infinitive.

A surgeon. A wing.  
The beak. Very hard.  
Opposite (to). Opposite to the church.  
Since, from. The most part, majority.  
From the Rhine to the ocean.  
Since his return.  
That noise gives me a violent headache.

Un chirurgien. Une aile.  
Le bec. Fort dur.  
Vis-à-vis (de). Vis-à-vis de l'église.  
Depuis. La plupart.  
Depuis le Rhin jusqu'à l'océan.  
Depuis son retour.  
Ce bruit me fend la tête.

5. When any part of a person is the object of the verb, the possessor is preceded by *à* and not *de*, and the pronoun is the indirect object.

You break your mother's heart.  
You break her heart.  
The surgeon cut off that man's arm.

Vous fendez le cœur à votre mère.  
Vous lui fendez le cœur.  
Le chirurgien coupe le bras à cet homme.

He cuts it off.

Il le lui coupe.

6. In speaking of an action or state of past time, which is still continuing, the English employ a past tense, but the French the present; thus,

Have you lived here long?

Y a-t-il longtemps que vous demeurez ici? or, demeurez-vous ici depuis longtemps?

I have lived here a year.

J'y demeure depuis un an; or, il y a un an que j'y demeure.

I have had your book a month.

Il y a un mois que j'ai votre livre; or, j'ai votre livre depuis un mois.

7. The French use the present also to express what is true at the present time, although relating to a past event.

It was we who opened the windows.

C'est nous qui avons ouvert les fenêtres.

<sup>8</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>27</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>4</sup>  
é-vé-ne-mé-nt, nu, nus, cou-per, fendre, dé-ro-ber, sur-prendre, chi-rur-gien, aile, bec, de-  
<sup>22</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>22</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
pu-ia, plu-part.

He told me that charity *was* entirely a Christian virtue. Il me disait que la charité *est* une vertu toute chrétienne.

9. An immediate future in English is sometimes best translated into French by *aller* and the infinitive.

If you wish, I *will show* you my copy-book. Si vous voulez, je *vais* vous *montrer* mon cahier.

If you have no flowers I *will give* you some. Si vous n'avez pas de fleurs je *vais* vous en *donner*.

I *will go* for my book. Je *vais chercher* mon livre.

1. Les sages prévoient-ils tous les événements? 2. Non, ils ne les prévoient pas. 3. Ces petits garçons sortent-ils quelquefois nu-pieds (*or* pieds nus)? 4. Ils sortent souvent nu-pieds (pieds nus). 5. Pourquoi cet homme sort-il nu-tête? 6. Il sort nu-tête parce qu'il n'a pas de chapeau. 7. Que coupez-vous? 8. Je coupe ce bâton. 9. Que coupe le chirurgien? 10. Il coupe le bras gauche à cet homme. 11. Le barbier coupe-t-il les cheveux aux enfants? 12. Il les leur coupe. 13. Ces enfants font trop de bruit, ne fendent-ils pas la tête à leur mère? 14. Non, car elle vient de sortir, fort heureusement. 15. Coupez-vous le bec à cet oiseau? 16. Je lui coupe le bec et les ailes. 17. J'ai lu la plupart de ces livres. 18. Cet oiseau a les ailes fortes et le bec dur. 19. Le chirurgien demeure vis-à-vis de l'église. 20. Eûtes-vous de la neige ici la semaine dernière? 21. Nous en eûmes un peu. 22. Combien de temps y a-t-il que vous étudiez l'allemand? 23. Il y a six mois que je l'étudie. 24. Depuis combien de temps avez-vous mon livre? 25. Je l'ai depuis trois semaines.

1. Are you not cutting that child's hair? 2. I am cutting it for him. 3. Do you know the most part of the words of your lesson? 4. I know them all. 5. Were you not delighted to see your father on Saturday? 6. We were all delighted to see him, and he was delighted to see us also. 7. Hadst thou time to arrive home yesterday before the rain? 8. No; my brother had time to arrive at his house, but I had only the time to arrive at Mr. B.'s. 9. Have you been looking at that picture long? 10. I have been looking at it hardly ten minutes. 11. How long has your friend been looking at it? 12. He has been looking at it almost an hour. 13. Do you split wood with that ax? 14. I do not split wood; the servant cuts and splits all the wood.

15. Is the surgeon going to cut off that boy's arm? 16. No, sir, he is going to cut off his finger. 17. Do you surprise your father?

18. I surprise him sometimes. 19. Does that news surprise you? 20. It surprises me much. 21. Do you live opposite to your store? 22. No, I live opposite to the brick church. 23. Have you read the most part of those books? 24. I have read them all. 25. Who has stolen your cloak? 26. A thief stole it last week. 27. These trees take away from us the view of the country. 28. Is not this wood harder than that? 29. No, that wood is as hard as this. 30. Did you foresee these events? 31. I did not foresee them. 32. How long have you been here? 33. I have been here hardly half an hour. 34. It was I who lighted the fire. 35. I have here a letter from your brother; if you wish, I will show it to you.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Good evening, young ladies; we are delighted to see you so gay. 2. Good evening, sirs; we are very much surprised to see you. 3. We thought you in China (*Chine*), it is so long a (*tant*) time since we have seen you. 4. It is not from our fault. 5. Undoubtedly not (*que non*); but come in; take some chairs. 6. We have had so much business that we could only go out late in the evening. 7. Very well; there must have been much business this season, for all the gentlemen sing the same song. 8. I see well that you are laughing at us. 9. We have no desire to weep this evening; but it is very true that all the gentlemen must have been (*avoir été*) very much occupied this season.

10. By good fortune, business is not always the same (*de même*), and we shall have the pleasure of seeing you occasionally. 11. Yes, that is (*c'est*) to say, gentlemen, that you will come when you have nothing better (*de mieux*) to do; will you not? we thank you much for your goodness. 12. Ah, truly, ladies, you are too severe (*sévères*); but we are charmed to see you in (*de*) so fine humor, for you laugh at all that we say.

## 81.—QUATRE-VINGT ET UNIÈME LEÇON.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

1. THE PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed by dropping ANT final of the present participle, and annexing the terminating letters,

E,	ES,	E,	IONS,	IEZ,	ENT.
Thus PARLER, to speak, present participle PARLANT, makes					
<i>Que je parle,</i>		<i>qu'il parle,</i>		<i>que vous parliez,</i>	
That I may speak,		that he may speak,		that you may speak,	
<i>Que tu parles,</i>		<i>que nous parlions,</i>		<i>qu'ils parlent,</i>	
That thou mayest speak,		that we may speak,		that they may speak.	

1 12 21    1 12 5  
par-lions, par-liez.

**SORTIR**, to go out, present participle **SORTANT**, makes

<i>Que je sorte,</i>	<i>qu'il sorte,</i>	<i>que vous sortiez,</i>
That I may go out,	that he may go out,	that you may go out,
<i>Que tu sortes,</i>	<i>que nous sortions,</i>	<i>qu'ils sortent,</i>
That thou mayest go out,	that we may go out,	that they may go out.

**VOIR**, to see, present participle **VOYANT**, makes

<i>Que je voie,*</i>	<i>qu'il voie,</i>	<i>que vous voyiez,</i>
That I may see,	that he may see,	that you may see,
<i>Que tu voies,</i>	<i>que nous voyions,</i>	<i>qu'ils voient,</i>
That thou mayest see,	that we may see,	that they may see.

**DIRE**, to say, present participle **DISANT**, makes

<i>Que je dise,</i>	<i>qu'il dise,</i>	<i>que vous disiez,</i>
That I may say,	that he may say,	that you may say,
<i>Que tu dises,</i>	<i>que nous disions,</i>	<i>qu'ils disent,</i>
That thou mayest say,	that we may say,	that they may say.

1. The **SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD** is so called because it is subjoined to some other verb or phrase, on which it depends, and to which it is connected by *que* or a relative pronoun. It does not, like the indicative, affirm its meaning as a fact, but only *presents it as a conception of the mind*,† and all the uses of this mood may be reduced to this one rule, as will be seen hereafter. For the instruction of the learner, however, it will be useful to give minor rules.

I.—Verbs used *interrogatively or negatively*, if followed by *que* and a dependent verb, generally govern that verb in the subjunctive, provided the subject of the dependent be different from that of the governing verb.

Do you say that he goes out?	Dites-vous qu'il <i>sorte</i> ?
I say that he goes out.	Je dis qu'il <i>sort</i> .
I do not believe that he sees us.	Je ne crois pas qu'il nous <i>voie</i> .
I know that he sees us.	Je sais qu'il nous <i>voit</i> .
Do you believe that we speak French?	Croyez-vous que nous <i>parlions</i> français?
No, I believe that you speak English.	Non, je crois que vous <i>parlez</i> anglais.
Do you think that he says that?	Pensez-vous qu'il <i>dise</i> cela?
I am sure that he says it.	Je suis certain qu'il le <i>dit</i> .

2. When there is no change of subject, the French prefer to use the infinitive; and in all the following rules for governing the subjunctive, it is to be understood that there must be a change of subject.

Does he believe that he is learned?	Croit-il <i>être</i> savant?
Do you desire that you may be rich?	Désirez-vous <i>être</i> riches?
By the side of, next to. People, folks.	À côté de. Des gens.

3. Adjectives preceding *gens*, as seen in Lesson 13, are generally feminine; those following it are masculine.

Wicked people.	Les <i>méchantes</i> gens, or les gens <i>méchants</i> .
----------------	--

\* We have seen (Lesson 26) that *y* in the termination of verbs becomes *i* before a mute.  
† I say that he goes out. I know that he goes out. Here that he goes out is affirmed as a fact, and the indicative must be used in French, *qu'il sort*. Do you say that he goes out? I do not say that he goes out. Here it is not affirmed as a fact, and the subjunctive must be used, *qu'il sorte*.

Some dangerous people.

De dangereuses gens, or des gens dangereux.

To ripen. Ripening.

Mûrir. Mûrissant.

A cigar. Magnificent.

Un cigare. Magnifique.

Lately. Precisely.

Dernièrement. Au juste.

I will tell you precisely what that costs.

Je vous dirai au juste ce que cela coûte.

To pull, to pluck up. To become.

Arracher. Devenir (comp. of venir).

4. Devenir, as also partir and sortir, take être for their auxiliary.

That man has become rich.

Cet homme est devenu riche.

My father has departed.

Mon père est parti.

My sisters have gone out.

Mes sœurs sont sorties.

5. When the adverb *tout* (*quite*) precedes a feminine adjective or participle beginning with a consonant, it is made for sound's sake to agree in gender and number with the noun. In other cases it is invariable.

A cravat all dirty.

Une cravate toute sale.

Some apples all red.

Des pommes toutes rouges.

A napkin all worn.

Une serviette tout usée.

1. Le maître dit-il que nous étudions bien ? 2. Il ne dit pas que vous étudiez bien. 3. Croyez-vous que je perde mon argent ? 4. Je ne crois pas que tu le perdes. 5. Croyez-vous que le chien voie ces oiseaux ? 6. Je ne crois pas qu'il les voie. 7. Ce fruit mûrit-il en été ? 8. Oui, il mûrit en juin. 9. Ces fruits deviennent-ils rouges ? 10. Ils deviennent rouges en mûrissant. 11. Que fait le chirurgien ? 12. Il arrache une dent à cet homme. 13. Votre ami est-il parti ce matin ? 14. Non, monsieur, il est parti hier. 15. Votre ami est-il devenu capitaine ? 16. Non, il est devenu général. 17. J'ai envie d'envoyer chercher des livres et des plumes. 18. Cette maison est magnifique ; est-elle à vous ? 19. Demeurez-vous à côté de votre magasin ? 20. Non, je demeure à côté de l'église. 21. Avez-vous vu récemment votre ami ? 22. Oui, je viens de le voir dans la rue. 23. Je demeure à côté de l'hôtel, et mon frère demeure à côté de chez moi.

1. Do you believe that we speak French ? 2. No, I believe that you speak Spanish, but not French. 3. Do you believe that I go out when it rains ? 4. I do not believe that thou goest out when it rains. 5. Do you say that my brother writes (*écrit*) his exercises well ? 6. I say that he writes them very well. 7. Does the master say that you study well ? 8. He says that we study very well. 9. Do you believe that the bird sees us ? 10. I am sure that he sees

us. 11. Does that fruit become red? 12. It becomes red in autumn. 13. Is the surgeon going to pull that child's tooth which pains him? 14. He is going to pull it because it has pained him a long time. 15. Does he pull teeth well? 16. He pulls them well; he is a skillful dentist (*dentiste*). 17. Do you dwell next that magnificent church? 18. No, sir, I dwell next to my brother's.

19. Do you send for cigars? 20. I send for cigars and wine. 21. Those handkerchiefs are quite dirty. 22. That cap fits that lady; tell me precisely what it has cost her. 23. It has cost her ten dollars. 24. Does the master say that we speak French? 25. He says that you speak French and Spanish. 26. Did you see any one here on Monday? 27. We saw nobody. 28. Did the children see you? 29. They did not see us, but the daughter of the neighbor saw us. 30. Did you write your letters yesterday? 31. We did not write them yesterday; I wrote mine the day before yesterday, and my friend wrote his on Wednesday. 32. Do you think that my brother writes better than I? 33. No, I think that you write as well as he. 34. Do you think that we read as well as our cousins? 35. I think that you read better than they. 36. I have forgotten my book on your table; I will go for it.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. See those clouds; are they not beautiful! 2. They are superb, and they change their (*de*) form and place at each instant (*instant*). 3. There is one which has the form of a horse. 4. There is another which appears like a big fish. 5. It is long since I have seen clouds so beautiful. 6. I like to look at (*regarder*) the clouds; the sight of a beautiful sky always gives me pleasure. 7. Do you know astronomy? 8. I studied it when I went to college; but I have almost forgotten the little that I knew. 9. What (*comment*) do they call that star which is so beautiful? 10. It is the evening star (*l'étoile du soir*); they call it (*Vénus*); do they not, Mr. A.? 11. Yes, it is so (*c'est elle*), and it sometimes takes the name of the morning star.

12. When Venus is the morning star, which is the evening star? 13. It is the only one, I believe, to which they give that name. 14. Astronomy is a beautiful study. 15. All studies are so; but every body has not the same taste. 16. Which study do you prefer, sir? I like all those which make part of the mathematics. 17. You have a taste very strange; I have never been able to endure (*souffrir*) ciphering. 18. Nevertheless (*cependant*) the mathematics are the only thing really certain in this world.



## 82.—QUATRE-VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

*The subjunctive of ÊTRE, to be, is irregular ; thus,*

*Que je sois, que tu sois, qu'il soit, que nous soyons, que vous soyez,*  
That I may be, that thou mayest be, that he may be, that we may be, that you may be,  
*qu'ils soient,* that they may be.

Do you say that I am negligent? Dites-vous *que je sois* négligent?  
I do not say that thou art negligent. Je ne dis pas *que tu sois* négligent.  
Do you believe that we are sick? Croyez-vous *que nous soyons* malades?  
I do not believe that you are sick. Je ne crois pas *que vous soyez* malades.  
Do you say that that man is English? Dites-vous que cet homme *soit* anglais?  
I do not believe that his friends are English. Je ne crois pas que ses amis *soient* anglais.

*The subjunctive of AVOIR, to have, is irregular ; thus,*

*Que j'aie, que tu aies, qu'il ait, que nous ayons, que vous ayez,*  
That I may have, that thou mayest, etc., that he may, etc., that we, etc., that you, etc.,  
*qu'ils aient,* that they may have.

Do you think that I have your book? Pensez-vous *que j'aie* votre livre?  
I do not think that thou hast it. Je ne pense pas *que tu l'aies*.  
I do not believe that your friend has it. Je ne crois pas que votre ami *l'ait*.  
Do you say that we have your money? Dites-vous *que nous ayons* votre argent?  
We do not say that you have it. Nous ne disons pas *que vous l'ayez*.  
Do you believe that they have it? Croyez-vous *qu'ils l'aient*?  
I know that they have it. Je sais qu'ils l'ont.\*

1. Interrogative and negative verbs do not govern the dependent verb in the subjunctive if the speaker looks upon what it expresses as an undoubted fact. This may be seen in the following.

Charles has come. Does his brother know that he is here? Charles est venu. Son frère sait-il *qu'il est* ici?  
Charles is *absent*. Does his brother think that he is here? Charles est *absent*. Son frère pense-t-il *qu'il soit* ici?  
That man is without sense; he does not believe that there is a God. Cet homme est insensé; il ne croit pas *qu'il y a* un Dieu.  
He is not superstitious; he does not believe that there are ghosts. Il n'est pas superstitieux; il ne croit pas *qu'il y ait* des revenants.

II.—The relatives *qui, que, lequel, duquel, auquel, dont,* and *où*, in like manner, when they do not refer to what is known and definite,† take the following verb in the subjunctive.  
There is a man who is honest. Voilà un homme qui *est* honnête.

\* We see in these examples that it is the uncertainty in the mind of the speaker which determines the use of the subjunctive mood.

† Such relatives have an antecedent of an indefinite character, as *quelqu'un, quelque chose, rien*, or a noun with an indefinite article.

I will seek a man who is honest. Je chercherai un homme qui *soit* hon-  
nête.

In the former of these phrases a particular individual is referred to and known to be honest; in the latter he is yet to be found. So in the first of the following, the house is selected and known to be beautiful; in the second it is yet to be selected.

I shall buy a house which is beautiful. J'achèterai une maison *qui est* belle.  
I shall buy a house which is beautiful. J'achèterai une maison *qui soit* belle.  
Is there any one who is more studious than Charles? Y a-t-il quelqu'un *qui soit* plus studi-  
eux que Charles?  
Do you know any one who has more money than the merchant? Connaissez-vous quelqu'un *qui ait* plus  
d'argent que le marchand?

*The subjunctive of POUVOIR, to be able, is irregular; thus,*

*Que je puisse, que tu puisses, qu'il puisse, que nous puissions, que vous puissiez,*  
That I can, that thou canst, that he can, that we can, that you can,  
*qu'ils puissent, that they can.*

Give me a book which I can consult. Donnez-moi un livre *que je puisse* con-  
sultier.  
Is there any one who can do that? Y a-t-il quelqu'un *qui puisse* faire cela?  
Let us choose a place where we can remain. Choisissons une place *où nous puissions*  
rester.  
Is there any thing which you can do? Y a-t-il quelque chose *que vous puis-*  
*siez* faire?  
Are there some persons here who can do that? Y a-t-il quelques personnes ici *qui*  
*puissent* faire cela.

2. When the same part of a person or thing is spoken of in several individuals, if it be singular with each individual, it is singular in French; but if plural with each individual, it is plural in French.

He washes the children's faces. Il lave *le visage* aux enfants.  
He washes the children's hands. Il lave *les mains* aux enfants.  
He washes their faces and hands. Il leur lave *le visage et les mains*.  
Birds have strong wings and hard beaks. Les oiseaux ont *les ailes fortes et le bec*  
*dur*.  
Their beaks are very hard. Ils ont *le bec dur*.

1. Crois-tu que j'aie peur de ces soldats? 2. Je ne crois pas que tu aies peur d'eux. 3. Pensez-vous que nous ayons moins d'esprit que nos cousins? 4. Je ne pense pas que vous ayez moins d'esprit qu'eux. 5. Y a-t-il quelqu'un qui ait plus de jugement que le docteur? 6. Croyez-vous que ces enfants aient mes papiers? 7. Je dis qu'ils les ont. 8. Penses-tu que je sois plus grand que ton petit cousin? 9. Je ne dis pas que tu sois plus grand que lui. 10. Connaissez-vous quelqu'un qui soit plus aimable que cette dame? 11. Pensez-vous que nous soyons riches? 12. Je ne pense pas que vous

soyez pauvres. 13. Nous ne croyons pas que ces hommes soient riches. 14. Crois-tu que je puisse écrire ce thème? 15. Je ne crois pas que tu puisses l'écrire. 16. Je ne crois pas que l'ouvrier puisse finir son ouvrage aujourd'hui. 17. Pensez-vous que nous puissions lire ces livres? 18. Je ne crois pas que vous puissiez les lire. 19. Y a-t-il quelques personnes ici qui puissent parler allemand?

1. I wish for a servant who is industrious and who has no fault; do you know one? 2. I know some who are laborious; but I know no one who is without fault. 3. Is there any scholar here who can write this exercise without a fault? 4. There is none. 5. Will you please lend this child a book which he can read? 6. I have no one which he can read. 7. Do you believe that those workmen can do their work to-day? 8. I do not believe that they can do it to-day. 9. Do you believe that we are afraid of those dogs? 10. I do not believe that you are afraid of them, but I am certain that those children are very much afraid of them. 11. Do you say that we are negligent? 12. I do not say that you are negligent, for I know that you are industrious.

13. Do you cut off the wings of those birds? 14. We cut them off. 15. Do you cut off their beaks? 16. We do not cut them off. 17. Does the servant wash the children's faces? 18. He washes their faces and their hands. 19. That house is magnificent; does it belong to you? 20. No, sir, it belongs to my brother. 21. Have you seen your friend lately? 22. No, sir, it is two weeks since I have seen him. 23. Has your father gone out? 24. Yes, sir, he has just gone out. 25. How long have you studied French? 26. I have studied it about a year. 27. When does your brother set out for the country? 28. He departed this morning at half past six. 29. I desire to buy a house which is beautiful, and where I can remain all the year.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. What are you studying now? 2. I am studying German when I have a little time, which is not often. 3. Have you finished the German grammar? 4. Not yet; I have learned only the half of it. 5. Do you read more than two or three pages of German a (*par*) day? 6. No, when I find the time to read I translate from two to three pages a day; but never more than three. 7. That is enough; the German is difficult.

8. Did you speak of this business to any one yesterday? 9. I spoke of it to Mr. C. 10. What did he say of it? 11. We went

to see his brother, but he was not at home, so we have yet done nothing. 12. Mr. C. and his brother will be very much pleased with this business, and I believe that you will not have any difficulty with them. 13. I believe so too (also). 14. Mr. C. says that he consents to undertake it, if his brother will (*veut*) undertake it with him. 15. I went this morning to the house of my friend Francis (*François*), and we spoke of it together. 16. Did he foresee any difficulty? 17. No, he says that it is a very good business.

## 83.—QUATRE-VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

III.—Relatives preceded by a superlative or word having the force of a superlative, as *le seul, l'unique*, the only, *le premier, le dernier, le meilleur, le moindre, le plus, le moins, le mieux*, when they denote comparison, govern the following verb in the subjunctive.\*

He is the only man to whom we are able to entrust our business.	C'est <i>le seul</i> homme à qui nous <i>puissions</i> confier nos affaires.
This is the biggest apple that they can find.	Voici <i>la plus grosse</i> pomme qu'ils <i>puissent</i> † trouver.
Mr. C. is the most skillful physician that there is in New York.	M. H. est <i>le plus habile</i> médecin qu'il y ait à New York.
He is the best man that there is.	C'est <i>le meilleur</i> homme qu'il y ait.
France has the happiest climate which exists in the world.	La France a <i>le plus heureux</i> climat qui soit au monde.

*The present subjunctive of VOULOIR, to will, is irregular; thus,*

<i>Que je veuille,</i>	<i>que tu veuilles,</i>	<i>qu'il veuille,</i>	<i>que nous voulions,</i>	<i>que vous vouliez,</i>
That I may will,	that thou, etc.,	that he, etc.,	that we, etc.,	that you, etc.,
	<i>qu'ils veuillent,</i>	that they, etc.		

He is the only man to whom we are willing to trust our money.	C'est <i>le seul</i> homme à qui nous <i>voulions</i> confier notre argent.
Are there any persons here who are willing to do that?	Y a-t-il quelques personnes ici qui <i>veulent</i> faire cela?
Tell me the name of a book which you are willing to read.	Dites-moi le nom d'un livre que vous <i>vouliez</i> lire.
There is nothing which he will do.	Il n'y a rien qu'il <i>veuille</i> faire.
He does not believe that I am willing to study?	Il ne croit pas que je <i>veuille</i> étudier?

\* In these three rules thus far given, it may easily be seen that the subjunctive is not used when the speaker means to affirm an undoubted fact. When according to Rule I. we use an interrogation or negation we do not usually mean to affirm anything positively. The same is true when according to Rule II. we use a relative preceded by a general or vague expression. So here in Rule III. the verb after a relative preceded by a superlative may be seen to express its meaning vaguely.

† The id. is here is, *this is the biggest apple of all that they can find*, and the other apples with which this is compared are referred to vaguely. So in all other cases, the objects with which the comparison is made are referred to indefinitely, and the subjunctive is therefore used.

He does not say that thou art willing to study.	Il ne dit pas <i>que tu veuilles</i> étudier.
He is the best man that I can find.	C'est le meilleur homme <i>que je puisse</i> trouver.
The governor, tutor. Wisdom.	Le gouverneur. La sagesse.
The United States. To live in, inhabit.	Les États-Unis. Habiter.
To inform. An intention.	Inform. Une intention.
To embarrass, encumber. To dance.	Embarrasser. Danser.
A verb. An excuse, apology.	Un verbe. Une excuse.
Merit. To flatter.	Le mérite. Flatter.
The use. Certainly.	L'usage. Certainement.
Instructed, learned. Well instructed.	Instruit. Bien instruit.

*The present subjunctive of ALLER, to go, is irregular; thus,*

*Que j'aille, que tu ailles, qu'il aille, que nous allions, que vous alliez,*  
That I may go, that thou mayest go, that he may go, that we may go, that you may go,  
*qu'ils aillent, that they may go.*

Do you think that I go to the theater too often?	Pensez-vous <i>que j'aille</i> trop souvent au spectacle?
I do not think that thou goest there very often.	Je ne pense pas <i>que tu y ailles</i> très-souvent.
Are there any persons here who are going to the river?	Y a-t-il quelques personnes ici qui <i>allent</i> à la rivière?
I know no one who is going there.	Je ne connais personne qui y <i>aillent</i> .
Do you believe that we are going to the country?	Croyez-vous <i>que nous allions</i> à la campagne?
I do not believe that you are going there.	Je ne crois pas <i>que vous y alliez</i> .

1. Cet homme est-il instruit? 2. Oui, c'est l'homme le plus savant qu'il y ait dans notre village. 3. Qui est cet homme? 4. C'est le gouverneur de cette province; c'est un homme de mérite et de sagesse. 5. Votre ami habite-t-il les États-Unis? 6. Oui, il y habite depuis trois ans. 7. Informez-vous votre père de tout ce que vous faites? 8. Je l'informe de presque tout. 9. Ôtez votre manteau; ne vous embarrasse-t-il pas? 10. Il ne m'embarrasse pas. 11. Savez-vous tous les verbes de votre leçon? 12. Certainement je les sais bien, et j'en connais l'usage. 13. Les hommes aiment ceux qui les flattent. 14. Avez-vous l'intention d'aller au bal ce soir? 15. Oui, monsieur; mais je n'ai pas l'intention d'y danser. 16. Croyez-vous que je veuille faire du mal? 17. Non, monsieur, je ne le crois pas. 18. Avez-vous entendu dire que mon

18 7 11 1 5 4 1 22 12 1 13 6 14 16 6 14 3 1 21 1 1 1 6  
gou-ver-neur, sa-gesse, État-zun-ia, An-bi-ter, in-for-mer, in-ten-tion, em-bar-ras-ser,  
dan-ser, verbe, ex-cu-se, mé-rite, flat-ter, u-sage, cer-taine-ment, in-struit, aille, al-lions, al-  
lies, allent.

frère aille en Europe? 19. Je l'ai entendu dire. 20. Croyez-vous qu'il veuille y aller? 21. Je ne le crois pas.

1. Is your cousin the best scholar that there is in the school? 2. He is the best. 3. Do you believe that those scholars are willing to learn their lessons? 4. I do not believe that they are willing to learn them. 5. Does the master think that we are not willing to study? 6. He does not think that you are willing to study much. 7. Do you know any one who is better than the governor? 8. No; the governor is the best man that there is in this city; his brother is also a man of wisdom and merit. 9. Does the master receive your excuse? 10. No, sir; he receives no excuses. 11. Why do you not dance? 12. I am tired; I have danced almost all the evening. 13. Were you born in (*aux*) the United States? 14. Yes, sir; and my uncle who died last year was born in the United States also.

15. Have you learned the verbs of your lesson? 16. Certainly; I have learned them all. 17. Have you the intention to flatter that man? 18. No; I do not like to flatter any one. 19. Is this word in (*de*) use? 20. No, sir; it is now out of use. 21. Dost thou think that I am going to the theater? 22. I do not think that thou art going there. 23. Have you heard that my brothers are going to Europe? 24. I have not heard that they are going there; and I do not believe that you are going there. 25. Are you going to buy that house? 26. No, it is too small; I desire to find one which is large. 27. Is it not beautiful? 28. Yes; it is the most beautiful house that there is in this street. 29. Do you like this city? 30. No; we wish to find a place where we can live more contented. 31. Do you know any one who can speak better than that orator? 32. No; he is the best orator that there is in our city

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Much rain has fallen this winter. 2. Yes; and the winter past, on the contrary, hardly (*presque pas*) any fell. 3. I have received a letter from my cousin, and he tells me that snow fell last Friday in New Orleans. 4. It is extraordinary; they do not often see any there. 5. Since I have been here I have seen snow only once. 6. When I was a little boy I used to make (I made) snow-balls in winter. 7. Where were you then? 8. At St. Louis. 9. There a great deal falls.

10. Have you been here long? 11. I have been waiting for you nearly a quarter of an hour. 12. I did not know it. 13. They

told me that you were in the garden, and I did not believe it proper (*convenable*) to let you be called (*appeler*). 14. You were wrong. 15. Not at all; I have not come to depart forthwith. 16. I am delighted at it; I have been expecting you since day before yesterday. 17. Where is your horse? 18. I told the boy to put him in the stable.

19. It is very fine weather this evening. 20. The nights are cool, but it is too warm in the day. 21. I have suffered much (*beaucoup souffert*) from the heat (*la chaleur*) to-day. 22. And I (*moi*) also; I suffered much from it. 23. I believe that it was still warmer yesterday than to-day. 24. I do not know; it has been very warm all day. 25. We have much need (*bien besoin*) of rain. 26. We shall have some before long (*peu*).

27. Have you seen Madam C. to-day? 28. No, sir; she came here this morning, but I had gone to my sister's. 29. She told me that she was to come and see you. 30. When I knew that she had come, I was very sorry for having (*d'être*) gone out. 31. She was sick a long time. 32. Yes; when I saw her the past week she coughed still. 33. She coughs scarcely any now.

#### 84.—QUATRE-VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

##### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

1. The use of the verb *vouloir* before nouns and verbs has been spoken of in Lessons 18 and 25. It is often equivalent to *shall*. Its use may be further seen in the following sentences:

I wish for my papers.	Je désire mes papiers.
I will have my papers.	Je veux avoir mes papiers.
He wishes for that book.	Il désire ce livre.
He will (is determined to) have that book.	Il veut avoir ce livre.
I do not wish to stay here.	Je ne désire pas rester ici.
I am not willing to stay here.	{ Je ne veux pas rester ici. Je ne consens pas à rester ici. Il ne me plaît pas de rester ici.
I will not stay here.	Je ne veux pas rester ici.
I am willing to stay here.	Je veux bien rester ici.
Charles wishes much to go to the country, and his father consents. He will certainly go, for his mother is willing also.	Charles désire beaucoup aller à la campagne, et son père y consent. Il ira certainement, car sa mère le veut bien aussi.
George will by all means go to France.	Georges veut absolument aller en France.
I learn Italian because my father will have it so. I am willing to study it, and my brother will by all means learn it.	J'apprends l'italien parce que mon père le veut. Moi, je veux bien l'étudier; mon frère veut absolument l'apprendre.

IV.—Verbs which do not affirm a fact positively, but only express *will, desire, doubt, fear, command, approbation*, and the like, if followed by *que* and a dependent verb, govern that verb in the subjunctive.\*

He desires me to go out.

Il *désire* que je sorte.

He consents that we read.

Il *consent* que nous lisions.

I order him to tell us his name.

J'*ordonne* qu'il nous dise son nom.

I will have you study better, and be more attentive to your lessons.

Je *veux* que vous étudiez mieux, et que vous soyez plus attentif à vos leçons.

No reply, sir; you shall go to school to-morrow.

Pas d'observation, monsieur; je *veux* que vous alliez à l'école dès demain.

I am determined that you shall obey your masters, and always speak to them with politeness.

Je *veux* que vous obéissiez à vos maîtres, et que vous leur parliez toujours avec politesse.

2. The following are some of the verbs which govern the subjunctive according to the above rule :

Almer.                      Consentir.  
Almer mieux.            Craindre.  
Avoir besoin.            Désirer.  
Avoir envie.             Douter.  
Avoir peur.              Être content.

Mériter.                S'étonner.  
Permettre.              Souffrir.  
Préférer.                Souhaiter.  
Prendre garde.          Vouloir.  
Prier.                    Exiger.

To forbid, to defend (de bef. inf.).

Défendre.

To order.

Ordonner.

To command. To beware of.

Commander. Prendre garde.

To approve. To disapprove.

Trouver bon. Trouver mauvais.

To apprehend, fear.

Appréhender.

To prevent, hinder.

Empêcher.

To tremble. To fear.

Trembler. Craindre.

Je crains, tu crains, il craint, nous craignons, vous craignez, ils craignent,  
I fear, thou fearest, he fears, we fear, you fear, they fear.

He likes us to study much.

Il aime que nous étudions beaucoup.

We have a desire that you write to us.

Nous avons envie que vous nous écriviez.

I wish them to tell me their business.

Je souhaite qu'ils me disent leurs affaires.

He is afraid that I may lose my money.

Il a peur que je ne perde mon argent.

2. *Avoir peur, craindre, trembler, appréhender, empêcher, prendre garde* *que*, and verbs of fear and apprehension generally, when affirmative, take *ne* before a following subjunctive. They also take *de* before the infinitive.

They fear that we may deceive them.

Ils craignent que nous ne les trompions.

Beware lest he lose your money.

Prenez garde qu'il ne perde votre argent.

\* Here again we perceive the same character of the subjunctive. To express a *will, desire, fear, command*, etc., that a thing be done, is by no means affirming that it is actually done.

5 12 6 8 15 6 7 5 8 5 8 10 15 6 15 3 6 1 5  
mô-ri-ter, ô-ton-ner, per-mettra, prendra, dé-fendre, or-don-ner, com-man-dar, ap-pré-  
3 6 3 8 6 14 14 14 7 21 7 6 7  
hen-der, em-pô-cher, craindre, crains, craint, crai-gnons, crai-gnes, craignent.



*The present subjunctive of FAIRE, to do, is irregular ; thus,*

*Que je fasse, que tu fasses, qu'il fasse, que nous fassions, que vous fassiez,*  
That I may do, that thou, etc., that he, etc., that we, etc., that you, etc.,  
*qu'ils fassent, that they, etc.*

I approve of your doing good.	Je trouve bon <i>que vous fassiez</i> du bien.
He disapproves of our doing evil.	Il trouve mauvais <i>que nous fassions</i> du mal.
He commands me to do my duty, and thee to do thine.	Il commande <i>que je fasse</i> mon devoir, et <i>que tu fasses</i> le tien.
The master desires Charles to do this exercise, and his brothers to do those.	Le maître désire <i>que Charles fasse</i> ce thème-ci, et <i>que ses frères fassent</i> ceux-là.
He forbids our doing that.	Il <i>défend</i> <i>que nous fassions</i> cela.

1. Défendez-vous que nous fassions cela ? 2. Je ne défends pas que vous le fassiez. 3. Désirez-vous que je fasse du feu ? 4. J'aime mieux que le garçon en fasse. 5. Je veux que tu fasses ton devoir, et que les enfants fassent le leur. 6. Votre père ordonne que le domestique ait soin des chevaux. 7. Trouvez-vous bon que je sois ici ? 8. Je trouve mauvais que tu y sois. 9. Votre mère a-t-elle peur que vous ne soyez malades ? 10. Elle a peur que nous ne soyons malades. 11. Voulez-vous que mon frère soit ici demain ? 12. Je veux que votre frère et que votre cousin y soient demain. 13. Voulez-vous bien que j'aie vos livres ? 14. Je veux bien que tu les aies. 15. Ordonnez-vous que nous ayons soin de vos affaires ? 16. Non, monsieur, je préfère que mes frères en aient soin. 17. Trouvez-vous bon que je vende mes livres ? 18. Non, je trouve mauvais que tu les vendes.

1. Is your brother afraid that I am angry ? 2. He is afraid that thou art angry, and that thy brother is angry also. 3. Do you wish us to be here early ? 4. Yes ; and I wish your cousins to be here early also. 5. Dost thou consent that I have those fruit trees (*arbres fruitiers*) ? 6. I consent to thy having them. 7. Do you approve of our having much money ? 8. I disapprove of your having more than your brother. 9. What will you have me do ? 10. I will have you do your duty well. 11. What will you have this boy do ? 12. I will have him make some fire. 13. Are you afraid that those children may be lazy ? 14. No ; I am afraid that they are doing harm. 15. The master forbids us to go out at present. 16. Do you approve of the children's having your gold pen ? 17. No ; I forbid their having it.

18. Do you wish us to buy that house? 19. I wish you to buy it. 20. Are you afraid that the master may see your writing? 21. No; I desire him to see it. 22. Have you a desire that we study French? 23. Yes; I will have you speak French, and your brothers speak German. 24. Beware lest that child be sick. 25. Charles the Fifth (*Quint*) who spoke several European (*européennes*) languages fluently (*couramment*), used to say that it was necessary (*fallait*) to speak Spanish to the gods, Italian to the ladies, French to our friends, German to soldiers, English to geese (*oies*), Hungarian (*hongrois*) to horses, and Bohemian (*bohémien*) to the devil (*le diable*).

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you think of traveling this summer? 2. I think of going to Europe in a month or six weeks. 3. Is Mr. A. going there also? 4. No, miss; I shall stay here all summer. 5. You do not often travel. 6. The year past I made a journey to Paris. 7. Are you not the cousin of Mr. J. whom I saw at Madam V.'s last winter? 8. Yes, miss, I am. 9. Is it not he (*lui*) who stays at present at Mr. D.'s? 10. Yes, it is he. 11. Does he think of staying here this summer? 12. No, miss; he thinks of setting out soon for Paris. 13. Bring him to our house. 14. He will be delighted to come and pay you (*vous présenter*) his respects (*ses respects*).

15. Does the sick woman cough still? 16. She coughs scarcely any now; she is out of danger, but it is necessary to tell her to avoid going out in the evening, or when the weather is damp. 17. She goes out only when it is very fine weather. 18. Has Mr. V. arrived from the country? 19. He had not yet arrived when I was at his house to-day. 20. Has he gone for his sister? 21. Yes, it is for that that he has gone.

22. Lewis, is your exercise corrected? 23. Yes, sir; do you wish to see it? 24. If you do your exercises well you will be rewarded; but those who play instead of studying will be always ignorant and despised. 25. Do you like to study? 26. Sometimes, sir; when I succeed in knowing my lessons well, I find much pleasure in study. 27. It is necessary, then, to be always diligent and studious. 28. There are two trees opposite to my window. 29. The surgeon is going to cut off the sick man's arm.

## 85.—QUATRE-VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

<i>To take care of.</i> The bay.	<i>Soigner.</i> La baie.
<i>An orchard.</i> To obey.	<i>Un verger.</i> Obéir (à).
<i>On the other side of or over the bay.</i>	<i>De l'autre côté de la baie.</i>
<i>A fruit-tree.</i> To be worth more.	<i>Un arbre fruitier.</i> Valoir mieux.
General Lafayette commanded the national guards.	Le général Lafayette commandait les gardes nationales.

1. *Ordonner* and *commander* take *à* before a person, and *de* before the infinitive.

Order the servant to come.	Ordonnez au domestique de venir.
Order him to do that.	Ordonnez-lui de faire cela.
He desires us to have the money.	Il désire que nous ayons l'argent.
We are determined that you shall have it.	Nous voulons que vous l'ayez.
I fear that you may be sick.	Je crains que vous ne soyez malade.

V.—Impersonal verbs, and *il est* with an attribute, followed by *que*, govern a following verb in the subjunctive, when the action is not affirmed positively. The following are of this kind.

It is necessary.	Il faut. Il est nécessaire.
It is suitable. It is important.	Il convient. Il importe.
It is sufficient. It is better.	Il suffit. Il vaut mieux.
It is to be desired.	Il est à désirer, or à souhaiter.
It is doubtful. It is possible.	Il est douteux. Il est possible.
It is just. It is proper.	Il est juste. Il est à propos.
It is time for me to go home.	Il est temps que j'aille chez moi.
It is necessary that thou write a letter.	Il faut que tu écrives une lettre.
It is sufficient that he have his due.	Il suffit qu'il ait son dû.
It is important that we go to the market.	Il importe que nous allions au marché.
It is better that you go.	Il vaut mieux que vous y alliez.
It is surprising that they do that.	Il est surprenant qu'ils fassent cela.

The subjunctive present of *VALOIR* is irregular; thus,

*Que je vaille, que tu vailles, qu'il vaille, que nous valions, que vous valiez,*  
That I be worth, that thou be, etc., that he be, etc., that we be, etc., that you be, etc.,  
*qu'ils valent,* that they be worth.

Do you say that I am worth more than my brother?	Dites-vous que je vaille mieux que mon frère?
It is sufficient that thou be worth as much as thy brother.	Il suffit que tu vailles autant que ton frère.

\* To say that *it is necessary, it is suitable, it is important, etc.*, that a thing be done, is not to affirm it positive; hence, as in the other rules, the subjunctive is used.

30 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30  
soi-gneur, baie, ver-ger, o-hé-ir, fruit-ier, né-ces-saire, con-vient, im-porte, suf-fit, sou-  
7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30  
Aal-ter, dou-teux, pos-sible, pro-pos, vaille, va-lions, va-liez, valient.

It is doubtful if he be worth as much as thou.	Il est douteux <i>qu'il vaille</i> autant que toi.
It is possible that we are worth more than they.	Il est possible <i>que nous valions</i> mieux qu'eux.
I do not think that you are worth more than they.	Je ne crois pas <i>que vous valiez</i> mieux qu'eux.
Do you say that these gloves are worth a dollar?	Croyez-vous que ces gants <i>vaillent</i> une piastre?
I say that they are worth more than a dollar.	Je dis qu'ils <i>valent</i> plus d'une piastre.
I fear that he may do you harm.	Je crains qu'il ne vous fasse du mal.
She is afraid of thy going on the lake.	Elle a peur que tu n'aïlles sur le lac.
<i>The night before last.</i>	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">           { L'avant-dernière nuit.            { La nuit d'avant-hier.            { Avant-hier soir.         </div>

2. *Soir* is before bed-time; *nuît*, the rest of the night.

I supped with my father night before last.	J'ai soupé chez mon père avant-hier soir.
I stayed at home very late in the evening; it was eleven o'clock.	Je suis resté chez moi très-tard dans la soirée, il était onze heures.
I passed at the ball the night before last.	J'ai passé au bal la nuit d'avant-hier.

1. Dieu nous commande de l'aimer, il nous commande aussi d'aimer tout le monde. 2. Cet homme soigne bien sa santé. 3. Le jardinier a-t-il des arbres fruitiers? 4. Il en a quelques-uns. 5. Le domestique a-t-il soin de votre verger? 6. Il en a soin. 7. Nous devons obéir à Dieu. 8. Le domestique obéit à son maître. 9. Où serez-vous demain? 10. Je serai de l'autre côté de la baie. 11. Croyez-vous que je vaille mieux que mon frère? 12. Je dis que tu vaux autant que ton frère. 13. Pensez-vous que nous valions moins que nos cousins? 14. Je pense que vous valez autant qu'eux. 15. Croyez-vous que ce livre-ci vaille mieux que ceux-là? 16. Non, je crois que ceux-là valent mieux que celui-ci. 17. Est-il juste que nous fassions cet ouvrage? 18. Non, il est juste que les élèves le fassent. 19. Est-il à propos que je dise à quelqu'un ce que je viens d'entendre? 20. Il est à propos que vous le disiez à votre père et à votre frère.

1. The master orders the scholars to make no noise. 2. General Washington commanded the army (*armée*) of the United States. 3. God orders us above all to love him. 4. Who has taken care of the stranger during his sickness (*sa maladie*)? 5. The doctor has taken good care of him. 6. Do you live over the bay? 7. No, but I go over the bay every evening in summer. 8. The gardener

is in his orchard. 9. Has he many fruit-trees in his orchard? He has many. 10. The dog always obeys the voice (*la voix*) of his master. 11. Is it suitable that you go to the physician's? 12. No, it is better that our friends go. 13. That man is not industrious; it is surprising that he is rich. 14. Is it necessary that you do your task to-day? 15. It is sufficient that I do it this week.

16. Is it important that the workman finish his work this week? 17. Yes, it is necessary that he finish it to-morrow. 18. Has that scholar written his exercise? 19. No, sir, it is doubtful whether he writes it. 20. Does the master say that you are worth more than we? 21. He says that we are worth more than you. 22. Do you say that this horse is worth two hundred dollars? 23. Yes, and I say that those are worth five hundred dollars. 24. The night before last was very stormy (*orageuse*); the thunder (*la foudre*) fell several times between two and three in the (*du*) morning. 25. Is it possible for you to finish your task at six o'clock? 26. No, sir, it is impossible (*impossible*) for me to finish it before eight.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is it just that my brother have my money? 2. It is just that he have his, and that you have yours. 3. Is it necessary that the physician go to your house twice a (*par*) day? 4. It is sufficient that he go there once a day. 5. Is it surprising that I make mistakes? 6. It is not surprising that you make some; but it is very surprising that those children do not make any. 7. Is it important that we study French? 8. It is important that you study French and Spanish. 9. Is it necessary for us to buy a horse? 10. It is necessary for you to buy a horse and some cows. 11. Have you been to the theater this week? 12. I went there night before last.

13. Have you finished translating the work which I carried you last week? 14. Not yet; it is a little difficult, and I have hardly any time to (*pour*) read it. 15. How do you like (*find*) it? 16. It is very interesting and very well written; how many volumes are there? 17. There are three; when you wish for the second, let me know. 18. Thank you; I shall not need it under (*avant*) seven or eight days. 19. How much of it do you translate each day? 20. I read from fifteen to twenty pages, and I do not think of doing more (*en faire davantage*) at present. 21. You are very diligent; it is enough. 22. Do you look for the words in the dictionary? 23. Sometimes, but I know them almost all. 24. The second volume will be easier. 25. Without doubt; I do not find the first volume so difficult to translate now as when I began it.

## 86.—QUATRE-VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

VI.—Some conjunctions govern the subjunctive. The following are of this kind.

<i>In order that.</i>	<i>Unless.</i>	<i>À fin que.</i>	<i>À moins que.</i>
<i>Before.</i>	<i>Though.</i>	<i>Avant que.</i>	<i>Bien que.</i>
<i>For fear that, lest.</i>		<i>De peur que, de crainte que.</i>	
<i>Provided that.</i>	<i>Until</i>	<i>Pourvu que.</i>	<i>Jusqu'à ce que.</i>
<i>Although.</i>	<i>That, in order that.</i>	<i>Quoique.</i>	<i>Pour que.</i>
<i>If, in case that.</i>		<i>Au cas que, en cas que.</i>	

For more conjunctions of this kind, see Synopsals, page 476.

1. *A moins que* takes *ne* before the following subjunctive; also *de peur que* and *de crainte que* when not negative.

Unless you give him money.	<i>À moins que vous ne lui donniez de l'argent.</i>
Unless they be here.	<i>À moins qu'ils ne soient ici.</i>
Although he knows his lesson, he does not recite it well.	<i>Quoiqu'il sache * sa leçon, il ne la récite pas bien.</i>
Provided that I be there.	<i>Pourvu que je sois là.</i>
In order that he may do that.	<i>À fin qu'il fasse cela.</i>
For fear that they may surprise us.	<i>De peur qu'ils ne nous surprennent.</i>
I will go before you finish.	<i>J'irai avant que vous finissiez.</i>
Lest we surprise them.	<i>De crainte que nous ne les surprenions.</i>
Although he cannot read.	<i>Bien qu'il ne puisse pas lire.</i>
It is necessary to stay until he finishes.	<i>Il faut rester jusqu'à ce qu'il finisse.</i>
In order that thou mayest know thy lesson.	<i>Pour que tu saches ta leçon.</i>
In case I know my lesson.	<i>Au cas que je sache ma leçon.</i>
In case we know ours.	<i>En cas que nous sachions les nôtres.</i>
Unless you know yours.	<i>À moins que vous ne sachiez la vôtre.</i>

VII.—*Que* used for any conjunction governing the subjunctive, or for a second *et*, takes the subjunctive after it.

Be good, in order that you may have friends, and that you may be happy.	<i>Soyez bon, afin que vous ayez des amis, et que vous puissiez être heureux.</i>
If you are good, and if you know your lesson, you will be praised.	<i>Si vous êtes bon, et que vous sachiez votre leçon, vous serez loué.</i>
So that, in such a manner that.	<i>De façon que, de sorte que, de manière que.</i>
In such a way that.	<i>De telle sorte (or manière) que.</i>

VIII.—After expressions like the above, the verb is in the indicative mood when it affirms its meaning positively, and in the subjunctive when it indicates its meaning potentially.

\* The verbs following such conjunction either express their meaning under a condition of uncertainty, or they belong to a subordinate clause which the speaker passes over vaguely; hence the subjunctive is used.

You fulfill your duties so that you are esteemed.	Vous remplissez votre devoir <i>de façon que vous êtes estimé.</i>
Fulfill your duty in such a manner that you may be esteemed.	Remplissez votre devoir <i>de manière que vous soyez estimé.</i>
Although it rain, he will come.	<i>Quoiqu'il pleuve</i> , il viendra.
He lives in such a manner that he does harm to no one.	Il vit <i>de telle manière</i> qu'il ne fait mal à personne.
Live in such a way that you may do harm to no one.	Vivez <i>de telle sorte</i> que vous ne fassiez de mal à personne.
This respect. To present, introduce.	Ce respect. Présenter, introduire.
2. <i>Présenter</i> , is introducing to a person; <i>introduire</i> , into a place.	
I introduced him to my friend.	Je l'ai présenté à mon ami.
I introduced him into the society.	Je l'ai introduit dans la société.
To accompany. So soon.	Accompagner. <i>Sitôt.</i>
Gallant. On purpose.	Galant. <i>Exprès.</i>
To prove. To permit, allow.	Prouver. <i>Permettre</i> (as <i>mettre</i> , <i>Les</i> , 39).
To seem. It seems.	Sembler. <i>Il semble.</i>

3. *Il semble*, without an object pronoun, governs the subjunctive; with one, it does not. It seems that that child is sick. *Il semble que cet enfant soit malade.*  
 It seems to me that he is sick. *Il me semble qu'il est malade.*

1. Notre cousin est venu ici pour que nous allions au spectacle avec lui. 2. Cet écolier restera ici jusqu'à ce qu'il sache sa leçon. 3. Quoiqu'il soit un peu paresseux, il me semble qu'il apprend bien sa leçon. 4. Je veux toujours faire en sorte que le maître soit content. 5. Si vous voyez monsieur A. aujourd'hui, présentez-lui mes respects. 6. Accompagnez-vous le maître à l'école? 7. Oui, monsieur, je l'accompagne tous les matins. 8. Votre père sera-t-il ici demain? 9. Non, monsieur, il ne viendra pas sitôt. 10. Je viens de la campagne exprès pour vous accompagner au bal. 11. Vous êtes fort galant. 12. Ce que vous dites prouve que cet homme est riche. 13. Oui, mais quoique il soit riche, il n'est pas honnête. 14. Le médecin ne me permet pas de boire de café. 15. Il semble qu'il pleuve. 16. Il me semble qu'il pleut. 17. Non, je ne crois pas qu'il pleuve.

1. Although I know my lessons perfectly, I cannot always recite them well. 2. Is your cousin the best scholar that there is in the school? 3. He is not the best; for although he can learn fast, he does not study much. 4. Do you wish us to know the Latin and the Greek? 5. I will have you know the Latin, the Greek,

6.

<sup>9</sup>pleuve, <sup>5</sup>res-<sup>6</sup>pect, <sup>5</sup>pré-<sup>6</sup>zen-<sup>6</sup>ter, <sup>14</sup>in-<sup>15</sup>tro-<sup>13</sup>duire, <sup>1</sup>so-<sup>21</sup>com-<sup>1</sup>pa-<sup>6</sup>gner, <sup>17</sup>si-<sup>17</sup>tôt, <sup>1</sup>ga-<sup>17</sup>lant, <sup>1</sup>ex-<sup>17</sup>près, <sup>15</sup>prou-  
<sup>7</sup>ver, <sup>3</sup>per-<sup>3</sup>mettre, <sup>3</sup>sem-<sup>3</sup>bler, <sup>3</sup>semble.

and the modern (*modernes*) languages. 6. Are you willing to lend us a book which we can read? 7. Certainly; I am willing to lend you one provided that you can read French. 8. In case that those young boys have money, will they go to the city? 9. They will go if they are docile (*dociles*), and if they know their lessons. 10. Fulfill thy duties in such a way that thou mayest be esteemed. 11. You learn your lessons in such a manner that your masters are always satisfied (*satisfaits*). 12. Charles has not come, lest we should blame him.

13. Present my respects to the doctor. 14. I will present them to him in case that I see him. 15. I am going to his house on purpose to see his son. 16. Who has introduced the stranger into our society? 17. Your friend the German has introduced him. 18. Does the physician permit you to go out at night? 19. He does not permit it. 20. "Has your sister who lives in the United States a son or a daughter," said a person to an Irishman (*irlandais*), his friend. 21. "To tell you the whole truth," answered the Irishman, embarrassed, "I do not yet know whether I am an uncle or an aunt; but I will write to my sister to pray her to inform me in regard to it (*en*), as soon as (*le plus tôt*) possible."

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Did you go to Mrs. C.'s ball last Thursday? 2. Yes, I went there with Mr. and Mrs. G.; you were not there. 3. No, I had been to the country Thursday morning, and I came to the city too late for the ball. 4. Were there many people there? 5. There were enough, and every body looked very joyous. 6. The ball season is ended (*finie*). 7. It is too hot now, and the nights are too short.

8. Let us go and take a walk (*faire une promenade*) this evening, if it be pleasant weather. 9. Where shall we go? 10. Let us go to the garden of Mr. T. 11. Very willingly; it will be moonlight, and that (*ce*) will be very agreeable. 12. Have you been there lately? 13. I went there the other day; his garden is magnificent; there are roses of all colors. 14. There must be also other flowers. 15. There are many. 16. Mr. C. came near here the other day, but I did not see him. 17. I wished to tell him to bring me a few beautiful flowers to (*pour*) put in my garden. 18. You will be able to tell it to him to-morrow, and to choose those which you wish.

19. What o'clock is it? 20. I do not know precisely, but it is not late. 21. I am going to send for a few cigars. 22. Have you a desire to smoke? 23. I smoke a little every evening. 24. It is



not more than eight o'clock; you can send for some. 25. Has the servant returned? 26. Yes, he is in his room. 27. I will tell him to go for some for me. 28. Have you some change? 29. I have a half dollar; it is the smallest coin that I have. 30. There are two quarters of a dollar (*de gourde*) if you wish for them. 31. Thank you.

### 87.—QUATRE-VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

1. *Quelque* followed by *que* has the following meanings.

*Whatever* (adj.). *However* (adv.). *Quel que* . . . *que*. *Quelque* . . . *que*.

2. *Quelque* followed by a verb is written *quel que*, as two words, and agrees with the subject of the verb.

Whatever may be the engagement.	<i>Quel que</i> soit l'engagement.
Whatever may be your intention.	<i>Quelle que</i> soit votre intention.
Whatever may be your designs.	<i>Quels que</i> soient vos desseins.
Whatever may be your views.	<i>Quelles que</i> soient vos vues.

3. *Quelque* belonging to a substantive, with or without another adjective, is written as one word, agreeing with the substantive.

Whatever reason. Whatever efforts.	<i>Quelque</i> raison. <i>Quelques</i> efforts.
Whatever fine books you may have.	<i>Quelques</i> beaux livres <i>que</i> vous ayez.
Whatever riches he may have.	<i>Quelques</i> richesses <i>qu'il</i> ait.

4. Belonging to an adverb or adjective, it is itself an adverb, and never varied.

However beautiful she may be, etc.	<i>Quelque</i> belle <i>qu'elle</i> soit.
However rich they may be, etc.	<i>Quelque</i> riches <i>qu'ils</i> puissent être.
However well written may be your exercise.	<i>Quelque</i> bien écrit <i>que</i> soit votre thème.

IX.—*Quelque*, *quel que*, whatever; *quelque*, however; *qui que* or *quel que ce soit* *qui*, whoever; *qui que ce soit* *que*, whomsoever; *quoi que* or *quel que ce soit* *que*, whatever; and *et . . . que*, however (as conj. Rule 6), govern the subjunctive.

Whatever riches he may have, he will always be unhappy.	<i>Quelques</i> richesses <i>qu'il</i> ait,* il sera toujours malheureux.
Whatever may be his misfortunes, he supports them with courage.	<i>Quels que</i> soient ses malheurs, il les supporte avec courage.
However wrong you may be, he will pardon you.	<i>Quelque</i> tort <i>que</i> vous ayez, il vous pardonnera.
However rich he may be, he will be unhappy.	<i>Quelque</i> riche <i>qu'il</i> soit, il sera malheureux.
Whoever you may be, you will come in.	<i>Qui que</i> vous soyez, vous entrerez.
Whoever he may be that knocks at the door, he shall not come in.	<i>Qui que ce soit</i> qui frappe à la porte, je ne veux pas <i>qu'il</i> entre.

\* The subjunctive in these sentences, it will be readily seen, has the same character of vagueness as in the preceding rules.

Whoever it may be that you meet in that house, do not speak to any one.	<i>Qui que ce soit</i> que vous rencontrez dans cette maison, ne parlez à personne.
Whatever he may do, he will be blamed.	<i>Quoi qu'il fasse</i> , il sera blâmé.
Whatever you may see, do not speak of it.	<i>Quoi que ce soit</i> que vous voyiez, n'en parlez pas.
However tall he may be, he does not frighten me.	<i>Si grand</i> qu'il soit, il ne me fait pas peur.
<i>To yield. To guess. To deny.</i>	<i>Céder. Deviner. Nier.</i>
<i>To despair. To disown, deny.</i>	<i>Désespérer. Disconvenir</i> (comp. of <i>venir</i> ).

5. These two verbs take *de* before a noun and an infinitive.

X.—Verbs which contain in themselves the force of a negative, as *nier*, *désespérer*, and *disconvenir*, when used affirmatively govern the subjunctive in the same way as others used negatively.

I deny that he is here.	Je <i>nie</i> qu'il <i>soit</i> ici.
I despair of his doing his work.	Je <i>désespère</i> qu'il <i>fasse</i> son ouvrage.
He denies that they know that.	Il <i>disconvient</i> qu'ils <i>sachent</i> cela.

6. *Désespérer*, *disconvenir*, *douter*, and *nier*, generally when negative, and sometimes when interrogative, take *ne* before the following subjunctive.

I do not deny that that may be.	Je <i>ne nie</i> pas que cela <i>ne</i> soit.
I deny that that is true.	Je <i>nie</i> que cela <i>soit</i> vrai.
Do you doubt his being here?	Doutez-vous qu'il <i>soit</i> (ne soit) ici?

7. The present subjunctive of *faillir*, impersonal, is *qu'il faille*.

Do you think it necessary to do that? Pensez-vous qu'il *faille* faire cela?

1. Quels que soient vos desseins vous me faites tort. 2. Ces hommes vous font-ils du bien? 3. Non, monsieur, quelles que soient leurs intentions ils me font du mal. 4. Peuvent-ils être vos amis? 5. Non, monsieur, quels qu'ils soient ils ne peuvent pas être mes amis. 6. Faut-il que cet homme cède à ses ennemis? 7. Oui, quel que soit son courage il faut qu'il cède à la force. 8. Cet homme est très-malade, et quelque remède qu'on lui donne il mourra. 9. Quelque belle que soit cette dame elle n'est pas aimable. 10. Quoi que (quoi que ce soit que) vous fassiez, vous ne pouvez pas plaire à cet homme. 11. Notre ami peut-il faire ce qu'il a entrepris? 12. Non, si habile qu'il soit, il ne peut pas faire cela. 13. Ne désespérez-vous pas que cet écolier ne fasse son thème? 14. Je désespère de lui, il n'apprendra jamais rien. 15. Disconvenez-vous de ce fait? 16. Je n'en disconviens pas. 17. Je ne désespère pas que cet homme ne fasse son ouvrage.

6 6 4 12 6 12 6 6 6 6 12 21 4 12 1  
cé-der, de-vi-ner, ni-er, dés-es-pé-rer, dis-con-ve-nir, faille.

1. Is that man happy? 2. No, sir, for he is not virtuous; and however rich and learned one may be, he cannot be happy if he is not virtuous. 3. Will those poor people have friends? 4. Yes, sir; however poor they may be, they will always have friends. 5. Can that man keep his riches long? 6. No, sir; whatever riches he may have, he can not keep them long. 7. Is your companion (*camarade*) in good health? 8. No, he is sick; and whatever remedy he may take (*prenne*), he will be sick a long time. 9. Whatever may be the intention of your companion, has he not committed a fault? 10. He has committed several. 11. Whatever that young boy may do, he will not be blamed. 12. Do you deny that he sometimes makes mistakes? 13. I do not deny that he sometimes makes many.
14. Guess how much that cloak cost me. 15. I guess that it cost you twenty dollars. 16. To whom do you yield your place? 17. I yield it to that lady. 18. Guess what I have done to-day. 19. That is not difficult to guess; you have been to school. 20. Whatever remedy that sick man may take, he will never get well (*guérira*). 21. Whatever you may say, they will not believe you. 22. Whoever you may be, sir, respect my dwelling (*respectez ma demeure*). 23. Whoever I may be, fear nothing, sir, your dwelling shall be respected. 24. Do those scholars speak German? 25. Yes, however difficult may be the phrases (*phrases*) that one says to them in that language, they always know how to translate them correctly (*correctement*). 26. That child, young as he is (*si jeune qu'il soit*), knows already how to read and count. 27. That man, badly clothed as he is, is no less for that a millionaire (*millionnaire*).

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. I have just bought a new coat; how does it fit me? 2. It fits you very well; how much did you pay for it? (Lesson 68, 4.) 3. It costs me twenty-five dollars. 4. It is not dear; the cloth is very fine. 5. I sought in several stores before finding one suitable (*convenable*). 6. Finally (*enfin*) you have succeeded in finding one. 7. I am so big that I do not easily find coats ready made (*tout faits*). 8. It is necessary to get some made (*faire faire*) for you. 9. Yes, when I cannot find any, I go to my tailor's.
10. Here is a pair of spectacles which I have just bought; how do you like (find) them? 11. They look good; but what will you (*voulez*) do with spectacles? You are too young to (*pour*) wear any. 12. My sight is weak; it is necessary for me to read and write all day, and even sometimes at night. 13. To read or write at night

is not good for the eyes. 14. That tires my sight much. 15. Then you are not doing wrong to wear spectacles; but put them on only when you read. 16. It is what I intend to do. 17. If your sight is weak you do wrong to read at night; nothing does more harm to the eyes than that. 18. I do not do it with good will, but often I cannot do differently. 19. Last year I read much at night, but I perceived that my sight was suffering from it, and since I read only in the day. 20. I have so much to write that I am obliged sometimes to write all the evening. 21. I also read much in the evening a year ago (*il y a un an*), but I do it no more. 22. My sight is too precious to (*pour*) lose it thus; I prefer to take care of it.

## 88.—QUATRE-VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD CONTINUED.

**XI.**—Conditional clauses beginning with *et*, and followed by *que* or a relative pronoun, and a second verb, take that verb in the subjunctive, if the speaker look upon what it expresses as false or doubtful, and in the indicative if there be no doubt.

If you say that that is true, you are wrong.	Si vous dites que cela <i>soit</i> vrai, vous avez tort.
If you say that that is true, you are right.	Si vous dites que cela <i>est</i> vrai, vous avez raison.
If you think that he is honest, you do not know him.	Si vous pensez qu'il <i>soit</i> honnête, vous ne le connaissez pas.
If he thinks that you are honest, he is right.	S'il pense que vous êtes honnête, il a raison.

1. When expressions, which with *que* govern the subjunctive, take *de ce que* after them, they govern the indicative.

I am sorry that he does that.	{ Je suis fâché qu'il <i>fasse</i> cela.
	{ Je suis fâché <i>de ce qu'il fait</i> cela.*

2. The subjunctive expressing desire sometimes begins a sentence.

May you live happy.	<i>Puissiez-vous</i> vivre heureux.†
May he arrive soon.	<i>Puisse-t-il</i> arriver bientôt.
Heaven grant that it may happen.	<i>Fasse</i> le Ciel qu'il arrive.

3. The subjunctive present first person singular of *savoir*, with a negative, has the peculiarity of being used like the indicative, without any governing phrase.

I know no one who can do it like him.	Je ne <i>sache</i> personne qui puisse le faire comme lui.
---------------------------------------	--

4. The present of the subjunctive of *pleuvoir*, impersonal, is *qu'il pleuve*.

I do not go out for fear that it may rain.	Je ne sors pas <i>de peur qu'il ne pleuve</i> .
--	---

\* It is evident that the final clause after *de ce que* is stated as a fact.

† Such phrases may be explained by supposing *je veux que, je désire que*, or something equivalent understood before them.

He carries his umbrella for fear that it may rain. Il porte son parapluie *de crainte qu'il ne pleuve.*

In that manner. In such a manner. De cette manière. De telle manière.

In what way. De quelle manière.

5. *In*, in such expressions, is rendered by *de* in French.

The stove. The stove-door. Le poêle. La porte du poêle.

The duck. To wipe, also to experience. Le canard. Essuyer.

The turkey. Le dindon. La dinde.

The rest. The crop, harvest. Le reste. La récolte.

Obliged. Differently. Obligé. Différemment.

To tear. To astonish. Déchirer. Étonner (de bef. inf.).

To conceive. A phrase. Concevoir. Une phrase.

There is the rest of my money. Voilà le reste de mon argent.

6. *Left*, in the sense of *remaining*, at the end of a clause, is translated *de reste*.

I have nothing left. Je n'ai rien de reste.

He has some ducks left. Il y a des canards de reste.

There are none left. Il n'y en a pas de reste.

A few more apples left. Encore quelques pommes de reste.

7. *To get* or *have* something done, is expressed in French by the verb *faire* with an infinitive; as,

To get mended. To get washed. Faire raccommoder. Faire laver.

To have made. To have swept. Faire faire. Faire balayer.

Are you getting your coat mended? Faites-vous raccommoder votre habit?

I am getting it mended. Je le fais raccommoder.

8. *Faire* thus used is not to be separated from the dependent infinitive.

Did you get a coat made? Avez-vous fait faire un habit?

I got one made. J'en ai fait faire un.

Did you have those trees pulled up? Avez-vous fait arracher ces arbres?

I had them pulled up. Je les ai fait arracher.\*

9. *Fait* followed by an infinitive, as here, is never varied to agree with a preceding noun or pronoun, because the infinitive is its object.

1. Si vous pensez que nous valons mieux que ces écoliers vous avez raison. 2. Si vous dites qu'ils vaillent mieux que nous, vous avez tort. 3. Ferez-vous laver votre linge? 4. Je le ferai laver. 5. Ce petit garçon n'a-t-il pas fait rire ces hommes? 6. Il les a fait rire. 7. Cet homme a-t-il quelque chose de reste? 8. Il n'a rien de reste. 9. Mettez-vous du bois dans le poêle? 10. J'y mets du charbon. 11. La pluie a fait du mal à la récolte. 12. Le domestique essuie la table. 13. Concevez-vous bien ce que je vous

\* *Les* in this sentence is the object of *arracher*; literally, I have made pull them up.

13 8 1 1 8 20 12 6 14 21 14 5 5 15 16 13 6 15 5 1 2 8  
poêle, ca-nard, es-su-yer, din-don, dinde, reste, ré-colte, ob-il-gé, di-fé-re-m-ment, dé-  
chi-rer, é-ton-nor, con-ce-voir, pbraze, ba-la-yer.

dis? 14. Je le conçois bien et mes frères le conçoivent aussi. 15. Cet écolier étonne tout le monde. 16. Déchirez-vous votre livre? 17. Je ne le déchire jamais. 18. Êtes-vous obligé de faire votre tâche de cette manière? 19. Oui, je ne puis pas la faire différemment.

1. Why does that boy tear his book? 2. He tears it because he has no mind to learn his lesson. 3. Why are you astonished? 4. That news has astonished me; I have never conceived of such an (*une telle*) affair. 5. Have you torn your cloak? 6. I have torn it, and I wish to get it mended. 7. Have you written all the Latin phrases of your lesson? 8. I have written all the Latin phrases and all the Greek phrases. 9. Does the maid-servant wipe often the mouths of those children? 10. She wipes their mouths and their hands very often. 11. Why do the scholars wipe their slates? 12. They wipe them because they are wet. 13. Has the rain done harm to the crop? 14. It has done it good. 15. Have you some ducks left? 16. I have some ducks and some turkeys left. 17. Has that countryman some turkeys? 18. He has no turkeys; he has a few ducks left.

19. If the master says that you are worth more than we, he is wrong. 20. If he says that we are worth less than our cousins, he is wrong. 21. If you think that I can teach you French in three months, you are deceived. 22. My father died in eighteen hundred and fifty. 23. He was born the fourth of March, eighteen hundred and one. 24. Were you born in eighteen hundred and thirty? 25. I was born in eighteen hundred and twenty-eight. 26. Is there some wood left? 27. No, sir, I have put it all in the stove. 28. You do not write well; can you not write differently? 29. No, sir, we are obliged to write in this manner. 30. Have you some turkeys left? 31. I have a few more left.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. That scholar reads while eating, and he studies also while walking (*en marchant*). 2. When did you find your pencil? 3. Yesterday; in looking for my pen, I found my pencil. 4. Put some wood in the stove. 5. Whatever may be your fortune, you ought not for that to believe yourself (*vous*) better. 6. Whatever may be the books that you read, you do not appear to profit (*profité*) much by your reading. 7. Whoever may wish to do me wrong, shall pay dear (for) his audacity (*audace*). 8. Whomsoever I shelter (*abrite*)



INF.	SUBJ.	INF.	SUBJ.	INF.	SUBJ.
Aller,	<i>aille</i> , Lesson 88.	Faire,	<i>fisse</i> , Lesson 84.	Valoir,	<i>vaille</i> ,* Lesson 85.
Avoir,	<i>aie</i> , " 82.	Falloir,	<i>faillie</i> , " 87.	Vouloir,	<i>veuille</i> , " 88.
Être,	<i>sois</i> , " 83.	Pouvoir,	<i>puisse</i> , " 83.		and their compounds.*

I wish you to drink this.  
 He is afraid that I owe much.  
 I fear that thou mayest die soon.  
 It is necessary for him to come.  
 Do you wish us to hold the horses?

Je désire que vous *busiez* ceci.  
 Il a peur que je ne *doive* beaucoup.  
 Je crains que tu ne *meures* bientôt.  
 Il faut qu'il *vienne*.  
 Voulez-vous que nous *tenions* les chevaux?

Do you think that they take your fruit?  
 I wish you to acquire riches.

Pensez-vous qu'ils *prennent* votre fruit?  
 Je désire que vous *acquériez* des richesses.

A master-work. Without, out of it.  
 Prudent. Formerly.

Un chef-d'œuvre. *Dehors*.  
 Prudent. *Autrefois*.

Such. Such a fact.

Tel. Un tel fait.

An obstacle. A wedding.

Un obstacle. Une *noce*.

The Britons. The Gauls.

Les Bretons. Les *Gaulois*.

A professor.

Un professeur.

An Irishman. His arrival.

Un irlandais. Son *arrivée*.

To injure. Injured.

*Nuire* (à bef. n.). *Nui* (past part.).

That affair has injured his reputation.

Cet affaire a *nui* à sa réputation.

To subdue. The end.

*Soumettre* (comp. of *mettre*). La *fin*.

Sad, vexing. I believe so.

*Fâcheux*. Je crois que *oui*, or *si*.

4. In such expressions as *I think so*, *I believe not*, etc., meaning, *I think that it is so*, *I believe that it is not so*, etc., the *oui*, the *et*, and the *non*, must be preceded by *que* in French.

I believe not. I think so.

Je crois que *non*. Je pense que *oui*, or *si*.

You had better.

*Vous ferez bien*, *vous ferez mieux*.

5. *Mieux* is thus used with the future of *faire* when comparison is expressed; *bien*, when it is not. *Faire bien* takes *de* before the infinitive.

You had better study French than Spanish. *Vous ferez mieux* † d'étudier le français que l'espagnol.

Now you had better play.

À présent vous *ferez bien* † de jouer.

Such an affair.

Une telle affaire.

Let us go to meet our friends.

Allons au-devant (à la rencontre) de nos amis.

Perhaps your brother will come soon. { Peut-être votre frère viendra bientôt.  
 Peut-être que votre frère viendra bientôt.  
 Peut-être votre frère viendra-t-il bientôt.

\* *Préaloir*, a compound of *valoir*, makes the subjunctive *prévale*, regular.

† In the former of these sentences there is comparison between the study of French and Spanish, and *mieux* is used; in the latter there is no comparison, and *bien* is used.

9 4 16 23 5 17 20 5 15 1 15 16 5 11 19 8 7  
 1 chef-d'œuvre, de-hors, pru-dent, autre-fois, tel, ob-stacle, noce, pro-fes-seur, ir-lan-dais,  
 1 ar-ri-vée, nu-ire, nul, sou-mettre, fâ-cheux, fin.



1. J'admire beaucoup ce tableau ; c'est un chef-d'œuvre. 2. Les hommes n'étaient-ils pas bien forts autrefois ? 3. Ils n'étaient pas plus forts autrefois qu'aujourd'hui. 4. Cet homme a gardé un silence prudent. 5. C'est une action bien prudente. 6. J'irai à la noce ce soir. 7. Est-il nécessaire de rester ici longtemps ? 8. Il est nécessaire d'y rester jusqu'à la fin du mois. 9. Cet accident est bien fâcheux. 10. Le professeur a beaucoup de courage ; il a vaincu tous les obstacles. 11. Votre professeur est-il arrivé ? 12. Oui, et son arrivée m'a fait grand plaisir. 13. Est-il allemand ? 14. Non, c'est un irlandais qui a une bonne réputation. 15. Est-il allé dehors ? 16. Oui, il vient de sortir. 17. César conquiert l'Espagne et la Gaule, soumet l'Égypte et vainquit Pompée. 18. Dis-tu que je reçoive ton argent ? 19. Je ne dis pas que tu le reçoives.

1. Do you believe that I owe you money ? 2. I do not believe that you owe me much. 3. Do you think that the merchants receive our letters ? 4. I do not think that they receive them. 5. Is the doctor afraid that we may die ? 6. He is afraid that you may die. 7. Does the physician permit you to drink coffee ? 8. He permits me to drink coffee and tea. 9. It is time for the master to come ; do you believe that he is coming ? 10. I do not believe that he is coming before ten o'clock. 11. Do you wish us to hold your books ? 12. I wish you to hold my books and my papers. 13. Do you wish me to take your horse ? 14. I do not wish you to take him ; I wish the boy to take him. 15. Do you say that the doctor acquires reputation ? 16. I say that he acquires much.

17. Is the professor a prudent man ? 18. He is very prudent. 19. Cæsar conquered the Gauls and subdued the Britons. 20. Do such affairs astonish you ? 21. Such affairs do not astonish me. 22. Does the servant put the horse in the stable, or does he leave him out ? 23. He leaves him out. 24. Were men stronger formerly than at present ? 25. My friend thinks so ; but I (*moi, je*) think not. 26. Your sister will not go to the wedding ; will she ? 27. I think so. 28. Do you admire my father's new work ? 29. Yes, sir ; it is a master-piece. 30. Had I better buy that horse ? 31. You had better buy him. 32. My brother wishes to study Italian ; had he not better study German ? 33. He had better study German. 34. The royal palace (*palais royal*) is magnificent ; it is a master-piece.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Will you pay the countryman for his horse at the end of the week? 2. No, I shall pay him for it at the end of the month. 3. Is there a wedding at your neighbor's this evening? 4. I think so. 5. Has not the physician injured his reputation? 6. He has injured it much. 7. Have you heard the news? 8. Yes, sir; it is very sad. 9. Are you waiting for your brother to come? 10. I am waiting for my brother and sister to come. 11. Do you consent that I take these books? 12. I consent that you take them. 13. Are you afraid that we may drink too much wine? 14. I am not afraid that you may drink too much; but I am afraid that the son of our neighbor may drink too much. 15. Are you afraid that that sick man may die? 16. I am afraid that he may die soon.

17. Do you approve of my learning German? 18. Yes; I will have thee learn German and Spanish. 19. Is it necessary that I hold these horses? 20. No; I will have the servant hold them. 21. Do you know any one who receives more letters than I? 22. I do not believe that you receive so many as our neighbor. 23. Does the master approve of my coming here at nine o'clock? 24. Yes; but he likes better that you come at eight. 25. An Irishman went to see a professor of music, and asked him what was the price of his lessons. 26. The professor replied: "Six dollars for the first month, and three for the second." 27. "Then," said the Irishman, "I will come the second month."

## 90.—QUATRE-VINGT-DIXIÈME LEÇON.

## PRONOMINAL VERBS.

1. PRONOMINAL VERBS are those which have a pronoun for object, of the same person as the subject. They are either *reflectives* or *reciprocal*; as, *I warm myself, he warms himself, they flatter each other*. These verbs are much more numerous in French than in English, and require the especial attention of the learner. And first,

I.—Verbs which are reflective or reciprocal in English are the same in French.

<i>Himself, herself, itself, one's self, themselves.</i>	<i>Se, before the verb. (Se becomes s' before a vowel or a silent h.)</i>
<i>To wash one's self. To hurt one's self.</i>	<i>Se laver. Se faire mal.</i>
<i>To shave. To shave one's self.</i>	<i>Raser. Se raser.</i>
<i>To warm. To warm one's self.</i>	<i>Chauffer. Se chauffer.</i>
<i>To flatter each other.</i>	<i>Se flatter.</i>
<i>To dress. To dress one's self.</i>	<i>Habiller. S'habiller.</i>
<i>To undress. To undress one's self.</i>	<i>Déshabiller. Se déshabiller.</i>
<i>To behave, to behave one's self.</i>	<i>Se comporter, se conduire.</i>
<i>To behave well. To behave badly.</i>	<i>Se bien comporter. Se mal comporter.</i>

Dost thou shave thyself? I shave myself.	<i>Te rases-tu? Je me rase.</i>
Does he shave himself? He shaves himself.	<i>Se rase-t-il? Il se rase.</i>
Do you shave yourselves? We shave ourselves.	<i>Vous rasez-vous? Nous nous rasons.</i>
Do they shave themselves? They shave themselves.	<i>Se rasent-ils? Ils se rasent.</i>

2. The pronoun in italics is the object of the verb.

Do you flatter yourselves (or each other)?	<i>Vous flattez-vous?</i>
We do not flatter ourselves (or each other).	<i>Nous ne nous flattons pas.</i>
Do they not flatter each other?	<i>Ne se flattent-ils pas?</i>
They flatter each other.	<i>Ils se flattent.</i>
Do I not shave myself?	<i>Ne me rasé-je pas? or, Est-ce que je ne me rase pas?</i>
Thou dost not shave thyself.	<i>Tu ne te rase pas.</i>
Did you shave yourself? I shaved myself.	<i>Vous rasiez-vous? Je me rasia.</i>
Wilt thou not shave thyself?	<i>Ne te raseras-tu pas?</i>
I shall not shave myself.	<i>Je ne me raserai pas.</i>
Do you permit us to warm ourselves?	<i>Permettez-vous que nous nous chauffions?</i>
I permit you to warm yourselves.	<i>Je permets que vous vous chauffiez.</i>
I am under many obligations to you.	<i>Je vous ai beaucoup d'obligations.</i>
To lower, cast down. To raise.	<i>Baisser. Lever.</i>
To blush, become red. To reduce.	<i>Rougir. Réduire (à bef. inf.).</i>
To construct. A voice.	<i>Construire. Une voix.</i>
An amusement. Dancing.	<i>Un amusement. La danse.</i>
A veil. Infinitely.	<i>Un voile. Infiniment.</i>
Light. The guard.	<i>Léger. La garde.</i>

3. *Prendre garde*, to beware of, takes *à* before a noun and *de* before the infinitive.

Beware of that man.	<i>Prends garde à cet homme.</i>
Beware of him.	<i>Prends garde à lui.</i>
It is necessary to guard against robbers.	<i>Il faut prendre garde aux voleurs.</i>
Take care not to fall.	<i>Prenez garde de tomber.</i>
Beware of losing your money.	<i>Prenez garde de perdre votre argent.</i>

4. *Autre* and *autrement*, like comparatives of superiority or inferiority, when not negative, take *ne* before the following verb.

She is quite <i>different</i> from what she was.	<i>Elle est tout autre qu'elle n'était.</i>
He thinks quite otherwise than you believe.	<i>Il pense tout autrement que vous ne croyez.</i>

---

6 6 4 6 18 12 8 22 18 31 22 18 20 1 22 8 3 20 14 12 12  
 se-r, le-ver, rou-gir, ré-duire, con-struire, voi-s, a-mu-se-ment, dan-se, voi-lé, in-fi-ni-  
 ment, lé-ger, gar-de.

1. Prenez garde à cet homme ; il peut vous nuire dans vos affaires. 2. La semaine dernière quand cette dame était en danger, la défendites-vous ? 3. Je la défendis. 4. Pourquoi ce petit garçon baisse-t-il les yeux ? 5. Il les baisse parce qu'il a honte, mais il les lève quand on lui parle. 6. Cette jeune fille rougit-elle souvent ? 7. Elle rougit lorsqu'on lui parle. 8. Le maçon construit-il une maison de brique ? 9. Non, il en construit une de pierre. 10. Aimez-vous la danse ? 11. Oui, c'est un amusement très-agréable. 12. J'entends une voix qui m'appelle. 13. Cette dame lève son voile parce qu'elle veut parler à son amie ; c'est une femme infiniment aimable. 14. Le barbier vous rase-t-il ? 15. Il me rase quatre fois par semaine. 16. Ce bois-ci est-il plus léger que l'eau ? 17. Il est un peu plus léger. 18. J'ai réduit le nombre de mes domestiques. 19. Ne te comportes-tu pas bien ? 20. Je me conduis bien. 21. Ce petit garçon se comporte-t-il bien ? 22. Il se conduit mal. 23. Ne vous rasez-vous pas ? 24. Nous nous rasons tous les matins. 25. Les enfants se chauffent-ils ? 26. Ils se chauffent. 27. Cet enfant s'habille-t-il ? 28. Il s'habille et il se déshabille tous les jours. 29. Ne vous rasiez-vous pas quand vous étiez à la campagne ? 30. Je me rasais tous les matins. 31. Ne vous chaufferez-vous pas quand vous arriverez chez vous ? 32. Je ne me chaufferai pas ; je n'ai pas froid.

1. Why does that young girl cast down her eyes ? 2. She casts them down because they are looking at her. 3. Why does she raise her veil ? 4. She raises it because she wishes to speak to the merchant. 5. Does she always blush when one speaks to her ? 6. She often blushes when one speaks to her. 7. After having (*après avoir*) lost my fortune, I reduced my expenses. 8. Did you reduce the number of your servants ? 9. I reduced it one-half (*de moitié*). 10. Did those workmen construct your house ? 11. They constructed it. 12. Did you have it constructed last autumn ? 13. No, sir, I had it constructed last summer. 14. The dog hears the voice of his master. 15. Do the mountains defend your house from the wind ? 16. They defend it from the wind and from the cold.

17. Why dost thou warm thyself ? 18. I warm myself because I am cold. 19. Do you not warm yourselves ? 20. We do not warm ourselves ; it is not cold. 21. Do those travelers warm themselves ? 22. They do not warm themselves. 23. Dost thou shave

myself, or does the barber shave thee? 24. I shave myself every morning. 25. Does the servant dress those children, or do they dress themselves (*eux-mêmes*)? 26. They dress themselves every morning, and undress themselves every night. 27. That sick man can not undress himself. 28. Do you behave well? 29. Yes, sir, we always behave well. 30. Does that child always behave well? 31. No, sir, he sometimes behaves very badly. 32. Did you not shave yourself when you were in the country? 33. Yes, I alw. shaved myself. 34. Will you dress yourself early to-morrow morning? 35. I shall dress myself at six o'clock.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Did not your cousin behave well when he went to school? 2. He did not behave well. 3. Did you not shave early when you were in the country? 4. I always shaved early. 5. Do you dress yourselves several times a day (*par jour*)? 6. No, sir, we dress but once a day. 7. What I desire is to fulfill my obligations. 8. What kings often like the best is flattery (*la flatterie*). 9. The music which I like the best is to hear the singing of the birds. 10. Will not that child hurt himself? 11. I fear that he may hurt himself. 12. Music is for me an amusement and not an occupation (*occupation*). 13. Do you not hear the voice of some one? 14. Yes, it is the voice of Charles who is calling us. 15. This wood is lighter than water. 16. Dancing fatigues me; I do not like it much.

17. I come for my handkerchief which I left here. 18. It is in the other room, on the table. 19. Are you going to the wedding this evening? 20. Yes, I am going there. 21. At what o'clock is the ceremony to take place? 22. At half past eight. 23. Is there to be much (*grande*) company? 24. No, there will not be many people (there). 25. Will you return early or late this evening? 26. I do not know; but may be I shall not return before midnight. 27. Is there to be a ball? 28. I believe not; but there will be a wedding supper (*un souper de noce*). 29. You will not stay until the end; will you? 30. I think so, if it be not too late. 31. Good morning; I am going out. 32. I wish you much pleasure till we see each other again (*au revoir*).

## 91.—QUATRE-VINGT-ONZIÈME LEÇON.

## PRONOMINAL VERBS CONTINUED.

We love each other.  
They praise each other.

Nous nous aimons.  
Ils se louent l'un l'autre.

They speak against each other.  
He begins to study.

Ils parlent l'un contre l'autre.  
Il se met à étudier.

1. *Se mettre* followed by *à* and an infinitive may mean to begin.

They began to drink.  
Every body began to laugh.

Ils se mirent à boire.  
Tout le monde se mit à rire

II.—Verbs are pronominal in French, though not in English, which express one's doing something to any part of himself. The reflexive pronoun is always placed before other objective pronouns.

Dost thou wash thy hands?  
I wash them.  
He washes his hands.  
Do you wash your hands?  
We do not wash them.  
Do they not wash their faces?  
They wash them.  
Does that young girl warm her feet?

Te laves-tu les mains?  
Je me les lave.  
Il se lave les mains.  
Vous lavez-vous les mains?  
Nous ne nous les lavons pas.  
Ne se lavent-ils pas le visage?  
Ils se le lavent.  
Cette jeune fille se chauffe-t-elle les pieds?

Does she not warm them?  
She does not warm them.  
Do they not burn their feet?  
They do not burn them.  
*To rub. To pardon.*

Ne se les chauffe-t-elle pas?  
Elle ne se les chauffe pas.  
Ne se brûlent-ils pas les pieds?  
Ils ne se les brûlent pas.  
*Frotter. Pardonner.*

2. *Pardonner* takes *à* before a person and *de* before an infinitive.

Do you pardon that man's faults?  
I pardon them.  
He prevents my doing that.

Pardonnez-vous à cet homme ses fautes?  
Je les lui pardonne.  
Il m'empêche de faire cela.

3. We have seen that *empêcher*, *craindre*, *avoir peur*, *trembler*, and *apprehender*, take *ne* before the following subjunctive.

We prevent that child from doing what he pleases.  
He trembles lest thou tell his secret.  
I apprehend his telling it.  
I hurt my eyes when I rub them.

Nous empêchons que cet enfant ne fasse ce qu'il veut.  
Il tremble que tu ne dises son secret.  
J'apprehende qu'il ne le dise.  
Je me fuis mal aux yeux quand je me les frotte.

I hurt them when I rub them.  
*Useless. The truth.*  
*A member, limb. The leg.*  
*Among. The front door.*  
*Behind. The back door.*  
*It is a pity. It is a great pity.*

Je m'y fais mal quand je les frotte. .  
*Inutile. La vérité.*  
*Le membre. La jambe.*  
*Parmi. La porte de devant.*  
*Derrière. La porte de derrière.*  
*Il est (c'est) dommage. Il est (c'est) grand dommage.*

*Noble. Friendship.*

*Noble. L'amitié.*

<sup>6</sup> frot-ter, <sup>1</sup> par-don-nar, <sup>15</sup> i-nu-till, <sup>6</sup> vé-ri-té, <sup>19</sup> mem-bre, <sup>22</sup> jam-be, <sup>23</sup> par-mi, <sup>27</sup> der-rière, <sup>12</sup> dom-ma-ge, <sup>13</sup> nob-le, <sup>1</sup> a-mi-tié.

*Otherwise.* An obligation.

*In the mean time.*

*However, nevertheless.*

*How far? Flattery.*

*Among them. Behind him.*

*Before the door. Behind the door.*

*Autrement. Une obligation.*

*Cependant. En attendant.*

*Cependant. Pourtant. Néanmoins.*

*Jusqu'où? La flatterie.*

*Parmi eux. Derrière lui.*

*Devant la porte. Derrière la porte.*

4. We have seen (Lesson 58) that words denoting quantity generally take *de* without the article before a following noun. *La plupart*, however, like *bien*, takes *de* with the article; and the verbs, participles, and adjectives following *la plupart* do not agree with it, but with the noun which it limits; thus,

Most men love flattery.

*La plupart des hommes aiment la flatterie.*

Most women are not beautiful.

*La plupart des femmes ne sont pas belles.*

The greatest part are amiable.

*La plupart sont aimables.*

1. De quoi ces jeunes filles se couvrent-elles le visage? 2. Elles se le couvrent de voiles. 3. De quoi couvrent-elles leurs livres? 4. Elles les couvrent de papier. 5. Pourquoi ce garçon se frotte-t-il les mains? 6. Il se le frotte pour se les rechauffer. 7. Pardonnez-vous à cet homme de vous avoir offensé? 8. Je le lui pardonne. 9. Ne vous faites-vous pas mal aux yeux quand vous vous les frottez? 10. Je ne m'y fais pas mal. 11. Appréhendez-vous que votre ami ne soit malade? 12. Oui, je tremble qu'il ne meure. 13. Il y a beaucoup de choses inutiles dans cette maison. 14. Ce malade n'a-t-il pas mal à la jambe? 15. Si, tous les membres lui font mal. 16. Fermez la porte de devant et la porte de derrière. 17. Aimez-vous la vérité? 18. Oui, tout le monde aime la vérité. 19. Cet homme n'est-il pas de famille noble? 20. Il est noble de père et de mère. 21. Cet homme a promis de me rendre des services; cependant, il en a fait tout autrement, il ne remplit pas ses obligations. 22. Ces hommes vivent dans une grande amitié. 23. Jusqu'où allez-vous? 24. Je vais jusqu'à la rivière.

1. Do you begin to study early every day? 2. I begin to study at five every morning. 3. Does that negligent boy (*petit négligent*) burn his shoes when he warms his feet? 4. He burns his shoes and he burns his feet also. 5. Has the master pardoned that lazy scholar? 6. He has pardoned him. 7. Do those children wash their hands? 8. They wash their hands and their faces. 9. Do you warm your feet? 10. I warm my feet and my hands. 11. Do

you burn your hands when you warm them? 12. I do not burn them. 13. Do you hurt your eyes when you wash your face? 14. I do not hurt them. 15. Does not that learned man love the truth? 16. He loves the truth, and defends it with more courage than you think. 17. Do your limbs pain you? 18. Yes, all my limbs pain me.

19. Is the surgeon going to cut off that man's arm? 20. No, he is going to cut off his left leg. 21. Do you find my pen among your books? 22. I find it among my papers. 23. Are you going to shut the front door or the back door? 24. I am going to shut neither the front door nor the back door; I am going to shut the window. 25. Is that man your friend? 26. Yes, he renders me much service from friendship. 27. Does your neighbor fulfill his obligations? 28. He fulfills all his obligations. 29. That man promised to be my friend; nevertheless he has done quite otherwise. 30. Burn those papers; they are useless. 31. That scholar has wit, but he does not study; it is a pity. 32. Why do you rub your hands? 33. I rub them in order to warm them. 34. Those children are washing their faces.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. I come to ask you a question. 2. What one? 3. It is to tell me where the tailor lives who makes your clothes (*habits*). 4. If you wish, I will take you to his shop (*sa boutique*). 5. I accept; you do me a service. 6. Do you wish to change your tailor? 7. Yes; the last clothes that mine made for me, were very badly sewed, and I have need of a coat and waistcoat for the ball which they are to give next Wednesday. 8. The royal palace is superb; it is a master-work. 9. Have you not injured that man? 10. I think not; I have not intended (had the intention) to injure him. 11. That physician is able, and nevertheless he has made a great mistake. 12. He is still very young, and nevertheless he is very wise.

13. We will go to my tailor's this afternoon, if you wish; he does good work, but he is a little dear. 14. That is (*fait*) nothing; I do not look at (*à*) a few francs (*francs*) more or less if the work is well done. 15. You are right; those who work too cheap often do only very bad work. 16. How long has that house been burned? 17. It burned last Saturday. 18. It has been burned then seven days to-day, and I knew nothing of it. 19. Your brother and I (*nous*) went to the fire the evening that it burned. 20. It was unknown to me. 21. Were you not in the country at your uncle's that evening? 22. It is true; I had forgotten it; it is for that reason (*pour cela*) that I knew nothing of it. 23. They



broke many things; some (*les uns*) carried (*emportaient*) the carpets out of (*par*) the door, and others threw the looking-glasses out of the window. 24. It is always thus (*comme cela*) that they do when there is a (*un incendie*) fire; they break almost every thing (*tout*). 25. It is better to let all burn.

## 92.—QUATRE-VINGT-DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

## PRONOMINAL VERBS CONTINUED.

III.—Pronominal verbs are used in French also, when the subject of a general character, as *people, one, they, we*, is omitted in English, and its place supplied by the object. In such cases the verb is often passive in English.

Cotton sells well.	Le coton <i>se vend</i> bien.
Glass breaks easily.	Le verre <i>se casse</i> facilement.
Stone does not cut easily.	La pierre ne <i>se coupe</i> pas facilement.
Dry wood burns fast.*	La bois sec <i>se brûle</i> vite.*
Meat is sometimes eaten raw.	La viande <i>se mange</i> quelquefois crue.
These books are easily understood.	Ces livres <i>se comprennent</i> facilement.
This writing can be read.	Cette écriture peut <i>se lire</i> .
That river is named the Moselle.	Cette rivière <i>se nomme</i> la Moselle.

IV.—Some verbs are pronominal in French, for which no general rule can be given, but which are to be learned by observation and practice; as,

<i>To take possession. To abstain.</i>	<i>S'emparer. S'abstenir</i> (comp. of <i>tenir</i> ).
<i>To repent. To remember.</i>	<i>Se repentir. Se rappeler, se souvenir</i> (comp. of <i>venir</i> ).

1. These verbs, except *se rappeler*, take *de* before the infinitive. *Se repentir* is varied as *sortir* (Lesson 29).

Dost thou abstain from wine?	T'abstiens-tu de vin?
I do not abstain from it.	Je ne m'en abstiens pas.
We repent of our conduct.	Nous nous repentons de notre conduite.
He takes possession of the papers.	Il s'empare des papiers.

2. *Se souvenir* takes *de* before its object; *se rappeler* does not.

Do you remember your promises?	{ Vous souvenez-vous de vos promesses?
	{ Vous rappelez-vous vos promesses?
They remember theirs.	{ Ils se souviennent des leurs.
	{ Ils se rappellent les leurs.

3. Verbs which are always pronominal, that is, which are never used without the reflexive pronoun, are called **ESSENTIALLY PRONOMINAL VERBS**; and those which are used sometimes with and sometimes without it, are called **ACCIDENTALLY PRONOMINAL VERBS**.

\* These phrases are expressed with a general subject, thus: *They sell cotton well; One breaks glass easily; We do not cut stone easily; People burn dry wood fast.*

The above, except *rappeler*, are of the former class. Those previously given are of the latter.

4. All pronominal verbs take *être* for their auxiliary, the participle agreeing with the direct object, when that object precedes, the same as in verbs which take *avoir* for their auxiliary.\*

I have warmed myself.	Je me <i>suis</i> chauffé, or chauffée.
Has he warmed himself?	S'est-il chauffé ?
She had dressed herself.	Elle s'était habillée.
We shall have shaved.	Nous nous serons rasés.
Yesterday, as soon as you had shaved,	Hier dès que vous vous fûtes rasés,
you went out.	vous sortîtes.
They have washed themselves.	Ils se sont lavés.

5. When, besides the reflexive pronoun, the verb has a second object, the participle agrees with it, according to rule, Lesson 87, provided it can be the direct object,† otherwise it agrees with the reflexive pronoun.

He has warmed his hands.	Il s'est chauffé les mains.
He has warmed them.	Il se les est chauffées.
Hast thou not burnt thy hand?	Ne t'es-tu pas brûlé la main ?
I have not burnt it.	Je ne me la suis pas brûlée.
She has remembered her lessons.	Elle s'est souvenue de ses leçons.
She has remembered them.	Elle s'en est souvenue.‡
They had repented of their conduct.	Elles s'étaient repenties de leur conduite.

A worm. To enjoy.	Un ver. Jouir (de bef. noun).
To gnaw. To gnaw a bone.	Ronger. Ronger un os.
Early in the morning.	De bon matin, de grand matin.
He enjoys good health.	Il jouit d'une bonne santé.
Worms gnaw wood.	Les vers rongent le bois.

1. Cet ouvrage se finit sans peine. 2. Ce verre-ci se casse-t-il aussi facilement que celui-là ? 3. Celui-ci se casse plus facilement que celui-là. 4. La pluie nous empêchera d'aller au spectacle ce soir. 5. Les enfants se sont-ils lavé la figure ? 6. Il se la sont lavée. 7. Vous étiez-vous rasé ce matin quand vous êtes allé à la boutique ? 8. Je m'étais rasé. 9. Connaissez-vous la famille de monsieur C. ? 10. Oui, je viens de passer quelques jours dans sa famille. 11. Vous abstenez-vous de thé ? 12. Je m'abstiens de

\* This is according to the general rule for the agreement of participles, *être* being used idiomatically for *avoir*.

† Verbs which take a preposition before the following noun govern the indirect object, those that take no preposition before it govern the direct object. Thus we say: *Il nuit à son cousin*; *nuire* governs the indirect object. *Il habille l'enfant*; *habiller* governs the direct object. The reflexive pronoun is always the direct object of all essentially pronominal verbs, except *s'arroger*, to arrogate.

‡ In the first four of the above phrases, the second object of the verb is the direct one, and *chauffé*, *brûlé*, are not varied when the object follows, but agree when it precedes. In the last three, the second object being preceded by *de*, is not the direct object, and the participle therefore agrees with the reciprocal pronoun which precedes.

thé et de café. 13. Cet homme s'est repenti de ses fautes. 14. Vous souvenez de notre lecture? 15. Je m'en souviens bien.

1. Does coal sell dear this winter? 2. No; coal sells cheap, and wood sells cheap also. 3. This bread is not good; but it can be eaten. 4. Who has taken possession of that house? 5. The merchant has taken possession of it. 6. Does that writing read easily? 7. It reads very easily. 8. Pine (*pin*) wood cuts easier than oak. 9. For how much does grain sell this winter? 10. It sells cheap. 11. Does flour sell at five dollars a barrel? 12. It sells at six dollars a barrel. 13. Is fish sometimes eaten raw? 14. They are eaten raw in some countries. 15. Is the Spanish language learned in a little time? 16. It is not learned perfectly in a little time.

17. Is not this wood subject to worms? 18. It is not subject to worms. 19. That man enjoys (*d'une*) perfect health. 20. Our neighbor knows (how) to enjoy his fortune. 21. Are you acquainted with his family? 22. Yes; it is a family very amiable. 23. Do you go out early in the morning? 24. I go out at five o'clock. 25. What is that dog gnawing? 26. He is gnawing a bone. 27. How long have you abstained from wine? 28. I have abstained from it six months. 29. Have you not hurt your foot? 30. I have hurt it. 31. Will you have shaved when I shall come to your house to-morrow morning? 32. I shall have shaved. 33. Yesterday, as soon as you had dressed, did you not go to the shop? 34. I went there. 35. Did you wash your face before shaving, this morning? 36. No, sir; I shaved before washing my face.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you sometimes go to the theater? 2. I go there occasionally. 3. I have a desire to go there this evening; what say you? shall we go together? 4. I consent to go there, for I have nothing to do. 5. What do they play this evening? 6. I do not know what they play; I wish to go there in order to hear Madam S. sing. 7. Have you never heard her sing? 8. No, never; she has a great reputation. 9. When I dwelt in New Orleans I went often to hear her. 10. How do you find that she sings? 11. Very well; she has an excellent voice, and she sings with much taste. 12. We have no opera here; it is a pity; of all amusements, the opera is the one to which I am most inclined (*porté*). 13. Do you not like dancing? 14. Not at all; I see nothing in it to admire.

15. You mean (*voulez dire*) the dancing of the theater? 16. Certainly (*sans doute*); I like the ball well enough.

17. Have you taken possession of the new house? 18. Yes; I took possession of it last week. 19. Has that man repented of his bad conduct (*conduite*)? 20. He has repented of it. 21. Did your friend remember his promise (*promesse*)? 22. He remembered it. 23. Does your father enjoy good health? 24. He enjoys perfect health. 25. The tailor goes to his shop early in the morning; does he not? 26. He goes there at half-past five. 27. I always shave early in the morning.

## 93.—QUATRE-VINGT-TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

## PRONOMINAL VERBS. CONDITIONAL TENSE.

*To sit down, to seat one's self.* *S'asseoir* (irregular).

*Je m'assieds, tu t'assieds, il s'assied, nous nous asseyons, vous vous asseyez,*  
I sit down, thou sittest down, he sits down, we sit down, you sit down,  
*ils s'assient, they sit down.*

Also *je m'assois, tu t'assois, il s'assoit, nous nous asseyons, vous vous asseyez, ils s'assoient.*

1. As the imperative mood when affirmative takes the objective pronoun after it, joined by a hyphen, it takes the reflexive pronoun in the same way.

Sit down in this chair.

Asseyez-vous sur cette chaise.

Sit down in it.

Asseyez-vous-y.

Let us sit down. Seat thyself here.

Asseyons-nous. Assieds-toi ici.

Do not sit down on the bench.

Ne vous asseyez pas sur le banc.

Seat thyself on it.

Assieds-y-toi.

Let us not sit down on these chairs.

Ne nous asseyons pas sur ces chaises.

Wash your hands. Wash them.

Lavez-vous les mains. Lavez-les-vous.

Remember thy promises.

Souviens-toi de tes promesses.

Remember them.

Souviens-t'en.

He has sat down, and I will sit down.

Il s'est assis, et je m'assiérai.

I have been here these two years.

Je suis ici depuis deux ans.

We have known him these six months.

Nous le connaissons depuis six mois.

*To be or do* (in regard to health).

*Se porter.*

*How do you do?*

*Comment-vous portez-vous?*

I am very well.

Je me porte très-bien.

How does your father do?

Comment se porte votre père?

He is well.

Il se porte bien.

Is your mother well?

Votre mère se porte-t-elle bien?

She has taken a slight cold.

Elle s'est un peu enrhumée.

How do your mother and sisters do?

Comment se portent votre mère et vos sœurs?

## CONDITIONAL.

1. THE CONDITIONAL PRESENT corresponds to *should* or *would* with the verb in English. It is very commonly preceded or followed by *if* with a verb in the imperfect tense; thus, *If I had money, I would travel*, *Si j'avais de l'argent, je voyagerais*; or, *I would travel if I had money*, *Je voyagerais si j'avais de l'argent*.

2. The present conditional is formed by changing *AI* final, of the first person singular of the future, into *AIE, AIS, AIT, IONS, IEZ, AIENT*.

## Conditional of ÊTRE, future SERAI.

*Je serais, tu serais, il serait, nous serions, vous seriez, ils seraient.*  
I should be, thou wouldst be, he would be, we should be, you would be, they would be.

## Conditional of AVOIR, future AURAI.

*J'aurais, tu aurais, il aurait, nous aurions, vous auriez, ils auraient.*  
I should have, thou wouldst have, he would have, we should have, you would have, they would have.

## Conditional of AIMER, future AIMERAI.

*J'aimerais, tu aimerais, il aimerait, nous aimerions, vous aimeriez, ils aimeraient.*  
I should love, thou wouldst love, he would love, we should love, you would love, they would love.

If thou hadst the time wouldst thou read? *Si tu avais le temps lirais-tu?*

I would read if I had the time.

*Je lirais si j'avais le temps.*

Would you drink if you had water?

*Boiriez-vous si vous aviez de l'eau?*

We would drink if we had water.

*Nous boirions si nous avions de l'eau.*

He could if he would.

*Il pourrait s'il voulait.*

They would if they could.

*Ils voudraient s'ils pouvaient.*

To dye. *Since.*

*Teindre. Puisque.*

Progress. Great progress.

*Du and des progrès. De grands progrès.*

3. *Since*, an adverb or preposition of time, is *depuis*; *since*, meaning *because that*, is *puisque*.

It has rained *since* yesterday morning; *Il pleut depuis hier matin*; et *puisque* and *since* the weather is so bad, I shall not go out. *il fait si mauvais temps, je ne sortirai pas.*

4. *Teindre* takes *en* before the name of the color.

He dyes his coat black; I get mine dyed blue. *Il teint son habit en noir; je fais teindre le mien en bleu.*

1. Teignez-vous ce drap en vert? 2. Nous teignons ce drap-ci en vert et celui-là en bleu. 3. Ces hommes teignent leurs gants en noir. 4. Je veux bien apprendre l'espagnol, puisque vous le voulez. 5. Si tu avais le temps lirais-tu ce livre? 6. Je le lirais. 7. Si cet écolier paresseux étudiait, ne ferait-il pas des progrès dans ses études? 8. Il y ferait de grands progrès. 9. Si vous aviez de l'argent achèteriez-vous cette maison? 10. Nous l'achèterions.

4 7 7 1221 126 7 16 7 7 7 14 13 3 4 16 7  
se-rai, -rais, -rions, -riez, -raient, au-rai, aime-rai, teind-ra, puis-je, pro-grès.

11. Si ces hommes avaient ce drap ne le teindraient-ils pas en vert ? 12. Non, madame, il le teindraient en noir. 13. Votre voisin étudierait-il mieux s'il avait moins d'argent ? 14. Il étudierait mieux. 15. Comment se porte monsieur votre frère ? 16. Il se porte bien.

1. If you drank all that wine, would you not be sick ? 2. I should be sick. 3. If thou hadst some paper, wouldst thou write some letters ? 4. I would write one to my father. 5. If you told your secret to those men, would they keep it ? 6. They would not keep it. 7. If that lazy scholar studied, would he learn well ? 8. Yes, sir, he would become very learned. 9. If you had money, would you not buy a horse ? 10. No, sir ; I should buy a fine house. 11. If thou couldst see the future (*l'avenir*), wouldst thou be more happy ? 12. No, sir, I should be less happy. 13. If those country-women had this cloth, would they dye it blue ? 14. No, miss, they would dye it brown (*brun*). 15. If you had the time, would you study languages ? 16. I would study the French and the German.

17. What didst thou do yesterday ? 18. Yesterday, after I had breakfasted, I read ; and after I had dined, I wrote some letters. 19. Where did those strangers go on Sunday ? 20. In the morning, as soon as they had shaved and dressed, they went to church. 21. Are you acquainted with the family of the general ? 22. No, madam ; I know no member of his family. 23. Do you enjoy good health ? 24. Yes, madam ; we have enjoyed excellent health since we have lived in the country. 25. Since your health is so good, you will soon be able to return to the city. 26. How far will you go this summer ? 27. I shall go as far as Boston. 28. Sit down in this chair. 29. Wash thy hands and face. 30. How do your father and mother do ? 31. They are very well.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is not that gentleman a surgeon ? 2. Yes, he is so ; he lives opposite to our house ; they say that he is very skillful. 3. Are you acquainted with him ? 4. Yes ; last summer we made a journey together to New York by sea. 5. Has he been here long ? 6. He came here two years ago, but he did not stay long ; he went to New York, and returned three or four months ago. 7. When you were in New York did you see George C. ? 8. Yes, I saw him almost every day ; he came to find me the first day of my arrival. 9. You knew hardly any people in New York ? 10. No, I knew

but very few; but I made some acquaintance while I was there. 11. Do you intend to go there again? 12. I shall go there perhaps this summer. 13. If you wish, I will give you letters to (*pour*) some of my friends, of whom you will not be sorry to make the acquaintance. 14. I shall be infinitely obliged to you for it.

15. Did you go to the baker's shop yesterday? 16. Yes, sir; as soon as I had dressed I went there. 17. Have you enjoyed good health since you have been here? 18. Yes, sir; I always enjoy good health. 19. The worms have gnawed the door of that shop. 20. If your cousin went to school, would he study much? 21. He would not study much. 22. Do you often go out early in the morning? 23. I hardly ever go out very early in the morning. 24. I will sell you this book since you desire it.

25. An Irishman who had a looking-glass in (*à*) his hand, shut his eyes, and placed (*placait*) it before his face. 26. Another asked him why he did that. 27. "My faith," replied he, "it is to see how I am when I sleep."

#### 94.—QUATRE-VINGT-QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

##### CONDITIONAL CONTINUED.

II.—Sometimes the conditional is used when the condition (the *if* and the imperfect) may be looked upon as understood; as,

I should like to be wise.\*

*J'aimerais à être sage.*

He would like to be rich.

*Il aimerait à être riche.*

We should wish to be good.

*Nous voudrions être bons.*

They ought to do their duty.

*Ils devraient faire leur devoir.*

1. *Can*, used negatively, is very commonly rendered in French by the conditional of *savoir* with *ne*, and without *pas*. With *pas* it means not to know.

I *can* (could) not do that.

*Je ne saurais faire cela.*

*Can* (could) you not go that far?

*Ne sauriez-vous aller jusque là?*

That *can* not be.

*Cela ne saurait être.*

We *can* not endure that.

*Nous ne saurions souffrir cela.*

I *should not know how* to do it; it is too difficult for me.

*Je ne saurais pas le faire; c'est trop difficile pour moi.*

2. *Pouvoir*, *oser*, and *cesser*, also, when negative, often omit *pas* (especially before the infinitive). With these the omission is elegant, but optional.

I cannot do it.

*Je ne puis (pas) le faire.*

She dare not say it.

*Elle n'ose (pas) le dire.*

She does not cease to speak.

*Elle ne cesse (pas) de parler.*

III.—When a past tense or present participle connected with past time, not governing the subjunctive, is followed by a verb having *should* or *would* with it in English, such verb is in the conditional in French.

\* The condition might be supplied thus, *I would like to be wise, if I could*, etc. In this form the sentences become similar to those in the preceding lesson.

I foresaw that they would do it.	<i>Je prévoyais qu'ils le feraient.</i>
I believed that he would come.	<i>Je croyais qu'il viendrait.</i>
He thought that I should believe him.	<i>Il pensait que je le croirais.</i>
We said that you would do it.	<i>Nous avons dit que vous le feriez.</i>
They hoped that we should be there.	<i>Ils espéraient que nous serions là.</i>
Believing that it would rain.	<i>Croyant qu'il pleuvrait.</i>

3. The conditional of *vouloir* expresses a modification of the meaning of the verb often corresponding to *wish* or *will* in English.

I wish (would wish) to borrow this book. *Je voudrais emprunter ce livre.*

He wishes (would wish) to study Spanish. *Il voudrait étudier l'espagnol.*

Will you go to the theater? *Voudriez-vous aller au spectacle?*  
We wish to go there. *Nous voudrions y aller.*

4. *Collective* or *approximate numbers* are expressed in French by nouns formed from the numeral adjectives, by making them end in *aine*. Such nouns are feminine.

About ten. Twenty (or so).	Une dizaine. Une vingtaine.
Thirty (or so). Forty (or so).	Une trentaine. Une quarantaine.
Fifty (or so). A hundred (or so).	Une cinquantaine. Une centaine.

5. *Douzaine* (a dozen) is a definite number. *Quinzaine* is used for two weeks; *huit jours* for one week; *un mois* for four weeks. Three weeks, five weeks, six weeks, are *trois semaines*, *cinq semaines*, etc.

I shall pass a fortnight with him.	<i>Je passerai une quinzaine chez lui.</i>
I have been here a week.	<i>Je suis ici depuis huit jours.</i>
He owes me some twenty francs.	<i>Il me doit une vingtaine de francs.</i>
<i>To intend to do. To mean, to signify.</i>	<i>Vouloir faire. Vouloir dire.</i>
What does that signify?	Que veut dire cela?
That signifies nothing.	Cela ne veut rien dire.
What does that word mean?	Que veut dire ce mot?
I do not know what it means.	Je ne sais pas ce qu'il veut dire.
<i>Serious. To descend.</i>	<i>Sérieux. Descendre.</i>

6. *Descendre* and several other verbs sometimes take *avoir* and sometimes *être* for their auxiliary. All these will be explained hereafter.

He has descended from the mountain. *Il est descendu de la montagne.*  
There were some thirty of us at that dinner. *Nous étions une trentaine à ce dîner.*

1. Combien d'assiettes avez-vous achetées? 2. J'en ai acheté une douzaine. 3. Je passerai une quinzaine de jours à la campagne. 4. Il y a une cinquantaine d'écoliers dans l'école. 5. Me devez-vous quelque chose? 6. Oui, je vous dois une centaine de francs. 7. Resterez-vous longtemps à la campagne? 8. J'y passerai trois semaines. 9. Avez-vous quelque chose? 10. J'ai mal à

<sup>12</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>14</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup>  
dou-zaine, ving-taine, tren-taine, ka-ran-taine, cin-kan-taine, can-taine, kin-zaine, se-ri-  
ous, des-cendra, des-cen-du.



la tête, mais ce n'est rien de sérieux. 11. Le maître descend-il souvent de sa chambre? 12. Il en descend souvent. 13. Est-il descendu ce matin? 14. Il n'est pas descendu. 15. Voudriez-vous apprendre le français? 16. Je voudrais apprendre le français et l'allemand. 17. Je pensais qu'il ne pleuvrait pas aujourd'hui, et je suis venu sans parapluie.

1. Wouldst thou like to travel in Europe? 2. I should like to travel there very much. 3. I am very thirsty; I should wish to drink a glass of water. 4. Would you not like to be rich? 5. Yes, I should like to be rich; but I should like better to be wise and good. 6. Is your boy here? 7. Yes; he knew that we should have need of him, and he came. 8. Have you brought your umbrella? 9. Yes; I thought that it would rain, and I brought it; I believed also that you would be here, and I have brought yours. 10. If it were fine weather, would you go into the country? 11. I would go. 12. Can you not succeed in doing that? 13. We can not succeed in it without money. 14. What does that word mean? 15. I do not know what it means.

16. We can not learn that lesson; it is too difficult. 17. How many apples have you bought? 18. I have bought some twenty. 19. How many persons are there in that room? 20. There are some thirty. 21. We owe the countryman some forty franks. 22. There are some fifty children in the street. 23. How many fruit-trees are there in that orchard? 24. There are some sixty. 25. How long will you stay in Boston? 26. I shall stay there one or two weeks. 27. That stranger looks serious. 28. Yes, he is a very serious man. 29. Permit me to disturb you (*vous déranger*) a moment; it is necessary for me to go to that table. 30. Do you wish to know the French perfectly? 31. I wish much (*bien*) to know it perfectly. 32. That scholar wishes to be the first of his class (*classe*); but he does not wish to study enough to become so (*pour y arriver*).

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you know where I can find a sail-boat (*bateau à voile*) next Friday? 2. What do you wish to do with it? 3. I wish to go, twenty miles from here on Friday or Saturday. 4. When do you intend to return? 5. I shall return Sunday evening if I can. 6. Mr. G. has a boat very light; if he has no need of it on Saturday, he will lend it to you. 7. I do not think that I can (*pouvoir*) have it; he has need of it every Saturday. 8. I know another gentleman who has one; it is Mr. L. 9. He has one? I did not know

it. 10. Yes, his is very good, but a little large. 11. Are you going all alone? 12. No; I shall go with one of my friends. 13. Then this boat is suitable for you (*vous convient*). 14. Go and see Mr. L.; he will lend it to you, I doubt not. 15. I will go and see him at his house to-morrow morning. 16. A king of France asked (*demandait*) a bishop one day if he was noble. 17. "Sire" (*sire*), answered the bishop, "in Noah's ark (*l'arche de Noë*) there were three brothers; I cannot say from which I am descended."

18. Where do you wish me to conduct those children? 19. I will have you conduct them home. 20. Is it possible for you to descend that mountain? 21. It is not possible for me to descend it without falling. 22. Is that boy lame? 23. Yes; he has cut his foot. 24. A child of ten years astonished every body by the correctness (*la justesse*) of his replies (*réponses*). 25. One day, a bishop, who thought to puzzle (*embarrasser*) him, said to him, "My friend, I promise to give you an apple if you will tell me where is God?" 26. "My lord" (*monseigneur*), answered the child to him, "I promise to give you two if you can tell me where he is not."

## 95.—QUATRE-VINGT-QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

## PAST CONDITIONAL TENSE.

1. THE PAST CONDITIONAL is formed by joining the past participle to the present conditional of the auxiliary; thus,

*Past conditional of AVOIR.*

<i>J'aurais eu,</i> I should have had,	<i>il aurait eu,</i> he would have had,	<i>vous auriez eu,</i> you would have had,
<i>Tu aurais eu,</i> Thou wouldst have had,	<i>nous aurions eu,</i> we should have had,	<i>ils auraient eu,</i> they would have had.

*Past conditional of ÊTRE.*

<i>J'aurais été,</i> I should have been,	<i>il aurait été,</i> he would have been,	<i>vous auriez été,</i> you would have been,
<i>Tu aurais été,</i> Thou wouldst have been,	<i>nous aurions été,</i> we should have been,	<i>ils auraient été,</i> they would have been.

*Past conditional of VENIR.*

<i>Je serais venu,</i> I should have come,	<i>il serait venu,</i> he would have come,	<i>vous seriez venus,</i> you would have come,
<i>Tu serais venu,</i> Thou wouldst have come,	<i>nous serions venus,</i> we should have come,	<i>ils seraient venus,</i> they would have come.

This tense is used when the verb following *if* is in the pluperfect, and when *should have* or *would have* is used in English; thus,

If I had had the time, I *should have* read. Si j'avais eu le temps, j'*aurais lu*.

2. Besides the above compound tense, there is in all French verbs a Second Past Conditional, which is formed by joining the past participle to the subjunctive imperfect of the auxiliary; thus,

*Second past conditional of AVOIR.*

<i>J'eusse eu,</i> Tu eusses eu,	<i>il eût eu,</i> nous eussions eu,	<i>vous eussiez eu,</i> ils eussent eu.
-------------------------------------	--	--

con-clure, con-clu, con-clua, -clu-on, -clu-ea, -cluent, m<sup>21</sup>é-di-ka-m<sup>22</sup>ent, m<sup>23</sup>é-di-c<sup>1</sup>ina, é-m<sup>2</sup>ploy<sup>3</sup>-er, ap<sup>4</sup>-pu<sup>5</sup>-yer, gou<sup>6</sup>-ver<sup>7</sup>-ner, pré<sup>8</sup>-s<sup>9</sup>ent, ca<sup>10</sup>-deau, somme<sup>11</sup>, in<sup>12</sup>-s<sup>13</sup>is<sup>14</sup>-ter, eg<sup>15</sup>-xi<sup>16</sup>-ger, dé<sup>17</sup>-man<sup>18</sup>-der, ver<sup>19</sup>-tu<sup>20</sup>-eux, a<sup>21</sup>-fir<sup>22</sup>-mer, a<sup>23</sup>-su<sup>1</sup>-rer, dé<sup>2</sup>-cla<sup>3</sup>-rer.

malade, l'auriez-vous employé? 2. Je l'aurais employé. 3. Si votre père *eût* (or avait) vu l'homme qui voulait acheter sa maison aurait-il conclu le marché? 4. Il l'aurait bientôt conclu. 5. Si vous *eussiez* (or aviez) été boiteux vous seriez-vous appuyé sur un bâton? 6. Non, monsieur, je me serais appuyé sur le bras de mon frère. 7. Si le général *eût* (or avait) été gouverneur de cet état l'aurait-il bien gouverné? 8. Non, monsieur, il l'aurait très-mal gouverné. 9. Si tu *eusses* (or avais) gardé ton argent, n'en aurais-tu pas eu beaucoup? 10. J'aurais eu une grosse somme. 11. Si vous *fussiez* (or étiez) allés à Londres l'été passé, auriez-vous vu la reine? 12. Nous l'aurions vue. 13. Si ces négociants *eussent* (or avaient) vendu leur coton hier, auraient-ils gagné plus d'argent? 14. Ils en auraient gagné davantage.

1. If the merchants had written their letters last night, would they have given them to you? 2. They would have given them to me. 3. If we had gone to the neighbor's last evening, should we have seen the general? 4. We should have seen him. 5. If thou hadst bought those beautiful birds which we saw at the market, to whom wouldst thou have given them? 6. I should have sent them as a (*en*) present to my sister. 7. When will the orator conclude his discourse (*discours*)? 8. He will conclude it at half past eleven. 9. Even if that man should gain much money, he would not keep it. 10. Even if that scholar studied much, he would not learn the French. 11. Does the master demand that you know your lessons early? 12. He demands that we know them at half past six; he insists upon that point.

13. Does the master demand too much? 14. No, sir; he demands nothing which is not suitable (*convenable*). 15. Do you believe that your brother is at home? 16. I assure you that he is not there. 17. Does the master affirm that you are worth more than we? 18. He does not affirm it. 19. Do you believe that the doctor is at home? 20. Yes, he is almost always at home. 21. My friends hope that I shall be virtuous and happy. 22. If you had taken this medicine, would you not have been sick? 23. I should have been sick. 24. Does the queen govern well? 25. She governs very well. 26. The master has made me a pretty present. 27. My father has given me a sum of money to buy books; I have nearly two thousand franks. 28. That house is worth nearly ten thousand

dollars. 29. If you had seen the captain, would he not have declared the whole truth? 30. He would have declared all that he knew.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Your stove is broken; why do you not have it mended? 2. I have already had it mended twice this winter; I wish to buy a new one. 3. You will not buy it before next autumn; stoves will soon become useless. 4. Yes, we shall have only a few cold days; we shall have no need of fire after this month. 5. We have not suffered much from cold this winter; we suffered much more from it the year past. 6. It has been very dry, and there are many of my trees dead (*de morts*). 7. It will be necessary to have them pulled up and to have others put in their places. 8. It is what I intend to do soon. 9. I have given some trees to Mr. B., who lives next door to me (*à côté de chez moi*), and I still have some left; do you wish for them? 10. If you please; but do you not need them yourself? 11. No; I have no place in my garden to put them. 12. Then I will take them; how many have you? 13. I do not know precisely; some half a score perhaps. 14. I shall not want more.

15. If you had seen your partner, would you have concluded that bargain? 16. I should have concluded it. 17. If the physician had given you that medicine, would you have taken it? 18. I should not have taken it. 19. That scholar is diligent; he employs time well; he is virtuous and happy. 20. Has not the countryman a large sum of money? 21. He has nearly ten thousand franks. 22. Where is your pretty book? 23. I have sent it as a present to my brother. 24. If the countryman had had the money, would he have bought that horse? 25. He would have bought him. 26. If you had been thirsty, would you have drunk that water? 27. I should not have drunk it. 28. Even if the captain had that book, he would not read it.

## 96.—QUATRE-VINGT-SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

## AUXILIARY ÊTRE

1. The learner has seen that *all passive verbs, all pronominal verbs, and a few intransitive verbs*, always take *être* for their auxiliary. The following intransitive verbs of this kind have already been given.

Aller,	Devenir,	Mourir,	Venir,
Arriver,	Disconvenir,	Naitre,	Revenir,
			Parvenir.

To these add the following, not before given, making in all about twenty.

<i>Advenir</i> ( <i>advenir</i> ), to happen.	<i>Entrer</i> , to enter.	<i>Retourner</i> , to return.
<i>Choir</i> , to fall.	<i>Intervenir</i> , to intervene.	<i>Revenir</i> , to re-enter.
<i>Décéder</i> , to die.	<i>Provenir</i> , to proceed from.	<i>Retomber</i> , to fall again.
<i>Éclorre</i> , to open.	<i>Redevenir</i> , to become again.	<i>Survénir</i> , to occur.

8 6 1 12 4 16 6 20 14 7 4 12 8 6 5 5 8 16 12 4 21  
 en-trer, ade-nir, re-tour-ner, choir, in-ter-ve-nir, ren-trer, dé-cé-der, prove-nir, re-tom-ber, é-clorre, re-deve-nir, sur-ve-nir.

Do you know what has happened?	Savez-vous ce qui <i>est</i> advenu?
He died at a great age.	Il <i>est</i> décédé à un grand âge.
He has entered college.	Il <i>est</i> entré au collège.
The flowers have opened.	Les fleurs <i>sont</i> écloses.
The royal <i>authority</i> has interposed in that matter.	L' <i>autorité</i> royale <i>est</i> intervenue dans cette affaire.
Hence have proceeded all the disorders.	De là <i>sont</i> provenus tous les <i>désordres</i> .
He has become powerful again.	Il <i>est</i> redevenu puissant.
He has returned to his country.	Il <i>est</i> retourné dans son pays.
They have re-entered the army.	Ils <i>sont</i> rentrés dans l'armée.
He has relapsed into vice.	Il <i>est</i> retombé dans le vice.
A storm came unexpectedly.	Un orage <i>est</i> survenu.

2. All transitive verbs take *avoir* for their auxiliary.

He has turned again the hay.	Il <i>a</i> retourné le foin.
She has taken in the pots of flowers.	Elle <i>a</i> rentré les pots de fleurs.

3. There is also a class of intransitive verbs which sometimes take *avoir* and sometimes *être* for their auxiliary. The following, already given, are of this class.

Changer, Demeurer,	Monter, Passer,	Dégénérer, Rester,	Sortir, Tomber.
-----------------------	--------------------	-----------------------	--------------------

4. For the auxiliary with such verbs, we have the following general rule: If the mere *action* denoted by the verb be meant, let *avoir* be used; but if the *state* resulting from it be meant, let *être* be used; thus,

He changed suddenly (action).	Il <i>a</i> changé tout-à-coup.
He has changed much of late (state).	Il <i>est</i> bien changé depuis peu.
He lived three years in Madrid (action).	Il <i>a</i> demeuré trois ans à Madrid.
He has remained in Madrid (state).	Il <i>est</i> demeuré à Madrid.
He went up to his room twice (action).	Il <i>a</i> monté deux fois à sa chambre.
He has gone up to his room (state).	Il <i>est</i> monté dans sa chambre.
He remained at Lyons two weeks (action).	Il <i>a</i> resté quinze jours à Lyon.
He has remained at Lyons (state).	Il <i>est</i> resté à Lyon.

5. *Partir, sortir, and tomber* almost always take *être*, but may sometimes have *avoir* for auxiliary; thus,

The gun went off suddenly (action)	Le fusil <i>a</i> parti tout-à-coup.
Vulcan fell from heaven during a whole day.	Vulcain <i>a</i> tombé du ciel pendant un jour entier.
What <i>authority</i> . Without authority.	Quelle <i>autorité</i> . Sans autorité.
To confess. To suppose.	Avouer. Supposer.
Suitable. Proper, fit.	Convenable. Propre.
Conformed. Like. Guilty.	Conformé. Conforme à. Coupable.
To be better off.	En être plus avancé.
When you shall have money, will you be better off?	Quand vous aurez de l'argent, en serez-vous plus avancé?
To express. Precisely, exactly.	Exprimer. Précisément, exactement.

14 16 12 6 1 18 6 22 17 6 21 1 15 21 16 18 1 5 12 6  
 au-tor-i-té, a-vou-er, sup-po-zer, conve-nable, propre, con-forme, cou-pable, eks-pri-mer,  
 pré-ci-sé-ment, eg-zac-te-ment

1. Comment le malade se porte-t-il ? 2. Ce qu'on craignait est advenu ; il est décédé ce matin. 3. Votre ami a-t-il réussi dans cette affaire ? 4. Non, l'autorité royale y est intervenue. 5. Le roi n'a-t-il pas perdu son autorité ? 6. Non, monsieur, il est redevenu aussi puissant (*powerful*) que jamais. 7. Ce malade est-il assez prudent ? 8. Non, madame, il était fort bien, mais il est retombé malade par son imprudence. 9. Les fils de notre voisin se comportent-ils bien à présent ? 10. Non, mademoiselle, ils sont retombés dans les mêmes fautes. 11. Comment se porte le malade ? 12. Il se portait mieux hier, mais ce matin la fièvre est encore revenue. 13. Où est votre ami ? 14. Il est entré dans sa chambre. 15. Cet homme avoue-t-il sa faute ? 16. Il avoue toute la vérité. 17. Supposez-vous que cet homme soit malade ? 18. Je ne suppose pas qu'il soit malade ; je sais qu'il est fatigué. 19. Dites-vous que cet homme soit coupable ? 20. Je dis qu'il est coupable.

1. Do you suppose that your horse is worth more than mine ? 2. I do not suppose that he is worth more than yours. 3. When that young lady shall be in the city, will she be better off ? 4. She will not be better off. 5. When that merchant shall receive his money, will he be better off ? 6. He will be better off. 7. Can you express all that you wish in French ? 8. I can not express it exactly. 9. Do you say that your cousin's exercise is well written ? 10. I say that is written precisely in the same manner (*de la même manière*) as mine. 11. This writing is exactly like that. 12. Have your flowers opened ? 13. Yes, they opened this morning. 14. Has the stranger returned to his country ? 15. He has returned to it. 16. The master entered again into his room. 17. Is the weather suitable for going on the lake ? It is not suitable.

18. That man is weak ; he is fit for study, but he is not fit for war. 19. Has your nephew fallen again into vice ? 20. No, sir ; he behaves perfectly well. 21. Has your friend arrived ? 22. Yes ; he arrived at six o'clock this morning. 23. Had that merchant become rich when you saw him in Europe ? 24. He had become very rich. 25. Had your father died when you came to this country ? 26. No, sir ; he died since I have been here. 27. Will the servant have returned from the market at seven o'clock ? 28. He will have returned at half past six. 29. If that man recovering (convalescent) had gone out, would he not be sick at present ? 30. He would have fallen sick again very certainly. 31. As soon

as your father had returned on Thursday, did he not go to your uncle's? 32. No, sir; he entered into his room.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Did you recite your lesson yesterday? 2. Yes; as soon as the master had come I recited it. 3. Does the grocer open his shop early in the morning? 4. He opens it every morning at six. 5. Have you read the book which I sent you last week? 6. Yes; as soon as I had received it I read it. 7. As soon as you had shaved yesterday, did you not breakfast? 8. Yes, sir; and as soon as I had breakfasted I went to the shop of my grocer. 9. Why do you go out so early in the morning (*de si grand matin*)? 10. I like the morning air, and I always go out early.

11. When will your brother receive my letter? 12. He has already received it. As soon as he had come here yesterday I gave it to him; and as soon as he had received it he read it. 13. Why can not your uncle enjoy his property? 14. He is always sick, and one can not enjoy any thing without health.

15. A child entered into the shop of a baker, and asked for a loaf (*pain*) of six cents. 16. Seeing that the loaf which they gave him was not sufficiently large, he said to the baker, "This six-cent loaf is very small." 17. "No matter" (*n'importe*), answered the baker; "you will have less trouble to carry it." "That is true," said then the child; "and as I always return politeness (*politesse*) for politeness, here are four cents; I shall have less to carry, and you will have less to count."

## 97.—QUATRE-VINGT-DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## AUXILIARY VERBS CONTINUED.

1. The following verbs also sometimes take *avoir* and sometimes *être* for auxiliary, according to rule, Lesson 96, 4.

<i>To appear.</i>	<i>To disappear.</i>	<i>Apparaître. Disparaître.</i>
<i>To lower, fall.</i>	<i>To cease.</i>	<i>Baisser. Cesser.</i>
<i>To descend.</i>	<i>To descend again.</i>	<i>Descendre. Redescendre.</i>
<i>To grow.</i>	<i>To escape.</i>	<i>Croître. Échapper.</i>
<i>To expire.</i>	<i>To go up again.</i>	<i>Expirer. Remonter.</i>
<i>To sound, ring.</i>	<i>Entire, whole.</i>	<i>Sonner.* Entier.</i>

\* Of verbs which sometimes take *avoir* and sometimes *être* for auxiliary, the following have now been given:

<i>Apparaître.</i>	<i>Convenir.</i>	<i>Disparaître.</i>	<i>Dégénér.</i>	<i>Rester.</i>
<i>Baisser.</i>	<i>Croître.</i>	<i>Échapper.</i>	<i>Passer.</i>	<i>Sonner.</i>
<i>Cesser.</i>	<i>Demeurer.</i>	<i>Expirer.</i>	<i>Redescendre.</i>	<i>Sortir.</i>
<i>Changer.</i>	<i>Descendre.</i>	<i>Monter.</i>	<i>Remonter.</i>	<i>Tomber.</i>

The other verbs of this class are the following, in all near forty:

1 1 8 12 1 8 7 6 5 6 4 5 3 20 5 1 6 5 12 8  
 4 21 6 15 6  
 ap-pa-raître, dis-pa-raître, baï-se-r, cee-se-r, re-des-cen-dre, croître, é-chap-per, eks-pl-rer,  
 re-mo-n-ter, son-ner.



God appeared to Moses (action).	Dieu a <i>apparu</i> à Moïse.
A sail has appeared far off (state).	Une voile <i>est apparue</i> au loin.
The boy disappeared this morning (action).	Le garçon a <i>disparu</i> ce matin.
He has disappeared these two months (state).	Il <i>est disparu</i> depuis deux mois.
Yesterday the river fell a foot (action).	Hier la rivière a <i>baissé</i> d'un pied.
The river has now fallen (state).	La rivière <i>est baissée</i> à présent.

<b>ABORDER, to land.</b>	
We landed yesterday on this island.	Nous <i>avons abordé</i> hier dans cette île.
We have landed these two days.	Nous <i>sommes abordés</i> depuis deux jours.
<b>ACCOURIR, to run to.</b>	
I ran to him to wish him joy.	J'ai <i>accouru</i> à lui pour le féliciter.
I have run hither to the noise.	Je <i>suis accouru</i> au bruit.
<b>ACROÎTRE, to increase.</b>	
His property increased suddenly.	Son bien a <i>accru</i> tout-à-coup.
That land has increased by alluvium.	Cette terre <i>est accrue</i> par alluvion.
<b>AUGMENTER, to augment.</b>	
The cold augmented suddenly.	Le froid a <i>augmenté</i> tout-à-coup.
His fortune has augmented.	Sa fortune <i>est augmentée</i> .
<b>DÉBORDER, to overflow.</b>	
The river overflowed last year, and has overflowed again now.	La rivière a <i>débordé</i> l'année dernière, et elle <i>est encore débordée</i> à présent.
<b>DÉCAMPER, to decamp.</b>	
They decamped at daybreak.	On a <i>décampé</i> au point du jour.
The Indian army fled as fast as possible.	L'armée indienne <i>est décampée</i> au plus vite.
<b>DÉCHOIR, to decline.</b>	
He declined from day to day.	Il a <i>déchu</i> de jour en jour.
He has declined much in his credit.	Il <i>est bien déchu</i> de son crédit.
<b>DÉGÉNÉRER, to degenerate.</b>	
That race degenerated little by little.	Cette race a <i>dégénéré</i> peu à peu.
That race has degenerated.	Cette race <i>est dégénérée</i> .
<b>DÉPÉRIR, to diminish.</b>	
The army diminished daily.	L'armée a <i>dépéri</i> journellement.
The army has diminished.	L'armée <i>est dépérie</i> .
<b>ÉCHOIR, to fall out, fall due.</b>	
My note fell due yesterday.	Mon billet a <i>échu</i> hier.
My note has fallen due.	Mon billet <i>est échu</i> .
<b>EMBELLIR, to grow handsome.</b>	
She grew handsome from day to day.	Elle a <i>embelli</i> de jour en jour.
She has grown much handsomer.	Elle <i>est fort embellie</i> .
<b>EMPIRER, to grow worse.</b>	
The disease grew worse this morning.	La maladie a <i>empiré</i> ce matin.
The disease has grown worse.	La maladie <i>est empirée</i> .
<b>GRANDIR, to grow large.</b>	
He grew much last year.	Il a <i>bien grandi</i> l'année dernière.
He has grown much.	Il <i>est bien grandi</i> .
<b>RAJEUNIR, to become young again.</b>	
He became young again.	Il a <i>rajeuni</i> .
He has become young again.	Il <i>est rajeuni</i> .
<b>RÉSULTER, to result.</b>	
What resulted therefrom?	Qu'a-t-il <i>résulté</i> de là?
What has resulted from it?	Qu'en <i>est-il résulté</i> ?
<b>DÉMÉNAGER, to remove.</b>	
He removed yesterday.	Il a <i>déménagé</i> hier.
He has removed these eight days.	Il <i>est déménagé</i> depuis huit jours.
<i>Accoucher, to bring forth, and vieillir, to grow old, may take either auxiliary, according to rule, Lesson 96, 4.</i>	

The fever ceased this morning (action).	La fièvre a cessé ce matin.
The fever has ceased these two days (state).	La fièvre est cessée depuis deux jours.
He descended very fast (action).	Il a descendu très-vite.
He has descended from his room (state).	Il est descendu de sa chambre.
He went up to his room, but he has come down again.	Il a monté à sa chambre, mais il est redescendu.
The river rose two inches yesterday.	La rivière a crû de deux pouces hier.
The river has risen much.	La rivière est crüe beaucoup.
He escaped twice before, and now he has escaped again.	Il a échappé deux fois auparavant, et maintenant il est encore échappé.
That word escaped me in a moment of impatience.	Ce mot m'est échappé dans un moment d'impatience.
My lease expired yesterday.	Mon bail a expiré hier.
My lease has expired.	Mon bail est expiré.
The stag. A sail.	Le cerf. Une voile.
I am going to the hunt (shooting).	Je vais à la chasse.
An entire month. The mail, trunk.	Un mois entier. La malle.
The employment, use. Present.	L'emploi. Présent.
Future. Habitual.	Futur. Habituel.
In the same manner.	De même. De la même manière.
It has struck twelve (at noon).	Midi est sonné.

1. Allez-vous à la chasse au cerf? 2. Je n'y vais pas. 3. J'aperçois une voile à l'horizon. 4. Le malle est arrivée de bonne heure. 5. Avez-vous appris l'emploi des verbes français? 6. J'ai appris l'emploi du présent et du futur. 7. Mon mal de tête est habituel. 8. Midi est-il sonné? 9. Oui, monsieur, midi a sonné comme vous sortiez de la maison. 10. Le cerf est échappé aux chiens. 11. L'année dernière mon ami a passé deux fois en Europe, et cet été il y est passé aussi. 12. Votre petit frère est-il sorti? 13. Oui, il a sorti deux fois ce matin, et à présent il est encore sorti. 14. Votre père a souvent monté dans sa chambre ce matin; est-il redescendu? 15. Il a redescendu, mais il est encore remonté.

1. Has your father gone out this morning? 2. He went out early this morning, but he has entered again into his room. 3. Has not your servant disappeared? 4. He disappeared yesterday, but this morning he returned. 5. Has your father come down from his chamber? 6. He came down, but he has gone up again. 7. Has he not come down again? 8. No, he is still up there (*là-haut*).

9. Have the stags escaped from the dogs? 10. No; the fox (*le renard*) escaped, but the stags are taken. 11. How does the sick man do? has his fever ceased? 12. Yes; during the night past it ceased all at once. 13. Has eight o'clock struck? 14. Yes; eight o'clock struck while we were breakfasting. 15. Has the old soldier died? 16. Yes; he expired last week in the arms of his friends. 17. I perceive several sails far off in the horizon (*au loin à l'horizon*).

18. The horse grows to the age of eight or ten years. 19. The grass (*l'herbe*) grows fast; it has grown much this week. 20. Did God appear to Moses? 21. He appeared to him. 22. Will you remain an entire month in the country? 23. I shall remain there six whole weeks. 24. Do you see that sail in the horizon? 25. I see it. 26. Is not that trunk too small? 27. No, it is sufficiently large. 28. Has the mail arrived? 29. Yes, it has just arrived. 30. Do you know the use of the future tense (*temps*) of French verbs? 31. I know the use of the future and of the present. 32. One sometimes employs the present to speak of habitual actions. 33. Are you going to the hunt? 34. I am not going there.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Have you not a country-house (*maison de campagne*)? 2. Yes; I have one some twenty miles from here. 3. Does any one stay there? 4. I have left a man there to take care of the trees, and to cultivate (*cultiver*) some vegetables. 5. Have you many fruit-trees? 6. I have several hundred. 7. Do they begin to bear (*donner*) fruit? 8. I had some last year; and if the season is good, I shall have still more this year. 9. Your trees will afford (*donneront*) you much money in a few years. 10. I hope that they will afford me sufficient in two years. 11. You must have a very pretty country-house. 12. Have you never been there? 13. No; I have often been over the bay, but never very far on this side.

14. Where will you go to-morrow? 15. I am to go to the mill of Mr. S. 16. It is nine miles from my house; I go there often in summer; but I believed that Mr. S. had sold it. 17. On the contrary (*au contraire*), he has bought the part (*la part*) of his partner. 18. Then it is that which I had heard, but had misunderstood (*mal compris*). 19. That countryman has some sixty sheep and twenty cows.

## 98.—QUATRE-VINGT-DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

## PERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The perfect of the subjunctive is formed by annexing the past participle to the present subjunctive of the auxiliary; thus,

*Perfect subjunctive of AVOIR.*

<i>Que j'aie eu,</i>	<i>qu'il ait eu,</i>	<i>que vous ayez eu,</i>
That I may have had,	that he may have had,	that you may have had,
<i>Que tu aies eu,</i>	<i>que nous ayons eu,</i>	<i>qu'ils aient eu,</i>
That thou mayest have had,	that we may have had,	that they may have had.

*Perfect subjunctive of ÊTRE.*

<i>Que j'aie été,</i>	<i>qu'il ait été,</i>	<i>que vous ayez été,</i>
That I may have been,	that he may have been,	that you may have been,
<i>Que tu aies été,</i>	<i>que nous ayons été,</i>	<i>qu'ils aient été,</i>
That thou mayest have been,	that we may have been,	that they may have been.

*Perfect subjunctive of ALLER.*

<i>Que je sois allé,</i>	<i>qu'il soit allé,</i>	<i>que vous soyez allé,</i>
That I may have gone,	that he may have gone,	that you may have gone,
<i>Que tu sois allé,</i>	<i>que nous soyons allés,</i>	<i>qu'ils soient allés,</i>
That thou mayest have gone,	that we may have gone,	that they may have gone.

2. When the tense of the governing clause is present or future, the *present subjunctive* is used to denote a time which is *present or future* to it, and the *perfect* to denote a time which is *past* to it; thus,

I fear that he goes there.	}	J'ai peur qu'il n'aille là.
I fear that he will go there.		J'ai peur qu'il ne soit allé là.
I fear that he has gone there.	}	J'aurai peur qu'il n'aille là.
I shall fear his going there.		J'aurai peur qu'il ne soit allé là.
I shall fear that he will go there.		Il a peur que je n'aie perdu mon argent.
I shall fear that he has gone there.		Il aura peur que tu ne l'aies perdu.
He fears that I have lost my money.		Il trouve bon que nous ayons fait cela.
He will fear that thou hast lost it.		Je ne crois pas qu'ils aient fini.
He approves of our having done that.		
I do not believe that they have finished.		

He will doubt your having come. Il doutera que vous soyez venus.

3. The past indefinite of the indicative is followed by the present subjunctive, to express what is taking place at the present time, or what belongs to all time. In such cases, the governing clause is followed by one of the conjunctions, *afin que, pour que, de crainte que, de peur que, quoique, bien que*.

He has deceived him, although he is his brother. Il l'a trompé, quoiqu'il soit son frère.

God has made the air transparent, that one may be able to see through it. Dieu a fait l'air transparent, afin que l'on puisse voir à travers.

4. The perfect subjunctive is often used also after the past indefinite.  
Has one ever seen a man who has shown more courage? A-t-on jamais vu un homme qui ait montré plus de courage?

Have you ever met with any one who has learned more than he did?	<i>Avez-vous jamais rencontré quelqu'un qui ait appris plus que lui?</i>
The preterite. <i>To aid.</i>	<i>Le prétérit. Aider.</i>
A narration. <i>Myself.</i>	<i>Un récit. Moi-même.</i>
<i>To be used to. To get used to.</i>	<i>Être fait à. Se faire à.</i>
Is he used to fatigue?	Est-il fait (or accoutumé) à la fatigue?
He is used to it.	Il y est (accoutumé) fait.
He gets used to danger.	Il se fait au danger.
<i>To be mistaken. To amuse one's self.</i>	<i>Se tromper. S'amuser (à bef. inf.).</i>
<i>To respect. To flatter one's self.</i>	<i>Respecter. Se flatter (de bef. inf. and noun).</i>
The third (part). The powder.	<i>Le tiers. La poudre.</i>

1. Croyez-vous que le docteur soit venu? 2. Je doute qu'il soit venu. 3. Trouvez-vous bon que nous soyons allés au spectacle? 4. Je trouve bon que vous y alliez. 5. Le maître pense-t-il que nous n'ayons pas bien étudié? 6. Il pense que vous n'avez pas bien étudié. 7. Ne se trompe-t-il pas? 8. Il se trompe. 9. A quoi vous amusez-vous? 10. Je m'amuse à lire. 11. Respectez-vous le caractère de cet homme? 12. Je le respecte. 13. Cet homme se flatte-t-il de savoir bien le français? 14. Il se flatte de savoir bien le français et l'espagnol. 15. J'ai peur que l'on n'ait rempli ce baril de poudre. 16. Le tiers de neuf est de trois, et le tiers de douze est de quatre. 17. Savez-vous bien l'emploi du prétérit? 18. Je ne le sais pas parfaitement. 19. Aidez-vous cet homme? 20. Oui, je l'aide toujours dans ses besoins. 21. Cet homme nous a fait un récit fidèle de ses malheurs? 22. Le maître a-t-il écrit ceci? 23. Non, monsieur, je l'ai écrit moi-même.

1. Did that man aid you in your need? 2. He aided me with (de) his property and with his credit. 3. Has that man finished the narration of his journeys? 4. He has finished the narration of the first, but not of the second. 5. Are you used to labor? 6. I am not yet used to it. 7. Has your companion got used to the fatigue of war? 8. He has got used to it since he has been in it. 9. Your brother makes great progress in the French; did he correct that exercise? 10. No; I corrected it myself. 11. Does he know well the use of the preterite tense? 12. He knows the use of the preterite, the present, and the future. 13. Will it be neces-

sary for us to learn this lesson by heart (*par cœur*)? 14. It will be necessary for us to learn it all by heart.

15. Does the master think that thou hast written thy exercise correctly (*correctement*)? 16. He does not think that I have written it properly (*convenablement*). 17. Dost thou think that I have learned my lesson? 18. I do not think that thou hast learned it well. 19. Is the master afraid that those scholars have not written their exercises? 20. He is afraid that they have not written them. 21. Has your father given you money in order that you may go to the theater? 22. He has given me money in order that I may buy books. 23. Do you doubt that that scholar has finished his task? 24. I doubt his having finished it.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is it possible that you have already learnt your lesson? 2. I have learned mine, but I fear that my brothers have not learned theirs. 3. Do you believe that I came here this morning at eight o'clock? 4. I do not doubt that thou arrivedst here before ten. 5. Does the master believe that we have gone home? 6. He believes that you have gone home, and that the other children have gone home also. 7. Have you known any one who has suffered more than I? 8. I have known no one who has suffered so much as you. 9. Are you sometimes mistaken? 10. Yes, sir, every one is liable to be (*sujet à*) mistaken. 11. With (*à*) what do you amuse yourself? 12. I occupy (*occupe*) myself with studying, and my cousin amuses himself with playing. 13. With what do they fill that barrel? 14. They fill it with powder.

15. Your uncle desires that we go together to the great ball which the governor gives to-morrow evening; what say you of it? does it please you that I go with you? 16. It is suitable that you go with my sister. 17. Nevertheless, if my uncle wishes that it be otherwise, I consent to go with you. 18. Does your friend approve of her aunt's making so long a journey without her? 19. No, certainly; she is very sorry that her aunt has an intention so strange.

## 99.—QUATRE-VINGT-DIX-NUVIÈME LEÇON.

## IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. THE IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed from the past definite, by changing the last letter (*e*) of the second person singular into the termination,

SEE,

SEES,

\*T,

SEES,

SEEST,

SENT.

Thus, *AVOIR*, past indefinite second person singular *AVAIS*, makes

<i>Que j'eusse,</i>	<i>qu'il eût,</i>	<i>que vous eussiez,</i>
That I might have,	that he might have,	that you might have,
<i>Que tu eusses,</i>	<i>que nous eussions,</i>	<i>qu'ils eussent,</i>
That thou mightst have,	that we might have,	that they might have.

*ÊTRE*, past indefinite second person singular *ÉTAIS*, makes

<i>Que je fusse,</i>	<i>qu'il fût,</i>	<i>que vous fussiez,</i>
That I might be,	that he might be,	that you might be,
<i>Que tu fusses,</i>	<i>que nous fussions,</i>	<i>qu'ils fussent,</i>
That thou mightst be,	that we might be,	that they might be.

*ALLER*, past indefinite second person singular *ALLAIS*, makes

<i>Que j'allasse,</i>	<i>qu'il allât,</i>	<i>que vous allassiez,</i>
That I might go,	that he might go,	that you might go,
<i>Que tu allasses,</i>	<i>que nous allassions,</i>	<i>qu'ils allassent,</i>
That thou mightst go,	that we might go,	that they might go.

2. When the tense of the governing clause is past or conditional, this tense is used to denote a time which is either present or future to it.

I was desiring that thou shouldst come.	<i>Je désirais que tu vinsses.</i>
He desired that I should have money.	<i>Il désira que j'eusse de l'argent.</i>
I had desired that he should be here.	<i>J'avais désiré qu'il fût ici.</i>
He would wish us to speak.	<i>Il voudrait que nous parlussions.</i>
I should wish you to speak.	<i>Je voudrais que vous parlassiez.</i>
I should have wished them to go there.	<i>J'aurais voulu qu'ils allassent là.</i>

3. We thus see that this tense is used after the past and conditional, as the present subjunctive is after the present and future.

I desire you to go there.	<i>Je désire que vous alliez là.</i>
I desired you to go there.	<i>Je désirais que vous allassiez là.</i>
It is necessary for him to live well.	<i>Il faut qu'il vive bien.</i>
It was necessary for him to live well.	<i>Il a fallu qu'il vécût bien.</i>
It will be necessary for them to come.	<i>Il faudra qu'ils viennent.</i>
He would wish them to come.	<i>Il voudrait qu'ils vinssent.</i>

4. This tense is to be used also after the present or future, provided it be followed by a conditional expression containing or implying the imperfect tense.

I doubt whether you would be sick, if you were prudent.	<i>Je doute que vous fussiez malade, si vous étiez prudent.</i>
If we did not aid him, what would he do?	<i>Si nous ne l'aidions pas, que ferait-il?</i>
I doubt his succeeding without you.	<i>Je doute qu'il réussît sans vous.*</i>
To be under obligations.	<i>Avoir des obligations.</i>
To act. The ear.	<i>Agir. L'oreille.</i>
To return, go back. The chimney.	<i>Retourner. La cheminée.</i>

5. *Retourner* always means to go back; *revenir*, to come back.

To attach, to tie. That brandy. *Attacher. Cette eau de vie.*

\* *Sans vous* implies an imperfect, being equivalent to *si vous ne l'aidiez pas*.

9 9 9 1271 9 128 9 72 1 1 1 2 1 1 1271 1 1 128 1  
eusse, eût, eus-siez, eus-siez, eussent, fusse, al-lasse, al-lât, al-las-siez, al-las-siez, al-las-sent, ob-li-ga-tions, a-gir, o-reille, re-tour-ner, che-mi-née, al-las-cher.

*A basket. The pain, trouble.*

*Correct. Without pain.*

*He is hard of hearing.*

*Un panier. La peine.*

*Correct. Sans peine.*

*Il a l'ouïe dure.*

1. Avez-vous des obligations à cet étranger? 2. Je lui ai beaucoup d'obligations. 3. Agissez-vous comme vous parlez? 4. J'agis comme je parle, mais notre voisin agit autrement qu'il ne parle. 5. Ce garçon retourne-t-il souvent chez lui? 6. Il y retourne tous les dimanches. 7. Mettez-vous vos fleurs sur la cheminée? 8. J'en mets quelques-unes sur la cheminée et quelques-unes sur la table. 9. Ce marchand vend-il de l'eau-de-vie? 10. Il vend de l'eau-de-vie et du vin. 11. Pensiez-vous que je fisse ma tâche facilement? 12. Je ne pensais pas que tu la fisses sans peine. 13. Croyiez-vous que votre thème fût correct? 14. Je ne croyais pas qu'il fût tout à fait correct. 15. Qu'a cet homme? 16. Il a l'ouïe dure. 17. Qu'avez-vous? 18. J'ai mal à l'oreille droite. 19. De quoi ce garçon a-t-il besoin? 20. Il a besoin d'un cordon pour attacher son panier.

1. Did the master desire that we should return home often? 2. He desired that we should return home every week. 3. Act in such a way that you may be praised; are you often praised? 4. No, sir; I act well toward every body, but I am not often praised. 5. Have you the (un) ear-ache or the (un) tooth-ache? 6. I have a slight ear-ache. 7. With what do you tie your books? 8. I tie them with a handkerchief. 9. Where does the carpenter put his hammer? 10. He puts it on the chimney. 11. Did you think that the servant had your basket? 12. I did not think that he had it. 13. Did the physician say that I was hard of hearing? 14. He did not say so. 15. Did you fear that we might die? 16. I feared that you might be sick.

17. Did you think that we could not learn this lesson? 18. I did not think that you could learn it easily. 19. Did you desire that the traveler should come here? 20. I did not desire it. 21. Were you afraid that I should lose my money? 22. No; I was afraid that thou wouldst be sick. 23. Was it possible for you to learn all that lesson? 24. Yes, sir; but it was not possible for my brother to learn it. 25. Did the physician think that you were very sick? 26. He thought that I should die. 27. Did the master say



that my exercise was well written? 28. He said that it was quite correct. 29. Where do you desire my servant to carry this basket? 30. I wish him to carry it to the market. 31. Did you hear that the doctor drank much brandy? 32. No, I did not hear so. 33. Can you learn all that lesson? 34. I can learn it without trouble.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Did not that house formerly belong to your uncle? 2. Yes; but he sold it to Mr. E. the past summer. 3. I am astonished at it; it is a superb house; I do not comprehend (*conçois*) why he sold it. 4. It did not suit (*convenait*) him; it is too large for his family. 5. How much may (*peut*) such a house as that cost? 6. That one cost my uncle ten thousand five hundred dollars. 7. It is much money; but it is well worth that. 8. Is your uncle here now? 9. No; he set out for France three weeks ago.

10. Did you see Mr. B. yesterday? 11. Yes; I saw him at his house. 12. Has he received news from New York? 13. Yes; he received a letter day before yesterday. 14. What news was there? 15. Nothing new; Charles arrived there in good health. 16. What day did he arrive there? 17. I do not know; he wrote that he arrived there two weeks after his departure from here. 18. Then, as he set out on Monday, he must have arrived (*doit être arrivé*) on Monday also. 19. When does he say that he will return? 20. He says nothing about it in (*en*) his letter; I think that he will stay in New York at least a month or six weeks. 21. Will he return by sea or by land? 22. By land; he will pass by Cincinnati, for he wishes to go and see his sister, who lives at St. Louis.

23. What did you do yesterday? 24. As soon as I had breakfasted I set out for the country, and I returned only in the evening. 25. Did you go there alone? 26. No; John went with me. 27. Why did you not come here yesterday morning? We were expecting you. 28. I had a little fever the night before last, and I stayed at home all day yesterday.

## 100.—CENTIÈME LEÇON.

## PLUPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. THE PLUPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed by joining the past participle to the imperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary.

*Pluperfect subjunctive of AVOIR.*

*Que j'eusse eu,*  
That I might have had,

*Que tu eusses eu,*  
That thou mightst have had,

*qu'il eût eu,*  
that he might have had,  
*que nous eussions eu,*  
that we might have had,

*que vous eussiez eu,*  
that you might have had,  
*qu'ils eussent eu,*  
that they might have had.

*Pluperfect subjunctive of ÊTRE.*

<i>Que j'eusse été,</i>	<i>qu'il eût été,</i>	<i>que vous eussiez été,</i>
That I might have been,	that he might have been,	that you might have been,
<i>Que tu eusses été,</i>	<i>que nous eussions été,</i>	<i>qu'ils eussent été,</i>
That thou mightst have been,	that we might have been,	that they might have been.

*Pluperfect subjunctive of VENIR.*

<i>Que je fusse venu,</i>	<i>qu'il fût venu,</i>	<i>que vous fussiez venus,</i>
That I might have come,	that he might have come,	that you might have come,
<i>Que tu fusses venu,</i>	<i>que nous fussions venus,</i>	<i>qu'ils fussent venus,</i>
That thou mightst have come,	that we might have come,	that they might have come.

2. This tense is used, when the tense of the governing clause is past or conditional, to denote a time which is past to it.

I wished that he had written.	<i>Je voulais qu'il eût écrit.</i>
He wished that I had written.	<i>Il voulut que j'eusse écrit.</i>
We were afraid that thou hadst done it.	<i>Nous avions peur que tu ne l'eusses fait.</i>
He was afraid that we had gone there.	<i>Il avait peur que nous ne fussions allés là.</i>
We should like that you had gone there.	<i>Nous aimerions que vous fussiez allés là.</i>
I should have wished that they had come.	<i>J'aurais voulu qu'ils fussent venus.</i>

3. We thus see that this tense is used after the past and conditional, as the perfect subjunctive is after the present and future.

Do you think that he has finished?	<i>Pensez-vous qu'il ait fini?</i>
Did you think that he had finished?	<i>Pensiez-vous qu'il eût fini?</i>
Will he believe that we have studied?	<i>Croira-t-il que nous ayons étudié?</i>
Would he believe that we had studied?	<i>Croirait-il que nous eussions étudié?</i>

4. This tense is to be used also after the present or future, provided it be followed by a conditional expression, containing or implying the pluperfect tense.

I doubt whether you would have been sick if you had been prudent.	<i>Je doute que vous eussiez été malade si vous aviez été prudent.</i>
If you had not helped him, what could he have done?	<i>Si vous ne l'aviez pas aidé, qu'aurait-il pu faire?</i>
I doubt his having succeeded without you.	<i>Je doute qu'il eût réussi sans vous.*</i>
The state. <i>Simple.</i>	<i>L'état. Simple.</i>
<i>Definite. Indefinite.</i>	<i>Défini. Indéfini.</i>
I believe so.	<i>Je le crois (je crois que oui).</i>
He believes not.	<i>Il ne le croit pas (il croit que non).</i>

5. When *venir* signifies to happen, it takes *à* before the infinitive.

If I happen to see your brother.	<i>Si je viens à voir votre frère.</i>
I come to see your brother.	<i>Je viens voir votre frère.</i>
To meet with. To suit, agree.	<i>Rencontrer. Convenir (comp. of venir).</i>

\* *Sans vous* here implies a pluperfect, being equivalent to *si vous ne l'aviez pas aidé*.

6. *Convient*, meaning *to suit*, takes *d* before a noun; meaning *to agree*, it takes *de*. In the former sense it takes *avoir* for auxiliary, in the latter, *être*.

This house suits him. It suited his father. We have agreed upon the price.      Cette maison lui convient. Elle a convenu à son père. Nous sommes convenus du prix.

He meets with many obstacles. I agree to do that.      Il rencontre beaucoup d'obstacles. Je conviens de faire cela.

1. Le maître croyait-il que je n'eusse pas appris ma leçon? 2. Il ne croyait pas que tu l'eusses bien apprise. 3. J'avais peur que ces jeunes gens n'eussent pas dit adieu au docteur. 4. Cet étranger vous a-t-il cru? 5. Il m'a cru sur ma simple parole. 6. On peut souvent employer le prétérit indéfini pour le prétérit défini. 7. Si vous venez à rencontrer mon ami, donnez-lui cette lettre. 8. En quel état avez-vous trouvé cette affaire? 9. Je l'ai trouvée en mauvais état. 10. Le prétérit défini est un temps simple. 11. Pensiez-vous que j'eusse fait ma tâche facilement? 12. Je ne pensais pas que tu l'eusses faite sans peine. 13. Aviez-vous peur que nous n'eussions pas appris nos leçons? 14. J'avais peur que vous ne les eussiez pas bien apprises. 15. Le maître trouvait-il bien que les écoliers eussent vendu leurs livres? 16. Non, il ne le trouvait pas bien. 17. Croyiez-vous que je fusse allé chez moi? 18. Je croyais que vous étiez allé au spectacle.

1. Did you think that I had gone home? 2. I was afraid that thou hadst gone home without reciting thy lesson. 3. Did you doubt that we had learned our lessons well? 4. I doubted your having learned yours, and I was afraid that your cousins had not learned theirs well. 5. Did the master wish that I had come here earlier? 6. He wished that you had come here at eight o'clock. 7. Do you believe that I should have learned French without my master? 8. I do not believe that your cousin would have learned it without his master. 9. Did our friends fear that we had been sick? 10. They feared that you had died. 11. Did you think that the traveler had come here? 12. I did not think so. 13. Is your exercise quite correct? 14. I think so.

15. Is that man useful to the state? 16. He thinks so; I think not. 17. Is not that mason building a new stone chimney? 18. I believe so. 19. That man looks tipsy; has he not drunk too much brandy? 20. He has drunk too much. 21. Has not that man some concealed (*caché*) sorrow? 22. Yes; he has committed faults, and he suffers the pain of them. 23. Has not the countrywoman a

basket of fruit? 24. She has a basket of fruit and a basket of flowers. 25. If you happen to meet my friend, tell him to come and see me. 26. Do you desire that it may rain? 27. No; I desire that it may be fine weather. 28. How many states do the United States comprehend? 29. They comprehend more than thirty states. 30. Have those men agreed to sell their houses? 31. Yes; and they have agreed upon the price.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is it true that the governor of the state is dead? 2. No; it is a false report (*nouvelle*). 3. He has been very sick, and he is so still; but he was better this morning. 4. What is the matter with him? 5. He has the fever. 6. Do they believe that he is still in danger? 7. The danger is nearly passed, I believe. 8. There is much sickness; is there not? 9. I do not believe that there is much.

10. Whatever I do there are always some faults in my exercise. 11. It is necessary, however, to manage (*faire*) in such a way that there may not be any. 12. How many have you made to-day? 13. Guess, if you can. 14. Five or six. 15. I have not made a single one. 16. Confess that your brother helped you. 17. He showed me one mistake which I had made, and which I corrected myself. 18. You make progress; you have made only one mistake, while I have made four. 19. I hope that I shall succeed also in not making any more. 20. I do not doubt that that may happen (*arrive*) soon, provided that you always know your lesson as you do at present. 21. I confess to you that I desire much to make progress in my studies, and above all (*surtout*) in the French. 22. In order that you may know it well, you must study it well.

23. Is the preterite indefinite a simple tense? 24. No; the preterite definite is a simple tense, but the preterite indefinite is a compound (*composé*) tense. 25. Did you think that I had learned all the tenses of the French verbs? 26. I did not think that you had learned them all. 27. What tenses have you learned? 28. I know the use of the present, the future, the preterite definite, and the preterite indefinite.

## 101.—CENT-UNIÈME LEÇON.

## CONNECTION OF TENSES. GENERAL RULE.

1. It has been seen, in the last three lessons, that the several tenses of the subjunctive mood are used according to the following general rule:

When the time of the governing clause is present or future, the present of the subjunctive is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the perfect to denote a time which is past; but when the time of the governing clause is past or conditional, the

imperfect is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the pluperfect to denote a time which is past; thus,

I doubt whether he goes there.	} Je doute qu'il aille là.
I doubt whether he will go there.	
I shall doubt whether he goes there.	} Je douterai qu'il aille là.
I shall doubt whether he will go there.	
I doubt whether he has gone there.	Je doute qu'il soit allé là.
I shall doubt whether he has gone there.	Je douterai qu'il soit allé là.
I doubted whether he went (or would go) there.	Je doutai (or doutais) qu'il y allât.
I have doubted whether he went (or would go) there.	J'ai douté qu'il y allât.
I had doubted his going there.	J'avais douté qu'il y allât.
I should doubt his going there.	Je douterais qu'il y allât.
I should have doubted his going there.	J'aurais douté qu'il y allât.
I doubted whether he had gone there.	Je doutais (or doutai) qu'il fût allé là.
I have doubted his having gone there.	J'ai douté qu'il y fût allé.
I had doubted whether he had gone there.	J'avais douté qu'il fût allé là.
I should doubt whether he had gone there.	Je douterais qu'il y fût allé.
I should have doubted his having gone there.	J'aurais douté qu'il fût allé là.

2. That the present and perfect subjunctive are often used after the past indefinite, and the imperfect and pluperfect with a condition, after the present, has also been seen in the last three lessons.

3. The imperfect of the subjunctive may also be used after a present, when such present would be translated by the perfect in English, as also when such imperfect has the nature of the conditional; as,

I have spoken prose more than forty years without my knowing any thing of it.	Il y a plus de quarante ans que je fais de la prose sans que j'en sasse rien.
There is no one of his subjects who would not hazard his own life to save that of the king.	Il n'y a aucun de ses sujets qui ne hasardât sa propre vie pour conserver celle du roi.

4. *Même* is annexed to personal pronouns in French, as *self* is in English, and agrees with them in number.

<i>Myself.</i>	<i>Thyself.</i>	<i>Himself.</i>	<i>Moi-même.</i>	<i>Toi-même.</i>	<i>Lui-même.</i>
<i>Herself.</i>	<i>Ourselves.</i>	<i>Yourselves.</i>	<i>Elle-même.</i>	<i>Nous-mêmes.</i>	<i>Vous-mêmes.</i>
<i>One's self.</i>	<i>Themselves.</i>		<i>Soi-même.</i>	<i>Eux-mêmes.</i>	<i>Elles-mêmes.</i>

5. It is used in the same way also with other words.

This very thing.	That very thing.	Ceci-même.	Cela-même.
This very one.	That very one.	Celui-ci-même.	Celui-là-même.
The king himself.	The Greeks themselves.	Le roi-même.	Les Grecs-mêmes.

1. Qui a corrigé ce thème? 2. Je l'ai corrigé moi-même. 3. Qui a cassé ce verre? 4. Tu l'as cassé toi-même. 5. Avez-vous

vu le ministre du roi ? 6. J'ai vu le ministre et le roi lui-même. 7. Qui a apporté les livres de votre sœur ? 8. Ma sœur les a apportés elle-même. 9. Qui a nos lettres ? 10. Vous les avez vous-mêmes. 11. Nous avons fait ces affaires nous-mêmes. 12. Qui a déchiré les livres de ces enfants ? 13. Les enfants les ont déchirés eux-mêmes. 14. Croyez-vous que votre frère vienne ? 15. Je ne crois pas qu'il vienne. 16. Croyez-vous qu'il soit venu ? 17. Je ne crois pas qu'il soit venu. 18. Vouliez-vous qu'il vînt ? 19. Je voulais qu'il vînt. 20. Pensiez-vous qu'il fût venu ? 21. Je ne pensais pas qu'il fût venu. 22. Craignez-vous que votre associé ne meure ? 23. Je crains qu'il ne soit déjà mort. 24. Croyiez-vous que nous perdissions notre argent ? 25. Je croyais que vous l'aviez perdu.

1. Do you not believe that we obey the master ? 2. I do not believe that you obey him. 3. Do you fear that we have not obeyed him ? 4. I fear that you have not obeyed him. 5. Did you wish us to obey him ? 6. I wished you to obey him. 7. Did you think that we had not obeyed him ? 8. I was afraid that you had not obeyed him. 9. Do you know any one who does more than I ? 10. I know no one who does more than you. 11. Do you know any one who has done more than the doctor ? 12. I know no one who has done so much as he. 13. Did you know any one who studied more than Charles ? 14. I knew no one who studied as much as he. 15. Did you know any one who had studied more than he ? 16. I knew no one who had studied so much as he. 17. However lazy the doctor may be, he is very learned.

18. However rich the merchant may have been, he is now poor. 19. Whatever might be his misfortunes, he supported them well. 20. Whatever riches he might have gained, he lost them all. 21. Will you lend me your penknife a moment ? 22. Very willingly, sir ; here it is at your service. 23. I wish to buy a horse ; will you sell me yours ? 24. I can not sell him ; I have need of him every day. 25. I wish you to hold these papers a moment. 26. Certainly ; I will hold them with pleasure. 27. It is necessary to take care of one's self when one travels, if one wishes to escape (*aux*) accidents. 28. Those women are vain (*vaines*) ; they will speak rather of themselves than of others.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Well, here I am. 2. You return early. 3. Yes ; I finished

the most part of my business last evening, and I set out early this morning. 4. Are you going alone to the ball, or do you conduct some one? 5. I am going alone. 6. Well, come for us (*nous trouver*) at the house at eight o'clock, and we will go in (*de*) company. 7. I thank you; that will be one pleasure more. 8. You were not at the last ball, I believe? 9. No; I was sick. They told me that there were many persons there. 10. Yes; they danced almost all night, until three o'clock. 11. I intended positively (*bien*) to be there, and to have the honor of dancing with Miss C. 12. She expected you, and she was very much surprised to see that you were not there. 13. I owe her some apology (*des excuses*); but it was not my fault if I was not of the party. 14. Well, come this evening at eight o'clock, or sooner if you can.

15. Who is that gentleman? 16. It is Mr. R.; he is a professor of music. 17. Is he a Frenchman? 18. No; he is a German, but he speaks the French perfectly; he is a man of merit. 19. It is a beautiful thing to (*que de*) know several languages. 20. Yes; it is useful and agreeable. 21. What I find most difficult in the French is the verbs. 22. You do not make many mistakes. 23. I am always afraid of making mistakes, for I have never understood (*compris*) well the use of the different tenses. 24. If you wish, I will give you some lessons on this point of grammar. 25. You will render me a great service. 26. Among all my acquaintance it is you who have the most taste for French; you will learn to speak it without mistakes in a little time. 27. You flatter me. 28. Not at all; what I tell you is only the truth. 29. Then if you are willing to give me some lessons on the verbs I shall be much obliged to you.

## 102.—CENT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

RECAPITULATION OF THE RULES ON VERBS CONNECTED WITH *IF*.

1. We have seen (page 322) that there is in French a *second past conditional*, or *second form*,—the same tense exactly as the pluperfect subjunctive without its *que*,—and that this form is often used to translate the pluperfect of the indicative following *if*, so that phrases which contain these tenses (as given in Lesson 95), may be expressed in several forms; thus,

If I had been vanquished I should have been criminal.	{	<i>Si j'avais été vaincu j'aurais été criminel.</i>
		<i>Si j'avais été vaincu j'eusse été criminel.</i>
		<i>Si j'eusse été vaincu j'eusse été criminel.</i>
		<i>Si j'eusse été vaincu j'aurais été criminel.</i>

2. When the pluperfect of the indicative follows *if*, the first form of the past conditional is commonly used, as seen in all the examples of Lesson 95; but when the second form follows *if*, the same form is more commonly used also in the conditional.

If I had seen him, I should have spoken *Si je l'avais vu, je lui aurais parlé.*  
to him.

If he had believed me, he would not *S'il m'eût cru, il n'eût point fait de*  
have made verses. *vers.*

3. When the second form follows *if*, however, the first form is often used to avoid monotony of sound.

If I had died young, I should not have *Si je fusse mort jeune, je n'aurais pas*  
known regrets. *connu de regrets.*

If he had been virtuous, he would have *S'il eût été vertueux, il aurait été heu-*  
been happy. *reux.*

4. We have now seen that the verb following *et* conditional (i. e., meaning *if*, not *whether*), is used in four different cases for other tenses.

First. The present indicative for the future, Lesson 47 :

If you go (shall go), I will go also. *Si vous y allez, j'irai aussi.*

Second. The imperfect for the conditional, Lesson 93 :

If she wrote (should write), I would *Si elle écrivait, je lirais la lettre.*  
read the letter.

Third. The pluperfect for the past conditional :

If she had written, I would have read *Si elle avait écrit, j'aurais lu la lettre.*  
the letter.

Fourth. The second past conditional for the first: *Si elle eût écrit* (and not *Si elle aurait*), etc.

#### IRREGULAR IMPERATIVES.

Go to thy room. *Go.*

*Va dans ta chambre. Va* (imperative  
of *aller*).

*Have thou. Let us have. Have ye.*

*Aie. Ayons. Ayez* (imp. of *avoir*).

*Be thou. Let us be. Be ye.*

*Sois. Soyons. Soyez* (imp. of *être*).

*Be so kind. Please.*

*Veillez. Veillez bien* (imp. of *vou-*  
*loir*).

*Let us know. Know ye.*

*Sachons. Sachez* (imp. of *savoir*).

*Know your lesson. Let us know it.*

*Sachez votre leçon. Sachons-la.*

*Take care of thy books.*

*Aie soin de tes livres.*

*Let us take care of these papers.*

*Ayons soin de ces papiers.*

*Be attentive. Let us be attentive.*

*Soyez attentif. Soyons attentifs.*

*Please to listen to me.*

*Veillez bien m'écouter.*

5. The regular form of the imperative of *vouloir* may sometimes be used when strength of will is expressed.

*Will, and you will succeed.*

*Voulez, et vous réussirez.*

6. The past participle, annexed to the infinitive of the auxiliary, forms THE PAST INFINITIVE.

---

<sup>9</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>21</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
veuil-lea, sa-cha-na, sa-ches.



After having finished. Before having    Après avoir fini. Avant d'être arrivé.  
arrived.

After having written my letter, I sent    Après avoir écrit ma lettre, je l'ai en-  
it to the post-office.                        voyée à la poste.

1. Sois attentif à ce que je dis. 2. Va au magasin, et dis à ton frère de venir ici. 3. Ayez soin de vos livres. 4. Sois attentif à ton devoir. 5. Si tu eusses vu tes amis, n'aurais (or n'eusses-tu) pas été heureux? 6. J'aurais (or j'eusse) été heureux. 7. Si vous eussiez eu beaucoup d'argent, n'auriez-vous pas eu beaucoup d'amis? 8. Nous eussions eu beaucoup d'amis. 9. Si ces écoliers eussent bien étudié, n'auraient (or n'eussent) ils pas fait des progrès? 10. Ils eussent fait de grands progrès. 11. Si vous aviez (or eussiez) été sans amis, n'eussiez-vous pas été malheureux? 12. Nous eussions été malheureux. 13. Va trouver Charles, et dis-lui de venir à la maison. 14. Aie soin de ta santé. 15. Ayons bien soin de nos affaires. 16. Ayez soin de ces chevaux. 17. Soyez attentif à ce que je dis. 18. Veuillez me faire le plaisir de porter cette lettre à votre père. 19. Après avoir récité votre leçon, que ferez vous? 20. J'irai à la maison.

1. Take care of thy papers. 2. Let us take care of our books. 3. Take good care of those horses. 4. Be attentive to thy lessons. 5. Let us be attentive to all that the master says. 6. Be attentive to all your duties. 7. Be so kind as to lend me this book. 8. Please to show me thy exercise. 9. Go and tell the servant to make some fire. 10. If thou hadst been cold, wouldst thou not have warmed thyself? 11. I should have warmed myself. 12. If the neighbor had offered to sell you his horse, should you have bought it? 13. No; even if he had offered to sell it cheap, we should not have bought it. 14. If those scholars had been studious, would they not have become learned? 15. They would have become learned.

16. Know well what you have to do. 17. Let us know where we are to go to-day. 18. Please to show me how to do that. 19. Let us will to be free, and we shall be so. 20. Be attentive to what I am going to tell you. 21. Let us be attentive to all that the professor says. 22. Go to school early this morning. 23. Take care of your books and papers. 24. After having shaved this morning, what did you do? 25. After having shaved I breakfasted, and after having breakfasted, I read. 26. If thou hadst taken good

care of thy money, would thou not have been rich? 27. I should have been rich. 28. If you had arrived earlier, would you not have seen the general? 29. We should have seen him. 30. Will that scholar become learned? 31. No; even if he were studious, he would not become learned.

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. When will you that we go and see Charles? 2. Let us go there this evening, if you will. 3. I had a mind to go to the theater this evening; nevertheless, if you like better that we go and see Charles this evening, I consent. 4. No; if you will, we will go to the theater this evening, and we will go to his house to-morrow. 5. As you wish; that is all the same (*parfaitement égal*) to me.

6. Good evening, ladies; I have the honor to present to you my respects. 7. Good evening, sir; we are delighted to see you back (*de retour*); we were expecting you. 8. I arrived at one o'clock. 9. Our cousin told us that you had gone to the country, but that you intended to return this afternoon. 10. It will be necessary for me to go there again to-morrow. 11. So soon as that? 12. I was not able to finish what I was to do there, and I was not willing to lose the pleasure of accompanying you this evening to the ball. 13. Do you wish to make us believe that you have come from the country on purpose for that? 14. Does it seem to you that that is something very surprising? 15. It is very gallant, if it is true. 16. I pray you to believe, miss, that it is much more true than gallant. 17. Really (*réellement*), have you been to the country? 18. In order to prove it to you, and also to make you see that I have thought of you while I was there, allow me to offer you these flowers which I gathered there for you. 19. Sir, we thank you a thousand times; they are very beautiful. 20. Now we are ready to believe all that you shall wish.

## 103.—CENT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. The *first* and *second persons imperative* of all regular forms were given in Lesson 44; those of irregular forms (i. e., of *aller*, *avoir*, *être*, *savoir*, and *vouloir*), in the preceding lesson. The third person singular and plural is the same as in the present subjunctive; thus,

Let him study. Let them study.  
Let him come. Let them come.  
Let him see. Let them see.  
Let him read. Let them read.  
Let him have. Let them have.  
Let him be. Let them be.

Qu'il étudie. Qu'ils étudient.  
Qu'il vienne. Qu'ils viennent.  
Qu'il voie. Qu'ils voient.  
Qu'il lise. Qu'ils lisent.  
Qu'il ait. Qu'ils aient.  
Qu'il soit. Qu'ils soient.

Let him know. Let them know.	Qu'il sache. Qu'ils sachent.
Let the servant hold these horses.	Que le domestique tienne ces chevaux.
Let the boys pick up the apples.	Que les garçons ramassent les pommes.

2. As the French have no first person singular imperative, they use the first person plural in its place; as,

<i>Let me see. Let me reflect.</i>	<i>Voyons. Réfléchissons.</i>
------------------------------------	-------------------------------

3. The infinitive mood, when its use is attended with no ambiguity, is preferred to all the other moods as more concise and elegant. Hence verbs which govern other moods with a change of subject, take the infinitive when the subject remains the same.

He desires that you may be rich.	Il désire que vous soyez riche.
He desires that he may be rich.	Il désire être riche.
He believes that they have lost their money.	Il croit qu'elles ont perdu leur argent.

He believes that he has lost his money.	Il croit avoir perdu son argent.
He thinks that we are learned.	Il pense que nous sommes savants.
He thinks that he is learned.	Il pense être savant.

<i>Above, up-stairs. Below, down-stairs.</i>	<i>En haut. En bas.</i>
--	-------------------------

<i>As usual. Usually.</i>	<i>Comme à l'ordinaire. D'ordinaire.</i>
---------------------------	--

<i>Better than usual.</i>	<i>Mieux qu'à l'ordinaire.</i>
---------------------------	--------------------------------

4. When a clause beginning with a relative intervenes between the verb *est* and its subject *ce*, the *ce* may or may not be repeated if the verb be followed by a substantive singular; but if the verb be not followed by a substantive singular, the *ce* must be repeated; as,

What makes the merit of man is virtue.	Ce qui fait le mérite de l'homme <i>est</i> (or <i>c'est</i> ) la vertu.
--	--

What I desire is to see you.	Ce que je désire <i>c'est</i> de vous voir.
------------------------------	---

5. When *ce* does not begin the first clause, it is to be used with *est* in the second, if an attribute clause of some length precedes *est*; as,

The thing most dear to man after virtue is friendship.	La chose la plus chère à l'homme après la vertu <i>c'est</i> l'amitié.
--	--

6. *Que* is used in expressions like the following for greater force.

A battle is a terrible thing.	C'est une chose terrible <i>qu'</i> une bataille.
Money is a good friend.	C'est un bon ami <i>que</i> l'argent.
In the beginning. Great Britain.	<i>Au commencement. Grande-Bretagne.</i>
The roaring. To roar.	<i>Le rugissement. Rugir.</i>
A lion. A proclamation.	<i>Un lion. Une proclamation.</i>
Frightened. Terrible.	<i>Effrayé. Terrible.</i>
Singing. Virtue.	<i>Le chant. La vertu.</i>

1. Que le garçon aille au marché. 2. Que les domestiques apportent du bois. 3. Que le cuisinier fasse du café. 4. Que les enfants aillent à la maison. 5. Que le jardinier ramasse les pommes. 6. Que les ouvriers finissent leur ouvrage. 7. Mon frère est en haut, et mes cousins sont en bas. 8. Cet écolier récite bien sa

ré-dé-cla-ra-tion, ef-fra-yé, ter-rible, chan-t, ver-tu.  
 12 1 1 12 21 8 8 12 7 12 8 8 4 8 21 12 8 22 12 12 21  
 pro-cla-ma-tion, ef-fra-yé, ter-rible, chan-t, ver-tu.

leçon comme à l'ordinaire. D'ordinaire il étudie bien. 9. Ces écoliers étudient mieux qu'à l'ordinaire. 10. Vous êtes venu de meilleure heure qu'à l'ordinaire. 11. Qu'étudiez-vous? 12. J'étudie les règles du chant. 13. Allez-vous à l'école de chant? 14. J'y vais tous les soirs. 15. Où est votre frère? 16. Il est allé en haut, et mon cousin est allé en bas. 17. Si vous aviez beaucoup d'argent, que feriez-vous? 18. Je voyagerais en Europe. 19. C'est une belle chose que d'avoir beaucoup d'amis. 20. Je voudrais bien savoir toutes les règles du chant. 21. Que le médecin soigne le malade. 22. Qu'il le soigne bien.

1. Let the servant make some fire. 2. Let the children go to school. 3. Let the pupil take care of his books. 4. Let him take care of his papers. 5. Let the girls recite their lessons. 6. Let them put their books on the table. 7. Let the child go up-stairs. 8. Let the boys go down-stairs. 9. Let the servant go for some wine. 10. Let him go for some good wine. 11. Let the servants take care of the horses. 12. Let them take good care of them. 13. Let me see. 14. Let me think. 15. Is your father up-stairs? 16. No; he is in the room below. 17. Where can I find your cousin? 18. Go up-stairs, and knock at the first door on the left. 19. Do you wish me to go to the market this morning as usual? 20. Yes; and I will have you return earlier than usual. 21. I usually return before eight o'clock.

22. Will it be necessary for us to learn our exercises by heart (*par cœur*)? 23. Yes; and the master desires that we learn all the words of our lesson by heart also. 24. Do you think that your brother reads as well as I? 25. No; I do not think that he reads as well as you. 26. The music most agreeable in a beautiful morning of spring is the singing of the birds. 27. It is a beautiful thing to preserve a secret. 28. In the beginning of the American revolution, after the king of Great Britain had hurled (*lancé*) the most terrible of his proclamations against the revolted (*révoltés*) Americans, a member of Congress (*congrès*) said to an American young lady, 29. "Well, miss, are you not afraid of the roaring of the English lion?" 30. "Not at all, sir," answered she, "for I have read in natural history that the king of animals roars the most (then) when he is the most affrighted."

## OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Do you desire to begin your French lessons to-day? 2. Yes; it is important for me to know the use of the French verbs. 3. Well, how do they employ the present? 4. That is easy; they employ it in the same manner as in English, when they speak of present actions. 5. Thus, they say, *I read, I write, I speak, we write*, etc. 6. Is that all? 7. I believe so. 8. If I say, *I go to church Sundays*, I do not speak of an action which is precisely present. 9. That is true; they employ also the present to speak of actions habitual. 10. They sometimes make use also of the present instead of the future; as when I say, *Charles sets out for Boston to-morrow; The boat arrives this evening*. 11. Then the present is employed in French as in English? 12. Yes; but there are several exceptions (*exceptions*) very important (*importantes*), and which use will teach you later. 13. There is but one form in French to express what they express in English by three different forms. 14. They can translate *I write, I am writing, I do write*, only by *j'écris*.

15. You read too much at night; it will do you harm. 16. I have but little (*guère*) fear that that may harm me; my eyes have been used to it for a long time. 17. I assure you that it is very dangerous. 18. I know a young man who had very good eyes, but who now has them very weak; he is afraid even of becoming blind. 19. How did that happen to him? 20. It is from having read and written too much at night; there is nothing worse for the sight. 21. Then I will not read so much any more; I do not wish to lose my eyes.

## 104.—CENT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## PARTICIPLES.

The learner has long been familiar with the rule that the past participle forming part of an active verb agrees with the direct object of that verb when the object precedes, but when the object follows it remains unchanged. This rule requires some further modification.

1. The past participle of impersonal verbs is never varied.

The rain which has been.

La pluie qu'il a *fait* \* (not *faite*).

The heats which have been.

Les chaleurs qu'il y a *eue* \* (not *eues*).

2. Sometimes the proper object of the participle is the infinitive mood, when the learner is liable to regard it as the noun or pronoun.

That song is beautiful; have you heard it sung? Cette chanson est belle; l'avez-vous entendu † (not *entendue*) chanter?

I have heard it read.

Je l'ai *entendu* † (not *entendue*) lire.

He made them run.

Il les a *fait* † (not *faite*) courir.

\* *Fait* and *eue* have here a peculiar meaning; we can not say properly of rain, that it was made (*faite*), nor of heats, that they are (*eues*) had.

† The literal meaning of these phrases, according to their grammatical relations, is—*Have you heard sing it? I have heard read it. He has made run them.* We may ask in the first sentence, *heard what?* Not the song, but the *singing* of it. In the second, *I have*

3. Sometimes the participle is unvaried, because an infinitive understood is its object.  
 I have given him all the education that Je lui ai donné toute l'éducation que  
 I was able (to give understood). j'ai pu (donner understood).

4. Sometimes also the proper object of the participle is the close of the sentence preceded by *que*, when the learner is liable to regard it as the pronoun.

The letters which I knew that you had Les lettres que j'ai su\* que vous aviez  
 received. reçues.

The friends whom I heard that you Les amis que j'ai entendu\* dire que  
 had. vous aviez.

5. The past participle, annexed to the present participle of the auxiliary, forms the COMPOUND PAST PARTICIPLE.

Having gone to the market. Étant allé au marché.

Having received the letter. Ayant reçu la lettre.

Having finished the work. Ayant fini l'ouvrage.

6. The past participle also, annexed to the compound past of *être*, forms the PASSIVE COMPOUND PAST PARTICIPLE.

Having been deceived. Ayant été trompé.

Having been wounded. Ayant été blessé.

7. The learner has seen that the past and present participles used as adjectives are varied like them.†

A burning wind. Burning winds. Un vent brûlant. Des vents brûlants.

A woman well formed. Women well formed. Une femme bien faite. Des femmes bien faites.

To exist, live. To triumph. Exister. Triompher (de bef. n.).

The desire. An observation. Le désir. Une observation.

Deaf. Docile. Sourd. Docile.

Laborious. Indocile. Laborieux. Indocile.

To profit. What. Profiter. Quoi.

8. *What*, following a preposition and in exclamations, is *quoi*.

What is the matter on hand? De quoi est-il question?

What then! dare you speak to me in that manner? Quoi donc! vous osez me parler de cette manière?

Glad. Very glad. Aise. Bien aise (de bef. inf. and n.).

1. Ayant récité toutes ses leçons il sortit pour prendre l'air. 2.  
 Ayant été trompé une fois, je ne veux pas me laisser tromper une

*heard what?* Not the song, but the reading of it. In the third, *he made what?* Not them, but *their running*. The infinitive, therefore, in such sentences, is the object, and the participle remains unchanged.

\* To ascertain the object in the former of these sentences, we ask, *I know what?* Not the letters, but that you received them; and in the latter, *I heard what?* Not the friends, but that you had them. The close of the sentence therefore is the object in each, and the participle is unvaried.

† Participles are distinguished from adjectives in French as in English. The present participle, when it does not denote action like a verb, but merely qualifies a noun, and the past participle, when it does not form part of a verb, become adjectives.

brû-lant, eg-zis-ter, tri-om-pher, dé-sir, ob-ser-va-tion, sourd, do-cile, la-bo-rieux, in-do-cile, pro-fi-ter, quoi, aise.

autre fois. 3. Le vieux soldat ayant été blessé au cerveau, devint fou. 4. Avez-vous entendu chanter ces dames? 5. Je les ai entendues chanter. 6. Ont-elles entendu chanter ces chansons? 7. Elles les ont entendu chanter. 8. La sagesse triomphe de tous les dangers. 9. Je suis bien aise de vous rencontrer. 10. Cet enfant est docile; il a aussi un grand désir de plaire à son maître. 11. Ce monsieur a de l'esprit; il a fait une belle observation. 12. Qu'a cet homme? 13. Il est sourd d'une oreille. 14. Cet enfant est-il docile? 15. Il est docile et laborieux, mais son frère est très-indocile. 16. Cet homme n'est pas sage; rien ne lui profite. 17. Le biens mal acquis ne profitent jamais.

1. Did you see your sister write that letter? 2. I saw her write it. 3. Did you see the letter written? 4. I saw it written. 5. Have you learned the lesson which we had to learn? 6. I have learned it. 7. Have you rendered that man all the services which you ought (*avez dû*)? 8. I have rendered them to him. 9. I offered to lend you the books which I knew that you wished to borrow. 10. Is the carpenter here? 11. No; having finished his work, he has gone home. 12. Was your father living when General Washington died? 13. Yes, sir; he was born the same year. 14. Did you meet my brother when you were in Paris? 15. I met him, and was very glad to see him.

16. Is that man deaf? 17. He is not deaf; he is blind. 18. Was your father living at the time (*à l'époque*) of the American revolution? 19. Yes, sir; he was living then, and he had a great desire to see the cause of liberty (*liberté*) triumph. 20. Your nephew is docile and laborious; you do not think, do you, that he is indocile and lazy? 21. No, sir; I believe that he is laborious. 22. Of what do you speak? 23. We speak of the wisdom of that man; he has made some fine observations. 24. The thing the most precious after virtue is health. 25. What I desire the most is to hear the voice of my friends. 26. Is the old soldier dead? 27. Yes, sir; having been wounded in the breast, he died.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Is it necessary for me to tell you again how they employ the present? 2. No; I do not believe that it is necessary to tell it to me again; I have not forgotten what you told me about it. 3. Well, how do they employ it? 4. They employ it to speak of what is present or habitual, and even sometimes instead of the future.

5. Very well; but you must know that they sometimes employ it instead of the past or preterit. 6. Thus, instead of saying, *Every thing yielded to the fortune of Caesar, Alexandria (Alexandrie) opened to him her gates, Egypt (Egypte) became a Roman province (province romaine)*, one can say, *Every thing yields, Alexandria opens, Egypt becomes*, etc. 7. That is easy to understand. 8. In order to render the narration more animated (*animé*), they speak of the action as present. 9. Exactly; you understand me perfectly.

10. Are you willing that we taste your fruit? 11. Certainly; I am willing that you taste my fruit and my wine. 12. What does the master desire us to do? 13. He desires you to carry this letter to your father. 14. Does he wish us also to give him these notes? 15. He does not desire that you give them to him. 16. Does the master doubt our comprehending what he says? 17. He doubts your comprehending all that he says. 18. Do you think that I can see your father to-morrow? 19. You can not see him, unless you come here early in the morning.

## 105.—CENT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## ADVERBS, NEGATIVES, ETC.

1. Most English adverbs in *ly*, formed from adjectives, have corresponding adverbs in French in *ment*, formed also from adjectives. They are formed from the feminine, when the masculine does not end in *e* mute, by adding *ment*, except in adjectives whose masculine ends in *ant* or *ent*, which change *nt* into *m* before *ment*; as,

Entire. <i>Entirely.</i>	Entier. <i>Entièrement.</i>
Equal. <i>Equally.</i>	Égal. <i>Également.</i>
Ordinary. <i>Ordinarily.</i>	Ordinaire. <i>Ordinairement.</i>
Quiet. <i>Quietly.</i>	Tranquille. <i>Tranquillement.</i>
Honest. <i>Honestly.</i>	Honnête. <i>Honnêtement.</i>
Elegant. <i>Elegantly.</i>	Élégant. <i>Élégamment.</i>
Prudent. <i>Prudently.</i>	Prudent. <i>Prudemment.</i>

2. *Pas* expresses a negative less strongly than *point*. It is generally employed when we express something accidental; thus,

He does not read. He does not study. Il ne lit *pas*. Il n'étudie *pas*.  
He does not draw. Il ne dessine *pas*.

That is, he is not doing these acts at present. But *point* is employed to express what is *habitual or absolute*; as,

He never reads. He never studies. Il ne lit *point*. Il n'étudie *point*.  
He does not draw at all. Il ne dessine *point*.

3. We have seen that *ne* used with another negative term, as *rien, jamais, personne*, etc., omits *pas*. *Pas* is omitted also in expressions to which a negative sense may be attributed.



He does not see at all. Il ne voit *goutte*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 I have never seen him in my life. Je ne l'ai vu *de ma vie*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 I will not speak of it to any living soul. Je n'en parlerai à âme qui vive.<sup>\*</sup>

4. In interrogations and exclamations, where the subjunctive (according to Rule L, Lesson 81) is used after a relative with a vague antecedent, *pas* may be omitted.

Is there a man who knows not that? Y a-t-il un homme qui ne sache cela?  
 Have you a friend who is not mine? Avez-vous un ami qui ne soit des miens?

5. When pronouns of different persons form the subject of the verb, the first person is preferred to the second, and the second to the third; the objective form is then used in the subject, and the plural pronoun of the person preferred is generally used also, and the verb agrees with it.

He and I have agreed upon the price. Lui et moi *nous* sommes convenus du prix.

You and he have agreed upon it. Vous et lui *vous* en êtes convenus.

6. Subject pronouns of the third person are used as in English.

She and he will speak to that man. Elle et lui parleront à cet homme.

A single pronoun, when emphatic, is often repeated, as those in No. 5 above.

They play and I study.	Ils jouent et moi j'étudie.
They lose, but thou gainest.	Ils perdent, mais <i>toi</i> tu gagnes.
We study, but he plays.	Nous étudions, mais <i>lui</i> il joue.
We go there, but they stay here.	Nous allons là, mais <i>eux</i> ils restent ici.
To commit.	Commettre (compound of <i>mettre</i> ).
A companion. While.	Un camarade, ami. Tandis que.
To hunt. To kill.	Chasser. Tuer.
A wolf. The hunt, hunting.	Un loup. La chasse.
A fox. Fishing.	Un renard. La pêche.
A squirrel. A society.	Un écureuil. Une société.
A mackerel. Literary.	Un maquereau. Littéraire.
To go a-hunting.	Aller à la chasse.
To go a-fishing.	Aller à la pêche.

1. Votre camarade n'a-t-il pas commis des fautes? 2. Il n'en a pas commis. 3. N'avez-vous pas trompé votre ami? 4. Je ne l'ai pas trompé. 5. Ces élèves s'amuse<sup>nt</sup> tandis que nous étudions. 6. Vous avez commis plusieurs fautes, tandis que votre camarade n'en a pas commis du tout. 7. Allez-vous souvent à la pêche? 8. Je vais souvent à la pêche et à la chasse. 9. Allez-vous à la pêche du maquereau? 10. Je vais à la pêche du maquereau et de la morue. 11. Ce chien chasse-t-il bien? 12. Il ne chasse

<sup>\*</sup> *Goutte* may here be considered equivalent to *point*, *de ma vie* to *jamais*, and *âme qui vive* to *personne*.

15 5 1 1 1 1 12 8 12 1 6 21 6 22 1 4 1 5  
 com-mettre, ca-ma-ra-de, a-mi, tan-dié, chas-ser, tu-er, loup, chas-se, re-nard, pê-che,  
 5 12 9 15 12 5 6 1 17 12 5 7  
 é-cu-reuil, so-ci-é-té, ma-que-reau, lit-té-raire.

pas bien. 13. Avez-vous chassé aujourd'hui? 14. J'ai chassé toute la journée. 15. Qu'avez-vous tué? 16. J'ai tué un loup et un renard, et mon ami a tué des écureuils. 17. Que désirez-vous? 18. Je désire que vous m'introduisiez dans votre société littéraire. 19. Ce jeune homme aime-t-il à aller à la chasse? 22. Il aime à aller à la chasse et à la pêche.

1. Have you hunted to-day? 2. I have hunted all day. 3. What have you killed? 4. I have killed a wolf, a fox, and a few squirrels. 5. Do you go a-hunting often? 6. I do not go a-hunting often; but I go a-fishing almost every day. 7. Do you sometimes catch mackerel? 8. Yes; we catch many mackerel, and many (much) codfish. 9. Are there many squirrels in your woods? 10. There are many squirrels, and there are also a few foxes and wolves. 11. Do you introduce your friends into our literary society? 12. I introduce them there. 13. Is not that young girl stupid (*stupid*)? 14. She has not much wit, but she is not so stupid as she appears.

15. Will you see your neighbor before he goes a-hunting? 16. I shall see him before he goes there. 17. Do not those scholars love each other? 18. They love each other well. 19. Why does that boy rub his eyes? 20. He rubs them because they pain him. 21. Charles the twelfth, king of Sweden, never pardoned those who had once offended him; but he also never forgot a service which one had rendered him. 22. Do you deny that your companion is wrong? 23. I deny that he has the design to do evil. 24. Do you say that it is necessary for us to write all this exercise? 25. I do not say that it is necessary for you to write it all to-day. 26. Did you not write the exercise of that little boy? 27. No; he wrote it himself. 28. Who corrected your exercises? 29. We corrected them ourselves.

#### OPTIONAL EXERCISES.

1. Now have the goodness to teach (*enseigner*) me the use of the preterit definite. 2. They employ the preterit definite when they speak of an action which has taken place in a definite time past, and of which nothing more remains. 3. Then I can say, *I wrote yesterday; My brother set out on Monday for New York; I saw Mr. R. last week; I breakfasted at eight o'clock this morning.* 4. No; your last phrase is not correct (*juste*), but all the others are. 5. How then? eight o'clock is past long ago, for it is now five

o'clock. 6. That is true ; but eight o'clock in the morning makes part of to-day, which is a present time. 7. You can say that you breakfasted yesterday at eight o'clock. 8. I understand ; the time of which one speaks ought not to make a part of the day in which one speaks. 9. Exactly ; if you speak of an action finished in present time, it is necessary to employ the preterit indefinite. 10. Then I ought to say, *I breakfasted (j'ai d  jeun  ) at eight o'clock to-day.* 11. But can I not say, I breakfasted (*j'ai d  jeun  *) yesterday ? 12. Yes ; it is a grammatical license (*tolerance grammaticale*) ; one can employ the preterit indefinite instead of the definite, but never the preterit definite instead of the indefinite.

13. Will that scholar learn the French ? 14. He will learn it, provided he be willing to study. 15. Do you believe that I can learn it in a little time ? 16. No ; though you may be willing to study, you can not learn it in a little time. 17. Your cousin wishes you to pay the merchant for his books. 18. I will pay him for them, provided you give me the money.

[The learner who has well studied the preceding lessons must have a very good knowledge, both theoretic and practical, of the French Grammar. Those whose time will permit them, however, to study also the following additional lessons, will find them very useful.]

## SECOND PART.

### SUPPLEMENTARY LESSONS.

#### I.—PREMIÈRE LEÇON.

##### PROPER NAMES.

1. Latin and Greek proper names which in English terminate in *al* or *is*, those of two syllables in *us*, Latin terminations in *um*, and masculines in *a*, are commonly the same in both languages; as,

*Juvenal. Venus.*

*Juvénal. Vénus.*

*Caligula. Herculanum.*

*Caligula. Herculanum.*

2. Feminines in *a*, names in *as* and *es*, and those of more than two syllables in *us*, generally change these terminations into *e*; as,

*Diana. Socrates. Orpheus.*

*Diane. Socrate. Orphée.*

3. Terminations in *ander* are changed into *andre*, and those in *o* into *on*; as,

*Alexander. Cicero.*

*Alexandre. Cicéron.*

4. Feminine proper names of places ending in *a*, change *a* into *e* mute, and terminations in *burg* are changed into *bourg*; as,

*Arabia. Hamburg.*

*Arabie. Hambourg.*

*A nail. Charitable.*

*Un ongle. Charitable.*

*A fool. Stupid.*

*Un sot. Stupide.*

*Foolish.*

*Sot. Sotte.*

*Above all.*

*Sur-tout, par-dessus tout.*

*The imperfect. The hall.*

*L'imparfait. La salle.*

*To ride on horseback. To ride a horse.*

*Monter à cheval. Monter un cheval.*

*He learns to ride on horseback.*

*Il apprend à monter à cheval.*

*He rides a white horse.*

*Il monte un cheval blanc.*

*A boarder. The duration.*

*Un pensionnaire. La durée.*

*To keep a boarding-house.*

*Tenir pension.*

*A boarding-school. A boarding-house.*

*Un pensionnat. Une pension.*

*To keep a boarding-school for young ladies.*

*{ Diriger une pension de jeunes filles.  
{ Diriger un pensionnat de demoiselles.*

*Each other, one another.*

*L'un l'autre, les uns les autres.*

*We love each other.*

*Nous nous aimons l'un l'autre.*

*They hate one another.*

*Ils se haïssent les uns les autres.*

*To explain. A sword.*

*Expliquer. Une épée.*

*A repast, meal. An absence.*

*Un repas. Une absence.*

<sup>23</sup> Ju-vé-nal, <sup>6</sup> Vé-nus, <sup>1</sup> Ca-li-gu-la, <sup>23</sup> Her-cu-la-num, <sup>1</sup> Di-ane, <sup>13</sup> So-cra-te, <sup>16</sup> Or-phée, <sup>1</sup> A-lex-an-dre,  
<sup>17</sup> Ci-cé-ro, <sup>21</sup> A-ra-bia, <sup>1</sup> Ham-bourg, <sup>14</sup> on-gle, <sup>21</sup> cha-ri-table, <sup>1</sup> stu-pi-de, <sup>17</sup> sot, <sup>16</sup> sot-te, <sup>23</sup> sur-tout, <sup>14</sup> im-par-fait,  
<sup>1</sup> sa-lle, <sup>8</sup> pen-sion-naire, <sup>13</sup> pen-sion, <sup>21</sup> pen-sion-nat, <sup>17</sup> eks-pli-ker, <sup>1</sup> épée, <sup>16</sup> re-pas, <sup>1</sup> ab-sen-ce.

A blow with a sword.	Un coup d'épée.
I go to the right, and he goes to the left.	Je vais à droite, et lui il va à gauche.
I have found a boarding-house pretty convenient.	J'ai trouvé une pension assez com- mode.
He takes boarders.	Il prend des pensionnaires.
He will take boarders only for the table.	Il ne veut de pensionnaires que pour la table.
Your nails are too long.	Vous avez les ongles trop longs.
The life of man is of short duration.	La vie de l'homme est de courte durée.

1. Comment expliquez-vous cette difficulté? 2. Je ne puis pas l'expliquer. 3. Voulez-vous bien me prêter votre canif pour me couper les ongles? 4. Très-volontiers, monsieur. 5. Cette dame n'est-elle pas charitable? 6. Elle est très-charitable envers tout le monde. 7. Cet enfant a l'air stupide? 8. Oui, il est si stupide qu'on ne peut rien faire de lui. 9. Cet homme n'est-il pas sot? 10. Non, il n'est pas si sot qu'il le paraît. 11. Qu'aimez-vous à faire? 12. J'aime à aller à la chasse et à la pêche, et sur tout j'aime à monter à cheval. 13. Savez-vous l'emploi de l'imparfait de l'indicatif? 14. Oui, *je chantais* est l'imparfait du verbe *chanter*. 15. Cette salle est grande, elle peut contenir (*contain*) beaucoup de monde. 16. Où prenez-vous vos repas? 17. Je les prends chez mon père. 18. Que ferez-vous pendant mon absence? 19. Je lirai et j'étudierai beaucoup. 20. Ces enfants s'aiment l'un l'autre.

I.—1. Do not those little girls love each other? 2. They love each other much. 3. Do you cut your nails before washing your hands? 4. No; I wash my hands before cutting my nails. 5. Why does that boy rub his hands? 6. He rubs his hands because they pain him. 7. Do you hurt your eyes when you wash your face? 8. I do not hurt them. 9. That man is very charitable to the poor; what does he do? 10. He keeps a boarding-house. 11. Has he many boarders? 12. He has not many. 13. Where is your brother? 14. At the boarding-school of Mr. Bouchet. 15. And your sister? 16. At the boarding-school of Mrs. G. 17. Is not that woman a fool? 18. Yes; I did not believe her so foolish as she is. 19. Has that workman finished his work? 20. No; he has left it imperfect.

21. Is the stranger in the hall? 22. Yes; he has waited some time in the hall. 23. Does not your friend like to ride on horse-back? 24. Yes; and he always rides a white horse. 25. Will this fashion have much duration? 26. It will have little duration. 27. That man is angry; did you not give him a blow with a sword? 28. No; the soldier gave him a blow with the flat of a sword (*de plat d'épée*). 29. How does the master explain this? 30. He can not explain it. 31. Have you dined to-day? 32. Yes; I made a good repast during your absence. 33. What will that scholar do during the master's absence? 34. He will write again his exercise. 35. Will that workman do again his work? 36. He will

do it again. 37. When will you come here again? 38. I will see you again to-morrow.

II.—1. I do not despair of learning the French; I begin to understand the use of the different tenses of the verbs. 2. I do not deny that you still make some mistakes, but you make much progress. 3. I am under many obligations to you, and I hope to profit by the observations which you have the goodness to make to me. 4. Let us see if you have not forgotten what you learned. 5. Make some phrases which may contain the preterit definite and the preterit indefinite. 6. Let us see if I can make them without mistakes. 7. *My father arrived yesterday, and he departed this morning.* 8. Very well; one more still. 9. *We have read the books which we bought Saturday.* 10. That also is correct; it is useless for you to make others. 11. I see that you have understood well all that I have said to you.

12. Will you please to carry my letter to your brother? 13. I will carry it to him, provided you send it to my house before eight o'clock in the morning. 14. Why do you wish me to give you money? 15. I wish you to give me money in order that I may be able to buy books. 16. Do you consent that we buy that horse? 17. I consent that you buy him, provided you do not ask me for the money. 18. Where is my cane? I cannot find it. 19. Son, do you know where the gentleman's cane is? 20. Yes, papa (*papa*); the gentleman left it at the door. 21. Mamma (*maman*), can I go and see my cousin this afternoon? 22. Yes, daughter, you can go and see her, provided you return early. 23. Do those neighbors love one another? 24. Yes, sir; they love one another well.

## 2.—SECONDE LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

An inhabitant. *Misery, want.*

The difference.

To draw. To use, also to help one's self.

To my taste. By dint of.

Against one's will.

The conditional. A supposition.

A partridge.

Between. Between the two banks.

Un habitant. La misère, le besoin.

La différence.

Tirer. Se servir.

De or à mon goût. À force de.

À contre cœur.

Le conditionnel. Une supposition.

Un perdreau. Une perdrix.

Entre. Entre les deux rives.

1. Plus negative, like *pas, personne, rien*, and other negatives, is used without *ne* when not accompanied by a verb.

1 12 8 12 7 12 6 3 12 6 7 12 21 12 12 21 5 22 17 12 12 21 7 17  
 7 12 8 12  
 Ab-bi-tant, mi-zère, di-fé-rence, ti-rer, ser-vir, con-di-tion-nel, sup-po-si-tion, per-dreau,  
 per-drix, entre, rives.

No more <i>tears</i> . No more sorrow.	Plus de <i>larmes</i> . Plus de chagrin.
From that time no more studies for me.	Dès lors plus d'études pour moi.
Does he wash his hands?	Se lave-t-il les mains?
He washes them.	Il se les lave.
Do they wash their faces?	Se lavent-ils la figure?
They wash them.	Ils se la lavent.
I have been here these two hours.	Je suis ici depuis deux heures.
<i>Towards</i> . Pious towards God.	<i>Envers</i> . Pieux envers Dieu.
<i>To perceive</i> . A promise.	<i>S'apercevoir</i> . Une promesse.
2. <i>Apercevoir</i> applies to objects; <i>s'apercevoir</i> to circumstances.	
I perceive a man descending the mountain.	J'aperçois un homme qui descend la montagne.
I perceive that one takes my fruit.	Je m'aperçois qu'on prend mon fruit.
<i>To take cold</i> . <i>To give a cold</i> .	<i>S'enrhumer</i> . <i>Enrhumer</i> .
I have taken cold.	Je me suis enrhumé.
The least change of the weather gives me a cold.	Le moindre changement de temps m'enrhume.
Do you take cold often?	Vous enrhumerez-vous souvent?
I take cold often.	Je m'enrhume souvent.
That man always has a cold.	Cet homme est toujours enrhumé.
He introduces himself.	Il se présente.
We have introduced ourselves.	Nous nous sommes présentés.
That man suffers misery.	Cet homme a de la misère.
<i>To put to the sword</i> .	<i>Passer au fil de l'épée</i> .
All the inhabitants were put to the sword.	Tous les habitants furent passés au fil de l'épée.

1. Trouvez-vous ce vin à votre goût? 2. Non, madame, je le trouve très-mauvais. 3. Cet homme fait-il son ouvrage de bon cœur? 4. Non, monsieur, il le fait à contre cœur. 5. Votre voisin tient-il une pension de demoiselles? 6. Il prend quelques pensionnaires. 7. Pourquoi le capitaine tire-t-il son épée? 8. Il la tire parce qu'il est fâché contre ce soldat. 9. Comment se nomme cette rivière? 10. Elle se nomme le Missouri. 11. Le maître fait-il une différence entre vous et moi? 12. Non, il ne fait aucune différence entre nous. 13. Vous servez-vous du crédit de votre ami? 14. Non, je ne m'en sers jamais. 15. Cet homme gagne-t-il de l'argent? 16. Il en gagne un peu à force de travailler. 17. Le président tient son pouvoir immédiatement du peuple (*people*). 18. Ce verbe est au conditionnel. 19. Vous avez fait une supposition honorable pour vous et pour moi. 20. Allez-vous quelquefois à la chasse? 21. Je vais souvent à la chasse aux perdreaux. 22. Qu'avez-vous tué aujourd'hui? 23. J'ai tué une perdrix et deux écureuils.

I.—1. Are you an inhabitant of this country? 2. I am an inhabitant of this city. 3. Is not the world full of misery? 4. There is much misery and much pleasure in the world. 5. What is that river (*fleuve*) named? 6. The Mississippi; and that river is named the Ohio—an Indian (*indien*) name which means fine river. 7. Do

many Europeans (*européens*) come to the United States? 8. Yes; many persons born in Germany, in Ireland, and in other European countries, come here every year. 9. That man makes his horse run by dint of blows. 10. Does the servant do his work over again with good will? 11. No, he does it against his will. 12. Is that coffee to your taste? 13. It is perfectly to my taste. 14. Are there many partridges in these woods? 15. There are many partridges and a few foxes. 16. Is not that verb in the conditional? 17. It is in the past conditional. 18. Our neighbor is charitable towards the poor; but I have long perceived that he is not my friend (*des amis*).

II.—1. I am much pleased that you give me lessons, for I understand better the tenses which you have explained to me. 2. If there is any thing more which you wish to know, ask it of me. 3. How does one use the imperfect? I find it a little difficult. 4. The imperfect is a past tense, and one makes use of it when he speaks of an action which was repeated, or which was not entirely finished in a certain time determined (*précisé*) or indefinite (*indéterminé*). 5. Then you can say, *I was writing when you came*. 6. Yes; that phrase is very correct. 7. It is necessary to tell you also that one employs it when he wishes to represent (*représenter*) that the action had a certain duration, although it may be entirely finished in the time (*au moment*) in which one speaks. 8. Give me an example (*exemple*) which can make me comprehend the rule better. 9. If I say, *I wrote to my brother yesterday*, I do not represent the action of writing as an act which had duration. 10. Well, I understand that. 11. On the contrary, if I say, *I was writing yesterday while you were dancing*, I give to understand (*fais voir*) that the action of writing had duration, and you understand that I passed some time in (*à*) writing. 12. And now, to finish with (*pour en finir sur*) the imperfect, here is an example of duration and of action repeated (*répétée*): *When I was in New York I went every night to the theater*.

13. Are those cakes eaten without butter? 14. Yes, sir, they are often eaten without butter. 15. Do you apprehend that your friend may be sick? 16. I tremble lest he be dead. 17. Does that man conduct (*dirige*) a boarding-school? 18. Yes, sir; he has done so a long time: our neighbor also wishes to take a few boarders at his house. 19. Where did you go yesterday evening after we had left (*quitté*) you? 20. We went to Mr. G.'s, where we found some company. 21. Whom did you see at Mr. G.'s? 22. We saw there several gentlemen of our acquaintance. 23. George and I passed the rest of the evening at the club (*au club*), where we played chess (*aux échecs*) until half-past ten o'clock.



## 3.—TROISIÈME LEÇON.

## MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

*Prudently.* His conduct.*A kind.**It may be, can be.* Impossible.*Adieu until to-morrow.**Adieu until we see each other again.**A shawl.* To do without.

He does without wine.

*Counsel, advice, an opinion.**A cashmere.* A cashmere shawl.

That man often changes his opinion.

You have given good advice.

*To address.* To address one's self to, apply to.*Prudemment.* Sa conduite.

Un genre. Une sorte, espèce.

*Il se peut.* Impossible.*Adieu, jusqu'à demain.**Adieu, jusqu'au revoir ; or simply, Au revoir.*

Un châl. Se passer de.

Il se passe de vin.

Un conseil, un avis, une opinion.

Un cachemire. Un châle de cachemire.

Cet homme change souvent d'avis.

Vous avez donné un bon avis (or conseil).

*Adresser.* S'adresser.1. *To address*, meaning to speak to, is *adresser la parole à*.

I addressed my letter to Mr. B.

To whom do you apply?

To whom did the master address his speech?

*An order.* To honor.*To pronounce.* Slowly.

Pronounce slower.

The captain is at our house.

The general will come here to-morrow.

J'ai adressé ma lettre à M. B.

À qui vous adressez-vous?

À qui le maître a-t-il adressé la parole?

Un ordre. Honorer.

*Prononcer.* Lentement.

ononcez plus lentement.

Monsieur le capitaine est chez nous.

Monsieur le général viendra ici demain.

2. As the past participle in active verbs agrees with the direct object preceding, and never with the indirect, it follows that in all verbs which have no direct object, the participle is never varied, whether it take the reflexive pronoun or not.

She spoke to herself.

We spoke to ourselves.

They have injured themselves.

Elle s'est parlé (not parlée).

Nous nous sommes parlé (not parlés).

{ Ils se sont nui (not nuis).

{ Elles se sont nui (not nuies).

1. Ces dames se sont-elles conduites prudemment? 2. Elles se sont conduites prudemment envers tout le monde. 3. Blâmez-vous la conduite de cet homme? 4. Je ne la blâme pas, il s'est conduit très-prudemment. 5. Pourquoi votre frère n'est-il pas ici? 6. Je ne sais pas; il se peut qu'il vienne. 7. Il est impossible que nous restions ici plus longtemps. 8. Adieu, jusqu'au revoir. 9. Le fils du voisin se conduit-il bien? 10. Non, il mène un genre de vie que l'on ne saurait approuver.

23 1 8 22 12 8 16 6 5 14 15 13 1 12 9 4 20 2 21  
 pru-dem-ment, con-duite, genre, sorte, es-pèce, im-pos-sible, a-dieu, re-voir, châle, con-  
 7 1 12 15 12 21 1 12 16 1 6 9 1 12 16 12 15 4 2 2  
 seil, a-vis, o-pi-nion, cache-mire, a-dres-ser, pa-rola, ordre, ho-no-rer, pro-non-cer, leste-  
 8  
 ment.

11. Quelles sortes de livres trouve-t-on dans cette bibliothèque? 12. On y trouve toutes sortes de livres. 13. Quelle espèce de drap ce marchand a-t-il? 14. Il a du drap de plusieurs espèces. 15. Suivez-vous l'opinion de votre père? 16. Non, monsieur, son opinion n'est pas la mienne. 17. Vos papiers sont-ils toujours en ordre? 18. Je les mets en ordre tous les matins. 19. N'admirez-vous pas le général? Si, j'honore son mérite et sa vertu.

I.—1. Do not virtuous men act prudently? 2. They act prudently toward every body. 3. Are you satisfied with (*satisfait de*) my conduct? 4. Yes; your conduct has always been good (*sage*). 5. Is your friend here? 6. No; he promised me to be here this morning, but it may be that he is not coming. 7. It is impossible for him to come here this evening. 8. It is necessary for me to go now to my uncle's. 9. Adieu until we see each other again. 10. Are you acquainted with that man? 11. We are acquainted with him, and we honor his virtue. 12. Do you wait the orders of the captain? 13. No; I wait the orders of the general. 14. Why does that man address himself to me? 15. He addresses himself to you to obtain a place as the (*au*) best protector (*protecteur*) that he can find. 16. It may be that your friend is sick. No, he is very well.

17. Do the learned sometimes change their opinion? Yes; all men who are learned and wise sometimes change their opinion. 18. Has that lady bought a cashmere shawl? 19. Yes; she has just bought a cashmere shawl and a new gold watch. 20. Do you do without tea? 21. No; I do without wine and without coffee; but I do not do without tea. 22. Does that pupil pronounce French well? 23. No, miss; he does not pronounce it very well. 24. Wait a little; it may be that your brother is coming. 25. No, it is impossible for me to wait longer. 26. Adieu, until we see each other again.

II.—1. Is not that gentleman to whom you were speaking when I came, deaf? 2. He is a little hard of hearing, it must (*il faut*) be confessed. 3. I see that you speak to him very loud (*haut*), but I doubt whether he understands more than half of what you say to him. 4. It is a pity that it is necessary to speak so loud to him; still, whatever one may do, he does not always understand what one says to him. 5. I do not like to speak to people who can not hear me well. 6. I know some deaf persons who are very amiable. 7. I do not deny it; but however amiable they may be, what pleasure is there in speaking to them? 8. It is sometimes necessary to repeat the same thing to them two or three times. 9. It is true; I confess that that gives a little trouble. 10. It is not the trouble which that gives me, but the pain which that causes (*fait*) me when I see that they understand badly. 11. Nevertheless, it is better to be deaf than blind. 12. That is very certain; to be blind is the greatest of misfortunes.

13. Let us enter; it is cold. 14. Yes; let us go and warm ourselves. 15. There is a good fire in my room. 16. Will you that we go up there, or do you prefer that we go into the hall? 17. We will warm ourselves in your room; there is company in the hall. 18. I have (*suis*) cut my finger with my penknife, and I fear that the cold may hurt it (*m'y fasse mal*). 19. It is necessary to wrap it (*l'envelopper*) with a piece of linen; do you wish for one? 20. If you please; but do not give yourself trouble to go down for that. 21. It is no trouble; there is some linen in that basket. 22. Well, will you give me a little bit? 23. There is a good one; do you wish me to bind up (*bande*) your finger? 24. Yes, for I can not do it myself. 25. Well, there it is dressed (*pansé*); does it hurt you much? 26. Not at all; thank you; where is the water? I wish to wash my hands. 27. Here is some, and there is a towel.

## 4.—QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

## MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

<i>A melon.</i> <i>Newly.</i>	<i>Un melon.</i> <i>Nouvellement.</i>
<i>Some grapes.</i> <i>To serve.</i>	<i>Des raisins</i> (mas.). <i>Servir.</i>
<i>A bargain.</i> <i>To seize.</i>	<i>Un marché.</i> <i>Saisir.</i>
<i>A pink.</i> <i>Natural.</i>	<i>Un œillet.</i> <i>Naturel.</i>
<i>That case.</i> <i>The law.</i>	<i>Ce cas.</i> <i>La loi</i> (rule).
<i>The law, right.</i> <i>The natural law.</i>	<i>Le droit.</i> <i>La loi naturelle.</i>
<i>Divine.</i> <i>The divine law.</i>	<i>Divin.</i> <i>La loi divine.</i>
<i>Reflective.</i> <i>Madness, craziness.</i>	<i>Réfléchi.</i> <i>La folie.</i>
<i>Around.</i> <i>Around the church.</i>	<i>Autour.</i> <i>Autour de l'église.</i>
<i>In vain.</i> <i>Incessantly.</i>	<i>En vain.</i> <i>Sans cesse.</i>
<i>An arm-chair.</i> <i>He speaks incessantly.</i>	<i>Un fauteuil.</i> <i>Il parle sans cesse.</i>
<i>His best.</i> <i>He does his best.</i>	<i>De son mieux.</i> <i>Il fait de son mieux.</i>
<i>I will do my best.</i>	<i>Je ferai de mon mieux.</i>
<i>To look as if one would or wished.</i>	<i>Avoir l'air de vouloir.</i>
<i>He looks as if he wished to study.</i>	<i>Il a l'air de vouloir étudier.</i>
<i>It looks as if it would be cold.</i>	<i>Il a l'air de vouloir faire froid.</i>
<i>It looks as if it would be foggy.</i>	<i>Il a l'air de vouloir faire du brouillard.</i>
<i>The weather looks as if it would be fine.</i>	<i>Le temps a l'air de vouloir se mettre au beau.</i>

1. The verb *être*, followed by *à* and an infinitive, may be used to express how one is occupied, or to what he is giving attention.

<i>He is writing, or at his writing.</i>	<i>Il est à écrire.</i>
<i>He will be reading.</i>	<i>Il sera à lire.</i>
<i>She is always complaining.</i>	<i>Elle est toujours à se plaindre.</i>

<sup>21</sup> melon, nou-velle-ment, <sup>18</sup> raisins, <sup>8</sup> ser-vir, <sup>7</sup> mar-ché, <sup>14</sup> œil-let, <sup>1</sup> na-tu-rel, <sup>6</sup> cas, <sup>13</sup> droit, <sup>9</sup> de-  
<sup>4</sup> vin, <sup>12</sup> de-vin, <sup>5</sup> ré-flé-chi, <sup>10</sup> folie, <sup>11</sup> au-tour, <sup>15</sup> vain, <sup>16</sup> cesse, <sup>17</sup> fau-teuil, <sup>20</sup> plaindre.

2. In expressions of time, *en* means *in* or *within* the period; *dans*, *at the end of* it.

Can one learn French in six months? Peut-on apprendre le français en six mois?

I shall commence it in a month.

Je le commencerai dans un mois.

He will do that in three days.

Il fera cela en trois jours.

He will come again in (at the end of) three days.

Il reviendra dans trois jours.

This water-melon is good.

Ce melon d'eau est bon.

That vine bears fine grapes.

Cette vigne porte de beaux raisins.

1. Bonjour, monsieur; comment vous portez-vous ce matin? 2. Je me porte assez bien; et vous? 3. Je me porte très-bien, merci. 4. Mesdemoiselles vos sœurs se portent-elles bien? 5. Elles se portent parfaitement bien. 6. Comment se portent messieurs vos frères? 7. Ils se portent bien, mais mon père est indisposé. 8. J'en suis bien fâché; s'est-il enrhumé? 9. Oui, il s'est enrhumé à l'église dimanche soir; mais, j'espère qu'il se portera mieux bientôt. 10. Vous vous êtes enrhumé, n'est-ce pas? 11. Oui, je me suis enrhumé hier soir au théâtre. 12. Ce domestique vous sert-il depuis longtemps? 13. Il me sert depuis trois ans. 14. Cette paysanne a-t-elle des fruits et des fleurs? 15. Elle a des melons, des raisins, des roses et de jolis œillets. 16. Qui est ce monsieur? 17. C'est un français nouvellement arrivé dans ce pays. 18. Hier cet enfant était très-fâché contre son frère, il saisit une pierre et la lui lança (*threw*). 19. Avez-vous appris le verbes réfléchis? 20. Oui, je les sais assez bien. 21. Cet ouvrier travaille en vain; il ne peut faire cet ouvrage. 22. Ce jeune homme est très-imprudent, je le plains et je blâme la folie de sa conduite. 23. Je viens de rencontrer M. B., mais je n'ai pas eu le temps de lui adresser la parole.

I.—1. Good morning, sir; how do you do this morning? 2. I am very well, I thank you; and you—are you well? 3. I am not perfectly well; I have taken a cold. 4. Where did you take cold? 5. I took cold last evening at the church; it was very cold. 6. How long have those Irishmen served you? 7. They have served me these five years. 8. The doctor promised me to be here at noon, but it may be that he is not coming; in that case it will be necessary for me to go to his house this evening. 9. Does not the divine law oblige us to honor father and mother? 10. Yes; the divine and the natural law oblige us to honor them. 11. I am glad to see you; have you been well? 12. I have been well. 13. Come in; sit down in this arm-chair. 14. I can not stay; adieu until I see you again.

15. Have not the kings of Europe many soldiers around them? 16. They have many around them. 17. Those men blame each other; are they friends? 18. No, they are enemies. 19. Did your brother go out on Sunday morning when he had shaved? 20. Yes; as soon as he had shaved he went out. 21. At the recitation (*récitation*) yesterday, did not the master speak to you first (*d'abord*)? 22. No; he spoke to you first, and then (*et puis*) to me and my brother. 23. Has that merchant made a good bargain?

24. Yes, sir; he always makes good bargains. 25. Does that carpenter work much? 26. Yes, he always does his best. 27. Shall you learn that lesson well? 28. I shall do my best. 29. My cousin studies in vain; he can not learn his lesson. 30. It looks as if it would be fine weather. 31. Does that arm-chair belong to you? 32. No, sir; it belongs to the master.

II.—1. I begin to see what you wish to make me understand. 2. Permit me to ask you a question. Ask it. 3. What difference do you make between, *We were supping when you came*, and, *We supped when you came*? 4. The difference is great; by the first phrase I denote (*fais voir*) that we were at supper (*à souper*) when the person to whom I speak came; by the second, I express that we supped when, that is to say at the moment, he arrived. 5. I understand; when an action takes place (*arrive*) while another is doing (*se fait*), it is necessary to put the longer action in the imperfect. 6. Yes, that is what I desire you to understand well. 7. I believe that I understand it. 8. They make use also of the imperfect sometimes, instead of the conditional, after the conjunction (*conjunction*) *if*: *If I had money, If that scholar studied better*, etc. 9. But you will understand that better when we shall have arrived at the conditional. 10. They make use of the imperfect in the same manner in English.

11. Let us make a hunting party (*une partie de chasse*) to-morrow. 12. I am willing; where shall we go? 13. Let us go over the bay; one always finds there something (*de quoi*) to hunt. 14. There are many partridges there; are there not? 15. Yes, and I know a place where there are many squirrels. 16. That is excellent; how shall we go? 17. Let us take the boat which is going this afternoon; we shall be there at seven o'clock, and to-morrow morning we can begin our hunt early. 18. Very well; at what o'clock does that boat leave (*part*)? 19. At five o'clock. I am going to do some little business, and I shall be ready to set out.

## 5.—CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. *Il est*, impersonal, followed by an adjective, takes *de* before the infinitive.

It is good to know that	Il est bon de savoir cela.
It is just to praise the good.	Il est juste de louer les bons.
It is generous to pardon our enemies.	Il est généreux de pardonner à nos ennemis.
<i>To go to bed, lie down. To rise.</i>	<i>Se coucher. Se lever.</i>
<i>Lately. A short time since.</i>	<i>Depuis peu. Depuis peu de temps.</i>
<i>To advance. To retard.</i>	<i>Avancer. Retarder.</i>

10 6 1 8 6 4 1 6  
cou-cher, a-van-cer, re-tar-der

My watch goes too fast.  
Your watch goes too slow.  
The future. To penetrate.  
He penetrates into the future.  
At present. In future.  
The delirium. The extremity.  
To bleed. Suddenly.  
Famous. A promenade.  
A subject. To complain.  
To rain. It begins to rain.  
Sure. To happen to be.  
Your servant.  
I happened to be at his house.  
You complain without cause.  
They bleed the sick man.  
The disease attacked him suddenly.  
He takes a walk every afternoon.

Ma montre avance.  
Votre montre retarde.  
L'avenir. Pénétrer.  
Il pénètre dans l'avenir.  
À présent. À l'avenir.  
Le délire. L'extrémité.  
Saigner. Tout-à-coup.  
Fameux. Une promenade.  
Un sujet. Se plaindre.  
Pleuvoir. Il commence à pleuvoir.  
Sûr. Se trouver.  
Votre serviteur. Votre servante.  
Je me suis trouvé chez lui.  
Vous vous plaignez sans sujet.  
On saigne le malade.  
La maladie l'a pris tout-à-coup.  
Il fait une promenade toutes les après-midi.

We go to bed early.  
He rises late.  
I went to bed last night at ten.  
They rose this morning at six.

Nous nous couchons de bonne heure.  
Il se lève tard.  
Je me suis couché hier soir à dix heures.  
Ils se sont levés ce matin à six heures.

1. *Aller*, as well as *se porter*, is sometimes used in reference to health.

How is your health?  
*Admirably well*, and (how are) you?  
How are they at your house?  
Every body is well, thank God.  
And (how are they) at your house?  
The sick man is in a delirium.  
He is in his last moments.

{ Comment va votre santé?  
{ Comment cela va-t-il (familier)?  
À merveille, et vous-même?  
Comment va-t-on à la maison?  
Tout le monde va bien, Dieu merci.  
Et chez vous?  
Le malade est dans le délire.  
Il est à l'extrémité.

1. Cet écolier étudie en vain; il n'apprendra jamais le français. 2. Asseyez-vous sur ce fauteuil. 3. Avez-vous pris votre médecine? 4. Oui, monsieur, je l'ai prise; c'est un bien mauvais médicament, et je ne me porte pas mieux. 5. À quelle heure vous couchez-vous? 6. Je me couche à dix heures, et je me lève à six heures et demie. 7. Me faut-il prendre ce médicament? 8. Il faut que vous le preniez. 9. Cet écolier étudie-t-il bien? 10. Oui, monsieur, il fait de son mieux. 11. Qui est cet homme? 12. C'est le fameux médecin de notre ville. 13. Êtes-vous sûr que le capitaine soit arrivé? 14. J'en suis sûr. 15. J'ai l'honneur de vous saluer (*to bow*), madame. 16. Bonjour, monsieur, veuillez vous asseoir. 17. Fait-il beau temps? 18. Non, monsieur, il a l'air de vouloir pleuvoir. 19. Votre montre n'avance-t-elle pas? 20. Ma montre va bien, mais la vôtre retarde. 21. Faites-vous une promenade

1 23 5 6 6 5 12 5 7 6 18 1 18 1 9 16 1 22  
ave-nir, pé-né-trer, dé-lire, ex-tré-mi-té, mal-guer, tou-ta-coup, fa-meux, prome-nade, su-  
jet, plaindra, pleu-voir, sûr, ser-vi-teur, mer-veille.

le matin? 22. Je fais une promenade tous les matins avant de déjeuner. 23. Dieu ne lit-il pas dans le cœur des hommes? 24. Il pénètre les pensées les plus secrètes.

I.—1. Your servant; are you well this morning? 2. I am not very well; I have the toothache. 3. I am very sorry for it; sit down in this chair. 4. How do your mother and sisters do? 5. They are perfectly well. 6. Will you not sit in this arm-chair? 7. No, sir, I will sit here. 8. Will not the little boy sit here in this chair? 9. No, sir, he will sit there on the bench. 10. Do you understand Italian when one speaks it slowly? 11. I understand it when one speaks it very slowly. 12. Do you always go to bed early? 13. I always go to bed early, and I always rise early. 14. I do always go to bed early, and I always rise early. 15. How is the weather? 16. It looks as if it would be foggy. 17. Your friend looks as if he wished to study, and his cousin looks as if he wished to play.

18. Is not your cousin a little lazy? 19. He has been negligent, but at present he is industrious, and in future he will study well. 20. Napoleon was the most famous general of his age (*siècle*); did you see him when you were in France? 21. I saw him several times. 22. Do the wise penetrate the future? 23. No; God alone can penetrate the future. 24. The famous physician Chirac was in his last moments. 25. After some days of delirium, his senses (*sa raison*) returned to him in part (*à moitié*). 26. Suddenly he feels his pulse (*se tâte la pouls*). 27. "I have been called too late," said he; "have they bled him?" 28. "No," replies one to him. 29. "Well," said he, "he is a dead man." And he said true.

II.—1. I am looking for John; but I can not find him any where. 2. What do you wish of him? I have just seen him; he was going home. 3. I lent him my gun last week, and he has not returned it to me. 4. If you do not find your gun, I have one which is at your service. 5. I am infinitely obliged to you; if I can not have mine, I shall be delighted to have yours. 6. If you find John, ask him if he wishes to go (*venir*) with us; it may be that he will come. 7. I doubt of it, for it is necessary that he be in the city to-morrow, and he will be very much occupied all day. 8. It is a pity, for he loves hunting very much. 9. He will be very sorry not to be able to go with us. 10. Ask him, however (*toujours*); it is not impossible that his business can wait. 11. No, that is hardly possible; but I will ask him. 12. You have good dogs; have you not? 13. I have only one which I can take to-morrow. 14. I will see if I can have John's; is he not good? 15. Yes, I know him; he is a white dog with red spots. 16. It is the (*cela*) same. 17. He is excellent for partridges; bring him if you can; I have already hunted with him; there is none better. 18. If I see John, I shall have the dog. 19. Adieu; I shall be at the

boat at a quarter before five. 20. Well, I shall be there at the same time as you. Adieu until then (*là*).

21. I received last week a letter from my cousin, who departed for France two years ago. 22. What did he write you interesting? 23. He gives me a history of his journey, which interested (*intéressé*) me much. 24. Did you reply to his letter? 25. Yes; I wrote to him forthwith (*tout de suite*); but I know not whether my letter will find him still in France, for he is soon to leave (*quitter*) Paris to go and travel in Italy.

# 6.—SIXIÈME LEÇON.

## MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. *Aimer mieux* takes *que* before a second infinitive to denote preference of taste, and *que de* to denote preference of will.

I like better to read than to think.	J'aime mieux lire <i>que</i> penser.
I like better to pardon than to punish.	J'aime mieux pardonner <i>que de</i> punir.
She likes better to dance than to sing.	Elle aime mieux dancer <i>que</i> chanter.
We like better to praise than to blame.	Nous aimons mieux louer <i>que de</i> blâmer.

*To advise, counsel.* The *judge.* *Conseiller.* Le *juge.*

2. *Conseiller* takes *à* before its indirect object, and *de* before an infinitive.

I advise the sick man to take that medicine.	Je conseille au malade de prendre ce médicament.
I advise the sick to patience.	Je conseille la patience aux malades.
<i>In like manner.</i> Constantly.	<i>Parcillement.</i> Constantment.
<i>A theft.</i> A resuming.	Un vol. Une reprise.
<i>At several times, by piecemeal.</i>	<i>À plusieurs reprises.</i>

3. *Reprise* denotes the resuming of what had been discontinued; *fois* is synonymous with the English word *time* joined to a number.

That wall was made at several times.	Ce mur a été fait à plusieurs reprises.
This letter has been written by piecemeal.	Cette lettre a été écrite à plusieurs reprises.

I have read it several times.	Je l'ai lue plusieurs fois.
<i>A flash</i> (of lightning). <i>By swimming.</i>	Un éclair. <i>À la nage.</i>
<i>Common.</i> To accuse.	<i>Commun.</i> Accuser ( <i>de</i> bef. inf. and noun).

They accuse him falsely of theft.	On l'accuse faussement de vol.
They accuse him of having made that satire.	On l'accuse d'avoir fait cette satire.

<i>To refresh.</i>	<i>Rafranchir.</i> <i>Faire rafraîchir.</i>
--------------------	---

<i>To pass over.</i> <i>Falsely.</i>	<i>Traverser.</i> <i>Faussement.</i>
--------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

<sup>21</sup> 5 6 <sup>22</sup> 1 7 8 <sup>21</sup> 1 2 4 12 5 7 1 15 <sup>24</sup> 1  
con-seil-ler, juga, pa-reille-ment, con-stam-ment, re-prize, é-clair, nage, com-mun, ac-  
<sup>22</sup> 6 1 8 12 7 6 17 8  
cu-zer, ra-frai-chir, tra-ver-ser, fausse-ment.



<i>A calf, veal.</i> To contain.	Un veau, du veau. Contenir (comp. of tenir).
<i>To cry.</i> To exclaim, cry out.	Crier. S'écrier.
<i>A representative.</i> An image.	Un représentant. Une image.
<i>The senate.</i> To compose.	Le sénat. Composer.
<i>The people.</i> The republic.	Le peuple. La république.
<i>The congress.</i> A member of congress.	Le congrès. Un membre du congrès.
<i>The house of representatives.</i>	La chambre des représentants.
<i>Tell me, cousin, where is your brother?</i>	Mon cousin, dites-moi, où est votre frère?
<i>I pass over that river by swimming.</i>	Je traverse cette rivière à la nage.
<i>That room contains a thousand persons.</i>	Cette chambre contient mille personnes.
<i>The Roman republic.</i>	La république romaine.

1. Que conseillez-vous à votre ami de faire? 2. Je lui conseille d'étudier l'allemand. 3. Comment le docteur passe-t-il son temps? 4. Il le passe à étudier. 5. Cette femme se plaint-elle beaucoup? 6. Elle se plaint toujours sans sujet. 7. Cet écolier est toujours à étudier, et son frère est toujours à travailler. 8. Bonjour, madame, j'ai l'honneur de vous saluer; où est mademoiselle Julie? 9. Elle est à étudier (*practicing*) son piano. 10. Il tonne (*thunders*); n'a-t-il pas fait des éclairs? 11. Il a fait de grands éclairs toute la nuit. 12. Les meilleures choses ne sont-elles pas aussi les plus communes? 13. Si, monsieur, l'air, la lumière et l'eau sont les meilleures choses, et sont aussi les plus communes. 14. Pourquoi mène-t-on cet homme devant le juge? 15. Parce qu'on l'accuse de vol. 16. N'avoue-t-il pas le fait? 17. Non, il le nie constamment. 18. Pourquoi ce garçon crie-t-il de douleur? 19. Parce qu'on lui arrache une dent. 20. Le congrès des États-Unis se compose d'un sénat et d'une chambre des représentants. 21. Le sénat et le peuple composaient la république romaine. 22. Ces ouvriers sont fatigués; il faut les faire rafraîchir. 23. Le sommeil est l'image de la mort (*death*).

I.—1. Good morning, madam; how is your health? 2. Admirably well, sir; and you, how are you? 3. Tolerably well, I am infinitely obliged to you. 4. How are they at your house? 5. Every body is well, thank God. 6. And how is your sister? 7. She was well the last time that I saw her. 8. I am delighted at it; where is she? 9. She is in the country. 10. It is necessary to refresh those workmen; are they not tired? 11. No, sir; they have refreshed themselves. 12. Of what do they accuse that man? 13. They accuse him of theft, and they will take him before the judge. 14. How will you pass over that river? 15. I shall pass over it by swimming. 16. How many persons will that hall contain? 17. It will contain more than three thousand. 18. Why does that man cry out? 19. He cries out from pain, because the surgeon is cutting off his left arm.

17 126 4 5 8 8 12 1 5 1 21 17 6 9  
veau, cri-er, re-pré-zan-tant, i-mage, sé-nat, com-po-zer, peuple, ré-pu-bli-que, con-grès,  
15 7  
ro-maine.

20. Do you like veal better than mutton? 21. No, sir; I like mutton quite as well as veal. 22. Ah (*ah*)! mother, exclaimed the child, do not go there; there is danger. 23. Are not the United States a great republic? 24. They form (*forment*) the greatest republic in the world. 25. Is not your uncle a member of congress? 26. Yes, sir; he is a member of the house of representatives. 27. I have seen the daughter of our neighbor; she is the living portrait (*portrait*) of her mother. 28. My friend desires some good fruit, and I desire some in like manner. 29. Our neighbor is constantly complaining without cause. 30. Do the people of this country choose their representatives every year? 31. They choose them every two years. 32. My watch is too fast and yours is too slow, although the watchmaker has cleaned them both several times. 33. They have accused that man falsely; what do you advise him to do? 34. I advise him to go before the judge.

II.—1. By dint of studying one comes at last (*finit par*) to learn. 2. Nothing prevents your knowing the French as well as I. 3. Languages are not easily learned, and the French above all is difficult. 4. When one has the desire to learn, he always succeeds in it; I do not apprehend your finding difficulties which you can not surmount (*surmonter*).

5. Were not the Gauls conquered by the Romans (*romains*)? 6. Yes; the Romans rendered themselves masters of France, of Spain, and of Great Britain (*Grande-Bretagne*). 7. I saw Charles yesterday, and he spoke to me of you. 8. What did he say to you of me? 9. He told me that day before yesterday you promised to come and see him, and that he waited for you yesterday all the evening. 10. Yesterday evening I conducted my sister to the theater; but I will go and see Charles to-morrow, if I can.

11. I like your writing much. 12. I do not think (*trouve*) it beautiful. 13. What I admire in it the most is that it is very easy to read. 14. Yes, I do not believe that it is difficult to read. 15. Do you remember the writing of my cousin? 16. Yes, I remember it well; he wrote better than any of the scholars in our school. 17. Charles was a good fellow when anger did not take possession of him; under that sad influence (*influence*) he hardly acted prudently. 18. When I saw that he was not in good humor, I abstained from speaking to him. 19. When his anger was passed, he always repented of his bad conduct, and he promised to act better toward every body. 20. Yes, he had that good (*cela de bon*), but he did not often remember his promises. 21. Anger is a kind of insanity, which makes us (often) do things of which we repent afterwards.

## 7.—SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

## MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. Nouns governing the infinitive in English govern it also in French, generally with *de*, if used in a definite or in a general sense, and with *à* if used in a partitive sense. To this rule belong a large class of nouns denoting *time, power, will, affections, and qualities*, which the learner can readily distinguish; also, *peur, honte, raison, and tort*.

He has the courage to do that.	Il a le courage de faire cela ( <i>definite sense</i> ).
He has courage in doing that.	Il a du courage à faire cela ( <i>part. sense</i> ).
He is ashamed to do that.	Il a honte de faire cela ( <i>gen. sense</i> ).
She has the politeness to do that.	Elle a la politesse de faire cela ( <i>def. sense</i> ).
She has politeness in doing that.	Elle a de la politesse à faire cela ( <i>part. sense</i> ).
She is afraid to speak.	Elle a peur de parler ( <i>general sense</i> ).
They have the generosity to give us that.	Ils ont la générosité de nous donner cela.
They have generosity in giving us that.	Ils ont de la générosité à nous donner cela.
You are right to refuse that offer.	Vous avez raison de refuser cette offre.
To charm, to delight.	Charmer ( <i>de bef. inf. and noun</i> ).
The semblance. A watch marking seconds.	Le semblant. Une montre à secondes.
The means. By sea.	Le moyen. Par mer.
To pretend, to make pretence.	Faire semblant ( <i>de bef. inf.</i> ).
To have the means, to afford.	Avoir les moyens ( <i>de bef. inf.</i> ).
Fire-wood. Lightly, slightly.	Du bois à brûler. Légèrement.
The dentist. Distinctly.	Le dentiste. Distinctement.
Indisposed. To invite.	Indisposé. Inviter ( <i>à bef. inf. and n.</i> ).
The dish, food. To carry away.	Le mets. Emporter.
To wind up a watch.	Remonter (or monter) une montre.
To soil. To spread, extend.	Salir. Étendre.
To destroy. A battle.	Détruire. Une bataille.
A pigeon. An island.	Un pigeon. Une île.
To be pleased.	Savoir gré or bon gré, } <i>à bef. persons,</i>
To be displeased.	Savoir mauvais gré, } <i>de bef. things.</i>
I am pleased with that man for what he has done	Je sais gré à cet homme de ce qu'il a fait.
I am pleased with him for it.	Je lui en sais bon gré.
To knock. A crown.	Frapper. Une couronne.

16 12 8 5 5 17 12 6 1 6 8 20 12 8 6 7 8 8 12 17  
 po-li-tesse, gé-né-ro-si-té, char-mer, sem-blant, mo-yens, lé-gè-re-ment, den-tiste, dis-  
 14 4 8 14 12 17 6 14 12 6 8 8 16 6 4 21 6 21 1 12 8 8  
 tinc-te-ment, in-dis-po-sé, in-vi-ter, mets, em-por-ter, re-mon-ter, montre, sa-lir, é-tendre,  
 8 22 12 1 2 12 21 12 1 6 10 4  
 dé-truire, ba-taille, pi-geon, île, frap-per, cou-ronne.

A crown of flowers.	Une couronne de fleurs.
He pretends to sleep.	Il fait semblant de dormir.
It is believed that he cannot afford to buy that house.	On croit qu'il n'a pas les moyens d'acheter cette maison.
Knock at the door.	Frappez à la porte.
I wind up my watch every morning.	Je remonte ma montre tous les matins.
I saw him recently.	Je l'ai vu depuis peu.

1. Cette dame charme tous ceux qui la regardent. 2. Cet enfant ne prononce pas assez distinctement. 3. Dites au domestique d'emporter les mets. 4. Cet enfant salit ses habits. 5. La blanchisseuse étend le linge pour le sécher. 6. J'ai acheté des pigeons ce matin au marché. 7. Remontez-vous votre montre tous les jours? 8. Je la remonte tous les matins. 9. Avez-vous eu la patience de lire ce journal? 10. Oui, monsieur, je l'ai lu à plusieurs reprises. 11. Sortirez-vous par la pluie sans parapluie? 12. Monsieur a la politesse de m'offrir son parapluie. 13. Votre montre va-t-elle bien? 14. Non, monsieur, elle retarde. 15. Irez-vous à New York par mer? 16. J'irai par un bateau à vapeur. 17. Avez-vous vu le général aujourd'hui? 18. Oui, monsieur, il est légèrement indisposé; mais il nous invite à dîner pour trois heures. 19. Le temps détruit les plus solides édifices. 20. Napoléon a-t-il gagné beaucoup de batailles? 21. Il a gagné la bataille d'Austerlitz, de Marengo et beaucoup d'autres grandes batailles. 22. Y a-t-il une île dans ce lac? 23. Oui, il y en a plusieurs.

I.—1. Are you displeased with me for what I have done? 2. No, sir; I am pleased with you for it. 3. Is the servant carrying off the dishes? 4. He is carrying them off. 5. Does the Frenchman pronounce Spanish distinctly? 6. He pronounces it distinctly and well. 7. Why do they punish that child? 8. They punish him because he soils his clothes. 9. Where does the maid-servant spread the linen? 10. She spreads it on the grass (*l'herbe*). 11. Does not age destroy beauty? 12. Yes; time destroys all things. 13. Is there news from Europe? 14. Yes; there has been a great battle. 15. What did you buy at the market? 16. I bought a pair of pigeons. 17. Is it not cold in the islands of the north? 18. It is cold in the islands of the north, and it is warm in the islands of the south. 19. I admire that lady; her beauty charms all hearts.

20. Miss, I have the honor to salute you; how do you do this evening? 21. Admirably well; and how are you? 22. Perfectly well, I am infinitely obliged to you. 23. How is your uncle? 24. I believe that he is well; he is in the city. 25. And how is your aunt? 26. She is slightly indisposed. 27. I am sorry for it, and I hope it will be nothing. 28. Will you buy those beautiful horses? 29. I can not afford to buy them. 30. That dentist has had the goodness to clothe many poor; can he afford to do it? 31. He can afford it; he is very rich. 32. What o'clock is it? 33. It is two by (à) this clock, and it is a quarter after two by my watch. 34. Who knocks at the door? 35. No one knocks at it. 36. That

boy is in good health, but he pretends to be sick. 37. That young lady has a beautiful crown of roses on her head. 38. I have invited company to dine at four.

II.—1. I find nothing difficult in the future. 2. No; it is employed as in English. 3. Yes, but in English they make use of two verbs to express a future action, although in French they make use of only a single word. 4. That is to say (that) the verbs in English have no future, and they are obliged to make use of two verbs, of which the one shows the action, and the other serves only to denote (*faire voir*) that it is future. 5. I believe that I know sufficiently well the futures of French verbs; there are not many which do not follow the rule. 6. There are many more reflective verbs in French than in English. 7. Yes; in the first place, they make use of reflective verbs in all the cases where they ought to make use of them in English; but they make use of them in French also, when one speaks of a part of his body; because an action which one does to his body, is an action which one does to himself. 8. There is reason in that. 9. It is not necessary to speak of them further to-day; you will easily learn to make use of them in (*au*) need.

10. After the battle of Waterloo, which the French lost in 1815, they exiled (*exila*) Buonaparte to St. Helena (*Hélène*), where he died in 1821. 11. I was born the year of his death. 12. He had married (*épousé*) in his first nuptials (*en premières noces*) Josephine Beauharnais, from whom, unhappily, he afterwards separated (*se sépara par la suite*).

### 8.—HUITIÈME LEÇON.

#### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. *Penser*, followed by an infinitive, sometimes means to be on the point of, or near, and sometimes to intend, in which cases the infinitive takes no preposition before it.

I was near dying.

J'ai pensé mourir.

He was near being killed.

Il a pensé être tué.

I intend to go to France.

Il pense aller en France.

2. *Penser*, to think of, meaning not to forget, we have seen, is *penser à*; to have an opinion or sentiment of, is *penser de*.

Have you thought of (not forgotten) the book? Avez-vous pensé au livre?

What do you think of this book?

Que pensez-vous de ce livre?

To spill, diffuse. To spread.

Répandre. Se répandre.

A space. To feign.

Un espace. Feindre (de bef. inf.).

3. *Feindre* is conjugated as *craindre*, Lesson 84.

The hero. To overthrow.

Le héros. Renverser.

The British isles.

Les îles britanniques.

ré-pandre, es-pace, feindre, héros, ren-ver-ser, bri-tan-ni-ques.

The warlike Gauls. The arms (military). Les Gaulois belliqueux. Les armes.

A century, age. Fire-arms.

Un siècle. Des armes à feu.

An object. At the same time.

Un objet. À la fois.

A historian. As conqueror.

Un historien. En conquérant.

A model. The model of historians.

Un modèle. Le modèle des historiens.

The burden. To support, maintain.

Le fardeau. Soutenir (comp. of tenir).

A treasure. To conceal.

Un trésor. Cacher.

A corner, wedge. The corner of a garden.

Le coin. Le coin d'un jardin.

To put back, to postpone.

Remettre (comp. of mettre).

He shed tears.

Il a répandu des larmes.

Light spreads much faster than sound.

La lumière se répand beaucoup plus vite que le son.

He feigns joy.

Il feint de la joie.

They feign to be angry

Ils feignent d'être en colère.

He conceals his name.

Il cache son nom.

Put back the sword into the scabbard.

Remettez l'épée dans le fourreau.

However long my task may be, I will try to accomplish it.

Si longue que ma tâche soit, je tâcherai d'en venir à bout.

That column supports all the building.

Cette colonne soutient tout le bâtiment.

He has overturned the table.

Il a renversé la table.

We can not do every thing at once.

On ne peut pas tout faire à la fois.

I have found a hidden treasure.

J'ai trouvé un trésor caché.

1. Ce garçon a-t-il apporté l'eau? 2. Non, il l'a répandue sur la terre. 3. La lumière ne se répand-elle pas partout? 4. Elle se répand partout. 5. Cette homme feint-il d'être malade? 6. Il feint d'être dans le délire (d'avoir le *or* du) délire. 7. Ce garçon ouvre-t-il la porte quand on frappe? 8. Il l'ouvre toujours. 9. Cet homme ivre n'a-t-il pas renversé la chaise? 10. Il a renversé la chaise et la table. 11. César a-t-il gagné beaucoup de batailles? 12. Oui, c'était le héros de son siècle. 13. Que fait cette jeune fille? 14. Elle fait une couronne de fleurs. 15. César ne traversa-t-il pas toute l'Italie? 16. Il traversa toute l'Italie et pénétra jusqu'en Allemagne; c'était un grand conquérant. 17. Le domestique ne peut pas porter un si pesant (*heavy*) fardeau. 18. Remettez-vous le trésor dans le coffre fort du marchand? 19. Je l'y remets. 20. Où le petit garçon s'est-il caché? 21. Il s'est caché dans le coin de la chambre. 22. Il veut que nous remettions sa leçon à lundi. 23. Il y a cette différence entre l'objet lumineux (*luminous*), et l'objet éclairé (*illuminated*), que le premier contient en soi la lumière et que l'autre la reçoit.

I.—1. If you ordered that boy to work, what would he do? 2. He would feign to be sick. 3. If the general gained many battles, would he not become a hero? 4. He would become a hero and a great conqueror. 5. Has France produced many historians? 6.

17 20 5 19 10 1 17 5 15 8 19 16 23 14 21 8 8 15 5 1 17  
 gan-lois, bel-li-kens, armes, siècle, ob-jet, ais-to-rien, con-ké-rant, mo-dèle, far-deau,  
 10 10 8 10 1 8 10 14 4 8 2 12 2 15 15  
 sou-te-nir, tré-zor, ca-cher, co-in, re-mettre, bé-ti-mené, co-lonne.

It has produced many good historians. 7. Does not the general's brother acquire some military glory (*gloire militaire*)? 8. Yes; his name is spread through (*par*) all Europe. 9. If that child had milk in his cup, would he not overturn it? 10. No, sir; he would drink it. 11. Are not the French a very warlike people? 12. They are very warlike; they have gained many battles in this century. 13. Is there sufficient space in the garden for all these trees? 14. There is sufficient. 15. I have been four times to Europe in the space of six months.

16. Good morning, sir; how do you do? 17. Sufficiently well, I thank you; and you? 18. Admirably well, I am obliged to you. 19. Did you sleep well last night? 20. No, sir; my teeth pained me so much, and the dogs made so much noise, that I could not sleep. 21. I am sorry for it; how does your mother do? 22. I believe that she is well; here she comes. 23. Madam, I am your very humble servant. 24. Good morning, sir; how do you do since you have been in Boston? 25. Very well, I thank you. 26. Was not Cæsar a great conqueror? 27. He was a hero, a conqueror, and the model of the historians of his age; he was also a great orator.

II.—1. Good morning, Mr. A.; how do you do to-day? 2. Not very (*trop*) well; I took cold last evening, and I have coughed almost all night. 3. I am very sorry for it; I hope that it will be nothing; but it is necessary that you give attention when you go out. 4. It will be nothing, but it (*cela*) prevents me from sleeping. 5. If you are willing to follow my advice, you will drink a cup of hot tea to-night, when you go to bed. 6. I will do it; I have not had such a cold this long time. 7. To whom can I apply to find a good horse? 8. Do you wish to buy you one? 9. Yes; I have need of one, and I shall be very glad if I can find one. 10. Have you applied to Mr. C.? he often has some to sell. 11. No, I had not thought of him; it will be necessary for me to go and see him this very day (*aujourd'hui même*). 12. Do you know where he dwells? 13. Next to the wine-store on Conti-street; is it not? 14. Yes, it is there; you will find him there at all hours (*à toute heure*), for his business obliges him to be there from morning until evening.

15. We have just seen Mr. S. 16. How does he do? 17. He has not been very well since he returned from Charleston; he has even been obliged to keep his bed during two or three days. 18. I knew it only to-day; my cousin has just told it to me; but Mr. S. is better; is he not? 19. A little better, but he suffers still (*aujourd'hui*). 20. I am very sorry for it; Mr. S. is a very good (*digne*) man. 21. Yes, it is very true; there is no better man than he in all the country; I must go and see him this evening. 22. Go there early if you wish to see him, for he goes to bed early. 23. I will go between five and six o'clock.

9.—NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. Attributes of designation are generally preceded by *d* in French.

The man with the white hat.	L'homme au chapeau blanc.
The lady with the small hands.	La dame aux petites mains.
The boy with the wide forehead.	Le petit garçon au front large.
The house with the large windows.	La maison aux grandes fenêtres.

2. *Long*, referring to time, we have seen, is *longtemps* in French.

Will he be long absent?	Sera-t-il longtemps absent?
He can not live long.	Il ne saurait vivre longtemps.
He is very long in returning.	Il est bien longtemps à revenir.
Longer. As long as.	Plus longtemps. Aussi longtemps que.
A discourse. His eloquence.	Un discours. Son éloquence (fem.).
The honey. Eloquent.	Le miel. Éloquent.
The rice. To lie.	Le riz. Mentir (varied as sortir).
The compliment. To reply.	Le compliment. Répliquer.
To press, hurry. To walk, go (for diversion).	Presser. Se promener.

She plays on the piano.

{ Elle joue du piano.  
{ Elle touche du piano.

The best in the world.

Le mieux du monde.

To wear out. Used, worn.

User. Usé.

To use, to make use of.

User de, faire usage de, se servir de.

The elbow. At first.

Le coude. D'abord.

The end.

Le bout. La fin.

3. END = *Fin* corresponds to *commencement*; *bout* to another *bout*.

The end of the day.

La fin du jour.

God has neither beginning nor end.

Dieu n'a ni commencement ni fin.

The two ends of a stick.

Les deux bouts d'un bâton.

He presented to him the end of the gun.

Il lui présenta le bout du fusil.

Heavy.

Lourd.

The skill. The address.

Le savoir-faire. L'adresse.

He wears out many shoes.

Il use beaucoup de souliers.

He supports himself on his elbow.

Il s'appuie sur le coude.

He supports his opinion with excellent reasons.

Il appuie son opinion sur d'excellentes raisons.

That man has skill; he has gained a large sum of money.

Cet homme a du savoir-faire; il a gagné une grosse somme d'argent.

Ananias and Sapphira lied to the Holy Spirit.

Ananias et Sapphira mentirent au Saint-Esprit.

1. Votre ami sera-t-il absent plus longtemps que vous? 2. Non, je serai absent aussi longtemps que lui. 3. Avez-vous plus de miel que de

dis-cour, ô-lo-kence, miel, é-lo-ken, ris, men-tir, com-pli-men, ré-pli-ker, pres-ser,  
12 18 5 14 8 12 5 16 2 12 3 12 21 12 3 5 19 6 5 6  
15 6 12 1 17 22 6 22 6 19 1 16 18 19 1 8  
prom-e-ner, pl-a-no, u-ser, u-zé, coude, d'a-bord, bout, lourd, a-dresse.



riz? 4. Non, j'ai tout autant de riz que de miel. 5. Où irez-vous? 6. J'irai d'abord au bout de cette rue. 7. Cet orateur n'est pas très-éloquent n'est-ce pas? 8. Si, monsieur, il vient de faire un discours plein d'éloquence. 9. Le docteur a-t-il répondu au compliment? 10. Il y a bien répondu. 11. Si cet homme vous disait son histoire, le croiriez vous? 12. Je ne le croirais pas; il ne fait que mentir. 13. Votre père est-il pressé? 14. Il est bien pressé. 15. Vous promenez-vous tous les jours? 16. Je me promène tous les matins et tous les soirs. 17. Connaissez-vous cet homme au chapeau blanc? 18. Oui, monsieur, c'est mon cousin, et le jeune homme à la cravate bleue est son frère. 19. Avez-vous donné votre adresse à cet homme? 20. Je la lui ai donnée. 21. Quoi que vous ayez; saluez-le bien. 22. J'achèterai cette maison quoi qu'elle puisse coûter.

I.—1. I believed that the servant would carry that heavy burden; you believed that he would not carry it. 2. The thief believed that he should conceal the treasure. 3. He had said that he would put it back in its place. 4. You believed that we should support those heavy burdens. 5. Do you wish for honey with your rice? 6. No, sir, I prefer butter. 7. Does that child like honey? 8. Yes, sir; he eats quite as much honey as rice. 9. Where did the thief conceal himself? 10. He concealed himself at the end of the garden. 11. Does your father dwell at the corner of this street? 12. No, sir; he dwells at the end of it, and the trees conceal the view of his house. 13. Did Miss S. play on the piano last evening? 14. Yes, madam; at first she sang with her cousin, and after that (*ensuite*) she played on the piano.

15. Have you been well since I saw you? 16. No, sir; I have been very sick; I came near dying. 17. Is not the representative from our state an eloquent man? 18. Yes; he has just made a speech full of eloquence. 19. Does that man always tell the truth? 20. No, sir; he does nothing but lie. 21. Does he always lie when he speaks? 22. He lies always. 23. Have you made your compliments to that man on the success (*succès*) of his works? 24. I have made them to him. 25. Are you hurried? 26. I am much hurried. 27. Why do you support yourself on your elbow? 28. Because I have the headache. 29. That man has skill; he has gained a large sum of money. 30. Give me your address; I will write you at the end of this month.

II.—1. Good morning, sir; how do you do this morning? 2. Admirably well; and how are you? 3. Tolerably (*assez*) well, I thank you; you are very good. 4. I am glad to see you in good health. 5. How are they at home? 6. Every body is well; and at your house? 7. Perfectly well, thank God. 8. And how is your brother? 9. He was well last evening. 10. Are you sure that your exercise is correct? 11. I am sure of it. 12. I happened to be (*je me suis trouvé*) at the house of a friend yesterday, where I saw the general. 13. Do those children wear out many shoes? 14. They wear out many shoes and many hats. 15. Is

that handkerchief new? 16. No, sir, it is worn; and these stockings are worn also.

17. What do you advise that sick man to do? 18. I advise him to send for the physician. 19. Do you advise him to take this medicine? 20. I do not advise him to take it. 21. I happened to be at market this morning, and I saw your brother; what was he doing there? 22. He had gone there for pears, plums, and grapes. 23. Does that man gain his living by working? 24. No; he lives by his skill. 25. A lady asked a Frenchman, who did not pronounce the English well, why a young Italian, newly arrived in New York, put out (*sortait*) incessantly his tongue when he spoke. "I suppose," said the Frenchman, "he is trying, as I have done but in vain, to seize the English accent" (*accent*).

## 10.—DIXIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. *Avoir* with *à* before the infinitive denotes obligation or purpose.

What have you to do?

Qu'avez-vous à faire?

I have a visit to make.

J'ai une visite à faire.

He has letters to write.

Il a des lettres à écrire.

We have to thank you.

Nous avons à vous remercier.

A sign.

Un signe. Une enseigne.

To make a sign, to beckon.

Faire signe (de bef. inf.).

To fail, to lack.

Manquer.

2. *Manquer*, followed by *à*, denotes failure in duty; followed by *de*, it denotes deficiency in something else.

He fails to fulfill his duty.

Il manque à remplir son devoir.

He will not fail to find them.

Il manquera pas de les trouver.

He has failed in his promise.

Il a manqué à sa promesse.

He does not lack appetite.

Il ne manque pas d'appétit.

He lacks money.

Il manque d'argent.

They have not failed to come.

Ils n'ont pas manqué de venir.

A post, position. The post-office.

Un poste. La poste.

Carry these letters to the post-office.

Portez ces lettres à la poste.

He guards his post.

Il garde son poste.

I beckoned him to come.

Je lui ai fait signe de venir.

The barber has put a sign at his door.

Le barbier a mis une enseigne à sa porte.

A vice. La cage.

Un vice. La cage.

An engagement. The authority.

Un engagement. L'autorité.

*Powerful. That imprudence.*

*Absent. A visit.*

*The farmer. To meet, face.*

*He meets all dangers.*

*His house faces mine.*

*He fails in his engagements.*

*Honorable. An honorable place.*

*Puissant. Cette imprudence.*

*Absent. Une visite.*

*Le fermier. Faire face (à bef. n.).*

*Il fait face à tous les dangers.*

*Sa maison fait face à la mienne.*

*Il manque à ses engagements.*

*Honorable. Une place honorable.*

1. Connaissez-vous cet homme au chapeau blanc? 2. Oui, monsieur, c'est mon voisin. 3. Ces rois sont-ils puissants? 4. Ils sont fort puissants. 5. Ont-ils conclu la paix? 6. Ils ont conclu la paix et une alliance. 7. Si votre père avait vu l'homme qui voulait acheter sa maison, aurait-il conclu le marché? 8. Il l'eût bientôt conclu. 9. Si vous aviez été boiteux, vous seriez-vous appuyé sur un bâton? 10. Non, monsieur, je me serais appuyé sur le bras de mon ami. 11. Si tu avais gardé ton argent, n'en aurais-tu pas eu beaucoup? 12. J'aurais eu une grosse somme. 13. Avez-vous conclu votre affaire? 14. Je ne l'ai pas conclue. 15. Vous êtes-vous fait mal? 16. Je me suis fait mal au coude gauche. 17. Ce poste est-il bien choisi? 18. Non, monsieur, c'est un poste très-dangereux. 19. Votre ami est dans un poste honorable. 20. Le lion est dans sa cage de fer. 21. Le fermier est allé à la ville; il sera longtemps absent. 22. Le ministre n'est pas puissant; il a perdu son autorité.

I.—1. If you had written your letters last night, would you have given them to me? 2. No, sir; I should have carried them to the post-office. 3. If I had beckoned to you sooner, would you have come? 4. We should have come immediately. 5. Is that horse good? 6. He is very good; he has no vice. 7. Has not that man committed an imprudence? 8. He has committed a great imprudence. 9. If thou hadst had those beautiful flowers which we saw at the market, to whom wouldst thou have given them? 10. I should have sent them as a (*en*) present to my neighbor. 11. Will the orator conclude his discourse this morning? 12. He will conclude it early. 13. Even if that man should have much money, he would not buy this house.

14. Do those children wear out many coats? 15. Yes, sir; and they wear out many pantaloons also. 16. Are your books new or worn? 17. They are very much worn. 18. That man supports his elbow on the table because he has a severe (*grand*) headache. 19. Has the doctor skill? 20. No, sir; the doctor is learned, but he lacks skill; his brother, on the contrary, has much skill. 21. Drunkenness (*ivrognerie*) is a foul (*vilain*) vice. 22. Where is the farmer? 23. He is absent in the country. 24. He is an honest and honorable man; he fails in none of his engagements. 25. What have you to do? 26. I have visits to make.

II.—1. You have many grapes this year. 2. Yes; when they are good to gather you must come and eat some. 3. I will come,

do not (*n'ayez pas*) doubt; there is no fruit that I like so much as the grape. 4. It is very healthy. 5. All fruits are so if they are not eaten green. 6. The pear is one of the best fruits, but we do not often see good ones here. 7. We shall see some here in a few years. 8. They begin to bring some to market now. 9. It looks as if it would rain. 10. Yes, I believe that it will rain soon. 11. That will do no harm; we have much need of a good shower (*ondée*).

12. Have you learned any news of the war in Europe? 13. There has come some this morning. 14. What do they say new? 15. They say that there has been a great battle; but they do not yet know any thing of it certain. 16. I hope that this war will soon be finished; it has already done harm (*tort*) enough to business. 17. They were talking of peace in France when the steamer (*vapeur*) left. 18. I am delighted at it; I desire much to see peace made. 19. When the next steamer arrives we shall have certain news. 20. I desire much that we may receive some good. 21. There must (*doit*) be much suffering (*misère*) in Europe now. 22. Wars do not always end as easily as they are begun. 23. A gentleman sent his servant one day to the city, with a present of nine ducks in a cage, on which was the following address: "To the honorable judge Tour, with ix ducks." 24. The servant, who was more cunning (*rusé*) than honest, stole away three ducks, and drew (*traça*) the letter S before the Roman numeral (*chiffre romain*) ix. The address was then thus: "To the honorable judge Tour, with six ducks."

# 11.—ONZIÈME LEÇON.

## MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

The game.	The game of cards.	Le jeu.	Le jeu de cartes.
By heart.	The heat.	Par cœur.	La chaleur.
An apple-tree.	Properly.	Un pommier.	Convenablement.
An insect.	As it should be.	Un insecte.	Comme il faut.
A pear-tree.	And then.	Un poirier.	Puis.
He reads and then he sleeps.		Il lit,	puis il dort.
He spoke to us, and then he went out.		Il nous parla,	puis il sortit.
He learns by heart.		Il apprend	par cœur.
He reads properly.		Il lit	convenablement.
He is a well-bred man.		C'est un homme	comme il faut.
She is a lady-like woman.		C'est une femme	comme il faut.
This bonnet looks quite fashionable.		Ce chapeau a l'air	tout à fait comme il faut.
He likes the game of cards.		Il aime le jeu	de cartes.
The hay.	To discourse.	Le foin.	Discourir.

The merit. *To grant.*

A plum-tree. A pocket.

1. *Se connaître*, followed by *à* or *en*, means to be a judge of, to be skilled in.

To be skilled in, to be a judge of.

He is skilled in *precious stones*.

Are you a judge of pictures?

Are you a judge of that?

I am a judge of them.

You are a good judge of horses.

The professor is discoursing on the *immortality of the soul*.

A pocket-handkerchief.

The front orchard.

The back orchard.

The mail has arrived.

To reappear. He has reappeared.

The enemy will not reappear.

I am incommoded by the heat.

I grant you that favor.

Le mérite. *Accorder.*

Un prunier. Une poche.

*Se connaître en* (or *d*). *Être connais-*  
*seur en.*

Il se connaît *en pierres*.

Vous connaissez-vous *en tableaux*?

Vous connaissez-vous *à cela*?

Je m'y connais.

Vous êtes bon connaisseur *en chevaux*.

Le professeur discourt sur l'*immortalité de l'âme*.

Un mouchoir de poche.

Le verger de devant.

Le verger de derrière.

La malle est arrivée.

*Reparaître*. Il a reparu.

Les ennemis ne *reparaîtront pas*.

Je suis incommodé par la chaleur.

Je vous accorde cette faveur.

1. Y a-t-il des pommiers dans ce verger? 2. Il y a des pommiers des poiriers et des pruniers. 3. La chaleur fait-elle du mal aux insectes? 4. Elle ne leur fait pas de mal. 5. Accordez-vous que le président ait du mérite? 6. J'accorde cela, mais je n'admets pas comme vérité tout ce qu'il a dit. 7. De quoi cet homme parle-t-il donc si souvent? 8. Il discours toujours de ses affaires. 9. Qu'est-ce que le fermier a à faire? 10. Il a du foin à faire. 11. L'irlandais est-il parti? 12. Il partit la semaine dernière, mais il a reparu au moment où je le croyais bien loin. 13. Y a-t-il des pruniers dans le verger? 14. Il y a des pruniers dans le verger de devant, et des poiriers dans le verger de derrière. 15. Dans notre verger il y a une cinquantaine de pommiers, une quinzaine de poiriers et une douzaine de pruniers. 16. Je viens d'acheter des mouchoirs de poche et une balle à jouer. 17. J'irai à la campagne à l'époque (*time*) des chaleurs.

I.—1. Are not the United States powerful? 2. Yes; and Russia, France, and England are powerful also. 3. Is that young man without vices? 4. No, sir; he conceals his vices, but he has many of them. 5. Do you learn all your lessons by heart? 6. No; I learn some of them by heart, but not all. 7. Does the farmer make hay and cider (*cidre*)? 8. He makes much hay and much cider. 9. Is he a man of merit? 10. He has more merit than good fortune. 11. Is the master a judge of music? He is a judge of it. 12. Your brother went up to his room twice before breakfast; has he not come down again? 13. He came down again, but he has reascended. 14. The Frenchman looks like a well-bred man; are

you acquainted with him? 15. Yes, sir; he is a man of merit, and his wife is a well-bred lady.

16. As soon as it had struck two, the mail arrived. 17. Do you like to play ball better than to play cards? 18. I like sometimes to play cards as much as to play ball. 19. When will you go to the city? 20. We shall depart this evening after the heat. 21. Does that child behave properly? 22. Yes, sir; he is a very good child. 23. Do insects love cold? 24. No, sir; insects love heat, but cold destroys them. 25. What will you do this evening? 26. I shall learn my lesson, and then I shall go to bed. 27. On what does the master discourse? 28. He discourses on the studies of his pupils. 29. Where is your penknife? 30. I have it here in my pocket.

II.—1. It is cold; bring some wood; I wish to make some fire. 2. Have you dined well? 3. Yes, sir; all the dishes were excellent. 4. Will you take a walk with the children this afternoon? 5. No; they have soiled their clothes; they will stay at home. 6. What is the servant doing? 7. He is spreading the cloth on the turf (*gazon*). 8. What has the countryman to sell? 9. He has some pigeons and some partridges. 10. Are you displeased with that man for (*de*) what he has said? 11. No, I am pleased with him for it. 12. "Cousin," said a lady to a gentleman, who happened to be with her in a numerous (*nombreuse*) company, "I am not mistaken, am I, in saying that I am only forty years old?" 13. "No, certainly, my dear cousin," said the gentleman, "and I can not doubt it myself, for I have heard you say that for more than ten years."

14. An honest man, falsely accused of theft, was brought before a judge. 15. As soon as the judge saw the accused, he said in the ear of one of his neighbors, "I see all the traits (*traits*) of a thief upon that face." 16. "Do you think, then," exclaimed the prisoner (*prisonnier*), who had heard him, "that my face is a mirror?"

17. A Russian countryman who had never seen asses (*d'ânes*), met with several in France, and exclaimed, "*Heavens (mon Dieu)*, what large hares there are (*qu'il y a de grands lièvres*) in this country!"

## 12.—DOUZIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. After *laisser* and *faire*, reflexive with an infinitive, as after passive verbs, *de* refers to the sentiments of the heart, *par* to physical or mental action.

He makes himself loved by every body. Il se fait aimer de tout le monde.

He gets beaten by every body. Il se fait battre par tout le monde.

A hackney-coach, coach.

To breathe. To go to bed.

To shine.

To lock. To snow.

To hail. To thunder.

It snows. It hails. It thunders.

Un fiacre.

Respirer. Aller se coucher.

Briller. Luire.

Fermer à clef. Neiger.

Grêler. Tonner.

Il neige. Il grêle. Il tonne.

2. *Se promener* means to go for mere exercise or amusement, whether it be by riding or walking, and the particular mode is expressed by the adjuncts *à pied*, *à cheval*, etc.

I take a walk.

He takes a ride.

They take a drive.

We have taken a sail.

The brook flows slowly in the meadow.

Je me promène à pied.

Il se promène à cheval.

Ils se promènent en voiture.

Nous nous sommes promenés en bateau.

Le ruisseau se promène lentement dans la prairie.

My looks wandered over the rich plains.

The complexion. The manufacture.

Really. My own manufacture.

Evidently. Painting.

The departure. Imprudent.

A stay. The smoke.

It is so hot that one can hardly breathe.

Mes regards se promenaient sur les riches campagnes.

Le teint. La manufacture.

Réellement. Ma propre manufacture.

Évidemment. La peinture.

Le départ. Imprudent.

Un séjour. La fumée.

Il fait si chaud, qu'on ne saurait presque respirer.

He is going to bed.

The sun shines.

This diamond glitters more than that.

He is a connoisseur in painting.

Il va se coucher.

Le soleil luit.

Ce diamant brille plus que celui-là.

Il est connoisseur en peinture.

1. Cet homme est-il venu ici dans un fiacre? 2. Oui; sa voiture s'est rompus (*broke*), et il a été obligé de prendre un fiacre. 3. Fait-il jour? 4. Il fait jour, et le soleil commence à luire. 5. Ce malade a de la peine à respirer. 6. Fermez-vous la porte à clef quand vous allez vous coucher? 7. Je la ferme à clef quelquefois. 8. Vous promenez-vous souvent à cheval? 9. Je me promène à cheval tous les matins, et je me promène en voiture tous les soirs; je ne me promène pas souvent à pied. 10. Cette demoiselle a le teint fort beau; c'est la fille de notre voisin. 11. Cette histoire est réellement intéressante; il faut que vous la lisiez. 12. Ce vaisseau part-il bientôt? 13. Oui; il n'attend que le vent pour mettre à la voile. 14. Cet homme n'est-il pas imprudent? 15. Si, il est fort imprudent. 16. Votre frère fera-t-il un long séjour à Boston? 17. Non, il reviendra demain. 18. Fait-il souvent de la fumée dans cette chambre? 19. Il y fait quelquefois de la fumée, mais pas souvent.

I.—1. Whence comes this smoke? 2. The chimney smokes, and the room is full of smoke. 3. Did your stay in London please you? 4. Yes, sir; but my stay in Paris pleased me more. 5. Do you breathe easily? 6. I have trouble in breathing; I have taken

<sup>12 1</sup> fi-ac-re, <sup>6 12 6</sup> res-pi-rer, <sup>12 6 22 18</sup> bril-ler, <sup>7 6</sup> luire, <sup>6 6</sup> nei-ger, <sup>15 6</sup> grê-ler, <sup>7 6</sup> ton-ner, <sup>6 15</sup> neige, <sup>7 6</sup> grêle, <sup>14 1</sup> tonne, <sup>14 1</sup> teint, <sup>22 1</sup> ma-nu-fac-ture, <sup>6 12 6</sup> ré-elle-ment, <sup>6 12 6</sup> dé-vi-dem-ment, <sup>14 1</sup> pein-ture, <sup>14 1</sup> dé-par-t, <sup>22 1</sup> im-pru-dent, <sup>14 1</sup> sé-jour, <sup>14 1</sup> fu-mée.

cold. 7. Do you take a walk in the morning? 8. No, sir; I take a ride on horseback every morning, and I take a ride in a carriage every evening. 9. Do your neighbors often take a ride in a carriage? 10. No; they ride every day on horseback. 11. Does it snow? 12. It does not snow; it hails. 13. Does it thunder much in this country? 14. No, sir; it snows and hails much; but it hardly ever thunders.

15. Is that child well? 16. No, sir; he is evidently sick. 17. On what instrument do you play? 18. I play on the piano. 19. What coat do you wish to buy? 20. I wish to buy one which looks fashionable. 21. Do you wish for one in the French fashion? 22. No, sir; I wish for one in the English fashion. 23. What do you do in the morning? 24. As soon as I dress, I take my coffee, and then I go out. 26. Do you carry two pocket handkerchiefs? 26. No, sir; I carry only one pocket handkerchief and one pair of gloves. 27. Do you always lock your door when you go out? 28. I do not always lock it. 29. Did you see my brother before his departure? 30. Yes, sir; I saw him twice.

II.—1. Let us sit down on this bench. 2. I do not wish to sit down; I do not feel myself fatigued. 3. But I am; I have walked incessantly since this morning. 4. Seat yourself; I will sit down in a moment. 5. I wish to gather some plums; do you wish me to gather you some also? 6. No, thank you; I do not often eat any.

7. A French officer had invited much company to dinner. 8. His son, who was only six years old, came and sat down (*vint se mettre*) at the table, but his father sent him away (*le repoussa*), telling him that his beard was too short to dine with his father. 9. His mother had a little table prepared (*fit dresser*) for him, and ordered him to be well served. 10. In the mean time an old cat tried (at) several times to carry off his food; upon which the child, out of patience, exclaimed, "Go and eat with my father; thy beard is sufficiently long."

11. "What difference is there," asked the duchess (*duchesse*) of Maine to the writer (*écrivain*) La Motte, "between me and a clock?" 12. "Duchess," answered La Motte, "a clock marks (*marque*) the hours, and your highness (*altesse*) makes one forget them."

13. One day a person of the court asked Lord Chesterfield what he thought of Lady Coventry, whose complexion was evidently the work (*Pourrage même*) of that lady. 14. "Really," replied his lordship (*seigneurie*), "I am not a judge of painting."



## 13.—TREIZIÈME LEÇON.

## MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. The French verb *aller* is not used vaguely like the English verb *to go*. We say in English, *I am going, he has gone*, etc., meaning *going* or *gone away*. The French in all such cases use the verb *s'en aller*.

*To go away. I am going away.*

*S'en aller. Je m'en vais.*

*Thou art going away. He is going away.*

*Tu t'en vas. Il s'en va.*

*We are going away.*

*Nous nous en allons.*

*You are going away.*

*Vous vous en allez.*

*They are going away.*

*Ils (elles) s'en vont.*

*Art thou going away? Is he going away?*

*T'en vas-tu? S'en va-t-il?*

*Are you going away?*

*Vous en allez-vous?*

*Are they going away?*

*S'en vont-ils?*

2. In the compound tenses, *en* immediately precedes the auxiliary.

*Has she gone away?*

*S'en est-elle allée?*

*She has not gone away.*

*Elle ne s'en est pas allée.*

*When will you go away?*

*Quand vous en irez-vous?*

*I shall go away to-morrow.*

*Je m'en irai demain.*

*Had they gone away when you arrived?*

*S'en étaient-ils allés quand vous êtes arrivé?*

*They had not gone away.*

*Ils ne s'en étaient pas allés.*

*Do you believe that he has gone away?*

*Croyez-vous qu'il s'en soit allé?*

*I fear that he has gone away.*

*Je crains qu'il ne s'en soit allé.*

*Go away.*

*Va-t' en, or allez-vous-en.*

*The emperor. The lock.*

*L'empereur. La serrure.*

*A prisoner. Reason.*

*Un prisonnier. La raison.*

*A conqueror. A debt.*

*Un vainqueur. Une dette.*

*Important. A victory.*

*Important. Une victoire.*

*To dare. Regularly.*

*Oser. Régulièrement.*

*Married. Whoever.*

*Marié. Quiconque.*

*To cure, to get well. He will get well soon.*

*Guérir. Il guérira bientôt.*

*He cures the sick.*

*Il guérit les malades.*

*As, in capacity of. He acts as a god-father.*

*En. Il agit en bon père.*

*She acts as an ignorant person.*

*Elle agit en ignorante.*

*We dare not go to the top of that mountain.*

*Nous n'osons aller au haut de cette montagne.*

s 1 6 1 8 2 11 7 22 12 16 12 6 7 21 14 11 6 14 16  
s'en-al-ler, va-t'en, empe-reur, ser-rure, pri-zon-nier, rai-son, vain-keur, dette, im-  
19 10 17 6 4 22 1 7 8 1 22 8 12 21 8 12 6 12 1  
tant, vic-toire, o-ser, ré-gu-lière-ment, ma-ri-é, kl-conka, gué-rir, gué-ri-ra.

1. T'en vas-tu ? 2. Je m'en vais. 3. Vous en allez-vous ? 4. Nous ne nous en allons pas. 5. Ce monsieur s'en va-t-il ? 6. Il ne s'en va pas. 7. Ces dames s'en vont-elles ? 8. Elles ne s'en vont pas. 9. Vous en irez-vous demain ? 10. Je m'en irai et mon ami s'en ira aussi. 11. Quand vous en irez-vous ? 12. Nous nous en irons demain. 13. Le docteur s'en est-il allé ? 14. Il s'en est allé hier matin. 15. S'en était-il allé quand la malle est arrivée ? 16. Non ; aussitôt que la malle fut arrivée, il s'en alla. 17. Pensiez-vous que je fusse chez moi ? 18. Je pensais que vous vous en étiez allé. 19. Les soldats osent-ils blâmer l'empereur ? 20. Ils ne l'osent pas. 21. Le général a-t-il gagné une victoire ? 22. Il a gagné une victoire importante, et il a fait beaucoup de prisonniers. 23. Où est la clef de cette porte ? 24. Elle est à la serrure. 25. Avez-vous des dettes ? 26. Non ; je n'ai pas un sou de dettes. 27. Je dinais régulièrement à trois heures pendant mon séjour en ville. 28. Le général est entré en vainqueur dans la ville. 29. Quiconque passe par là doit payer six sous. 30. Cette femme est mariée.

I.—1. Does your friend go away to-day ? 2. Yes, sir ; he goes away immediately. 3. Dost thou go away to-day ? 4. No ; I shall go away to-morrow at six o'clock. 5. Will your cousins go away at the same time ? 6. No, sir ; they are going away to-day. 7. Are you going away already ? 8. No, sir ; we are not going away yet. 9. Have the Germans gone away ? 10. Yes, sir ; they went away last week. 11. Do you believe that the soldiers are going away ? 12. I believe that they have gone away already. 13. Does any one dare to blame us ? 14. No one blames us. 15. Did the sick man believe that I could cure him ? 16. He believed that the physicians would cure him. 17. Did you believe that he would get well ? 18. I did not believe that he would get well. 19. The Frenchman always acts as a wise and prudent man.

20. Is it muddy ? 21. It is very muddy. 22. Was it not dusty yesterday ? 23. Yes, sir ; the dust arose and penetrated every where. 24. That merchant dares undertake nothing ; he will never succeed. 25. We ought always to consult (*consulter*) reason in every thing. 26. Is not your neighbor imprudent ? 27. He is very imprudent. 28. Is there a lock on your door ? 29. There is one ; and I always lock the door when I go to bed. 30. That man will get well ; will he not ? 31. I think that the physician will cure him. 32. Do you rise regularly at the same hour every day ? 33. Yes, sir ; I rise regularly at six every day. 34. Is your brother married ? 35. Yes, sir ; he has been married these five years. 36. Was the emperor of France a prisoner ? 37. Yes ; he was a prisoner several years. 38. Whoever passes this bridge (*ce pont*) has to pay three cents.

II.—1. In the space of fourteen years, Cæsar reduced the warlike people of Gaul, and conquered Spain twice ; he passed over, as conqueror, all Italy ; he penetrated as far as Germany, and into the British isles. 2. He overthrew the power of the great Pompey (*Pompée*) ; he subdued Egypt ; he met and beat Pharnaces (*Phar-*

nace), son of Mithridates (*Mithridate*). 3. He vanquished in Africa the great name of Cato, and the arms of Juba, and he engaged in (*livra*) fifty battles, which cost the lives of eleven hundred and ninety-two thousand men. 4. This hero was at the same time the model of historians, and the greatest orator of his age after Cicero.

5. Are you willing to carry that heavy burden? 6. No, sir, I am tired; you are not, carry it yourself. 7. Can you learn the French in six months? 8. I can learn a great deal of it in six months. 9. When will you begin to study Spanish? 10. I shall begin in two months. 11. Are these affairs important? 12. They are very important. 13. God has given reason to man in order to make him distinguish (*discerner*) good from evil, the true from (*d'avec*) the false. 14. An Irishman was comparing (*comparait*) his watch with the clock, and as he burst out (*éclata*) with laughter (*de rire*), some one asked him at what he was laughing. 15. "And (*Eh*) how can I prevent it (*m'en empêcher*)?" cried he, "when my little watch, which was made by my cousin at Cork, and which cost me only ten dollars, has beaten your big clock at New York about an hour and a quarter only since yesterday morning."

#### 14.—QUATORZIÈME LEÇON.

##### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. *Pour* takes the definite article before the names of countries.

He sets out for England and Italy. Il part pour l'Angleterre et pour l'Italie.

He has set out for France. Il est parti pour la France.

2. When a noun of place comes between *aller* and a following infinitive, sometimes there is no preposition between them, but the infinitive may be preceded by *pour*, which then forms a stronger expression, stating the motive for going out.

I am going home to see my friends. Je vais chez moi voir mes amis.

He is going to the market to buy fruit. Il va au marché pour acheter du fruit.

We are going to the store to buy some flour. Nous allons au magasin pour acheter de la farine.

3. *Pour aller* must be used after *sortir*, when we express the purpose of going out.

He is going out for wood. Il sort pour aller chercher du bois.

They are going out for wine. Il sortent pour aller chercher du vin.

I am going out for water. Je sors pour aller chercher de l'eau.

4. *Long* and *large*, as well as *haut*, are sometimes used as nouns.

*Length.* Long. La longueur.

*Breadth.* Large. La largeur.

*Height.* Haut. La hauteur.

A well. The depth. Un puits. La profondeur.

To fly, run away. Youth. S'enfuir. La jeunesse.

21 21 11 1 1 11 17 11 22 12 12 21 11 2 22 12 9 5  
long, lon-gueur, large, lar-geur, hau-teur, puits, pro-fon-deur, s'en-fu-ir, jeu-nesse.

<i>To bid adieu. Old age.</i>	<i>Dire adieu. La vieillesse.</i>
<i>A philosopher. The soul.</i>	<i>Un philosophe. L'âme.</i>
<i>A family teacher, tutor. Honesty.</i>	<i>Un précepteur. L'honnêteté.</i>
<i>Extreme. Extremely.</i>	<i>Extrême. Extrêmement.</i>
<i>Immortal. To send again, send back.</i>	<i>Immortel. Renvoyer.</i>
<i>Ally. An army.</i>	<i>Un allié. Une armée.</i>
<i>The fist. In order to.</i>	<i>Le poing. Afin de, pour que.</i>
<i>Obey God. Let us obey him.</i>	<i>Obéissez à Dieu. Obéissons-lui.</i>
<i>A blow with the fist.</i>	<i>Un coup de poing.</i>
<i>A blow with a stick.</i>	<i>Un coup de bâton.</i>
<i>That house is sixty feet long by forty wide.</i>	<i>Cette maison a soixante pieds de longueur sur quarante de largeur.</i>
<i>That picture is six feet high by five wide.</i>	<i>Ce tableau a six pieds de haut sur cinq de large.</i>
<i>What is that good for?</i>	<i>A quoi cela est-il bon?</i>
<i>That is good for nothing.</i>	<i>Cela n'est bon à rien.</i>
<i>A prisoner on parole. With ice.</i>	<i>Un prisonnier sur parole. À la glace.</i>
<i>A glass of ice-water.</i>	<i>Un verre d'eau à la glace.</i>

1. Votre maison est elle grande? 2. Elle a cinquante pieds de longueur (de long), et quarante pieds de hauteur (de haut). 3. Pourquoi ce garçon s'enfuit-il? 4. Il s'enfuit parce qu'il a peur de rester ici. 5. Le voleur est-il en prison? 6. Non, monsieur, il s'est enfui. 7. Qu'a fait cet homme dans sa jeunesse? 8. Il a passé sa jeunesse dans les plaisirs; à présent qu'il est vieux, il est dans une extrême misère. 9. Allez-vous dire adieu à vos amis? 10. Je leur ai dit adieu ce matin. 11. Quelle profondeur ce puits a-t-il? 12. Il a cinquante pieds de profondeur. 13. Que croit ce philosophe? 14. Il croit que l'âme est immortelle et que l'honnêteté est la première vertu de l'homme. 15. Votre précepteur écrit-il vite? 16. Il écrit extrêmement vite. 17. Pourquoi renvoyez-vous ce drap? 18. Je le renvoie parce qu'il est trop gros. 19. Votre père est-il parvenu à la vieillesse? 20. Oui, et mon grand-père est mort de vieillesse. 21. Ce soldat est prisonnier sur parole. 22. L'armée des alliés a gagné plusieurs victoires. 23. J'ai pris ce livre pour le lire.

I.—1. What is that gun good for? 2. It is good to kill birds and squirrels. 3. Why do those children run away? 4. They run away because they are afraid. 5. Has old age always more reason than youth? 6. No; youth has sometimes as much reason as old age. 7. Does that traveler set out to-morrow? 8. Yes, sir; he has just bid adieu to his friends. 9. That house is extremely large; how long is it? 10. It is a hundred feet long by fifty high. 11. How deep is that well? 12. It is more than sixty feet deep. 13. Do we understand the operations (*opérations*) of the soul? 14. We can not understand them perfectly. 15. Is your tutor learned and wise? 16. Yes, sir; he is a true philosopher. 17. The tutor of

<sup>117</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>16</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>18</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>12</sup>  
viei-les-se, phi-lo-sop-he, â-me, pré-cep-teur, hon-nê-te-té, ex-trême, ex-trême-ment, im-  
<sup>30</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>20</sup> <sup>136</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>136</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>136</sup>  
mor-tel, ren-vo-ye-r, al-lié, ar-mée, poing.

Alexander the Great was a great philosopher. 18. He believed that the soul was immortal, but he did not believe that the works of man were immortal.

19. How long is that wall? 20. It is six hundred feet long by ten high. 21. Is that man honest? 22. I doubt the honesty of his soul. 23. Do you wish for a glass of wine or of ice-water? 24. A glass of ice-water, if you please. 25. Is your friend a prisoner? 26. He is a prisoner on parole. 27. Did the armies of the allies enter Paris? 28. They entered it in 1815. 29. Why does that boy weep? 30. Because some one has given him a blow with the fist. 31. Why do you buy those flowers? 32. I buy them in order to send them to my sister. 33. Can one learn French by rules only? 34. No, sir; no language is learned without much exercise.

II.—1. Madam, I have the honor to salute you; how do you find yourself this morning? 2. The best in the world, I thank you much; and you? 3. Admirably well, thank God. 4. Take the trouble (*la peine*) to sit down. 5. I can not have that pleasure, madam; I have not the time. 6. You are very much hurried. 7. I will come again to-morrow. I came only to know how you did after your indisposition of yesterday evening. 8. Make my compliments to your sister. 9. Adieu, sir; I thank you for this visit.

10. I have been told that your brother-in-law wishes to get a brick house built. 11. Yes; he wishes to get one built before long (*peu*). 12. Where will it be? 13. About a mile and a quarter, or a mile and a half, from the river. 14. It will not be far from your house; will it? 15. Not very far; I shall be able to go to his house in a quarter of an hour. 16. That will be a short walk; I make a longer one almost every morning. 17. It is good walking in the morning early, and late in the evening; but in the middle of the day it is too warm to walk. 18. I have not the time to walk in the day; but I am obliged to go much in the sun to look after (*vaquer à*) my business. 19. When one has business, it is necessary to do his best. 20. Yes; if I had business, I should be very industrious.

21. A Frenchman, wishing to pay (make) a compliment to a lady who had no great pretensions (*prétentions*) to beauty, said to her, "Truly, madam, you are the most beautiful of the flowers of your sex (*sexe*)."  
22. The lady, who was not very polite, answered him, "I thank you for your compliment, and I should wish to be able to say as much of you."  
23. "You can (do) so, madam," replied the Frenchman immediately, "if you can lie as easily (*aisément*) as I."

15.—QUINZIÈME LEÇON.

MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. The learner has seen that when we speak of any thing begun in past time and still continued, the verb, though past in English, must be present in French, preceded by *il y a*, or followed by *depuis*. *Depuis* and *il y a* CAN NOT both be used with the same phrase.

I have been in Boston two months.	<i>Il y a deux mois que je suis à Boston.</i> <i>Je suis à Boston depuis deux mois.</i>
I have studied Spanish six months.	<i>Il y a six mois que j'étudie l'espagnol.</i> <i>J'étudie l'espagnol depuis six mois.</i>

The above form implies that I am still in Boston, that I am still studying Spanish. But if the action or state no longer continues, the verb is past in French as well as English.\*

I was in Boston two months.	<i>J'ai été deux mois à Boston.</i>
I studied Spanish six months.	<i>J'ai étudié l'espagnol six mois.</i>
A comedian. Avarice.	<i>Un comédien. L'avarice.</i>
The sound. The bell.	<i>Le son. La cloche.</i>
A glance. Obedient.	<i>Un coup d'œil. Obéissant.</i>
A kick. Disobedient.	<i>Un coup de pied. Désobéissant.</i>
A debtor. The thickness.	<i>Un débiteur. L'épaisseur.</i>
A creditor. The circumference.	<i>Un créancier. La circonférence.</i>
A horse-shoe. To shoe a horse.	<i>Un fer à cheval. Ferrer un cheval.</i>
A Christian. To bring near.	<i>Un chrétien. Approcher (de bef. u.).</i>
Attentive. To approach.	<i>Attentif. S'approcher (de bef. noun).</i>
To withdraw (from).	<i>S'éloigner (de bef. noun).</i>
Bring that chair near me.	<i>Approchez cette chaise de moi.</i>
Draw near the fire.	<i>Approchez-vous du feu.</i>
Withdraw from the fire.	<i>Éloignez-vous du feu.</i>
He approaches it, I withdraw from it.	<i>Il s'en approche, je m'en éloigne.</i>
Cast a glance on that.	<i>Jettez un coup d'œil sur cela.</i>

2. Verbs, adjectives, and prepositions of different regimen can not take a common object.

They love and obey their father.	<i>Ils aiment leur père et ils lui obéissent.</i>
He hates and injures them.	<i>Il les hait et il leur nuit.</i>

Here *obéir* and *nuitre*, which take the indirect object, can not have the same object as *aimer* and *hâir*, which take the direct.

1. Entendez-vous le son de la cloche? 2. Je l'entends. 3. Cet enfant est-il obéissant? 4. Non, madame, sa sœur est obéissante, mais, lui, il est très-désobéissant. 5. Cet homme a tué son chien d'un coup de hache. 6. Le maître a battu ce petit garçon parce qu'il a donné un coup de pied à son camarade. 7. Cet homme est-il votre créancier? 8. Non, monsieur, c'est mon débiteur. 9. Quelle épaisseur cette pierre a-t-elle? 10.

\* When the friends of Lazarus said to Christ, *He has been dead three days*, it would have been in French, *Il y a trois jours qu'il est mort*, or *Il est mort depuis trois jours*. But Lazarus himself after his resurrection, being no longer dead, might have said, *J'ai été mort trois jours*.

15 8 12 14 1 1 12 15 16 5 19 8 5 16 6 12 2 8 19 11 6 7 11 5 8  
co-mé-dien, a-va-ri-ce, clo-che, o-bé-i-sant, dé-so-bé-i-sant, té-bi-teur, é-pais-seur, cré-an-  
cier, cir-con-fé-rence, fer-rer, chré-tien, ap-pro-cher, at-ten-tif, é-loi-gner.

Elle a deux pieds d'épaisseur et dix pieds de circonférence. 11. Ce comédien joue-t-il bien? 12. Il joue assez bien. 13. Cet homme se refuse beaucoup par avarice, n'est-ce pas? 14. Oui, il se refuse tout par avarice. 15. Que fait ce forgeron? 16. Il fait des fers à cheval pour ferrer ce cheval. 17. Vous levez-vous de bonne heure quand vous étiez à la campagne? 18. Je me levais de bonne heure lorsque je m'étais couché de bonne heure. 19. Les écoliers sont attentifs au discours du maître. 20. Le vieux soldat est mort en bon chrétien.

I.—1. Does that comedian play well? 2. He plays very well in the comic (*comique*). 3. That man refuses himself every thing from avarice. 4. That merchant is very attentive to his business. 5. I hear the sound of the bell; it is twelve o'clock. 6. Why has the master beaten that boy? 7. Because he gave his companion a blow with his fist. 8. Why do you give that dog a kick? 9. Because he is here in the room, and I wish him to go away. 10. Have you cast a glance upon the newspapers? 11. No, sir; I have not seen the newspapers to-day. 12. Is that scholar obedient? 13. No, sir; he is very disobedient; he obeys no one. 14. Is that man your creditor? 15. No, sir; he is my debtor.

16. That stone is four feet in breadth, by two in thickness; it is twelve feet in circumference. 17. I take the newspaper in order to read it. 18. Is the blacksmith shoeing your horse? 19. He is making horse-shoes in order to shoe him. 20. Bring that chair near the table. 21. Approach the fire; are you not cold? 22. No, sir, I am too warm; I will withdraw from it. 23. Was our general a Christian? 24. Yes, sir; he died as a good Christian. 25. Have you come in order to read the newspapers? 26. I have come in order to borrow them. 27. Do you believe that your friend is coming here this evening? 28. It is possible that he has come already. 29. Did his brother think that he was coming? 30. He did not think that he was coming. 31. Did he think that he had come? 32. He did not think that he had come.

II.—1. Do they use much wood in this house? 2. No, sir; they have good stoves, and they do not use much wood. 3. Are not those boots worn? 4. No, sir; they are new. 5. Does that lame man support himself on a stick? 6. No, sir; he supports himself on me. 7. Did you beckon to the servant to come to you? 8. No, sir; he came to me, but I had not beckoned to him. 9. Do you go to the post-office often? 10. I go to the post-office and to the market every morning.

11. If you had had no boat, would you have been able to pass over that river? 12. Yes, sir; I should have passed over it by swimming. 13. Does the post-master (*maître de poste*) live in this street? 14. He lives at the end of the street, opposite the church. 15. Is the congress of this republic composed (*se compose*) of more than one house (*chambre*)? 16. It is composed of a senate and house of representatives. 17. Has that man friends? 18. No,

sir; as he never does his duty, he has no friends. 19. Has that Spaniard wit? 20. He does not lack wit, but he has no skill.

21. Were the children hungry yesterday at school? 22. Yes, sir; if they had had bread they would have eaten. 23. Were you not cold yesterday? 24. No, sir; if we had been cold we should have warmed ourselves. 25. Is the servant absent? 26. Yes, sir; he has gone to carry a beautiful cage as a present to our neighbor. 27. Have you some visits to make? 28. I have a few to make. 29. I am delighted to see you, sir; how do they do at your house? 30. Every body is well, I thank you; and at your house? 31. My sister is slightly indisposed. 32. I am very sorry for it, and I hope that it will be nothing. 33. I have invited Mr. B. to dinner; will you dine with us also? 34. Yes, sir; you are very good; I shall not fail. Adieu (*au revoir*).

## 16.—SEIZIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. Adjectives and past participles, which refer to a part of a larger number or quantity, are generally preceded by *de* in French.

There were two hundred men killed, and five hundred wounded. Il y eut deux cents hommes *de* tués, et cinq cents *de* blessés.

How many bottles are there? Combien de bouteilles y a-t-il?

There are six full and six empty. Il y en a six *de* pleines et six *de* vides.

2. Often, however, the *de* is suppressed.

There are four broken. Il y en a quatre cassées (or *de* cassées).

How many stockings have you? Combien de bas avez-vous?

I have six white and four black ones. J'en ai six (*de*) blancs et quatre (*de*) noirs.

To take it into one's head, to think (of). S'aviser (de).

To recollect. Se rappeler, se souvenir (de bef. inf.).

A fellow-man. Similar, like. Un semblable. Semblable.

Aloud. A class. Haut, à haute voix. Une classe.

The right. The nation. Le droit. La nation.

The diameter. An ice-cream. Le diamètre. Une glace.

A vanilla ice-cream. Une glace à la vanille.

To reclaim, claim. A fly. Réclamer. Une mouche.

The principal. To frighten. Le principal. Faire peur à.

The government. Science. Le gouvernement. La science.

This field. An epigram. Ce champ. Une épigramme.

To measure. To melt. Mesurer. Fondre.

<sup>1</sup> s'a-vi-zer, <sup>2</sup> sem-bi-able, <sup>3</sup> clas-se, <sup>4</sup> droit, <sup>5</sup> na-tion, <sup>6</sup> di-a-mètre, <sup>7</sup> va-nille, <sup>8</sup> ré-cla-mer, <sup>9</sup> mou-che, <sup>10</sup> prin-ci-pal, <sup>11</sup> gou-ver-ne-ment, <sup>12</sup> sci-en-ce, <sup>13</sup> champ, <sup>14</sup> é-pi-gram-me, <sup>15</sup> me-zu-ter, <sup>16</sup> fon-dre.



*A wall. A pane of glass.*

*To instruct. To teach.*

He plans nothing.

He took it into his head to rob me.

It is necessary to speak aloud.

You frighten the little boy.

He takes good care of his health.

They have gone away.

You had gone away.

We shall have gone away.

Does he fear that I have gone away ?

He fears that you have gone away.

Did you believe that she had gone away ?

I knew that she had gone away.

The snow has melted.

She instructs her children well.

He teaches *mathematics*.

They are measuring the wall.

*Un mur. Une vitre.*

*Instruire (à bef. inf.). Enseigner (à bef. inf.).*

Il ne s'avise de rien.

Il s'est avisé de me voler.

Il faut parler haut (or à haute voix).

Vous faites peur au petit garçon.

Il soigne bien sa santé.

Ils s'en sont allés.

Vous vous en étiez allés.

Nous nous en serons allés.

Craint-il que je m'en sois allé ?

Il craint que vous ne vous en soyez allé.

Croyiez-vous qu'elle s'en fût allée ?

Je savais qu'elle s'en était allée.

La neige est fondue.

Elle instruit bien ses enfants.

Il enseigne les *mathématiques*.

On mesure ce mur.

1. Vous rappelez-vous les faits dont je parle ? 2. Je me les rappelle parfaitement. 3. Ces deux frères se ressemblent beaucoup. 4. Oui ; ils sont tout à fait semblables. 5. Nous devons faire du bien à nos semblables. 6. Ce petit garçon apprend-il bien ? 7. Oui, madame, il est le premier de sa classe. 8. Ce voyageur a visité plusieurs nations étrangères. 9. Le juge n'a pas le droit de vie et de mort sur les prisonniers. 10. Je vais réclamer le cheval qu'on m'a pris. 11. Cet arbre a trois pieds de diamètre. 12. La mouche commune n'a que deux ailes. 13. Le précepteur instruit-il le prince ? 14. Il l'instruit dans la science du gouvernement. 15. Que fait cet homme ? 16. Il mesure ce champ. 17. Cette glace au chocolat est bien bonne. 18. Le soleil ne fond-il pas la neige aujourd'hui ? 19. Il la fond vite. 20. Ce mur a deux pieds d'épaisseur. 21. Que le domestique nettoie les vitres de ma chambre. 22. Qu'est-ce que le maître enseigne à ses élèves ? 23. Il leur enseigne à parler français et espagnol.

I.—1. Do you recollect your visit to Mr. White's in London ? 2. I recollect it perfectly. 3. What has frightened that cat ? 4. The dog has frightened him. 5. How many classes are there in your school ? 6. There are six. 7. Is not England a powerful nation ? 8. Yes ; England and France are very powerful nations. 9. That tree is more than six feet in diameter and nearly twenty feet in circumference. 10. Are there many flies in autumn ? 11. Yes ; in autumn every thing is full of flies. 12. Is your house similar to mine ? 13. It is quite similar. 14. The professor is going to the merchant's to claim his money. 15. In order to learn

French, is it necessary to speak it aloud? 16. It is necessary to speak it aloud, and to speak it much. 17. That boy is very wicked; he took it into his head yesterday to break my windows.

18. Humanity (*l'humanité*) obliges us to have pity on (*avoir pitié de*) our fellow-men. 19. The Romans had the right of life and death over their slaves (*esclaves*). 20. This vanilla ice-cream is very good. 21. Does the diameter of the circle (*du cercle*) divide (*divise*) the circumference into two equal (*égales*) parts? 22. Yes; it always divides the circumference into two equal parts. 23. Do you know the science of government? 24. I do not know it perfectly. 25. Have they measured the diameter of this circle? 26. They have measured this circle and that field. 27. Those panes of glass are very large. 28. Yes; they are very large and very clear (*claires*).

II.—1. Let the boy make some fire. 2. Let the servant wash the panes of glass in my room. 3. Let the children go to bed. 4. Is your father up-stairs or down-stairs? 5. He is yonder in the field. 6. Is the servant above or below? 7. He has just gone up-stairs. 8. After having breakfasted, did you go to the post-office? 9. No, sir; the mail had not then arrived. 10. I went first to my room, where I read the newspaper, and then I went to the post-office. 11. Have you some presents to send to your friends? 12. I have many to send to them. 13. Has your friend money enough to meet all his expenses? 14. Yes, sir; he is in a condition (*en état*) to fulfill all his engagements. 15. Does your house face the north? 16. No, sir; it faces the south.

17. At the north they build many houses of stone, but here I see that all the houses are of wood or of brick. 18. Yes; we have no stones near here, and wooden houses are very good in this climate. 19. There are some houses here which are built with much taste. 20. How do you like (find) our city? 21. It is very pretty. The environs (*environs*) above all are very agreeable. 22. Have you ever been far in (*d*) the country? 23. I have been as far as Mr. B.'s, who dwells (*d*) six miles from here. 24. Mr. B. has a beautiful country-house. 25. As soon as we have the time let us go there. 26. With pleasure; in one or two weeks I shall have more time. 27. What o'clock is it? 28. It is near seven o'clock. 29. Is not your watch too fast? 30. On the contrary, I believe that it is too slow by (*de*) some minutes.

## 17.—DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. The learner will readily perceive, from the meaning of the following verbs and conjunctions, that they govern the subjunctive. Their signification is such that the dependent verb can hardly affirm its meaning positively.

<i>To approve. To merit.</i>	<i>Approuver. Mériter.</i>
<i>To wonder. To pray.</i>	<i>S'étonner. Prier.</i>
<i>Though, although.</i>	<i>Encore que</i> (quoique, bien que).
<i>However little. Without.</i>	<i>Pour peu que. Sans que.</i>
He approves of our having this money.	Il approuve que nous ayons cet argent.
He deserves to be taken care of.	Il mérite qu'on ait soin de lui.
I wonder that he sees no danger where he is.	Je m'étonne qu'il ne voie pas du danger où il est.
Although he is young, he does not fail to be good.	Encore qu'il soit jeune, il ne laisse pas d'être sage.
However little care you take of it, the business will succeed.	Pour peu que vous en preniez soin, l'affaire réussira.
He has done it without being told.	Il l'a fait sans qu'on le lui ait dit.
<i>To threaten. His idea.</i>	<i>Menacer</i> (de bef. inf.). <i>Son idée.</i>
<i>To incommode, annoy. Annoyance, pain.</i>	<i>Gêner. La gêne.</i>
This shoe pinches me.	Ce soulier me gêne.
He seems always under constraint in the house of his friends.	Il semble toujours à la gêne chez ses amis.
That man annoys me (or is in my way).	Cet homme me gêne.
He was quite too free.	Il était sans gêne.
I am pressed for money.	Je suis gêné (or dans la gêne).
We were much incommoded in that carriage.	Nous étions bien gênés dans cette voiture.
I experience always a little constraint in his presence.	J'éprouve toujours un peu de gêne en sa présence.
<i>An elephant. The infantry.</i>	<i>Un éléphant. L'infanterie.</i>
<i>The subjunctive. To mark.</i>	<i>Le subjonctif. Marquer.</i>
<i>Interrogative. Negative.</i>	<i>Interrogatif. Négatif.</i>
<i>So much the better. A plain.</i>	<i>Tant mieux. Une plaine.</i>
<i>An earthquake.</i>	<i>Un tremblement de terre.</i>
It is subject to earthquakes.	Elle est sujette à des tremblements de terre.
So much the better for us.	Tant mieux pour nous.
He threatened him with the cane.	Il l'a menacé du bâton.

1. Le maître enseigne aux écoliers à exprimer leurs idées. 2. Cet homme vous a menacé de coups de bâton. 3. Nous ne sommes pas gênés ici, mais dans cette voiture nous l'étions horriblement. 4. Votre père approuve-t-il que vous vendiez cette maison? 5. Il n'approuve pas que je la vende à si bon marché. 6. Cet élève mérite que nous le récompensions. 7. Vous étonnez-vous que j'aie enseigné l'arithmétique à ces enfants? 8. Non, je m'étonne que vous leur ayez enseigné les sciences. 9. Cet homme m'a prié de lui expliquer les principes (*principles*) de notre gouvernement. 10. Encore qu' (*or bien qu'*) (*or quoiqu'*)

<sup>1</sup> ap-pron-ver, <sup>2</sup> mé-ri-ter, <sup>3</sup> men-s-oer, <sup>4</sup> i-dée, <sup>5</sup> gê-nor, <sup>6</sup> gê-ne, <sup>7</sup> é-lé-phan-t, <sup>8</sup> in-fan-te-rie, <sup>9</sup> sub-jonc-tif, <sup>10</sup> mar-ker, <sup>11</sup> in-té-ro-ga-tif, <sup>12</sup> né-ga-tif, <sup>13</sup> plain-e, <sup>14</sup> trem-ble-ment.

il soit jeune, il est sage et prudent. 11. Pour peu que je boive du vin, cela me fait mal. 12. On se servait autrefois des éléphants à la guerre. 13. Cet homme est soldat d'infanterie. 14. Savez-vous tous les temps du subjonctif? 15. Je les sais assez bien. 16. Qui a marqué ces serviettes? 17. La servante les a marquées. 18. Les verbes interrogatifs et négatifs gouvernent le subjonctif. 19. La Pologne est un pays de plaines. 20. La Sicile est sujette à de grands tremblements de terre.

I.—1. Do they teach the dumb (*muets*) to express their ideas? 2. They teach them to express their ideas with their fingers. 3. Did the master threaten that little boy? 4. He threatened him with blows of a stick. 5. Is the subjunctive placed after negative verbs? 6. It is placed after negative and interrogative verbs. 7. Does our neighbor approve of what his son has done? 8. No; he can not approve of (*une*) conduct so strange. 9. Does that boy do his duty well? 10. Yes; he deserves praise (*des louanges*). 11. Did not the master threaten that pupil? 12. No; far from threatening him, he always praised him. 13. Did they formerly make use of elephants in war? 14. Yes; and they make use of them still in the East Indies (*Indes orientales*). 15. Is not the French infantry very brave? 16. Yes, sir; and the English infantry is brave also.

17. Does this plain extend far? 18. It extends as far as the mountain. 19. In New Orleans it hardly ever snows, and when it does, the snow usually melts as soon as it has fallen. 20. Did the servant break those panes of glass? 21. He broke several panes (*carreaux*) in washing them. 22. That wall is two feet and a half thick, and ten feet high. 23. Is that minister well instructed? 24. He is well versed (*versé*) in the science of government. 25. What do they teach your brother? 26. They teach him grammar and arithmetic. 27. Does your father go away to-day? 28. He has gone away already. 29. When did he go away? 30. He and my brother went away on Thursday. 31. Had they gone away when you arrived? 32. No; as soon as I had arrived, they went away.

II.—1. Did you break those panes of glass? 2. I did not break them, but I saw them broken. 3. Where is your sister? 4. I am afraid that she has gone away with my father. 5. Did she say that she was going away? 6. She did not say that she was going away; and my brother did not say that she had gone away. 7. Have many great men appeared in the world? 8. A few only have appeared at long intervals (*intervalles*). 9. Have your cousins come down from their room? 10. They came down, but they have gone up again. 11. Have they not come down again? 12. No, sir; they went up, and have remained in their chamber. 13. Has twelve o'clock struck? 14. Yes; twelve o'clock struck when we were in the street.

15. Has any one wound up (*remonté*) the clock? 16. I wound it up this morning. 17. Did you come here yesterday? 18. I came here yesterday as soon as I had shaved. 19. Has not your cousin

hurt his arm? 20. Yes, sir; in falling from his horse, he broke his arm. 21. Will you have the goodness to put this letter in (à) the post-office? 22. With much pleasure. 23. Have you paid the farmer for his carriage? 24. I have paid him for it. 25. When and how much did you pay him for it? 26. I paid him five hundred dollars for it yesterday. 27. Does your brother play on the violin? 28. He plays on the violin and on the flute. 29. Do you like to play cards? 30. No, sir; I like better to play ball.

31. Some children, one of them blind of one eye, discoursed thus on the merit of their masters. 32. "How many hours does yours grant you for sleeping?" said one child, who appeared to like the labor ready made (*tout fait*). 33. "Twelve hours," answered the child interrogated (*interrogé*). 34. "Twelve hours!" exclaimed the one-eyed one; "my master (*à moi*) grants me only six!" 35. "That is just," replied another child, "for you have only one eye to shut, and my friend has two."

## 18.—DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. In English we often say that a person does a thing, meaning that he causes it to be done; as, *He has built a house*, meaning he has caused one to be built, or hired carpenters to build one. In such cases the French use very commonly the verb *faire* before the infinitive; thus,

He has built a large store.

Il a fait bâtir un grand magasin.

We are making a fine garden.

Nous faisons faire un beau jardin.

I am repairing my house.

Je fais réparer ma maison.

As soon as I had bought those woods,

Sitôt que j'eus acheté ces bois, je les fis exploiter.

I cut them down.

Our neighbor cultivates his fields well.

Notre voisin fait bien cultiver ses champs.

2. When the labor is actually done by the person spoken of, the French expression corresponds to the English.

The carpenter builds himself a good house.

Le charpentier se bâtit une bonne maison.

The gardener is making a fine garden.

Le jardinier fait un beau jardin.

And I also. And thou also.

Et moi aussi. Et toi aussi.

And he also. And she also.

Et lui aussi. Et elle aussi.

And they also.

Et eux aussi. Et elles aussi.

A substantive. The herb, grass.

Un substantif. L'herbe.

To awake, rouse up.

Éveiller, réveiller.

To awake (one's self).

S'éveiller, se réveiller.

The author. The dancing-school.

L'auteur. L'école de danse.

<i>The poet. To dream.</i>	<i>Le poète. Rêver (de bef. noun).</i>
<i>A marriage. To prepare.</i>	<i>Un mariage. Préparer (à bef. inf.).</i>
<i>Masculine. Feminine.</i>	<i>Masculin. Féminin.</i>
<i>Tolerably. To delay, to be long.</i>	<i>Passablement. Tarder (à bef. inf.).</i>
<i>My leisure. This occupation.</i>	<i>Mon loisir. Cette occupation.</i>
<i>Sacred. To relate.</i>	<i>Saint. Raconter.</i>
<i>To manifest. The approach.</i>	<i>Manifester. L'approche.</i>
<i>It is necessary not to delay a moment.</i>	<i>Il ne faut pas tarder un moment.</i>
<i>They have delayed too long.</i>	<i>On a trop tardé.</i>

1. Allez-vous réveiller le capitaine? 2. Non, monsieur, il a défendu qu'on le réveillât. 3. Votre frère va-t-il à l'école de danse? 4. Il y va, et moi aussi. 5. Vous éveillez-vous de bonne heure le matin? 6. Je m'éveille tous les matins à cinq heures, et toi aussi. 7. Rêvez-vous plus souvent que votre frère? 8. Je rêve souvent, et lui aussi. 9. Votre sœur n'a-t-elle pas plus de loisir que vos frères? 10. Elle a bien du loisir, et eux aussi. 11. Tous les substantifs de votre leçon sont-ils masculins? 12. Non, quelques-uns sont masculins et les autres féminins. 13. Le domestique donne de l'herbe fraîche au cheval. 14. Avez-vous bien dormi la nuit passée? 15. Non, monsieur, je me suis réveillé trois ou quatre fois. 16. Vous éveillez-vous facilement? 17. Oui, monsieur, le moindre bruit m'éveille. 18. Le tonnerre m'a réveillé plusieurs fois la nuit dernière. 19. Cet auteur est poète; n'est-ce pas? 20. Oui, c'est un bon poète. 21. Il y aura un mariage chez nous ce soir. 22. Je me prépare à recevoir mes amis; ils tardent beaucoup à venir. 23. Les Saintes Ecritures racontent l'histoire des Juifs (*Jews*). 24. Vous écrivez passablement bien.

I.—1. At what o'clock did you awake this morning? 2. I awoke at five. 3. Did your father forbid any one to wake him? 4. Yes; but the noise of the thunder woke him very early. 5. Is that substantive masculine or feminine? 6. It is feminine. 7. Is that man an author? 8. Yes, sir; he is a great poet. 9. Does that animal eat grass? 10. He eats grass and grain. 11. What is the physician preparing? 12. He is preparing this medicine for the patient. 13. Will you please give me a glass of ice-water? 14. I recite my lessons tolerably well, and you also; but that lazy scholar makes many mistakes. 15. What are now your occupations? 16. I am at present without occupation. 17. Did an earthquake manifest to the prophet Elijah (*prophète Elie*) the approach of God? 18. No; God was neither in the earthquake nor in the hurricane; but a gentle zephyr (*zéphyr*) was felt (*se fit sentir*), and God manifested himself in the zephyr. 19. In the same way also did he manifest himself in Jesus Christ.

20. What would you do if you had much money? 21. I would build a beautiful house. 22. Would you cultivate a garden? 23. Yes; I would make a fine garden. 24. Are you going away this

po-ë-ta, rê-ver, ma-ri-à-je, pré-pa-rer, mas-cu-lin, fé-mi-nin, pas-sa-ble-ment, tar-der, loi-  
sîr, oc-cu-pa-tion, saint, ra-con-ter, ma-ni-fes-ter, ap-pro-che.

evening? 25. I am going away at four o'clock. 26. Are your friends going away with you? 27. They have gone away already. 28. When did they go away? 29. They went away last week. 30. Had they gone away when I arrived? 31. They had just gone away. 32. Does your father believe that we are going away? 33. He thinks that you have gone away. 34. The sacred Scriptures relate the history of Jesus Christ.

II.—1. Do you like to take a ride in a carriage better than on horseback? 2. Yes, sir; but my brother likes to take a ride on horseback better than in a carriage. 3. Do you go to bed early or late? 4. I go to bed late, for I can not sleep when I go to bed early. 5. Does it thunder? 6. It thunders and rains. 7. Does it often snow here? 8. Yes; and it often hails also in winter. 9. Does that man flatter himself that we have come to make him a visit? 10. Yes; he believes that we have come to see him. 11. That man flatters himself that he is learned; do you believe that he is? 12. No; I believe that he is mistaken. 13. Will the moon shine to-night? 14. It will shine almost all night. 15. Have you locked your door? 16. No, sir; I shut it, but I have not locked it.

17. Your servant, sir; where are you going? You look as if you were very much hurried. 18. Not exactly; I am going to the house of my cousin, Mr. Cook. 19. Is not his lady sick? 20. She has been very sick; but she feels herself much better now. 21. I am delighted at it. What is the news? have you read the newspapers? 22. Yes; but there is nothing interesting. 23. Apropos, I have a piece of news (*une nouvelle*) to inform (*apprendre*) you of: Mr. Brown marries (*épouse*) Miss Hewes. 24. Is it possible! I should never have thought (*songé*) of such a marriage. 25. Nor I either (*moi non plus*); it is very strange. 26. My cousins have begun to study Spanish, and I also. 27. I like that language much, and they also. 28. This wine is tolerably good. 29. Is the merchant building a new store? 30. Yes, sir; he is building a new store and a new house.

## 19.—DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. Prepositions compounded with *à* are generally followed by *de*.

Around. <i>Above.</i>	Autour de. <i>Au-dessus de.</i>
Beside. Beyond.	À côté de. <i>Au-delà de.</i>
Even with. Unknown to.	À fleur de. <i>À l'insu de.</i>
Even with the ground.	À fleur de terre.
On a level with the water.	À fleur d'eau.
Above the clouds	Au-dessus des nuages.

Beyond all belief.	Au-delà de toute croyance.
To confess. To pour.	Confesser. Verser.
A story. A wheel.	Un étage. Une roue.
The lot, fate, destiny.	Le sort, le destin, la destinée.
To decide. That decides the question.	Décider. Cela décide la question.
To attack. To break.	Attaquer. Rompre.
Those children break every thing.	Ces enfants rompent tout.
By means of. Afterward.	Au moyen de. Ensuite.
A bridge. The throat.	Un pont. La gorge.
The plan. To execute.	Le plan. Exécuter.
To employ to advantage.	Faire valoir.
He employs his talents to advantage.	Il fait valoir ses talents.
To decide the fate.	Décider du sort.
Pour some water on my hands.	Versez-moi de l'eau sur les mains.
A house of two stories.	Une maison à deux étages.
A four-wheel carriage.	Une voiture à quatre roues.
The conductor. His presence.	Le conducteur. Sa présence.
Let us study first, and after that we will read.	Etudions d'abord, nous lirons ensuite.
By means of his money he will succeed.	Au moyen de son argent il réussira.
Are you a judge of goods?	Vous connaissez-vous en marchandises?
I am not a judge of them.	Je ne m'y connais pas.
The merchant is a better judge of them than I.	Le négociant s'y connaît mieux que moi.

2. To know by la connaître à la French.

I know the conductor by his voice.	Je reconnais le conducteur à la voix.
By what do you know that man?	A quoi reconnaissez-vous cet homme?
I know him by his white hat.	Je le reconnais à son chapeau blanc.
Your presence is necessary here.	Votre présence est nécessaire ici.

1. Ce petit garçon confesse-t-il sa faute? 2. Il confesse toute la vérité. 3. Versez-moi un peu d'eau, s'il vous plaît. 4. Je viens d'acheter une maison à trois étages et une voiture à quatre roues. 5. Cet homme est malheureux, je plains son sort. 6. Avez-vous décidé d'aller à la campagne? 7. Oui, monsieur, j'ai décidé de partir demain. 8. Le général va-t-il attaquer les ennemis? 9. Oui, il rompra le pont, et ensuite il les attaquera. 10. Pourra-t-il exécuter son plan? 11. Il l'exécutera facilement. 12. Ce malade a-t-il mal à la gorge? 13. Oui, il a la gorge bien enflée. 14. J'ai donné du fruit aux enfants; chacun a sa part. 15. Cet homme réussira, il sait faire valoir ses talents. 16. Vous serez riche, vous savez faire valoir votre argent. 17. Le général est-il grand? 18. Oui, sa taille (*stature*) est fort au-dessus de la taille ordinaire. 19. Avez-vous réussi à apprendre l'espagnol? 20. Oui, j'ai réussi au delà de mes espérances (*hopes*).

cro-yance, con-fes-ser, ver-ser, é-tage, roue, sort, des-tin, des-ti-née, dé-ci-der, at-ta-quer,  
rompre, mo-yen, en-suite, pont, gorge, plan, ex-é-cu-ter, con-duc-teur, pré-sence.



I.—1. Please to pour a little water on my hands. 2. Has the thief confessed his crime? 3. He has confessed all. 4. What does that lady wish to sell? 5. She wishes to sell this three-story house, and her new four-wheel carriage. 6. How far is it to that bridge? 7. It is almost two miles. 8. The foundations (*fondements*) of that building (*édifice*) are already even with the earth.

9. There were seen (*on vit*) on the plains of Zama, the two greatest generals of their time to engage in (*donner*) a battle, which was to decide the fate of Rome and of Carthage. 10. Scipio opposed (*opposa*) the flower of his army to the weakest part of the army of the enemy. 11. Hannibal (*Annibal*) intended to break the Roman lines by means of his elephants, and to attack afterward upon all points (*points*) at once. 12. Scipio perceived his intention, and placed his light infantry opposite to the elephants. 13. At the moment when these terrible animals took their start (*élan*) the infantry of Scipio opened to the right and left. 14. The elephants, which their conductors could not stop, passed the openings (*intervalles*) which Scipio had provided (*ménagés*) for them, and which closed again (*renfermèrent*) immediately. 15. Then the Roman general executed his plan with much presence of mind. 16. It was five hundred and fifty years after the founding (*la fondation*) of Rome, that P. Cornelius Scipio conquered at Zama the only republic that could struggle (*lutter*) against the rising (*naissante*) greatness of Rome.

II.—1. What does your father do in the morning? 2. As soon as he has shaved and dressed, he takes his coffee, and then he goes out. 3. Do you wish us to play on the piano? 4. No, miss; I prefer that you sing. 5. Are you acquainted with madam B.? 6. Yes, miss; she is a well-bred lady. 7. Where were you when we called you? 8. I was in my room writing (*à écrire*) a letter. 9. Have you finished it? 10. Yes; I had almost finished it when I heard you, and I finished before coming. 11. You did well; have you nothing to do at present? 12. No; I have entirely (*tout-à-fait*) finished my work; I have nothing to do until to-morrow. 13. Well, let us go and see Charles. 14. With (*de*) all my heart; I told him that I intended to go to his house this evening. 15. How was he when you saw him? 16. He coughed a little, but he was well otherwise (*d'ailleurs*). 17. Every body coughs now.

18. Are you a judge of music? 19. I am not a judge of it at all. 20. Is Charles a better judge of it than you? 21. No; I am as good a judge of it as he. 22. By what do you know that man? 23. I know him by his cravat. 24. Do you know the Spaniard by his voice? 25. No; I know him by his coat.

26. Some one said before an Englishman, newly arrived in France, that his knife cut like a razor (*comme un rasoir*). 27. The Englishman asked some one of his acquaintance what *comme un*

*rasoir* signified (*signifiait*). 28. They told him without other explanation (*explication*) that it signified *very well*. 29. The next day (*le lendemain*) a lady asks him how he does. 30. "You are very good," cries he; "like a razor."

## 20.—VINGTIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. In exclamations beginning with *how* and an adjective, *how* is rendered by *que*, and sometimes by *comme*, in French, and the adjective placed at the end of the clause; as,

How tall you are!	Que (comme) vous êtes grand!
How beautiful that lady is!	Que cette dame est belle!
How black those clouds are!	Que ces nuages sont noirs!
How small your foot is!	Que vous avez le pied petit!
How changed he is!	Comme il est changé!

2. In speaking of a cup or vessel which takes *à* to denote its use, we commonly use the article when we mean the contents also; *de* is used to denote the vessel full, or quantity.

The milk-cup. The pepper-box.	Le pot au lait.* La boîte au poivre.
A milk-pot. A pepper-box.	Un pot à lait. Une boîte à poivre.
A pot of milk. A box of pepper.	Un pot de lait. Une boîte de poivre.
Give me the vinegar-bottle.	Donnez-moi la bouteille au vinaigre.
Give me a vinegar-bottle.	Donnez-moi une bouteille à vinaigre.
Give me a bottle of vinegar.	Donnez-moi une bouteille de vinaigre.
That food. The memory.	Cet aliment. La mémoire.
Amusing. Free.	Amusant. Libre (de bef. inf.).
Christ. The birth.	Le Christ. La naissance.
A catholic. To create.	Un catholique. Créer.
A pail, bucket. A prayer.	Un seau. Une prière.
The hearth. The tongs.	Le foyer, lâtre. Les pincettes.
A railroad. That epoch, time.	Un chemin de fer. Cette époque.
Ignominious. A cross.	Ignominieux. À travers.
His rank. To leave.	Son rang. Quitter.
Nor I either. Nor we either.	Ni moi non plus. Ni nous non plus.
Nor thou either. Nor you either.	Ni toi non plus. Ni vous non plus.
To preserve. The Christian era.	Conserver. L'ère chrétienne.
Nor he either. Nor she either.	Ni lui non plus. Ni elle non plus.
Nor they either.	Ne eux non plus. Ni elles non plus.
Go thou away. Let him go away.	Va-t-en. Qu'il s'en aille.
Go away. Let us go away.	Allez-vous-en. Allons-nous-en.

\* At the table we may say, *donnez-moi le pot au lait*, when we want the milk; at the crockery-shop we say, *donnez-moi un pot à lait*, when we want the vessel merely.

17 1 13 3 6 20 1 22 8 12 13 7 8 1 15 12 5 6 7  
 pot, a-il-mént, mé-moir, a-mu-zant, libre, Christ, nais-sance, ca-tho-li-que, cré-er, seau,  
 12 7 20 12 2 14 8 5 15 12 16 12 17 9 1 7 8 12 6 21 7 6  
 pri-ère, fo-yer, âtre, pin-cette, é-poke, i-gno-mi-nieux, tra-vers, rang, kil-ter, con-sar-ver,  
 4 12 8  
 ère, chré-ti-enna.

Are you displeased with me for that?	Me savez-vous mauvais gré de cela?
No, I am pleased with you for it.	Non, je vous en sais bon gré.
We are pleased with you for what you have said.	Nous vous savons bon gré de ce que vous avez dit.
We are much pleased with you for it.	Nous vous en savons beaucoup de gré.
He goes away by the railroad.	Il s'en va par le chemin de fer.

1. Il est amusant de jouer aux cartes, mais souvent j'aime mieux lire.  
 2. Ce malade a perdu la mémoire. 3. Quels aliments sont les meilleurs?  
 4. Les aliments les plus simples sont les plus sains et les meilleurs.  
 5. Ce soldat est-il libre? 6. Oui, monsieur, il était prisonnier, mais à présent il est libre. 7. Dieu a créé le ciel et la terre. 8. Cette femme a grand soin de conserver sa beauté. 9. Le Christ est l'auteur de notre religion. 10. Je veux la pelle et les pincettes pour arranger le feu. 11. Elles sont là sur le foyer. 12. Le domestique est allé chercher un seau d'eau. 13. Est-il catholique? 14. Oui, c'est un catholique qui remplit tous ses devoirs. 15. Quel livre avez-vous? 16. C'est un livre de prières. 17. La naissance de Jésus-Christ est l'époque où commence l'ère chrétienne. 18. Annibal sut échapper à une captivité ignominieuse. 19. Allez-vous à travers les champs? 20. Non, je vais à travers ces bois. 21. Auguste était admis (*admitted*) au rang des dieux. 22. Le général vient de quitter la ville. 23. Votre père l'a-t-il vu? 24. Il ne l'a pas vu, ni moi non plus.

I.—1. Where are the shovel and tongs? 2. They are in the chimney-corner; do you need them? 3. Give me the tongs. 4. I have taken a little cold, and I have a sore throat. 5. Do you like simple food? 6. I always prefer the most simple food, because it is the most healthy. 7. Christ has commanded us to do good to our enemies. 8. Did not God create the heavens and the earth? 9. Yes; he is the creator (*créateur*) of all that we see; he is always creating something new. 10. You set out for Charleston to-day; do you go there by the railroad or by the steamboat? 11. I go there by the railroad. 12. Tell the servant to bring a pail of water. 13. Is the doctor a catholic or a protestant (*protestant*)? 14. I do not know. 15. What book has he? 16. It is a prayer-book; he says his prayers morning and evening.

17. Are there any persons who are entirely free? 18. There are very few; I am not entirely free, nor you either. 19. Have you and your brothers read that amusing book? 20. No, sir; I have not read it, nor they either. 21. Do you and your sister preserve all your letters? 22. No, sir; I do not preserve them, nor she either. 23. Do not you and your cousins lack memory? 24. No; they do not lack memory, nor we either. 25. Are you displeased with me for what I have done? 26. No, sir; I am pleased with you for it. 27. We are much pleased with you for having kept our secret. 28. That man is displeased with me for having told him the truth. 29. How beautiful that lady is! How good she is! 30. How generous you are! 31. How black those clouds are! it is going to rain.

II.—1. Give me the pepper-box. 2. Pass me the milk-cup. 3. What has the servant broken? 4. He has broken a vinegar bottle. 5. From the birth of Jesus Christ until now is more than 1860 years. 6. Cæsar Augustus lived at the commencement of the Christian era. 7. Have you and your brother written this exercise? 8. No, sir; I have not written it, nor he either. 9. What have you bought? 10. I have bought a butter-cup (*pot*) and a pot of mustard. 11. There are several bridges in London, and some are of iron.

12. Hannibal was able (*sut*) to escape an ignominious captivity by swallowing (*en avalant*) the poison (*poison*) which he carried always about (*sur*) him. 13. Such was the end which fortune reserved (*réservait*) to this great man for the price of the passage of the Alps (*Alpes*) and of the victories of Trebia, of the lake of Thrasimènus, and of Cannæ (*Cannes*). 14. At the same time the conqueror of Hannibal left Rome which he had saved (*sauvée*), and went to live at his country-seat (*sa campagne*) near Linternum; carrying into his retreat (*sa retraite*) only that which envy could not take from (*enlever*) him, his personal dignity (*dignité personnelle*). 15. There he died. 16. The inhabitants of the place, persuaded (*persuadés*) that he had been admitted to the rank of the gods, whom he had served, affirmed (*s'assuraient*) that a miraculous serpent (*serpent miraculeux*) guarded the approach to his tomb (*dé-fendait l'accès de son tombeau*) placed under a myrtle (*myrte*) which he had planted (*planté*) himself, and under the shade of which he came often to repose (*se reposer*).

## 21.—VINGT-ET-UNIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. Some adjectives vary their meaning as they are placed before or after their substantives; thus,

<i>Un grand homme.</i>	A great man.	<i>Un homme grand.</i>	A tall man.
<i>Un pauvre homme.</i>	A man to be pitied.	<i>Un homme pauvre</i>	A man in poverty.
<i>Un brave homme.</i>	A worthy man.	<i>Un homme brave.</i>	A brave man.
<i>Un honnête homme.</i>	An honest man.	<i>Un homme honnête.</i>	A polite man.
<i>Un galant homme.</i>	A man of honor.	<i>Un homme galant.</i>	A gallant man.

2. A simple man is *bonhomme*, commonly written as one word; a good man, *homme bon*, or *brave homme*, *homme de bien*, etc.

The first quality in society is to be a *good man*. La première qualité dans la société est d'être un *homme bon* (better *homme de bien*).

He is a *simpleton*, whom they make believe whatever they please. C'est un *bonhomme*, à qui l'on fait croire tout ce qu'on veut.

For more on this subject, see page 485.

A stair-case. The day before, eve.	Un escalier. La veille.
A safety-railling. The old woman.	Un garde-fou. La vieille.
A fireman. A limit.	Un pompier. Une borne.
Christmas. Christmas eve.	Noël. La veille de Noël.
The parlor. To get drunk.	Le salon. S'enivrer.
A preacher. To preach.	Un prédicateur. Prêcher.
A priest. According to.	Un prêtre. Selon.
A chill. The lightning.	Un frisson. La foudre.
To direct. The retreat.	Diriger. La retraite.
A protestant.	Un protestant. Une protestante.

8. We have already seen that in some phrases the English verb *to keep* is rendered in French by *tenir*. Such phrases are very numerous.

He keeps a hotel, a tavern.	Il tient un hotel, une auberge.
The sick man keeps his bed.	Le malade tient (better <i>garde</i> ) le lit.
She keeps school.	Elle tient école.
I keep the door open.	Je tiens la porte ouverte.
I keep my word, promise.	Je tiens ma parole, promesse.
Keep your eyes shut.	Tenez les yeux fermés.
The chill has attacked him.	Le frisson l'a pris.
He acts according to circumstances.	Il agit selon les circonstances.
The fireman ascends the stairs.	Le pompier monte l'escalier.
He gets drunk on brandy.	Il s'enivre d'eau de vie.
The parlor is lighted.	Le salon est éclairé.
A safety-railling is necessary on this bridge.	Il faut un garde-fou sur ce pont.

1. Connaissez-vous madame S. ? 2. Oui, c'est une bonne vieille. 3. Monsieur A. prêche-t-il bien ? 4. Oui, madame, c'est un prédicateur très-éloquent. 5. Agissez-vous toujours selon votre opinion ? 6. Non, je suis obligé quelquefois d'agir selon les circonstances. 7. Cette petite fille a-t-elle peur de la foudre ? 8. Elle en a bien peur. 9. Quand irez-vous à la ville ? 10. J'irai la veille de Noël. 11. Peut-on toujours être heureux ? 12. Non, monsieur, on ne peut échapper à sa destinée. 13. Ce prêtre prêche-t-il bien ? 14. Il prêche très-bien. 15. N'avez-vous pas des livres dans le salon ? 16. J'y en ai quelques-uns. 17. L'Espagne a pour bornes deux mers et les Pyrénées. 18. Notre général n'a-t-il pas trop d'ambition ? 19. Oui, son ambition n'a point de bornes. 20. Où dirigez-vous cet étranger ? 21. Je lui indique le chemin de l'hôtel. 22. Ce salon est bien éclairé. 23. Cet arbre est très-grand ; il s'élève au-dessus de tous les autres.

I.—1. Did the firemen go up those stairs ? 2. They ascended them, but they came down again. 3. Is that man a priest ? 4. No ; he is a doctor. 5. Are there two parlors in this house ? 6. There is a large one and a small one. 7. Does that man get drunk

8 1 125 8 1 4 10 126 21 126 10 17 5 1 21 8 12 6 5 13 1  
 es-ca-lier, veille, gar-de-fou, vieil-le, pom-pier, borne, ad-tel, sa-lon, en-l-vrer, pré-di-ca-  
 11 2 12 21 10 12 12 4 4 1 12 6 8 12 21 2  
 teur, prêtre, selon, fris-son, foudre, di-ri-ger, re-traitte, protes-tant, cir-con-stances.

often? 8. Yes; he is a drunkard; he gets drunk every day on brandy, wine, or beer. 9. Does the master pay the workmen according to their work? 10. He pays each one according to his work. 11. Is your preacher eloquent? 12. He is extremely eloquent. 13. Does he preach twice on Sunday? 14. He preaches three times every Sunday. 15. Are there many churches in your village? 16. There are only two, one catholic and one protestant. 17. Is that old woman rich? 18. She is not rich; she is poor. 19. That poet likes retirement (*la retraite*). 20. Yes; he has a taste for retirement.

21. Will you be here on Christmas? 22. I shall be here on Christmas eve. 23. That tree is struck with lightning. 24. The fever is usually preceded by a chill. 25. What is the matter with that sick man? 26. The chill has attacked him. 27. Who directs your studies? 28. The master directs them. 29. What makes so much noise? 30. The firemen make it. 31. Why does that child cry? 32. Because he has fallen from the top of that staircase. 33. Is it necessary to obey the laws? 34. Yes; whosoever shall not obey them will be punished. 35. Was it necessary that the sick man should take a ride on horseback? 36. No; it was suitable that he should take a ride in a carriage. 37. Has your brother debts? 38. Yes; but he will pay his debts soon. 39. Why do you keep your windows open? 40. I keep them open because it is warm.

II.—1. Why do you keep your eyes shut? 2. I keep them shut because they pain me. 3. What does that Frenchman do? 4. He keeps a dancing-school. 5. Did your friend think that you had been sick? 6. He was afraid that I had died. 7. Was your door locked last evening? 8. No; although I had gone out, my door was not locked. 9. Your father came down from his room this morning; has he not gone up to it again? 10. He went up again, and has again come down. 11. Does the master grant you much time to play? 12. We can always play, provided we have finished our lessons. 13. Has your friend succeeded in paying that man for the house? 14. Yes, sir; but I doubt his having succeeded without you. 15. Did not those men run away the other day as soon as they had seen the enemy? 16. They ran away before the enemy had come.

17. Malek, general of the calif (*calife*) Mostali, in the last important victory which he gained over the Greeks, made prisoner the emperor Alexis. 18. Malek asked the prince what treatment (*traitement*) he expected from his conqueror. 19. "If the calif makes war as a king," answered the emperor, "he will send me back (*renverra*) without ransom (*rançon*); if he makes it as a merchant, he will sell me; if he makes it as a butcher (*boucher*), he will cut my throat (*m'égorgera*)." 20. The general, admiring the

noble boldness (*audace*) of the emperor, sent him back without ransom.

21. A thief having introduced himself (*s'étant introduit*) during the night into the room of a poor man, looked for something to steal, but found nothing. 22. The poor man, who was not sleeping, said to him laughing: "Thou hast mistaken, my friend, in coming during the night to look for something here, where *I* can find nothing during the day."

## 22.—VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON.

### MISCELLANEOUS RULES AND WORDS.

1. *C'est*, with *à* before the infinitive, denotes turn; with *de*, right or duty.

It is your turn to begin.

*C'est à vous à commencer.*

It is my turn to recite.

*C'est à moi à réciter.*

It belongs to the master to teach.

*C'est au maître d'enseigner.*

It belongs to the scholar to learn.

*C'est à l'écuyer d'apprendre.*

2. What with an infinitive is translated by *que*, and if the sentence be negative, *pas* is omitted.

I do not know what to do.

*Je ne sais que faire.*

He does not know what to say.

*Il ne sait que dire.*

A presbyterian. To embrace, kiss.

*Un presbytérien. Embrasser.*

Episcopal. Methodist.

*Épiscopal. Méthodiste.*

The poison. An existence.

*Le poison. Une existence.*

A fish. Unitarian.

*Un poisson. Unitaire.*

A romance, novel. To separate.

*Un roman. Séparer.*

A department. Executive.

*Un département. Exécutif.*

Legislative. Judicial.

*Législatif. Judiciaire.*

An adviser. Supreme.

*Un conseiller. Suprême*

Inferior. A tavern.

*Inférieur. Une taverne, un cabaret.*

3. The imperfect tense of *venir*, followed by *de* and an infinitive, denotes that the action of the infinitive *had just* been done.

I *had just* arrived.

*Je venais d'arriver.*

He *had just* gone away.

*Il venait de s'en aller.*

4. When a collective noun, followed by *de* and another noun, form the subject, the verb agrees with that one of the two nouns which forms the *leading idea*.

A troop of assassins entered the room. *Une troupe d'assassins entra dans la chambre.*

A troop of nymphs crowned with flowers followed her. *Une troupe de nymphes couronnées de fleurs la suivaient.*

A dozen men have come. *Une douzaine d'hommes sont venus.*

pres-by-té-rien, em-bras-ser, é-pis-co-pal, mé-tho-dist, poi-son, ex-é-cu-tif, u-ni-taire, ro-man, sé-pa-rer, dé-par-te-ment, ex-é-cu-tif, lé-gis-la-tif, ju-di-claire, con-seil-ler, su-prême, in-fé-rieur, ta-verne, ca-ba-ret.

Your dozen of apples is on the table.	Votre douzaine de pommes est sur la table.
What is that?	Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela ? or, Qu'est-ce que cela ? or, Qu'est cela ?
I do not know what that is.	Je ne sais pas ce que c'est que cela.
I do not know what it is.	Je ne sais pas ce que c'est.
What a pity !	Quel dommage !
What a beautiful day !	Quelle belle journée !
To be familiar with.	Être au fait de.
I am familiar with that.	Je suis au fait de cela.
She is familiar with housekeeping.	Elle est au fait du ménage.
My watch is ten minutes too fast.	Ma montre avance de dix minutes.
Yours is half an hour too slow.	La vôtre retarde d'un quart d'heure.
I have set that clock forward an hour.	J'ai avancé cette pendule d'une heure.
Put your watch back five minutes.	Retardez votre montre de cinq minutes.
Wind up that watch and set it.	Montez cette montre et mettez-la à l'heure (or réglez-la).
They have set that clock (right).	On a mis cette horloge à l'heure.

1. Où est le nouveau roman que vous avez acheté ? 2. Il est dans le salon sur la table. 3. Combien d'églises y a-t-il dans votre village ? 4. Il y en a cinq, une catholique, une presbytérienne, une épiscopale, une méthodiste et une unitaire. 5. Cet écolier a l'esprit capable d'embrasser toutes sortes de sciences. 6. La mer sépare la France de l'Angleterre. 7. Tout ce qui est au monde tient son existence de Dieu. 8. Y a-t-il du poisson sur la table ? 9. Il y a du poisson frais et du salé. 10. Votre ami est-il arrivé ? 11. Oui, monsieur, il venait d'arriver quand je l'ai vu ce matin. 12. Aviez-vous déjeuné quand je vous ai vu ce matin ? 13. Oui, je venais de déjeuner. 14. C'est à vous à réciter ; n'est-ce pas ? 15. Non, monsieur, c'est à Charles. 16. Il y a trois départements de notre gouvernement, l'exécutif, le législatif, et le judiciaire. 17. Les conseillers du président se nomment le cabinet. 18. Où est votre cheval ? 19. Je l'ai laissé à l'auberge. 20. Je suis au fait de ces affaires.

I.—1. It is my turn to recite ; is it not ? 2. No ; it is your brother's. 3. It is my right to go out to-day ; is it not ? 4. Yes, it is yours. 5. Where were your brothers, when I met you yesterday ? 6. They had just set out for the country. 7. How many churches are there in this village ? 8. There are eight ; two Presbyterian, two Catholic, two Methodist, one Episcopal, and one Unitarian. 9. If you took that poison, would you die ? 10. I should die. 11. Did the mother find her child ? 12. She found him, and embraced him tenderly (*tendrement*). 13. What did your boy buy at the market ? 14. He bought some salt fish and some fresh. 15. Have you read this new novel ? 16. No, sir ; I never read novels. 17. Does Europe touch Africa ? 18. No ; Europe touches Asia, but the sea separates it from Africa.

19. That man does not know what to do with his money. 20.



Do not all animals hold their existence from God? 21. Yes; all that there is in the world holds its existence from him. 22. Had I better read this novel? 23. No; you had better read this history. 24. What a beautiful day! 25. Yes; the weather is superb; it is long since we have had a time so beautiful and so healthy. 26. Did you go to the play last night? 27. Yes; and I stayed there until eleven; I amused myself much. 28. And you; how did you pass the evening? 29. I heard Miss L. 30. How did you like her? 31. Oh! I assure you that she merits well the name of *Queen of Song*. 32. It belongs to the master to teach; does it not? 33. It belongs to the master to teach, and to the scholars to learn. 34. I had just finished my exercise when the master came. 35. Is that young girl familiar with housekeeping? 36. She is very familiar with it.

II.—1. The government of the United States is divided (*divisé*) into three departments; the executive, the legislative, and the judicial. 2. The executive consists of (*consiste en*) a president and his advisers, called the cabinet; the legislative consists of a senate and house of representatives; the judicial is composed of nine judges of the supreme court, with several judges of the inferior courts. 3. The senate is composed of two members furnished (*fournis*) by each state. 4. The vice-president of the United States is president of the senate. 5. The house of representatives is composed of representatives sent by each state according to the number of its inhabitants. 6. Is not your watch too fast? 7. No, sir; it is about ten minutes too slow. 8. Have you wound up your watch to-day? 9. I have wound it up, and set it.

10. That clock is too slow. 11. Put it forward half an hour. 12. My watch is too fast. 13. Did you wind it up this morning? 14. Yes, sir; I wound it up at six o'clock. 15. A man had two sons; the one loved to sleep late in the morning, and the other was very industrious, and always rose very early. 16. The latter, having gone out (*étant sorti*) one day early in the morning, found a purse (*une bourse*) full of money. 17. He ran to his brother to communicate (*faire part de*) to him his good fortune, and said to him: "See, Lewis, what one gains by rising early." 18. "My faith!" answered his brother, "if he to whom the purse belongs had not risen earlier than I, he would not have lost it."

## 23.—VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON.

### WORDS AND IDIOMS.

IT WANTS, IT LACKS.

IL S'EN FAUT (*governs the subjunctive*).

1. *Il s'en faut*, used in reference to quantity, takes *de* after it; used of moral qualities, not regarded as quantity, it omits *de*.



1. Le nombre d'élèves de votre école est-il complet? 2. Non, monsieur, il s'en faut de beaucoup que leur nombre soit complet. 3. Cet ouvrage n'est-il pas presque fini? 4. Si, il ne s'en faut guère qu'il ne soit fini. 5. Ce monsieur et cette dame se marieront-ils? 6. Oui, ils se marieront bientôt. 7. Le fils de votre voisine se mariera-t-il avec (épousera-t-il) sa cousine? 8. Oui, ils se marieront la semaine prochaine. 9. Puisque mon père le veut j'apprendrai le français. 10. Cet homme se fâche contre moi. 11. Ces hommes se tutoient, ce sont d'anciens camarades. 12. Ces petits garçons sont très-méchants; ils se sont battus à plusieurs reprises. 13. Le vieux soldat est malade; je vous supplie, monsieur, d'aller le voir. 14. Faites-moi la grâce de me prêter votre canif un moment. 15. Cet homme est jaloux de votre gloire; c'est pourquoi il vous hait. 16. Votre montre est-elle juste? 17. Non, elle avance de quinze minutes. 17. Il pleut *depuis* hier soir; et, *puisque* il fait si mauvais temps, je ne sortirai pas ce matin. (The two different acceptations of *since*.)

I.—1. Do you want much of having finished that lesson? 2. I want little of having finished this lesson, but I have not begun to study the other. 3. Does it want much of your being as tall as I? 4. No, sir; it wants an inch of your being as tall as I. 5. Will that gentleman and lady marry? 6. Yes, sir; they will marry the day before Christmas. 7. Will your sister marry my cousin? 8. They will marry next month. 9. Do not those boys behave badly? 10. Yes, sir; they have fought several times. 11. Does that man fight with his friend? 12. He fights with him sometimes. 13. Will your neighbor travel this summer? 14. Yes; since he has sufficient money, he will travel. 15. What do you intend to study? 16. Since the master desires it, I will study German.

17. With whom does your neighbor get angry? 18. He gets angry with every body. 19. Does he get angry with you? 20. He often gets angry with me. 21. We read in this book; where did we stop? 22. Here is where we stopped. 23. Do me the favor to lend me your new novel. 24. With pleasure; there it is at your service. 25. Is your cousin familiar with this business? 26. He is very familiar with it. 27. When will you come to see me? 28. I will come to see you Christmas eve. 29. Does that young lady play well on the piano? 30. Yes, sir; she is very familiar with (*versée dans*) music. 31. John, why dost thou not call me thou and thee as thy brother does? Old (*anciens*) school companions ought to call each other thou and thee. 32. I have never seen that man before (*auparavant*), but he is too familiar; he calls me thou and thee.

II.—1. While you were staying in the country, did you sometimes write French? 2. No, never; it was impossible for me to write any, since I had not my books. 3. It is a pity; you will forget all that you have learned. 4. I believe not, for I speak French pretty (*assez*) often. 5. That is not enough; it is necessary to write French also; in writing, you learn the rules better. 6. In speaking every day one ought to learn also. 7. Yes; if one speaks distinctly, and if one pays (*qu'on fasse*) attention to the

mistakes which he makes, there is no doubt that one learns; but if you have the patience to speak, to read, and to write a little every day, you will learn in a very little time.

8. A poor comedian, who had much wit, but little money to pay for his dinner, went to make a visit to a banker celebrated (*banquier célèbre*) for his riches and his avarice, and proposed (*proposa*) to him an operation (*opération*), in which there was, he said, a hundred thousand francs to be gained. 9. The banker, who was going to seat himself (*se mettre*) at the table, invited the comedian to dine. 10. The latter accepted. 11. After dinner the banker asked the comedian some particulars regarding (*des détails sur*) the operation of which he had spoken. 12. "Sir," said the comedian, "I have been told that you give two hundred thousand francs as a dowry (*en mariage*) to your daughter. 13. Well, I (*moi, je*) will take her for half that sum; it is then clear that, in granting me the hand of your daughter, you gain a hundred thousand francs."

14. An Englishman, on his first visit to France, met in the streets of Calais a very young child, who spoke French fluently (*couramment*). 15. "Good heavens (*mon Dieu*)! is it possible!" cried he, "that even the children here speak French so purely."

## 24.—VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON.

### WORDS AND IDIOMS.

<i>To have a grudge against some one.</i>	<i>En vouloir à quelqu'un.</i>
Have you not a grudge against that man?	N'en voulez-vous pas à cet homme?
He has a grudge against you.	Il vous en veut.
He has a grudge against every body.	Il en veut à tout le monde.
<i>To lay blame on some one.</i>	<i>S'en prendre à quelqu'un.</i>
He lays the blame of that evil on me.	Il s'en prend à moi de ce mal.
I shall lay the blame on you for all that can happen.	Je m'en prendrai à vous de tout ce qui pourra arriver.
<i>To manage, to set about.</i>	<i>S'y prendre.</i>
He manages badly.	Il s'y prend mal.
You manage well.	Vous vous y prenez bien.
He sets about it like one who understands it.	Il s'y prend en homme qui s'y entend.
They manage properly.	Ils s'y prennent comme il faut.
I set about it in this way.	Je m'y prends ainsi.
<i>To find fault with, to blame.</i>	<i>Trouver à redire.</i>
He finds fault with what I do.	Il trouve à redire à ce que je fais.
I find nothing to blame in that work.	Je ne trouve rien à redire dans cet ouvrage.

There is nothing to blame in his conduct.	Il n'y a rien à redire à sa conduite.
I have no quarrel with that practice.	Je ne trouve point à redire à cette coutume.
<i>The strife is who.</i>	<i>C'est à qui.</i>
The strife is who shall play.	C'est à qui jouera.
The strife is who shall have it.	C'est à qui l'aura.
The strife is who shall dance with her.	C'est à qui dansera avec elle.
<i>To be at stake.</i> His life is at stake.	<i>Y aller de.</i> Il y va de sa vie.
Consider that your fortune is at stake.	Songez qu'il y va de votre fortune.
His all is at stake.	Il y va de son tout.
It is an affair in which the public interest is at stake.	C'est une affaire où il y va de l'intérêt public.
<i>To long.</i>	<i>Tarder</i> (impersonal), (de bef. inf.).
I long to have my house built.	Il me tarde que ma maison soit bâtie.
He longs to finish his work.	Il lui tarde de finir son ouvrage.
I longed to see you.	Il me tardait de vous voir.
<i>To aim at</i> (with a gun).	<i>Coucher en joue, mettre en joue.</i>
I aim at the bird.	Je couche l'oiseau en joue.
He was aiming at me.	Il me couchait en joue.
<i>To fire a gun.</i>	<i>Tirer un fusil.</i>
The trunk. In emulation.	Le tronc. À l'envi.
A whirlwind. To obscure.	Un tourbillon. Obscurcir.
A shot. To yield.	Un coup de fusil. Se rendre.
Stormy. A pyramid.	Orageux. Une pyramide.
The fir-trees. Its fury.	Le sapin. Sa furie, fureur.
To oppose. To bend.	Opposer. Ployer.
A branch. Flexible.	Un rameau. Flexible.

1. Cet homme n'a-t-il pas d'ennemis? 2. Si, monsieur, les gens jaloux de sa fortune lui en veulent. 3. Quelqu'un a cassé ces fenêtres et l'on s'en prend à moi comme si je l'avais fait. 4. S'il y a du mal prenez-vous en à vous même. 5. Comment le domestique s'y prend-il pour allumer le feu? 6. Il s'y prend assez bien. 7. Trouvez-vous à redire à la conduite de cet homme? 8. Je trouve à redire à tout ce qu'il fait. 9. Trouvez-vous à redire au plan de cet ouvrage? 10. Je n'y trouve rien à redire. 11. Ces hommes font beaucoup de bruit, c'est à qui parlera le plus haut. 12. Ces écoliers étudient à l'envi les uns des autres, c'est à qui sera le premier. 13. Cet homme ne courrait-il pas un grand danger en attaquant ce loup furieux? 14. Si, monsieur, il y allait de sa vie. 15. Souvenez-vous qu'il y va de votre honneur et de votre vie. 16. Il me tarde bien que mon ami soit hors de cette affaire. 17. Il me tarde d'achever mon ouvrage. 18. Mon frère a mon fusil pour le tirer. 19. Veut-il tuer quelque chose? 20. Il couche cet oiseau en joue. 21. Cet homme couche-t-il le voleur en joue? 22. Oui, madame, il lui tirera un coup de fusil s'il ne se rend pas.

21 1 8 12 18 12 21 15 22 12 15 1 10 12 1 12 1 14 22 12 22 11  
 tronc, a-l'en-vi, tour-bil-lon, obs-cur-cir, o-ra-geux, py-ra-mide, sa-pin, fu-rie, fu-reux,  
 15 17 6 20 12 6 1 17 6 12  
 op-po-zer, plo-yer, ra-mean, flex-ible.

I.—1. The winters of Siberia are subject to storms. 2. Often at the moment when the sky appears the most serene (*serein*) terrible hurricanes come suddenly to obscure it. 3. Issuing (*partis*) from two opposite points of the horizon, the one comes loaded with the ices of the North Sea, and the other with the stormy whirlwinds of the Caspian (*Caspienne*). 4. If they meet, if they strike each other (*se choquent*), the fir-trees oppose in vain to their fury their robust (*robustes*) trunks, and their long pyramids; in vain the birches (*bouleaux*) bend even to the earth their flexible branches, and their trembling foliage (*mobile feuillage*); every thing is broken, every thing is overthrown, and immense spaces are covered with the ruins (*ruines*) of nature.

5. General Dumesnil commanded the place of Vincennes, when the Russians and the armies of the allies rendered themselves masters of Paris in 1814. 6. The citadel (*la citadelle*) of Vincennes being only (*à*) three miles from Paris, the allies believed that it would be easy for them to take it. 7. The Russians summoned (*sommèrent*) Dumesnil several times to surrender (*rendre*) the place. 8. But the French general, who had lost a leg in the campaign of Russia, answered them always gaily (*avec gaieté*): "I have left my left leg in your country; send it back to me and I will surrender to you the place."

II.—1. A doctor, very avaricious, was called to attend the sick wife of a poor man. 2. The latter, believing that he perceived that the doctor was afraid that he would not be paid for (*de*) his trouble, said to him, "I have ten pounds sterling (*sterling*); and if you kill or cure my wife, I will give them to you." 3. The woman died. 4. Some days after, the doctor went to claim the ten pounds sterling. 5. The poor widower asked him, "Have you killed my wife?" 6. "No," answered the doctor. 7. "Have you cured her?" "No." 8. "Then you have no right to that sum, and I think (*trouve*) it very astonishing that you come to claim it."

9. Voltaire and Piron had been invited to pass some weeks in a castle (*un château*). 10. These two celebrated writers (*célèbres écrivains*) amused themselves sometimes in composing little epigrams against each other. 11. One day Piron wrote on the door of Voltaire Rogue (*Coquin*). 12. The author (*auteur*) of the *Henriade*, thinking that Piron was the inventor (*inventeur*) of this new kind (*genre*) of epigram, went to his room (*chez lui*). 13. "What happy chance (*hasard*) procures (*procure*) me the pleasure and the honor of seeing you?" said Piron to him. 14. "Sir," answered Voltaire, "I saw your name on my door, and I come to return you my visit."

15. A Gascon used to say, "The mud of Paris has two great inconveniences (*inconvenients*). 16. The first is to make black spots on white stockings; the second to make white spots on black stockings."

## 25.—VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON.

## WORDS AND IDIOMS.

<i>To be in vain.</i> It is in vain for you to study, you will never learn French.	<i>Avoir beau.</i> Vous avez beau étudier, vous n'apprendrez jamais le français.
It is in vain for that man to work, he can not finish his task.	Cet homme à beau travailler, il ne peut finir sa tâche.
It is in vain for us to solicit, he will not grant us that favor.	Nous avons beau solliciter, il ne nous accordera pas cette grâce.
<i>To overlook, to command a view of.</i> Your window overlooks the garden. My windows overlook the street.	<i>Donner sur.</i> Votre fenêtre donne sur le jardin. Mes fenêtres donnent sur la rue.
<i>To leave it to.</i> I leave it to yourself. He leaves it to what you shall say.	<i>S'en rapporter à.</i> Je m'en rapporte à vous même. Il s'en rapporte à ce que vous direz.
<i>To abide by.</i> I abide by your decision. What is your friend's decision? He abides by our opinion. He abides by his word.	<i>S'en tenir à.</i> Je m'en tiens à votre décision. À quoi votre ami s'en tient-il? Ils s'en tiennent à notre opinion. Il s'en tient à son mot.
<i>To fail of satisfying.</i> He fails much of satisfying. She is defective in nothing.	<i>Laisser à désirer.</i> Il laisse beaucoup à désirer. Elle ne laisse rien à désirer.
<i>It is all over with.</i> It is all over with us. It is all over with him.	<i>O'en est fait de.</i> C'en est fait de nous. C'en est fait de lui.
<i>To bear the stamp of.</i> That work bears the stamp of genius. Of course, that is understood. Will the master explain all difficulties?	<i>Être frappé (or marqué) au coin de.</i> Cet ouvrage est frappé au coin de génie. <i>Cela va sans dire, cela s'entend.</i> Le maître expliquera-t-il toutes les difficultés?
Certainly; that is understood.	Certainement; cela va sans dire.
<i>Real.</i> A definition.	<i>Réel.</i> Une définition.
The mayor. Admirable.	Le maire. Admirable.
A passport. To describe.	Un passe-port. Dépeindre.
A remembrance. A handful.	Un souvenir. Une poignée.
The duke. The menagerie.	Le duc. La ménagerie.
Despair. To precipitate.	Le désespoir. Précipiter.

1. J'ai beau parler, vous ne m'écoutez pas. 2. J'eus beau faire et beau dire, il persista dans sa résolution. 3. Ce garçon a beau étudier, il n'apprendra rien; il n'a point de mémoire. 4. Mes fenêtres donnent sur le jardin de notre voisin. 5. Je veux acheter cette maison, et je

<sup>1</sup> rap-<sup>2</sup>por-<sup>3</sup>ter, <sup>4</sup>rô-el, <sup>5</sup>dé-fi-ni-sion, <sup>6</sup>maî-re, <sup>7</sup>ad-mi-ra-ble, <sup>8</sup>pas-se-port, <sup>9</sup>dé-peindra, <sup>10</sup>sou-ve-nir, <sup>11</sup>poi-gnée, <sup>12</sup>duc, <sup>13</sup>mé-nage-rie, <sup>14</sup>dé-zes-poir, <sup>15</sup>pré-ci-pl-ter.

m'en rapporte au charpentier pour le prix. 6. A quoi votre frère s'en tiendra-t-il? 7. Il s'en tiendra à votre opinion. 8. Dès que ce marchand vous a dit le prix, il s'en tient à son dernier mot. 9. A qui voulez-vous que nous en rapportions? 10. Je m'en rapporte à vous-mêmes. 11. Cette lettre est charmante, elle ne laisse rien à désirer. 12. Votre livre est agréable à lire, mais il laisse beaucoup à désirer. 13. Le vieux soldat est blessé à mort; c'en est fait de lui. 14. Le malade va mourir; c'en est fait de lui. 15. Cet ouvrage a du mérite, cependant il laisse beaucoup à désirer. 16. Votre ouvrage a beaucoup de mérite, il est marqué au coin de la logique (*logique*) et de l'esprit français. 17. Si vous voulez apprendre le français, n'étudierez-vous pas beaucoup? 18. Certainement, cela va sans dire. 19. Je garderai un éternel souvenir du service que vous m'avez rendu. 20. Qu'a ce garçon dans la main? 21. Il a une poignée d'argent.

I.—1. What do you find difficult in that lesson? 2. It is the subjunctive. 3. That is not very easy, it is true; but give attention, and let us see how you will translate this. 4. *Do you affirm that I take your fruit?* 5. Well, why do you put *prenne*, which is the subjunctive of *to take*? 6. Because when the verb is interrogative or negative it marks doubt. 7. You answer admirably well. 8. How ought one to say this? 9. *He fears that his brother is (soit) sick.* 10. Not quite correct (*juste*). 11. What fault have I committed? 12. *Craindre, avoir peur*, and all adverbs and conjunctions which express the idea of fear, require (*demandent*) that one put *ne* before the subjunctive which follows them. 13. Then it is necessary to say, *He fears that his brother may be (ne soit) sick.* 14. Can you give me a general rule which can make me see when one ought to make use of (*se servir*) the subjunctive? 15. It is not always very easy. 16. It will be necessary for you to remember words and phrases, which require it. 17. Shall I not find that very difficult? 18. Not so much so as you believe. 19. I advise you to make many phrases like those which you have just made, and by dint (*à force*) of making them (*en*) you will learn.

20. The mayor of a small village in France, being obliged to give a passport to a distinguished personage (*personnage distingué*), who was blind of one eye, was afraid of offending him by mentioning (*mentionnant*) his deformity (*sa difformité*), when he would describe his person. 21. To avoid this, and to fulfill at the same time the rigorous (*rigoureuses*) obligations of his charge (*sa charge*), he employed the following expedient (*expédient*). 22. He wrote on the passport, *Large and beautiful black eyes, one of which is absent.*

II.—1. "Politeness," says President Witherspoon, "is real goodness expressed with goodness;" an admirable definition, and so brief (*brève*) that one can retain (*retenir*) it easily. 2. Put it in practice, and every body will be charmed with your manners.

3. A mayor, benefactor (*bienfaiteur*) of his district (*sa commune*), having died on (*dans*) a journey which he made to Paris, his people (*administrés*) raised to him a tomb (*tombeau*), on which they had



engraved (*graver*) in large letters, "Here lies (*ci git*) Mr. B., buried (*enterré*) in Paris."

4. A lion of the grand duke of Tuscany (*Toscane*), having got out of the menagerie, entered into the city of Florence, and spread there much panic (*épouvante*). 5. Among the fugitives (*fugitifs*) there happened to be a woman who was carrying her child in her arms, and who let him fall. 6. The lion seized him (*s'en saisit*), and appeared ready to devour (*dévorer*) him; when the mother, transported (*transportée*) by the most tender (*tendre*) impulse (*mouvement*) of nature, returned upon her steps, threw herself at the feet of the lion, and asked of him her child. 7. He looked upon her fixedly (*fixement*); her cries (*cris*) and her weeping (*pleurs*) seemed to touch him; at last (*enfin*) he put the child on the ground, without having done him the least harm. 8. Unhappiness and despair have then an expression which makes itself understood by monsters (*monstres*) the most fierce (*farouches*). 9. But what is without doubt the most admirable, is that blind and sublime impulse which precipitates the mother on the steps of the ferocious (*féroce*) animal before which all fly.

## 26.—VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON.

### WORDS AND IDIOMS.

<i>To escape with, to get clear for.</i>	<i>En être quitte pour.</i>
I shall get clear for a hundred dollars.	J'en serai quitte pour cent gourdes.
He has escaped with a reprimand.	Il en a été quitte pour une réprimande.
<i>To get off.</i>	<i>S'en tirer.</i>
He has got off.	Il s'en est tiré.
You will never get off.	Vous ne vous en tirerez jamais.
<i>To submit to, acquiesce in.</i>	<i>En passer par.</i>
I will submit to the opinion of our neighbor.	J'en passerai par l'avis de notre voisin.
He will submit to all that you say.	Il en passera par tout ce que vous direz.
<i>To communicate to, to impart.</i>	<i>Faire part de à.</i>
Will you communicate that to your father?	Ferez-vous part de cela à votre père?
Will you communicate to me the news?	Me ferez-vous part des nouvelles?
<i>To be contending, to be at it.</i>	<i>Être aux prises.</i>
He is contending with able captains.	Il est aux prises avec des capitaines habiles.
The little boys were just now speaking of fisty-cuffs, and now they are at it.	Les petits garçons parlaient tout à l'heure de se donner des coups de poing, et maintenant ils sont aux prises.

<i>I know better, or tell it to others.</i>	<i>À d'autres.*</i>
He has learned French in two weeks!	Il a appris le français en quinze jours!
I know better; you may get it believed.	À d'autres.
<i>By stealth.</i>	<i>À la dérobée.</i>
He went away by stealth.	Il s'en est allé à la dérobée.
They see each other only by stealth.	Ils ne se voient qu'à la dérobée.
<i>To think much of, to value.</i>	<i>Faire cas de.</i>
That man values only money.	Cet homme ne fait cas que de l'argent.
That prince knows how to value men of merit.	Ce prince sait faire cas des hommes de mérite.
<i>To succeed in.</i>	<i>Venir à bout de.</i>
He has succeeded in marrying the lady in question.	Il est venu à bout d'épouser la dame en question.
The thing is difficult, but we shall succeed in it.	La chose est difficile, mais nous en viendrons à bout.
<i>To exceed, pass by. The race.</i>	<i>Dépasser. La race.</i>
<i>Astonishing. The stature.</i>	<i>Étonnant. La stature.</i>
<i>A hope.</i>	<i>Un espoir. Une espérance.</i>
<i>Exalted. To accomplish.</i>	<i>Exalté. Accomplir.</i>
<i>A Jew. Destined.</i>	<i>Un juif. Destiné.</i>

1. On croyait que ce commis perdrait sa place, mais il en a été quitte pour une reprimande. 2. Mon ami a un procès (*lawsuit*), il voudrait en être quitte pour mille francs. 3. Votre frère est-il hors de sa difficulté? 4. Oui, il s'en est bien tiré. 5. J'en passerai par l'avis de notre ami. 6. Vous serez obligé d'en passer partout ce qu'il voudra. 7. Quand vous aurez des nouvelles, faites m'en part. 8. Cet homme fait part de son bonheur à tout le monde. 9. Cet homme fait part de son bien aux pauvres. 10. Les deux armées sont aux prises. 11. Voilà deux chiens qui sont aux prises. 12. Les fils de notre voisin ne se battent-ils pas souvent? 13. Si, je les ai laissés là-bas aux prises. 14. Cet étranger nous aime mieux qu'il n'aime ses parents! il nous rend tout ce service sans intérêt! A d'autres! 15. Nous nous voyons quelquefois à la dérobée. 16. Je fais grand cas de cet homme. 17. On ne fait pas grand cas de ce qu'il dit. 18. Ce livre n'est pas intéressant; je n'ai jamais pu venir à bout de le lire en entier. 19. Nous avons dépassé l'endroit où nous voulions nous arrêter (*to stop*).

I.—1. I told you that the imperfect is employed with the conditional in suppositions (*suppositions*). 2. I recollect it. 3. You know also, that in speaking of an action which may take place, one employs the present with the future. 4. Thus I say: *If John comes here, we shall see him*; or, *We shall see John, if he comes here*. 5. Yes; I understand that. 6. But we should say: *If John*

\* The meaning is, tell such improbable things to others; I do not believe them. *Credat Judæus Apella.*

12 prizes, dé-ro-bée, dé-pas-ser, race, é-to-nant, sta-ture, es-poir, es-pé-rance, eg-zal-té, ac-com-plir, juif, des-ti-né.

WERE *here*, we SHOULD SEE *him*. 7. The correspondence (*la correspondance*) of tenses demands that the imperfect be followed or preceded by the conditional, and that the future, on the contrary, correspond (*soit en rapport*) with the indicative present.

8. Macaulay has written four volumes of the history of England. 9. Have you read them? 10. Yes; if you wish to read them, I will lend them to you. 11. I thank you much; I should like well (*voudrais bien*) to read them. 12. I have lent the first volume to Madam C. 13. I will lend it to you as soon as she shall have finished reading it. 14. Thank you; I am not in a hurry. 15. I have not been able to read as much this winter as I should have wished. 16. You have had too many occupations. 17. Yes; I have written every evening, but now I shall have more leisure (*loisir*).

18. A countryman having learned that another countryman, his debtor, was in his last moments, ran to the house of the sick man to get paid. 19. The insolvent (*insolvable*) debtor said to him with a voice almost extinguished, "Let me die in peace." 20. "By the powers (*parbleu*), no," replied the countryman; "you shall not die unless I be paid."

II.—1. Man takes away the lightning from heaven; he rescues continents (*arrache des continents*) from the sea; he raises himself in the air; he measures the space which separates the stars (*astres*) from the earth; he directs the opinions of nations, and decides their fate; he embraces by a glance of the eye the events of past ages, and acts upon the future; but he can not solve the great problem (*problème*) of his existence. 2. What are we? whence come we? whither are we going? 3. Does the same destiny await Cato the just, the good Titus, the virtuous Marcus Aurelius (*Marc-Aurèle*), and the sanguinary (*sanguinaire*) Nero? 4. Nothing here below answers to our dreams (*réves*) of perfection. 5. The hope of a future without limits raises us above the visible (*visible*) world, and lets us have a glimpse (*entrevoir*) of an immense perspective (*immense perspective*) of progress towards perfection.

6. A man loaded (*criblé*) with debts being at the point of death (*le point de mourir*), said to his confessor (*confesseur*), that "the only favor (*le faveur*) which he asked of heaven, was to preserve his life, in order that he might be able to pay his creditors." 7. "Very well," replied the priest, "since your motive for desiring life is so just, I desire that your prayers may be heard." 8. "Ah! my father, could (*puissent*) they be so! for I am sure that if I live until I pay my debts, I shall never die."

9. Voltaire wrote to a young man who persecuted (*persécutait*) him by his letters: "I am dead, sir. 10. So I shall not be able henceforth (*désormais*) to have the honor of answering you." 11. The man replied to him: "To M. de Voltaire in the other world."

27.—VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON.

IDIOMS.

*Topsyturvy.*

His library is topsyturvy.

All my papers are topsyturvy.

*To begin speaking.*

He begins to speak.

The first who spoke was the general.

Could you *do without* coffee?

I can *do without it*.

If one cannot have any, he must do without it.

*To laugh in the face.*

In doing that he laughed in my face.

*Not to the purpose, unsuitable.*

That is not to the purpose.

*To style, to call.*

We call him prince.

They called him thief.

He called me *fop*.

*I give you three guesses.*

Guess it. I give you four guesses.

I give you six guesses.

*To give it up (in guessing).*

Do you give it up?

It is impossible for me to guess it; I give it up.

*To break through.*

He breaks through the crowd.

He broke through all these difficulties.

*To pass in spite of.*

We will pass in spite of them.

He will pass in spite of all his enemies.

*To do one's best.*

I do my best.

He will do his best.

*That affair is delayed much.*

He protracts things.

Let us return to our subject.

*Sens dessus dessous.*

Sa bibliothèque est sens dessus dessous.

Tous mes papiers sont sens dessus dessous.

*Prendre la parole.*

Il prend la parole.

Le premier qui prit la parole fut le général.

Sauriez-vous *vous passer de* café?

Je puis m'en *passer*.

Si l'on n'en peut avoir, il faut s'en *passer*.

*Rire au nez.*

En faisant cela, il m'a ri au nez.

*Hors de propos.*

Cela est hors de propos.

*Traiter de.*

Nous le traitons de prince.

On l'a traité de voleur.

Il m'a traité de *fat*.

*Je vous le donne en trois.\**

Devinez-le; je vous le donne en quatre.

Je vous le donne en six.

*Jeter sa langue aux chiens.*

Jetez-vous votre langue aux chiens?

Il m'est impossible de le deviner; je jette ma langue aux chiens.

*Se faire jour à travers.*

Il se fait jour à travers la foule.

Il se fit jour à travers ces difficultés.

*Passer sur le ventre à.*

Nous leur passerons sur le ventre.

Il passera sur le ventre à tous ses ennemis.

*Faire de son mieux.*

Je fais de mon mieux.

Il fera de son mieux.

*Cette affaire traîne en longueur.*

Il traîne les choses en longueur.

Revenons à nos moutons.

\* That is, *Je vous le donne à deviner en trois fois.*

<sup>8</sup> sens, <sup>6</sup> nez, <sup>7</sup> trai-<sup>8</sup>ter, <sup>1</sup> tra-<sup>7</sup>vers, <sup>3</sup> ventre, <sup>8</sup> traîne, <sup>17</sup> choses.

1. Cette boîte est sens dessus dessous. 2. Tous mes livres sont sens dessus dessous. 3. L'orateur a repris la parole. 4. Cet homme ne saurait se passer de vin. 5. Si vous gagnez de l'argent en serez-vous plus avancé? 6. J'en serai plus avancé. 7. Cet homme dit des choses si hors de propos qu'on ne saurait s'empêcher de lui rire au nez. 8. Le maître a traité cet élève de fou. 9. Nous le traitons de fat. 10. Pouvez-vous deviner ce qui est arrivé? 11. Je vous le donne en quatre, je vous le donne en dix. 12. Je ne peux le deviner, je jette ma langue aux chiens. 13. Ces soldats se sont fait jour à travers les ennemis. 14. Ils passeront sur le ventre à tous les ennemis. 15. Si je vous donne des leçons étudierez-vous beaucoup? 16. Oui, certainement, je ferai de mon mieux. 17. Cet ouvrier travaille-t-il beaucoup? 18. Oui, monsieur, il fait de son mieux.

I.—1. A rich man was showing his jewels (*bijoux*) to a philosopher. 2. "I thank you," said the latter, "for the superb jewels which you are pleased (*voulez bien*) that I share with you." 3. "How that you share with me?" 4. "But you permit that I look at them, and what other thing do you do with them, than to look at them also?"

5. A good old man being very sick, had his wife called, who was still very young, and said to her: 6. "My dear, you see that my last hour approaches, and that I am forced (*forcé*) to leave you. 7. Therefore, if you wish me to die in peace, it is necessary that you do me a favor. 8. You are still young, and no doubt you will marry again; I know it; but I pray you not to take Mr. Lewis, for I confess that I have always been very jealous of him, and that I am so still. 9. I should die then in despair (*désespéré*) if you did not promise me that." 10. The wife answered: "My dear, I entreat you, let not that hinder you from dying in peace; for I assure you, that even if I wished to espouse him I could not, being already promised to another."

11. Extract (*extrait*) from the journal (*journal*) of an English traveller: 12. "It was three days that I wandered at random (*errait à l'aventure*) in this island, not knowing if it was desert (*déserte*) or inhabited (*habitée*) by savages, when I had the good fortune to discover (*découvrir*) on the shore (*bord*) of the sea a gallows (*une potence*) with its victim (*pendu*). 13. 'Thanks to heaven,' cried I, 'here is a civilized country.'"

II.—1. Mahomet desired to bring back his countrymen (*compatriotes*) to their ancient manners (*mœurs*). 2. He was acquainted with the doctrine of Moses (*Moïse*), and that of the Christians. 3. He knew that the Jews flattered themselves to see appear at last the Saviour (*sauveur*) of Israel; and that Jesus Christ had promised to his disciples to send them *the spirit of truth, which would conduct them into all truth*. 4. His exalted (*exaltée*) imagination persuaded him (*lui persuada*) that he was destined to accomplish the hopes of the Jews and of the Christians. 5. At the age of forty years, he saw in a dream (*en songe*) the archangel (*archange*) Gabriel, who

called him to be the prophet of the Most High (*Très-Haut*). 6. He communicated (*communiqua*) that vision to his wife and to his cousin; and whether he deceived himself, (or) whether he wished to impose on them (*leur en imposer*), he spoke to them with the fire of inspiration.

7. Washington did not belong, like Bonaparte, to that race of Alexanders and Cæsars who exceed the stature of the human species. 8. Nothing astonishing attaches to his person; he is not placed on a vast theatre; he is not contending with the most able captains, and the most powerful monarchs of the time. 9. He does not traverse the seas; he does not run from Memphis to Vienna (*Vienne*), and from Cadiz to Moscow. 10. He defends himself with a handful of citizens, upon a land without remembrances, and without celebrity, in the narrow circle of the domestic firesides.

11. Washington and Bonaparte came forth from the bosom of a republic. 12. Born both from liberty, the first has been faithful to it, the second has betrayed it. 13. Their fate, in conformity with (*d'après*) their choice, will be different in the future. 14. The name of Washington will spread with liberty from age to age; it will mark the beginning of a new era for the human race. 15. Bonaparte was able to enrich equally the public domain. 16. He acted upon the nation the most civilized, the most intelligent, the most brave, the most brilliant of the earth. 17. What would be to-day the rank occupied by him in the world (*univers*) if he had joined magnanimity to what he had of heroic—if, Washington and Bonaparte at once, he had named liberty the inheritress of his glory.

## 28.—VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON.

### IDIOMS AND PROVERBS

To surpass, to have the superiority *L'emporter sur.*  
*over.*

He surpasses all in racing.

Il l'emporte sur tous à la course.

His pride prevailed over his interest.

Sa fierté l'emporta sur ses intérêts.

Virgil and Horace surpass all the Latin poets.

Virgile et Horace l'emportent sur tous les poètes latins.

To run away.

Se sauver.

I must run away.

Il faut que je me sauve.

He ran away at full speed.

Il s'est sauvé à toutes jambes.

That child shrieks and runs away at the sight of a frog.

Cet enfant crie et se sauve à la vue d'une grenouille.

To be half intoxicated.

Être un peu gris.

That man is half intoxicated.

Cet homme est gris.

We were all a little tipsy.

Nous étions tous un peu gris.

*To shelter.*

We took shelter from the rain.

He took shelter from the storm under a rock.

*If I were you.*

If I were you I would not accept.

*Come to the point.*

Let us come to the point.

*To put up (in traveling).*

He puts up with one of his friends.

Where do you put up?

I always put up at the New York hotel.

*Within reach.*

That is not within my reach.

He advances within gun-shot.

They are out of cannon-shot.

He is within hearing distance.

*To acknowledge the receipt of a letter.*

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your last.

Please acknowledge the receipt of my letter.

*To build castles in the air.*

He does nothing but build castles in the air.

*He is a singular man.*

They have in Paris a strange idea of shepherdesses.

*On a level, even.*

The yard is not on a level with the garden.

That terrace is on a level with the ground-floor.

He is lodged on the ground-floor.

*The sun strikes in my eyes.*

The fortune of his neighbor has dazzled his eyes.

*Literally.*

That is to be understood literally.

We must not always take things literally.

*How far on are you?*

I am at the fourth chapter.

*Mettre à l'abri.*

Nous nous mîmes à l'abri de la pluie.

Il se mit à l'abri de l'orage sous un rocher.

*Si j'étais de vous.*

Si j'étais de vous je n'accepterais pas.

*Venez au fait.*

Venons au fait.

*Descendre.*

Il descend chez un de ses amis.

Où descendez-vous?

Je descends toujours à l'hôtel de New York.

*À la portée.*

Cela n'est pas à ma portée.

Il s'avance à la portée de fusil.

Ils sont hors de la portée du canon.

Il est à la portée de l'oreille.

*Accuser réception d'une lettre.*

J'ai l'honneur de vous accuser réception de votre dernière lettre.

Veuillez bien m'accuser réception de ma lettre.

*Faire des châteaux en Espagne.*

Il ne fait que des châteaux en Espagne.

*C'est un drôle d'homme.*

Ils ont à Paris une drôle d'idée des bergères.

*De niveau, au niveau.*

La cour n'est pas au niveau du jardin.

Cette terrasse est de niveau avec le rez-de-chaussée.

Il est logé au rez-de-chaussée.

*Le soleil me donne dans les yeux.*

La fortune de son voisin lui a donné dans l'œil.

*Au pied de la lettre.*

Cela doit s'entendre au pied de la lettre.

Il ne faut pas toujours prendre les choses au pied de la lettre.

*Où en êtes-vous?*

J'en suis au chapitre quatrième.

*The question is.*

The question is to know who did that.

That is not the question.

The question is on the safety of the state.

*What matters it? No matter.*

What matters it to him whether I come or not?

He blames us; what matters it?

Bring me a book; no matter which one.

Give me something; no matter what.

*I made a slip of the tongue.*

He made a slip of the tongue.

*To pump, to sound one.*

He speaks to that man in order to sound him.

Appearances sometimes deceive.

It is not very difficult.

A rolling stone gathers no moss.

All is not gold that glitters.

Sadness often succeeds quickly to joy.

To be very talented.

That is soon forgotten.

He is a simpleton.

Rude sports belong to the vulgar.

Silence gives consent.

There is many a slip between the cup and the lip.

A good reputation is better than riches.

The pot calls the kettle black.

To reply evasively.

The mediocre are eminent among the stupid.

A burnt child dreads the fire.

We must be all things to all men.

Each one should look to his affairs.

One makes his fortune gradually.

*Il s'agit.*

Il s'agit de savoir qui a fait cela.

Il ne s'agit pas de cela.

Il s'agit du salut de l'état.

*Qu'importe. N'importe.*

Que lui importe que je vienne ou que je ne vienne pas?

Il nous blâme; qu'importe?

Apportez-moi un livre; n'importe lequel.

Donnez-moi quelque chose; n'importe quoi.

*La langue m'a tourné.*

La langue lui a tourné.

*Tirer les vers du nez à quelqu'un (fam.).*

Il parle à cet homme pour lui tirer les vers du nez.

*L'habit ne fait pas le moine (monk).*

Ce n'est pas la mer à boire.

*Pierre qui roule n'amasse pas de mousse.*

Tout ce qui reluit n'est pas or.

*Tel qui rit vendredi, dimanche pleurera.*

*Avoir de l'esprit jusqu'au bout des doigts.*

*Cela entre par une oreille, et sort par l'autre.*

*Il n'a pas inventé la poudre.*

*Jeux de mains, jeux de vilains.*

*Qui ne dit mot, consent.*

*De la main à la bouche se perd souvent la soupe.*

*Bonne renommée vaut mieux que ceinture dorée.*

*La pelle se moque du fourgon.*

*Répondre en Normand.*

*Dans le royaume des aveugles les borgnes sont rois.*

*Chat échaudé craint l'eau froide.*

*Il faut hurler avec les loups.*

*L'œil du maître engraisse le cheval.*

*Petit à petit l'oiseau fait son nid.*



# A

## SYNOPSIS OF GRAMMAR:

### INCLUDING RECAPITULATIONS AND ADDITIONS.

THE parts of speech are the same in French as in English, viz., the article, noun, adjective, pronoun, verb, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.

Their definitions and subdivisions, being the same as in English, need not here be given.

### ARTICLES.

The articles are *LE, the (definite)*, and *UN, a, one (indefinite)*.

*Un* is only the numeral adjective *one*. *Le* has also the nature of an adjective; but it will be convenient to treat of these by themselves under the titles of *indefinite* and *definite articles*.

#### DEFINITE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR.	FLURAL.	
<i>Le</i> (masculine).	<i>La</i> (feminine).	<i>Les</i> (both genders). The.
<i>Du</i> .	<i>De la</i> .	<i>Des</i> . Of the.
<i>Au</i> .	<i>À la</i> .	<i>Aux</i> . To the.

1. This article in the singular is elided; i. e., *le* and *la* become *l'* before a vowel or a silent *h*, as *l'or*, the gold; *l'eau*, the water; *l'homme*, the man.

2. *Du* is a contraction of *de le*, and *des* of *de les*, as *du voisin*, of the neighbor; *des voisins*, of the neighbors. *Au* is also a contraction of *à le*, and *aux* of *à les*, as *au magasin*, to the store; *aux magasins*, to the stores. Hence, *à le*, *à les*, *de le*, *de les*, are never used in French.

3. Before a vowel or a silent *h*, this article in the singular is always elided, and never contracted, as *de l'arbre*, of the tree, *à l'arbre*, to the tree; *de l'eau*, of the water, *à l'eau*, to the water; *de l'homme*, of the man, *à l'homme*, to the man.

4. The feminine singular article (*la*) is never contracted.

#### INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR.	FLURAL.	
<i>Un</i> (masculine).	<i>Une</i> (feminine).	<i>A, one. Unes</i> (mas.). <i>Unes</i> (fem.).

*Un* and *unes* are used only in a few compound words, and have then the nature of indefinite pronouns, as *quelques-uns*, *quelques-unes*, some; *les uns et les autres*, both.

## AGREEMENT OF THE ARTICLES.

1. Articles agree with their nouns in gender and number ; as,

*Le garçon*, the boy. *La fille*, the girl. *Les garçons*, the boys. *Les filles*, the girls.  
*Un homme*, a man. *Une femme*, a woman.

2. *Le*, before *plus*, *mieux*, or *moins*, often forms an adverbial expression, and is then invariable, whether the words stand alone or precede another adverb ; as,

*C'est cette pensée qui me tourmente LE PLUS.* That thought torments me the most.  
*La femme la plus vertueuse est aimée LE PLUS tendrement.* The most virtuous woman is loved the most tenderly.

3. *Le* is invariable also before the adverbs *plus*, *mieux*, *moins*, when joined to an adjective, provided it denote an absolute superlative without the idea of comparison ; but if the adjective implies comparison, the article is va-

*C'est quand je suis à la campagne que les livres me paraissent LE PLUS agréables.* It is when I am in the country that books seem to me the most agreeable.  
*Ces livres sont LES PLUS agréables.* These books are the most agreeable.

In the former of these sentences the idea is, *Books are agreeable in the highest degree*, and no comparison is intended ; in the latter, *These books are the most agreeable* of all with which they are compared in reality or in the mind. In the former therefore *le* is invariable, in the latter it is varied. The following sentence affords an example of *le* both variable and invariable.

*Je ne vois dans sa conduite que de ces inégalités aux quelles les femmes LES MIEUX nées sont LE PLUS sujettes.* I see in her conduct only those inequalities to which women the best born are most subject.

## USE OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. The article is used in French, as in English, with nouns in a definite sense ; as,

*Aimez-vous LE café que je vous donne ?* Do you like the coffee which I give you ?  
*Connaissez-vous LE fils de notre voisin ?* Do you know the son of our neighbor ?

2. The article is used also with nouns in a general sense ; as,

*LE SUCRE est doux.* Sugar is sweet.  
*LES HOMMES sont mortels.* Men are mortal.  
*Aimez-vous LE café ?* Do you like coffee ?

3. This article, together with *de* (i. e., *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, and *des*), is used with nouns in a partitive sense ; that is, with *some* or *any* expressed or implied before them ; as,

*Il a DU papier.* He has some paper.  
*Ils ont DE l'argent.* They have money.  
*Nous avons DES amis.* We have friends.

4. When the partitive noun, however, is the object of a verb with a negative, it takes *de* without the article ; as,

*Il n'a PAS DE papier.* He has no paper.  
*Ils n'ont PAS D'amis.* They have not any friends.

5. Also, when the partitive noun is immediately preceded by an adjective, it takes *de* without the article; as,

*J'ai de beaux livres.*  
*Vous avez de bons amis.*

I have some handsome books.  
You have good friends.

6. If, however, the adjective preceding a partitive noun be compounded with it, making essentially but one word, as *bon mot*, *grand homme*, *jeunes gens*, *petits pois*, etc., the article is used; as,

*Je ne connais rien de désagréable comme*  
*des petits-maitres qui veulent donner*  
*le ton à la société.*

I know nothing so disagreeable as fops, who  
wish to give the tone to society.

7. If the adjective preceding the partitive noun also be emphatic, so as to give it a precise and particular sense, the article is used; as,

*Poésie de la vraie poésie.*  
*J'ai du bon vin.*

There is some *real* poetry.  
I have some (really) good wine.

8. In interrogations, when a negative partitive is affirmative in idea, the article is used; and when negative in idea, *de* without the article is used; as,

*Pourquoi vous croyez-vous malheureux?*  
*n'avez-vous pas de la considération,*  
*de l'argent et des amis?*

Why do you fancy yourself unhappy? Have  
you not respect, money, and friends?

*Pourquoi l'étranger ne continue-t-il pas*  
*son voyage? n'a-t-il pas d'argent?*  
*N'a-t-il pas d'amis?*

Why does not that stranger continue his  
journey? has he no money?  
Has he no friends?

9. When a negative partitive is followed by an adjective, relative pronoun, or any clause which effectually limits its meaning, the article is used; as,

*Je ne vous ferai pas des reproches frivoles.\**  
*On ne soulage pas des douleurs qu'on mé-*  
*prise.*

I will make you no frivolous reproaches.  
We do not console griefs which we despise.

10. The definite article is used in preference to the possessive adjectives *mon*, *ton*, *son*, etc., when the possessor is otherwise sufficiently denoted; but if not, the adjective is to be used; as,

*J'ai mal à la tête.†*  
*Je vois que ma jambe s'enfle.†*

I have a pain in my head.  
I see that my leg swells.

REM.—In speaking of parts of the body, possession is expressed by the verb rather than by the possessive adjectives; as,

*Elle a les yeux bleus.*  
*Il a le pied petit.*

Her eyes are blue.  
His foot is small.

11. The possessive adjective, however, is generally used instead of the article, speaking of any part of the body, to denote something *continuous* or *usual*:

*Son épaule lui fait mal.*  
*C'est sa goutte que le tourmente.*  
*Ma tête me fait toujours mal.*  
*J'ai encore ma migraine.*

His shoulder pains him.  
His gout torments him.  
I have always a pain in my head.  
I have still my headache.

In these examples it is meant that the evil is permanent or returns periodically.

\* If the speaker means, *I will make you no reproaches (frivolous things)*, he would employ *des reproches frivoles*, because the adjective does not effectually limit the noun; but if he means, *I will make you no frivolous reproaches (but some of importance)*, it effectually limits the noun, and he would employ *des reproches frivoles*.

† In the first of these sentences the possessor is sufficiently indicated. I can have a pain in no one's head but my own, hence *la* is used; but I can see another's leg swell as well as my own, hence *ma* is used in the second sentence.

12. The definite article is used also with the titles and epithets prefixed to proper names ; as,

<i>Le docteur Smith.</i>	Doctor Smith.
<i>Le général Taylor.</i>	General Taylor.
<i>Louis le grand.</i>	Lewis the Great.

13. This article is sometimes used to denote what is habitual ; as,

<i>Il prend le thé.</i>	He takes tea.
<i>Il va à l'église le dimanche.</i>	He goes to church Sundays.

14. This article is generally used before the names of countries ; as,

<i>La France est plus grande que la Suisse.</i>	France is larger than Switzerland.
<i>L'Asie touche à l'Afrique.</i>	Asia touches Africa.

15. Countries having the same name as their capital omit the article ; as,  
*Naples et Corfu sont des pays délicieux.* Naples and Corfu are delightful countries.

16. After prepositions meaning *to*, *from*, or *in*, the names of countries which are feminine generally omit the article, and those which are masculine generally retain it.

<i>Il va en Espagne.</i>	He goes to Spain.
<i>Nous venons d'Angleterre.</i>	We come from England.
<i>Il est au Canada.</i>	He is in Canada.

17. Masculine names of countries, all those containing an adjective, and the following feminines, are seldom used without the article : *La Guadeloupe, la Jamaïque, la Louisiane, l'Abyssinie, la Guinée* ; as, *l'empire du Brésil, dans la Nouvelle Grénade, à la Guyane.*

18. The names of rivers, lakes, and mountains take the article ; as, *L'Hudson, le lac George, les Alpes.*

#### OMISSION OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. The definite article is omitted with the names of cities ; as,

<i>Il vient de Londres.</i>	He comes from London.
<i>Il va à Boston.</i>	He is going to Boston.

2. Names of cities, however, derived from common nouns, or having an adjective or its equivalent for part of the name, take the article ; as,

<i>Il demeure au Havre.*</i>	He dwells at Havre.
<i>Il est à la Nouvelle Orléans.</i>	He is in New Orleans.

3. It is generally omitted with a noun forming one idea with a verb ; as,

<i>J'ai besoin. Il prend garde.</i>	I need. He takes care.
<i>Ils ont froid. Vous avez honte.</i>	They are cold. You are ashamed.

4. It is omitted with a noun which, with a preposition, qualifies another noun ; as,

<i>Un habit de drap.</i>	A cloth coat.
<i>Une maison de pierre.</i>	A stone house.
<i>Un bateau à vapeur.</i>	A steamboat.

5. Also with a noun which, with a preposition, forms an adverbial phrase ; as,  
*En vérité. Par cour. Avec courage.* In truth. By heart. With courage.

\* *Havre* formerly meant *harbor*.

6. Also with a noun which follows *de* after an adverb or noun of quantity ; as,

*Beaucoup d'argent. Peu d'amis.* Much money. Few friends.  
*Une douzaine d'hommes.* A dozen men.

7. *Bien, la plupart, and le plus grand nombre*, although terms of quantity, always take the article before a limiting noun ; as,

*Bien de l'argent. La plupart des gens.* Much money. Most people.

8. THE ARTICLES DEFINITE AND INDEFINITE are omitted in French with nouns in apposition with a preceding noun or sentence, when the article can be omitted in English ; as,

*Ulysse, père de Télémaque.* Ulysses, (the) father of Telemachus.  
*Le misanthrope, comédie de Molière.* The misanthrope, (a) comedy of Molière.

9. They are sometimes omitted, especially in proverbial and enumerative phrases, to give energy or rapidity to discourse ; as,

*Pauvreté n'est pas vice.* Poverty is not a vice.  
*Jeunes et vieux, riches et pauvres, tout le monde était admis.* Young and old, rich and poor, every body was admitted.

10. THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE is omitted before a noun in the predicate qualifying the subject like an adjective ; as,

*Il est soldat. Je suis français.* He is a soldier. I am a Frenchman.

11. When the noun in the predicate has not the nature of an adjective, as when qualified by an adjective or additional phrase, it takes the article ; as,

*C'est un soldat du roi.* He is a soldier of the king.  
*C'est un bon soldat.* He is a good soldier.

12. The articles are repeated before each noun in the same construction, and before each adjective belonging to a separate noun ; as,

*Le cœur, l'esprit, les mœurs, tout gagne à la culture.* The heart, the mind, the manners, all gains by cultivation.  
*Le vieux et le jeune soldat.* The old and the young soldier  
*Le vieux et le brave soldat.* The old and brave soldier.

## NOUNS.

### GENDER OF NOUNS.

There are two genders in French, the masculine and the feminine. In almost all cases the names of males are masculine, and those of females feminine. The gender of inanimate objects can not be reduced to rules, and the attempt to teach them in this way would be an unprofitable waste of the learner's time. The following brief rules, however, may be useful.

#### I.—MASCULINE NOUNS,

1. Are those not ending in *e* mute generally ; as, *Le chapeau, le pain, le lendemain.*

2. Those ending in *age, ége, uge, and ange* ; as, *Le fromage, le jardinage, le siège, le refuge, le déluge, le change.*

*La rage, la nage, la cage, la page,* are exceptions.

3. Those ending in *ment* and *oir* ; as, *Le châtiment, le bâtiment, le parloir.*
4. Names of the seasons, days of the week, and months ; as, *Le printemps, le lundi ; Avril est pluvieux.*
5. Other parts of speech used as nouns ; as, *Le beau, le manger, le devant.*

II.—FEMININE NOUNS,

1. Are those ending in *e* mute generally ; as, *La chaise, la pomme, la veille.*
2. Those ending in *cion, tion, sion, xion, ure, oire, eur* ; as, *La coercion, la version, l'attention, la réflexion, la brûlure, l'écritoire, la chaleur.*
3. Most of those ending in *son*, and *té* or *tée* ; as, *La maison, la moisson, la charité, l'assiette.*
4. Names of abstract qualities generally ; as, *L'indulgence, la vertu, la méchanceté, l'avarice.*
5. Names of festivals generally, because the feminine word *fête* is understood ; as, *La pâque, la St. Jean*, for *la fête de pâque, la fête St. Jean*, etc. When the word *fête* is not understood, they follow the general rule ; as, *le carnaval, le carême, le nouvel an.*

III.

1. Animals have distinct names for the male and female, when the sex is easily distinguished ; as, *Le coq, la poule ; le cheval, la jument ; le lion, la lionne* ; but in speaking generally, the masculine is always used.
2. The names of animals, when the male and female are not easily distinguished, follow the rules of inanimate objects ; as, *Le renard, le rossignol, la beetle, la grive, la sardine.*

IV.

Many nouns, denoting living beings, form the feminine like adjectives ; as, *Le voisin, la voisine ; le jardinier, la jardinière le duc, la duchesse ; le juif, la juive.*

V.

There are some eighty or more nouns in the French language which are masculine in one sense, and feminine in another ; as,

<i>Un livre</i> , a book ; <i>une livre</i> , a pound.	<i>Un manche</i> , a handle ; <i>une manche</i> , a sleeve.
<i>Un poste</i> , a station ; <i>une poste</i> , a post-office.	<i>Un page</i> , page of a prince ; <i>une page</i> , of a book.
<i>Un tour</i> , a turn ; <i>une tour</i> , a tower.	<i>Un voile</i> , a veil ; <i>une voile</i> , a sail.

Such words are set down as different ones in the dictionary, and need not here be given.

VI.

The following nouns have some peculiarities of gender :

**AIDE**, referring to persons, is masculine or feminine according to the sex of the person ; meaning assistance, it is always feminine ; as,

*Son aide*, his assistant ; *aide prompt*, prompt assistance.

**AIGLE** is generally masculine ; but when the female is particularly referred to, the feminine is to be used ; as,

*L'aigle est remplie de tendresse pour ses petits.* The eagle is full of tenderness for her little ones.

**AIGLE**, a standard, is always feminine ; as, *L'aigle romaine, l'aigle américaine.*

AMOUR in the singular is masculine; in the plural, it is feminine in the sense of passion; meaning little figures, statuettes, it is always masculine.

AUTOMNE, formerly feminine, is now always used as masculine.

DÉLICE is masculine in the singular, and feminine in the plural; as,

*Quel délice!* what delight! *Toutes ses délices*, all his delights.

ENFANT is generally masculine; but when it denotes a girl it is feminine.

FOUDRE, thunder, is usually feminine; in the sublime style, it can be masculine.

GENS, meaning men, persons, originally feminine, has the adjectives and participles following it always masculine; those which precede it are, for sound's sake, feminine, unless they are common gender, or have the same sound in the masculine as in the feminine; as, *de fines gens*, *des gens bien fins*.

When the adjective preceding *gens* has the same sound in the masculine as in the feminine, either may be used; as, *quelles gens*, or *quels gens*.

*Tous*, with an adjective of common gender, or alone before *gens*, limited by a word or phrase, is used in the masculine; as, *Tous les honnêtes gens*; *tous les gens sensés*, *tous les gens que je connais*.

All the compounds of *gens* are masculine; as, *Gens de lettres*, *gens d'affaires*, *gens de robe*, *gens de bien*, *gens de cœur*, *gens de guerre*, *jeunes gens*.

HYMNE for the church is feminine; all others are masculine.

*Les belles hymnes de Santeuil.*

The beautiful hymns of Santeuil.

*Les hymnes harmonieux d'Horace.*

The harmonious odes of Horace.

ŒUVRE is always feminine in the plural, and in its ordinary acceptation in the singular; as, *Cette œuvre est achevée*, that work is finished.

An extraordinary act, or uncommon production, is sometimes masculine in the singular; as, *Un œuvre de génie*. In terms of alchemy, and in works of sculpture and music, it is masculine.

ORGE is feminine, except in the expressions *orge mondé*, barley hulled, and *orge perlé*, barley pearled.

ORGUE, an organ, is masculine in the singular, and feminine in the plural; as, *Un orgue excellent*, an excellent organ; *de bonnes orgues*, good organs.

PÂQUE, the Jewish Passover, is feminine, and takes *la*; *Pâques*, Easter, is generally feminine plural, but is also used in the masculine singular and omits the article; as, *La Pâque des Juifs*, the Passover of the Jews. *Quand Pâque sera venu*, when Easter shall have come.

PÉRIODE is masculine when it denotes the highest point which any thing can attain; in other senses it is feminine; as,

*Il a porté l'éloquence à son plus haut période.* He has carried eloquence to its highest point.

*Une période longue. Une période courte.* A long period. A short period.

PERSONNE, person, is feminine; in the sense of *no one* it is masculine.

*Ce sont des personnes bien chères.*

They are persons very dear.

*Je ne connais personne tout à fait heureux.*

I knew no one entirely happy.

QUELQUE CHOSE, meaning *something*, is masculine; meaning *whatever thing* is feminine; as,

<i>Quelque chose de bon.</i>	Something good.
<i>Quelque chose que vous lui offriez, il le refusera.</i>	Whatever you may offer him he will decline.

AUTRE CHOSE is also masculine when it means *something*, or *any thing else*; but feminine when it means *another thing*; as,

<i>Autre chose vous contrarie-t-elle ?</i>	Does any thing else annoy you ?
<i>L'autre chose est très-bonne.</i>	The other thing is very good.

ESPACE, space, is generally masculine, but in printing it is feminine; as,	
<i>Le grand espace qui sépare la terre des astres.</i>	The broad space which separates the earth from the stars.
<i>Espaces fines.</i>	Narrow spaces (in printing).

## THE PLURAL OF NOUNS.

1. The plural of nouns is generally formed in French as in English, by adding *s* to the singular; as, *L'homme, les hommes; la femme, les femmes.*

2. Nouns terminating in *s*, *x*, or *z*, are unchanged in the plural; as, *Le bas, les bas; la noix, les noix; le nez, les nez.*

3. Nouns ending in *al*, change *al* into *aux* for the plural; as, *cheval, chevaux; général, généraux.*

4. Those in *au* and *eu* add *x* for the plural; as, *chapeau, chapeaux; feu, feux.*

The following are exceptions, many of which have been given before:

1. Seven in *ou* take *x* for the plural: *Bijou, a jewel; caillou, a pebble; chou, a cabbage; genou, the knee; joujou, a toy; hibou, an owl; and pou, a louse.*

*Landeau, a kind of carriage, has the plural landaus.*

2. The following in *al* take *s* in the plural: *bal, a ball; cal, a callosity; cantal, a kind of cheese; carnaval, a carnival; cérémonial, ceremonial; pal, a pale; régal, an entertainment; also, names of plants and animals (except cheval); as, chacal, a jackall; narval, a narval; nopal, a kind of plant; sandal, sandal wood. These make in the plural, bals, cals, etc.*

3. The following in *ail* have *aux* in the plural: *bail, lease; corail, coral; email, enamel; plumail, a feather-brush; soupirail, vent; vantail, leaf of a door; vitrail, a large pane of glass for churches, seldom used in the singular. Travail, labor, has the plural travaux; travail, a machine in which horses are shod, also the accounts rendered by public ministers, has the plural travaux.*

*Aïeul, meaning ancestor, has plural aïeux; meaning grandfather or maternal ancestor, aïeuls.*

*Ail, garlic, as a vegetable, has the plural aulx; as a term in botany, its plural is aïls.*

*Bétail and bestiaux have the same signification, cattle; the former has no plural, the latter no singular.*

*Ciel, heaven, has the plural cieux; ciel, tester of a bed, sky in painting, or meaning climate, has the plural ciels.*

*Œil, eye, the organ of vision, has the plural yeux; œil, a term of art, has the plural œils.*



## PLURAL OF PROPER NAMES.

5. Proper names are generally unchanged in the plural; as,

*Les deux SÉNÉQUE.*

The two Senecas.

*Les deux CORNEILLE.*

The two Cornelles.

6. When, however, proper nouns are used like common nouns, to denote classes rather than individuals, they take the plural termination; as,

*La France a eu ses CÉSARS.*

France has had its Cæsars.

*La Seine a ses BOURBONS.*

The Seine has its Bourbons.

## PLURAL OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

Some compound nouns form their plural by varying both parts of the compound, others by varying one, and others by varying neither.

1. Compounds formed of two nouns generally vary both parts in the plural; as,

*Un oiseau-mouche, des oiseaux-mouches.*

A humming-bird, humming-birds.

*Un chou-fleur, des choux-fleurs.*

A cauliflower, cauliflowers.

*Un chien loup, des chiens loups.*

A wolf-dog, wolf-dogs.

2. Sometimes, however, from the nature of its signification, one or both of the parts are unchangeable. The following are of this kind:

*Un Hôtel-Dieu, des Hôtels Dieu.*

A hospital, hospitals.

*Un bain-marie, des bains marie.*

A wet bath, wet baths.

*Un garde-chasse, des gardes-chasse.*

A game-keeper, game-keepers.

*Un brèche-dents, des brèche-dents.*

Blind-man's buff.

*Un colin-maillard, des colin-maillard.*

A fig-pecker, fig-peckers.

*Un bec-figue, des bec-figue.*

A resting-stick, resting-sticks.

*Un appui-main, des appui-main.*

3. When a noun and an adjective form a compound noun, both words vary their terminations for the plural; as,

*Une basse-cour, des basses-cour.*

A poultry-yard, poultry-yards.

*Une fausse-clef, des fausses-clefs.*

A skeleton-key, skeleton-keys.

Except *des terre-pleins*, where the sense does not admit *terre* in the plural; *des grand-mères*, *des grand-messes*, so written for euphony; *un* or *des cheval-légers*, and a few others where the nature of the words prevents one or both changing for the plural.

4. When two nouns united by a preposition make a compound, the first alone is varied to form the plural; as,

*Un chef-d'œuvre, des chefs-d'œuvre.*

A master-piece, master-pieces.

*Un arc-en-ciel, des arcs-en-ciel.*

A rainbow, rainbows.

Except *des coq-d'âne*, cock-and-bull stories; *des pied-d-terre*, temporary lodgings; and *des tête-à-tête*, private interviews, where the sense does not admit the plural nouns.

5. When a noun joined to a verb, preposition, or adverb, forms a compound, the noun is varied to form the plural; as, *des contre-coups*, rebounds; *des avant-gardes*, vanguards; *des garde-robes*, wardrobes.

But the following take no *s* because there is unity in the idea: *des serre-tête*, head-bands; *des reveille-matin*, alarm-clocks; *des contre-poison*, antidotes; *des abat-jour*, trunk-lights; *des chasse-marte*, fish-carts; *des coupe-gorge*, cut-throat places.

The following take *s* both in the singular and plural, because there is plurality in the idea : *un* or *des essuie-mains*, a towel, or towels ; *un* or *des cure-dents*, a tooth-pick, or tooth-picks ; *un* or *des couvre-pieds*, a coverlet, or coverlets ; *un* or *des porte-mouchettes*, a snuffer-tray, or snuffer-trays ; *un* or *des porte-clefs*, a turnkey, or turnkeys.

6. Nouns compounded of invariable words are not varied to form the plural ; as, *des pour-boire*, drinking-money ; *des pince-sans-rire*, malicious persons ; *des passe-partout*, master-keys.

7. A noun preceded by a preposition and limiting another noun is singular or plural according to the sense. When the noun is used in a general sense, it is commonly singular ; in an individual sense it is plural.

*Des œufs de poule*, some hen's eggs.

*Des œufs d'oiseaux*, some eggs of birds.

*Un marchand de drap*, a cloth-merchant.

*Un marchand de draps fins*, a merchant of fine cloths.

Sometimes the number of such a noun is determined by the number in which it is used generally ; as,

*Un marchand de poisson*.

A dealer in fish.

*Un marchand de harengs*.

A dealer in herring.

When such a noun, in an individual sense, denotes the material of which a thing is composed, if the material has lost its original form it is singular ; if it has not, it is plural ; as,

*De la gélee de romme*, apple-jelly.

*Un panier de pommes*, a basket of apples.

#### CASES.

1. French nouns have no distinction of cases. It is convenient, however, to denote their relations to the verb by the following terms : *subject*, corresponding to the nominative ; *direct object*, corresponding to the accusative or objective case ; and *indirect object*, corresponding to the genitive, dative, and ablative cases.

2. THE SUBJECT is that in regard to which something is affirmed, or a question asked by the verb ; thus, *J'aime Dieu*, I love God. *Faites-vous votre devoir ?* do you do your duty ? *La modestie plaît*, modesty pleases. Here *Je*, *vous*, and *modestie* are the subjects.

3. THE DIRECT OBJECT is the object of a transitive verb, or that which completes the meaning of the verb, without the help of any other word ; as, *J'estime les gens vertueux*, I esteem virtuous people. *J'aime l'étude*, I like study. Here *gens* and *étude* are direct objects.

4. THE INDIRECT OBJECT is that which completes the meaning of the verb by the help of one of the prepositions, *à*, *de*, *pour*, *dans*, etc. ; as, *Il parle à Pierre*, he speaks to Peter. *Il répond de vous*. Here *Pierre* and *vous* are indirect objects.

## ADJECTIVES.

## PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

Some adjectives are almost always placed before the noun, others after it, and others again either before or after, as clearness or harmony may require. The following rules, though not a perfect guide in all cases, will be of use to the learner.

## ADJECTIVES PLACED BEFORE THE NOUN.

1. *Possessive, demonstrative, numeral, and indefinite* adjectives always precede the noun; as, *MON livre, CET homme, le PREMIER écolier, QUELQUES pommes.*
2. Adjectives expressing immaterial qualities, or those not the objects of our senses, are generally placed before the noun; as, *Le MAUVAIS beurre.*
3. Also, most short adjectives, those shorter than their nouns; as, *Le BON homme, le VIEUX cheval.*

In accordance with the two last rules, the following adjectives, used in their ordinary sense, are generally placed before their nouns: *Beau, bon, brave, cher, digne, grand, gros, jeune, joli, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, même, moindre, petit, saint, sot, vieux, vrai.*

## ADJECTIVES PLACED AFTER THE NOUN.

1. Adjectives expressing material qualities, or those which are the objects of our senses, as *color, shape, taste*, etc., are placed after the noun; as, *Le drap NOIR, l'encrier CARRÉ.*
2. Also, long adjectives, those longer than their nouns; as, *Une maison MAGNIFIQUE.*
3. All participles, present or past, used as adjectives; as, *Des insectes vivants, Des eaux dormantes, Un habit bien fait, Une maison bien située.*
4. National and denominational adjectives: as, *Un cheval ANGLAIS, L'église PRESBYTÉRIENNE.*
5. A great many adjectives ending in *ant, ent, able, ible, al, ile, age, eux, if, ique*; \* as, *Un homme PRUDENT, un temps AGRÉABLE.*
6. Adjectives having regimens are always after their nouns; as, *Un enfant CHER à son père.*
7. Adjectives, qualifying two or more nouns, follow them; as, *Un cheval et un baruf MÉCHANTS.*
8. Two or more adjectives expressing similar qualities, belonging to one noun, generally follow it; expressing dissimilar qualities, they are placed according to the previous rules; as, *Une chose BONNE ET AGRÉABLE, Un BEAU bâtiment SYMÉTRIQUE, Une PETITE voiture NEUVE.*
9. When the numerals are used as titles or quotations, and without the article, they may come after the noun; as, *Chapitre premier*, chapter first; *chapitre deux*, chapter second. In this case the cardinal numbers are used,

\* This rule is much the same in effect as 2, for almost all adjectives with these terminations are long.

except for the first (*premier*). Cardinal numbers are also used after the noun to distinguish sovereigns; as, *Charles dix*, Charles the tenth.

10. Adjectives joined to a proper name precede it when they express mere qualities; as, *Le bon Henri*; but when they express a permanent title, they come after it with the article, *Henri le bon*, *Pierre le grand*.

REM.—From the above rules it appears that the greater number of French adjectives are placed after their nouns; but those placed before them are more frequently used.

11. Some adjectives vary their signification as they are placed before or after the noun. A few of these are given in Lesson 21, page 403; to these may be added the following:

<i>Un petit homme</i> , a small man.	<i>Un homme petit</i> , a mean man.
<i>Une grosse femme</i> , a big woman.	<i>Une femme grosse</i> , a pregnant woman.
<i>Une certaine nouvelle</i> , a particular piece of news.	<i>Une nouvelle certaine</i> , sure news.
<i>Le grand air</i> , the open air.	<i>L'air grand</i> , the noble look.
<i>Un gentilhomme</i> , a nobleman.	<i>Un homme gentil</i> , a pretty good fellow (familiar or ironical).
<i>Un plaisant homme</i> , a ridiculous man.	<i>Un homme plaisant</i> , a facetious man.
<i>Une sage femme</i> , a mid-wife.	<i>Une femme sage</i> , a wise woman.
<i>Un cruel homme</i> , an insupportable man.	<i>Un homme cruel</i> , a cruel man.
<i>Un maueais air</i> , an ignoble look.	<i>Un air maueais</i> , a wicked look.
<i>Du mort bois</i> , worthless wood.	<i>Du bois mort</i> , dead wood.
<i>D'une commune voix</i> , unanimously.	<i>La voix commune</i> , the general opinion.
<i>Une fausse clef</i> , a false key.	<i>Une corde fausse</i> , a discordant string.
<i>Un faux jour</i> , a wrong light.	<i>Un jour faux</i> , wrong shading.
<i>Une fausse porte</i> , a secret door.	<i>Une porte fausse</i> , a sham door.
<i>Un nouvel habit</i> , a different coat.	<i>Un habit nouveau</i> , a new-fashion coat.
<i>Un nouveau liere</i> , a newly-obtained book.	<i>Un liere nouveau</i> , a newly-published book.
<i>Un haut ton</i> , a proud tone.	<i>Un ton haut</i> , a loud tone.
<i>Une méchante épigramme</i> , a poor epigram.	<i>Une épigramme méchante</i> , a malicious epigram.
<i>Un furieux menteur</i> , a prodigious liar.	<i>Un lion furieux</i> , a furious lion.
<i>Deux mortels volumes</i> , two large volumes.	<i>Poison mortel</i> , mortal poison.
<i>Un seul homme</i> , one only man.	<i>Un homme seul</i> , a man alone.

#### GENDER AND NUMBER OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives have neither gender nor number in themselves, but take those of the noun to which they belong; that is, adjectives agree in gender and number with their nouns; as,

<i>Un homme courageux.</i>	<i>Une femme courageuse.</i>	A courageous man.	A courageous woman.
<i>Des hommes prudents.</i>	<i>Des femmes prudentes.</i>	Prudent men.	Prudent women.

#### FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES FORMED.

1. All French adjectives end in *e* mute in the feminine.
2. Masculine adjectives ending in *e* mute are unchanged in the feminine; as,  
*Le PAUVRE homme.* *La PAUVRE femme.* The poor man. The poor woman.
3. Those not ending in *e* mute annex one for the feminine; as,  
*Mon PETIT frère.* *Ma PETITE sœur.* My little brother. My little sister.

4. Those ending in *el, cil, ien, on, as, os, et, and ot*, double the final consonant before *e* mute; as, *Tel, telle; pareil, pareille; ancien, ancienne; bon, bonne; gras, grasse; gros, grosse; muet, muette; sot, sottie*.

5. Those in *f* make their feminine in *ve*, and those in *x* in *se*; as, *Neuf, neuve; heureux, heureuse; jaloux, jalouse*.

6. *Qu* is the equivalent of *c* before *i* or *e*. Hence, adjectives ending in *c* change it to *qu* before *e* of the feminine; as, *Public, publique; caduc, caduque*.

7. *Beau, nouveau, fou, and mou*, become *bel, nouvel, fol, and mol*, and *vieux* generally becomes *vieil*, before a vowel or a silent *h*; and from these latter the feminines are formed according to the above rule 4, making *Belle, nouvelle, folle, molle, and vieille*.

8. Nouns expressing qualifications and professions generally form their feminine as adjectives.

The following are exceptions to the above rules:

*Complet* makes the feminine *complète*; *concret, concrète*; *discret, discrète*; *inquiet, inquiète*; *replet, replète*; *secret, secrète*.

MAS.	FEM.	MAS.	FEM.	MAS.	FEM.
Aboué,	abouté.	Faux,	fausse.	Mâitre,	mâîtresse.
Aigu,	aigué.	Frais,	fraîche.	Nègre (adj.),	négresse (n.).
Ambigu,	ambigué.	Favori,	favorita.	Oblong,	oblongue.
Béni,	bénigne.	Franc,	franche.	Préfix,	préfixe.
Blanc,	blanche.	Jouvencé,	jouvencelle.	Résous,	résolue.
Col,	colte.	Jumeau,	jumelle.	Roux,	roussé.
Contigu,	contigué.	Long,	longue.	Sec,	sèche.
Devir,	devineresse.	Maitre,	maitresse.	Suisse (adj.),	suisse (n.).
Dissous,	dissoute.	Maire,	mairese.	Tiers,	tierce.
Doux,	douce.	Malin,	maligne.	Traître,	traîtresse.
Exigu,	exigué.				

The following also double the last consonant before *e* mute of the feminine:

Épais,	épaisse.	Grec,	grecque.	Payan,	payanne.
Express,	expresse.	Nul,	nulle.	Profus,	professe.
Gentil,	gentille.				

9. Adjectives in *eur*, and nouns expressing qualifications, have the feminine as follows. Those formed from present participles, by turning *ant* into *eur*, change *r* into *se* for the feminine; as,

PART.	MAS.	FEM.	PART.	MAS.	FEM.
Ballant,	bailleur,	bailleuse.	Chantant,	chanteur,	chanteuse.
Dansant,	danseur,	danseuse.	Mentant,	menteur,	menteuse.
Trompant,	trompeur,	trompeuse.	Vendant,	vendeur,	vendeuse.

But *baïlleur*, a lessor; *demandeur*, a plaintiff at law; *chasseur*, a hunter; *défendeur*, a defendant at law; *enchanter*, an enchanter; *pécheur*, a sinner; *vendeur*, a vendor (in law); *vengeur*, avenging,—change *eur* into *eresse*, making *baïlleseresse, demanderesse, chasseseresse, défenderesse, enchanteresse, vengeressee*.

Also, *débiteur*, a debtor, *exécuteur, inspecteur, persécuteur*, change *teur* into *trice*; making *débitrice, exécutrice, inspectrice, etc.* *Chanteur*, a vocalist, besides *chanteuse*, has feminine *cantatrice*; *ambassadeur* makes *ambassadrice*; *gouverneur* and *serviteur* make *gouvernante* and *servante*.

10. Other adjectives in *teur*, not formed from present participles, have also the feminine in *trice*; as, *accusateur, accusatrice; conducteur, conductrice; créateur, créatrice*, etc.

11. Those in *érieur*, also *majeur, meilleur, mineur*, form the feminine regularly; as, *extérieur, extérieure; inférieur, inférieure; majeure, meilleure*, etc.

12. When the masculine ends in *er*, the feminine takes the grave accent on the penultimate *e*; as, *fier, fière; altier, altière; étranger, étrangère*.

## PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES FORMED.

1. The plural of adjectives, like that of nouns, is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular; as, *petit, petits; grand, grands*.

To this rule there is no exception in the feminine, as it ends in *e* mute.

2. Adjectives ending in *s* or *x* are unchanged in the plural; as, *gros, vieux*.

3. Those in *al* generally change *al* into *aux* for the plural; as, *national, nationaux; libéral, libéraux*.

4. Those in *au* add *x* for the plural; as, *beau, beaux; nouveau, nouveaux*.

5. Many, however, in *al* add *s* for the plural; as, *amical, austral, bancal, borial, doctoral, ducal, fatal, final, filial, frugal, glacial, initial, jovial, labial, matinal, nasal, naval, pascal, pénal, théâtral*.

*Tout* drops *t* in the plural, and forms *tous*.

## AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

1. Adjectives and participles agree with their nouns in gender and number; as,

*Le beau jardin*, the fine garden.

*Les beaux jardins*, the fine gardens.

*La belle maison*, the fine house.

*Les belles maisons*, the fine houses.

2. An adjective qualifying several nouns in the singular is plural; as,

*Cet homme et son enfant sont MALADES.*

That man and his child are sick.

*J'ai un chapeau et un manteau NEUFS.*

I have a new hat and cloak.

3. An adjective qualifying several nouns singular of different genders must be masculine plural; as,

*Mon père et ma mère sont CONTENTS.*

My father and my mother are contented.

*Votre sœur et votre frère sont VENUS.*

Your brother and sister have come.

4. When nouns of different genders are qualified by a following adjective, the sound requires the masculine noun to be placed last; that is, next to the masculine adjective.

*Une grandeur et une mérite parfaits; not  
un mérite et une grandeur parfaits.*

A greatness and a merit perfect.

*Une prudence et un courage étonnants.*

A prudence and a courage astonishing.

5. But when the adjective has the same sound in the masculine as the feminine, it can be placed next to the feminine noun; as,

*L'ordre et l'utilité publics.*

The public order and utility.

6. When the adjective qualifies several nouns of the same or similar meaning, or nouns which form a climax, so that the last includes the force of the others, or when the attention is fixed particularly on the last (in all which cases the conjunction *et* should always be suppressed in French); as,

*Toute sa vie n'a été qu'un travail, qu'une* All his life has been only a labor, an occupa-  
OCCUPATION CONTINUËLLE. tion incessant.

*Le FEU, le BANDAGE, la FLAMME est TOUTE* The fire, the bandage, the flame, is all ready.  
PRÊTE.

7. When the adjective qualifies two preceding nouns united by *ou*, it agrees with the latter; as,

*Ils obtinrent l'estime ou la confiance pu-* They obtained the esteem or the confidence  
*blique.* of the public.

But when such an arrangement presents some ambiguity, the adjective must be plural; as,

*Un homme ou une femme âgés.* An aged man or woman.

8. When an adjective is placed after two nouns connected by a preposition, it may agree with either noun, according to the sense; as,

*Des bas de coton bleus.* Some blue cotton stockings.

*Des bas de coton écreu.* Some stockings of unbleached cotton.

*Une masse de maisons désagréable à la* A mass of houses disagreeable to the sight.  
*vue.*

*Une masse de maisons construites en* A mass of houses built of brick.  
*briques.*

9. *Nu* before a noun, without the article, forms a kind of adverbial phrase, and is invariable; as, *Nu-bras*, bare-armed; *nu-cou*, bare-necked; *nu-jambes*, bare-legged; *nu-pieds*, bare-foot; *nu-tête*, bare-headed. But if the noun following *nu* is accompanied by the article, or by a limiting adjective, it agrees with the noun; as, *La nue propriété, les jambes nues, une épée nue.*

10. *DEMI* is invariable when placed before its noun, to which it is then joined by a hyphen; as, *Une DEMI-heure, une DEMI-livre.* When placed after the noun, it agrees with it in gender, and is always singular; as, *Une heure et DEMIE, trois mètres et DEMI.*

11. The adjective *FEU* (late, deceased), when immediately preceding the noun, agrees with it; but when separated by the article or possessive adjective, it is unchanged; as, *La FEU reine* or *FEU la reine*, the late queen; *votre FEU mère* or *FEU votre mère*, your late mother.

12. *Attendu, ci-inclus, ci-joint, excepté, passé, supposé, compris, franc de port*, when they are before a noun, are used as prepositions or adverbial expressions, and are invariable; after the noun they are used as adjectives, and are variable; as,

*Vous trouverez ci-INCLUS copie du contrat.* You will find included a copy of the contract.

*La lettre ci-INCLUSE, or ci-jointe.* The inclosed letter.

*Vous trouverez ci-JOINT (or ci-inclus) copie* You will find annexed the copy of the agree-  
(or la copie du traité). ment.

*Vous recevrez FRANC DE PORT ces lettres.* You will receive these letters free of postage.  
*Ces lettres sont FRANCHES de port.* These letters are free of postage.

13. *POSSIBLE*, belonging to a noun, agrees with it; but it sometimes belongs to an infinitive understood, and is then invariable; as,

*Cela est dans les choses POSSIBLES.* That is among the things possible.

*Il exterminera le plus d'hommes POSSIBLE.* He exterminates the most men possible.

*Possible*, in this last phrase, belongs to *exterminer* understood, and is invariable.

14. *PROCHE* is sometimes an adjective and sometimes a preposition. When

preceded by the verb *être*, expressed or understood, it may be used as either, but preceded by other verbs it is invariable ; as,

<i>Les maisons PROCHES de la rivière.</i>	The houses near the river.
<i>Les maisons qui sont PROCHES de la ville.</i>	The houses which are near the city.
<i>Les maisons que l'on construit PROCHES du mur.</i>	The houses which they build near the wall.

15. Adjectives used as adverbs are not varied ; as,

<i>Ces fleurs sentent BON.</i>	These flowers smell good.
<i>Ces livres coûtent CHER.</i>	These books cost dear.

16. Two adjectives forming a compound are both varied to agree with the noun. Such are, *aveugle-né, premier-né, mort-né, ivre-mort, sourd-muet* ; as,

<i>Des hommes IVERES-MORTS.</i>	Some men dead drunk.
<i>Des femmes SOURDES-MOUETTES.</i>	Some women deaf and dumb.
<i>Des roses FRAÎCHES CUEILLIES.</i>	Roses freshly gathered.
<i>Des femmes TOUTES-PUISSANTES.</i>	Some women all-powerful.

REM.—*Nouveau*, masculine, in such compounds, is often considered an adverb, and is not varied ; as, *Un enfant nouveau-né, des enfants nouveau-nés.*

17. If the first of such adjectives, however, be *mi, demi, or semi*, the second only is changed ; as,

<i>Des peuples DEMI-CIVILISÉS.</i>	People half civilized.
------------------------------------	------------------------

18. Two adjectives, of which the first qualified the second, are both invariable, the first being taken substantively ; as,

<i>Des cheveux CHÂTAÎN-CLAIR.</i>	Hair of a light chestnut (color).
<i>Des étoffes ROSE-TENDRE.</i>	Cloth of a delicate rose (color).

19. The variation of other compound adjectives will be sufficiently obvious from their nature ; as, *bien-aimé, bien-aimés*, well-beloved.

20. Adjectives following the word *air*, if they refer especially to *air*, agree with it, otherwise with the subject of the verb (*d'être* being either expressed or understood).

<i>Cette femme a L'AIR CHARMANT.</i>	That woman looks charming.
<i>Cette pomme a L'AIR (d'être) CUIT.</i>	That apple looks cooked.

#### DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

1. There are in French, as in English, three degrees of comparison, the *positive, comparative, and superlative*.

2. The *comparative of equality* is formed by placing *aussi* before and *que* after the adjective or adverb compared ; as,

<i>Ma maison est AUSSI belle QUE la vôtre.</i>	My house is as beautiful as yours.
<i>Cet homme est AUSSI modeste QUE avant.</i>	That man is as modest as learned.
<i>Il parle AUSSI éloquentement QUE les autres.</i>	He speaks as eloquently as the others.

3. The *comparative of superiority* is formed by placing *plus* before and *que* after the adjective or adverb compared ; as,

<i>Cet homme est PLUS aimable QUE ses compagnons.</i>	That man is more amiable than his companions.
<i>Elles sont PLUS aimables qu'honnêtes.</i>	They are more amiable than honest.
<i>Nous l'avons compris PLUS facilement QUE vous.</i>	We have understood it more easily than you.



4. The *comparative of inferiority* is formed either by placing *moins* before and *que* after the positive, or by rendering the comparative of equality negative; as,

<i>Ces livres sont MOINS chers QUE les miens.</i>	Those books are less dear than mine.
<i>Ma sœur n'est PAS SI (OR AUTANT) belle QUE ma bonne.</i>	My sister is not so beautiful as good.
<i>Je ne traduis PAS SI (OR AUSSI) bien QUE mon voisin.</i>	I do not translate so well as my neighbor.
<i>Nous les trouverons MOINS aisément qu'autrefois.</i>	We shall find them less easily than before.

5. A few adjectives and adverbs have irregular comparatives.

POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.	
Bon,	good (adject.).	Meilleur (adj.),	better.
Petit,	little, "	Moindre, "	less.
Mauvais,	bad, "	Pire, "	worse.
Bien,	well (adverb).	Mieux (adv.),	better.
Peu,	little, "	Moins, "	less.
Mal,	bad, "	Pis, "	worse.

*Plus mal* is used most generally for euphony instead of *pis*.

Beaucoup,	much or many.	Autant,	as much or as many.
Plus,	more.	Davantage,	more.

*Davantage* is always used absolutely, and at the end of a clause.

6. When *quantities* are compared, the noun must be preceded by *de*, according to the rules for words of quantity; as,

<i>Nous avons AUTANT DE livres QUE DE plumes.</i>	We have as many books as pens.
<i>Avez vous PLUS DE patience QUE mon cousin.</i>	Have more patience than my cousin.
<i>Cet homme possède MOINS DE maisons QUE DE terre.</i>	That man possesses less houses than land.

7. THE SUPERLATIVE is of two kinds, absolute and relative.

8. The *superlative absolute* is formed by prefixing *très, bien, fort, extraordinairement, extrêmement*, etc., to the adjective or adverb; as,

<i>Cela est très-beau.</i>	That is very fine.
<i>Vous êtes bien bon.</i>	You are very good.

9. The *superlative relative* is formed by prefixing the definite article or an adjective pronoun to the comparative of superiority or inferiority; as,

<i>C'était LE MEILLEUR de tous.</i>	It was the best of all.
<i>La PLUS BELLE maison.</i>	The handsomest house.

#### INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

1. Aucun,	no, not any.	Pas un,	not one.
Autre,	other.	Plusieurs,	several.
Chaque,	each, every.	Quel ?	what ? or which ?
Certain,	certain.	Quel que,	whatever.
Maint,	many a.	Quelque—que,	whatever, whoever.
Même,	same, self, very.	Quelque,	some.
Nul,	no, not any.	Quelconque,	whatever.

Tel,	such.	Tous,	every.
Tel que,	such as.	Tout,	any.
Tel quel,	such as it is.	Tout (absolutely),	every thing.
Tout,	whole.	Tout deux,	both (together).
Tous,	all.	Tous les deux,	both.

2. *Chaque* is used with a noun; *chacun*, without one.

*CHACUN homme pourrait être utile; CHA-* Each man could be useful; every one has his  
*CUN a son mérite.* value.

3. *Quelque, quelques* (some—any—a few).

*QUELQUES braves gens.* Some honest people.  
*Prêtez-moi QUELQUES bons livres—QUELQUES* Lend me some good book—a few dollars.  
*dollars.*

4. *Quelconque* is always after the noun.

*D'une manière QUELCONQUE.* In any way whatever.

5. *Quel que* followed by a verb is written as two words, *quel* agreeing with the subject of the verb; as,

*QUELS que soient les humains.* Whatever men may be.

6. *Quelque—que* before a noun is an adjective, and agrees in number with it; as,

*QUELQUES raisons qu'ils aient, etc.* Whatever reasons they may have.

7. *Quelque*, referring to a qualifying word, is an adverb, and invariable; as,

*QUELQUE imposante que soient vos démon-* However imposing may be your demonstra-  
*strations.* tions.

8. *Tout*, when it modifies an adjective, is an adverb, and invariable; as,

*Une valeur TOUT héroïque.* A bravery quite heroic.

9. But if the adjective be feminine, and begin with a consonant or aspirated *h*, euphony requires that *tout* be varied as an adjective; as,

*Sa mère est tout aimable; elle est toute dis-* His mother is quite amiable; she is quite  
*posée à lui pardonner.* disposed to pardon him.

10. *Tout* before the proper name of a city is always masculine, because it belongs to *peuple* understood; as,

*Tout Smyrne ne parlait que d'elle.* All Smyrna spoke only of her.  
*Tout Rome était consterné.* All Rome was dismayed.

REM.—When the name is accompanied by an adjective, *tout* is generally feminine; as,  
*Toute l'ancienne Rome.* All ancient Rome.

11. *Aucun* and *nul* are essentially singular: but when they belong to a noun which has no singular, or which denotes particularly the plural, they take the plural number; as,

*Il ne gagne AUCUNES gages.* He gains no wages.  
*NULLES troupes ne sont mieux exercées.* No troops are better exercised.

REM.—*Nul* after the noun means *null, void*, and follows the general rule.

12. *Même* is an adjective, and variable when it refers to only *one* noun, and when it is annexed to a pronoun, in which case it means *same, self, very*; as,

*Les mêmes vertus. Les mêmes vices.* The same virtues. The same vices.  
*Moi-même. Eux-mêmes. Ceux mêmes.* Myself. Themselves. Those very ones.  
*Les pierres mêmes.* The very stones.

13. It is an adverb, and invariable when it modifies a verb or an adjective, or is placed after two or more nouns; in which case it means *even, also*; as,

*On doit secourir même les méchants.*

We ought to help even the wicked.

*Nous devons obéir aux lois même injustes.*

We ought to obey even unjust laws.

*Les animaux, les plantes même étaient au nombre des divinités égyptiennes.*

Animals and even plants were among the number of the Egyptian divinities.

#### NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

For Cardinal and Ordinal, see Lesson 88, page 147.

1. The ORDINAL NUMBERS take the gender and number of their nouns; as,  
*Les PREMIERS chrétiens. La SECONDE leçon.* The first Christians. The second lesson.

2. The cardinal numbers are invariable, except *vingt* and *cent*.

*Un* has both genders, and can be plural when used with *quelques* or the articles to form the pronouns *quelqu'un, quelques-uns, quelques-unes, l'un, l'une, les uns, les unes*.

3. *Vingt* and *cent* take *s* when preceded by a number which multiplies them; as,

*Quatre-vingts ans. Trois cents ans.*

Eighty. Three hundred years.

4. *Vingt* and *cent* are invariable, however, when followed by another number, and when used for ordinal numbers; as,

*Quatre-vingt-cinq. Six cent trente.*

Eighty-five. Six hundred and thirty.

*L'an cinq cent. Page quatre-vingt.*

The five-hundredth year. The eightieth page.

5. *MILLE* becomes *mil* in the computation of years of the Christian era less than two thousand, in all other cases it is unabbreviated; as,

*En MIL huit cent de l'ère chrétienne.*

In one thousand eight hundred of the Christian era.

*L'an deux MILLE de la création.*

The year two thousand from the creation.

6. *Mille* takes *s* only when it is a noun and signifies *miles*.

*Cinq MILLE prisonniers. Cinq MILLER.*

Five thousand prisoners. Five miles.

7. From numeral adjectives are formed NUMERAL NOUNS by annexing *aine*, with such other slight changes as euphony requires; as,

*Dizaine,* ten.

*quarantaine,* forty.

*douzaine,* a dozen.

*cinquantaine,* fifty.

*quinzaine,* fifteen.

*soixantaine,* sixty.

*vingtaine,* a score.

*quatre-vingtaine,* eighty.

*trentaine,* thirty.

*une centaine,* a hundred.

Such nouns (except *Une douzaine*, 12), may have some vagueness of meaning, implying *nearly, about*; as, *J'ai une centaine d'écus*, I have *some* hundred crowns, or, *about* a hundred crowns.

8. The FRACTIONAL NUMERALS are these:

*La moitié,* the half.

*un cinquième,* one-fifth.

*le tiers,* the third.

*quatre cinquièmes,* four-fifths.

*deux tiers,* two thirds.

*un sixième,* a sixth.

*un quart,* a fourth.

*un dixième,* a tenth.

*trois quarts,* three-fourths.

*un centième,* a hundredth, etc.

## DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

MASCULINE.	FEMININE.	BOTH GENDERS.	
1. Ce,	Cette.	This, that.	Ces. These, those.
2. <i>Ce</i> becomes <i>cet</i> before a vowel or a silent <i>h</i> .			
<i>Ce soldat</i> , this soldier.		<i>Ces soldats</i> , these soldiers.	
<i>Cet enfant</i> , that child.		<i>Ces enfants</i> , those children.	
<i>Cette dame</i> , that lady.		<i>Ces dames</i> , those ladies.	
3. When it is necessary to distinguish <i>this</i> and <i>that</i> , <i>ci</i> and <i>là</i> are annexed to the nouns ; as,			
<i>Ce livre-ci</i> , this book.		<i>Ce livre-là</i> , that book.	
<i>Ces livres-ci</i> , these books.		<i>Ces livres-là</i> , those books.	

## POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

MASCULINE.	FEMININE.	PLURAL.	
<i>Mon</i> ,	<i>ma</i> ,	<i>mes</i> ,	My.
<i>Ton</i> ,	<i>ta</i> ,	<i>tes</i> ,	Thy.
<i>Son</i> ,	<i>sa</i> ,	<i>ses</i> ,	His, her, its.
<i>Notre</i> ,	<i>notre</i> ,	<i>nos</i> ,	Our.
<i>Votre</i> ,	<i>votre</i> ,	<i>vos</i> ,	Your.
<i>Leur</i> ,	<i>leur</i> ,	<i>leurs</i> ,	Theirs.
1. <i>Ma</i> , <i>ta</i> , <i>sa</i> , become <i>mon</i> , <i>ton</i> , <i>son</i> , for the sake of euphony, before a vowel or a silent <i>h</i> ; as,			
<i>Mon ardoise</i> , <i>ton encre</i> , <i>son humeur</i> .		My slate, thy ink, his humor.	
2. The demonstrative and possessive adjectives, like the article, are repeated before each noun in the same construction, and before each adjective belonging to a separate noun.			
<i>Mon père et ma mère</i> .		My father and mother.	
<i>Mon grand et mon petit cheval</i> .		My large and my small horse.	
<i>Mon grand et beau cheval</i> .		My large and handsome horse.	
<i>Mon</i> is not repeated in this last sentence because both adjectives belong to <i>cheval</i> .			

## PRONOUNS.

## AGREEMENT OF PRONOUNS.

1. Pronouns agree with their antecedents in gender, number, and person ; as,  
*L'homme auquel je m'adresse.* The man whom I address.  
*Les personnes auxquelles je m'adresse.* The persons whom I address.  
*Ma mère vous appelle, elle a besoin de vous.* My mother calls you, she needs you.
2. Pronouns relating to two or more nouns follow the same rule as adjectives. See page 437.
3. A pronoun must have for its antecedent a definite noun, that is, a noun accompanied by an article or adjective ; as,  
*Il nous a fait UNE PEUR, dont nous ne pouvons revenir.* He has caused us a fear from which we can not recover.  
*Ce criminel demande SA GRÂCE, mais il ne l'obtiendra pas.* That criminal asks for his pardon, but he will not obtain it.

In the former of these phrases, *pour* without *une*, and in the latter, *grâces* without *es*, could not be the antecedent of the pronoun. So in *Avoir besoin*, *avoir froid*, *avoir faim*, etc., the noun can not stand as antecedent to a pronoun.

4. Pronouns must have antecedents which are unequivocal; as,

*Il y a dans Plîne des lettres* (and not *des lettres dans Plîne*) *dont le style est admirable*.

#### PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

##### I.—SUBJECT OR NOMINATIVE.

1. The following are used as the subject of a verb expressed; as,

<i>Je</i> , I.	<i>nous</i> , we.	<i>il</i> , he, it.	<i>ils</i> , they (mas.).
<i>tu</i> , thou.	<i>vous</i> , you.	<i>elle</i> , she, it.	<i>elles</i> , they (fem.).

2. The following are used as subject when the verb is understood; as,

<i>Moi</i> , I.	<i>nous</i> , we.	<i>lui</i> , he.	<i>eux</i> , they (mas.).
<i>toi</i> , thou.	<i>vous</i> , you.	<i>elle</i> , she.	<i>elles</i> , they (fem.).

3. These latter are also used as the predicate of *être*, to be; as,

*Est-ce moi?* Is it I?

*Ce sont eux*, it is they.

4. Also as pleonasms to emphasize the subject, and when the action of the verb or verbs is attributed to several subjects successively; as,

*Toi, le feras-tu?*

Wouldst thou do it?

*Moi, que j'aille là!*

I, I go there!

*Moi, j'irai au spectacle, lui et eux iront aussi, mais toi tu n'iras pas.*

I shall go to the play, he and they will go also, but thou wilt not go.

5. Also with a noun or pronoun to form a compound subject, in which case the pronouns of the first and second persons are repeated in the plural, but when the pronouns are all of the third person, no repetition is used.

*Vous et moi, nous irons à la pêche.*

You and I will go a-fishing.

*Ton père, toi et elle, vous viendrez chez nous demain.*

Thy father, thou and she will come to our house to-morrow.

*Lui, elle et eux viendront.*

He, she and they will come.

REM.—When pronouns of different persons are subject of the same verb, the first person is placed last, as in English.

*Vous et moi nous partirons demain.*

You and I will set out to-morrow.

*Lui et moi nous sommes frères.*

He and I are brothers.

##### II.—OBJECT, OR ACCUSATIVE AND DATIVE CASE.

###### *Before the verb.*

1. The following are used for the object of the verb and placed before it:

<i>Me</i> , me, to me.	<i>nous</i> , us, to us.	<i>lui</i> , to him, to her.	<i>leur</i> , to them.
<i>te</i> , thee, to thee.	<i>vous</i> , you, to you.	<i>se</i> , { <i>himself, herself,</i> <i>itself, to him-</i> <i>self, to herself,</i> <i>to itself.</i>	<i>se</i> , them- <i>selves, to</i> <i>themselves.</i>
<i>le</i> , it, him.	<i>les</i> , them (mas.).		
<i>la</i> , it, her.	<i>les</i> , them (fem.).		
<i>y</i> , to it, to them, (there, here).			

2. Of these, the following are used as the DIRECT OBJECT: *Me, moi, te, toi, le, la, nous, vous, les, se.*

3. The following are used as the INDIRECT OBJECT: *Me, moi, te, toi, lui, nous, vous, leur, se, en, y.*

### III.—OBJECT AFTER THE VERB, OR AFTER A PREPOSITION.

*Moi, à moi, me, to me.*

*toi, à toi, thee, to thee.*

*lui, à lui, him, to him.*

*elle, à elle, her, to her.*

*soi, himself, herself, itself.*

*à soi, to himself, to herself, to itself.*

*nous, à nous, us, to us.*

*vous, à vous, you, to you.*

*eux, à eux, them, to them.*

*elles, à elles, them, to them.*

*soi, themselves.*

*à soi, to themselves.*

### PLACE OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

#### I.—SUBJECT PRONOUNS.

1. The subject pronouns are placed before the verb; as, *Je parle, vous écoutez, nous écrivons.*

REM.—The indefinite pronoun *on* takes the same place as a personal pronoun.

2. In questions, however, the subject-pronoun is placed after the verb, in the simple tenses, and after the auxiliary in the compound tenses.

*Parlez-vous ? Do you speak ?*

*A-t-il fini ? Has he finished ?*

*Parle-t-on bien à Paris ?*

*Vient-il ? Does he come ?*

*Sont-ils venus ? Have they come ?*

*Do they speak well at Paris ?*

REM.—When the verb ends and the pronoun begins with a vowel, a *t* between two hyphens is placed between them for better sound.

3. In some exclamations also; as,

*Est-il cruel ! How cruel he is !*

*Entendez-vous ! You hear !*

*Est-ce ennuyeux ! How tedious it is !*

4. Also, when the verb is in the subjunctive without a conjunction (which takes place often with *Pouvoir* and *Devoir*); as,

*Puisse-je de mes yeux y voir tomber la foudre !*

*Dussé-je après dix ans, voir mon palais en cendres.*

5. Also, with a verb announcing a quotation, when the verb is not at the beginning of the words quoted.

*"Je ne serai heureux," disait-il, "que lorsqu'il sera loin."*

6. In general, though not necessarily, when the verb is preceded by *Aussi, peut-être, encore, toujours, en vain, du moins, au moins*; as,

*Aussi est-il votre ami.*

*Peut-être avez-vous raison.*

7. When the subject-pronouns follow the verb, they must be joined by a hyphen.

8. When *je* follows a verb ending in *e* mute, the *e* is for euphony changed into *i*; as, *Aimé-je, dussé-je.* In questions, *Est-ce que* is, for the sake of euphony, often prefixed to the first person singular in most verbs of one syllable; as, *Est-ce que je dors ? not dors-je ? Est-ce que je cours ? not cours-je ?*

REM.—This last form is used with other French verbs to show some emotion; as, *Est-ce que Charles est blessé ? Est-ce qu'il est tué ?*

## II.—PLACE OF THE OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

1. The objective pronouns, when used without a preposition,\* are placed immediately before the verb; as,

*Je LES vois, I see them; Nous LEUR parlons, we speak to them;  
Vous connaissent-ils?*

2. With the imperative affirmative, however, the objective pronouns follow the verb, and are joined to it by a hyphen; as, *Écoutez-LE, listen to him; Fiez-vous-y, trust yourself to it; Donnez-le-moi, give it to me.* When the imperative is negative, the pronoun is placed according to the general rule: *Né le lui donnez pas, do not give it to him.*

REM.—Two imperatives joined by *et* or *ou* formerly might take the object of the second verb before it but now it is placed after the verb.

*Laissez-moi l'honneur, ou ôtez-moi la vie. Leave me honor, or take away my life.  
Prenez ce livre, lisez-le, et remettez-le à sa place. Take this book, read it, and put it back in its place.*

3. Also, when a pronoun, with a noun or another pronoun, form a compound object, they follow the verb, and a pronoun representing the same object is placed before the verb; as,

*Nous LES cherchons EUX et LEURS AMIS. We seek them and their friends.  
Il nous comprend VOUS et MOI. He understands you and me.  
Il nous parle à VOUS et à MOI. He speaks to you and me.  
Je vous écoute TOI, LUI et ELLE. I hear thee, him, and her.*

REM.—We see in the above, that in objective pronouns, the first person is preferred to the second, and the second to the third.

4. Most intransitive and reflective verbs, being followed by a preposition, require that preposition and its object, the pronoun or pronouns, after the verb; as, *Aller, venir, courir, songer, penser, rêver, se souvenir, se glorifier, etc.*

*Nous allons à VOUS. We are going to you.  
Ils songent à NOUS. They think of us.  
Pensez-vous à MOI? Do you think of me?  
Il se souvient DE NOUS et D'ELLE. He remembers us and her.  
Parlez-vous DE MOI? Do you speak of me?  
Nous marchons CONTRE EUX. We march against them.*

5. When one of the prepositions *à, de, pour, par, etc.*, has several objects, it is generally repeated before each; as,

*Parlez d'EUX et DE NOUS. Speak of them and of us.  
Je travaille POUR VOUS et POUR MOI. I work for you and for me.*

## III.—RELATIVE PLACE OF DIFFERENT PRONOUNS.

1. Subject-pronouns, either before or after the verb, precede those which are the object; as,

*JE TE parle. I speak to thee. Pense-t-il à NOUS? Is he thinking of us?*

2. When there are two objective pronouns of different persons, the first and second precede the third; as,

\* The preposition *à* is the only one, except *de* and *en*, which can be understood with a pronoun or implied in it.

*Tu* **VOUS** *LES* *apporteras.*  
*Je* **VOUS** *LE* *recommande.*

Thou wilt bring them to us.  
 I recommend him to you.

3. When these pronouns are of the same person, the direct object precedes the indirect ; as,

*Vous* **LE** *LUI* *direz.*  
*Je* **LES** *Y* *mène.*

You will say it to him.  
 I take them there.

4. In the imperative affirmative the direct object always precedes the indirect, without regard to persons ; as,

*Donnes-le-moi,* give it to me.  
*Promène-t'y,\** walk there.

*Amène-les-nous,* bring them to us.

5. *En* and *y* always follow the other objective pronouns, and when they come together, *y* precedes *en* ; as, *Je t'EN prie,* I pray thee for it.

*Nous* **LES** *Y* *conduirons.* We will conduct *Laisse-~~z~~-~~Y~~-EN,\** leave some there.  
 them there.

6. *Se* and all the reflexive pronouns always precede the other objective pronouns ; as,

*Tu* **TE** *LE* *promets,* thou promisest it to thyself. *Ils* **SE** *L'imaginent,* they imagine it.

7. According to the above rule the objective pronouns come together in the following order :

*Me* *le, me* *la, me* *les.*

*Tu* *le, te* *la, te* *les.*

*Le* *lui, la* *lui, les* *lui.*

*Le* *leur, la* *leur, les* *leur.*

*L'y, les* *y, s'y.*

*Nous* *y* *en, vous* *y* *en, leur* *y* *en.*

*Nous* *le, nous* *la, nous* *les.*

*Vous* *le, vous* *la, vous* *les.*

*Se* *le, se* *la, se* *les.*

*M'y, nous* *y, t'y, vous* *y.*

*M'en, nous* *en, t'en, vous* *en.*

*L'en, les* *en, s'en, lui* *en.*

#### IV.—REPETITION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. The subject-pronoun is to be repeated before each verb, connected by any other conjunction than *et* and *ni* ; as,

*Il* *est* *bon, mais* *il* *est* *faible.*

*Nous* *l'avons* *connu et* *estimé.*

*Nous* *l'avons* *connu, mais* *nous* *ne* *l'avons* *pas* *estimé.*

*Je* *ne* *vous* *loue* *ni* *ne* *vous* *blâme.*

He is good, but he is weak.

We have known and esteemed him.

We have known, but have not esteemed him.

I neither praise nor blame you.

2. When the subject-pronoun is not repeated, the successive verbs must be either all affirmative or all negative, and even then the repetition is often preferable.

3. The objective pronoun must be repeated with each verb, except in compound tenses, where the auxiliary is omitted ; as,

*Mes* *amis* **LES** *verront et* **LES** *féliciteront.*

*Nous* **LEUR** *avons* *parlé et* **LEUR** *avons* *de-*  
*mandé* *de* *vos* *nouvelles.*

My friends will see them and will congratulate them.

We have spoken to them and have asked them news of you.

\* When *y* with another objective pronoun, especially *moi, toi, le, la*, come after the imperative, it is better for euphony to replace it by an equivalent, *là, dans ce lieu*, etc. ; as, *Promène-toi là ; Reposez-vous dans ce lieu.*



*Nous LES avons attaqués et LES avons vaincus ; or, nous LES avons attaqués et vaincus.* } We have attacked and vanquished them.

## V.

1. When *LE*, used as *so* in English, represents an adjective, or a noun used as an adjective, it is invariable ; as,

*Madame, êtes-vous MALADE ?*

Madam, are you sick ?

*Je LE suis.*

I am so.

*Ces hommes sont-ils MILITAIRES ?*

Are those men soldiers ?

*Ils ne LE sont pas.*

They are not.

2. But when it represents a noun, or an adjective used as a noun, it agrees with it in gender and number ; as,

*Êtes-vous LES SOLDATS du prince ?*

Are you the soldiers of the prince ?

*Nous LES sommes.*

We are so.

*Êtes-vous LA MALADE ?*

Are you the sick woman ?

*Je LA suis.*

I am so.

## VI.

1. *Soi* is of both genders and the singular number, and applies to both persons and things. When used of persons, it refers, in general, only to an indefinite subject, or is used with an infinitive ; as, *On doit parler rarement de soi. Chacun travaille pour soi. Ne vivre que pour soi, c'est être déjà mort.* When used of things, it refers to a particular subject : *Un bienfait porte sa récompense avec soi.*

2. To avoid ambiguity, *soi* is sometimes used of persons in reference to a particular subject ; as, *En remplissant les volontés de son père, ce jeune homme travaille pour soi* Only in the phrase *être soi*, to preserve one's own character, is *soi* used without a preposition ; as, *Il faut toujours être soi.*

## VII.

1. *En*, in a partitive sense, some or any, refers alike to persons and things ; as, *Avez-vous des amis ? J'en ai. Avez-vous de l'argent ? J'en ai.* In other cases it refers more particularly to things, and *de lui, d'elle, d'eux, d'elles*, to persons ; as, *Ce garçon est malade ; avez-vous soin DE LUI ? J'ai un couteau, et je m'EN sers.* *En* may be used, however, for persons, but is less definite and emphatic ; and on the other hand, *de lui*, etc., are sometimes used for things, but then they receive a kind of personification : *Le jeu est un vice affreux ; DE LUI provient la ruine de bien des familles.*

2. *En* is not to be used when reference is made to the subject of the governing verb ; but *ils, of it, etc.*, are to be rendered by *son, sa, ses, leur, or leurs*. These adjective pronouns are also to be used when persons are referred to. But when the reference is to things which precede the subject, *en* with the definite article must be employed : *Chaque travail a sa fatigue.* Here *sa* is used because the reference is to *travail*, the subject. *Ces ouvrages ont LEUR mérite, chacun EN apprécie LA valeur.* Here, again, *leur* is used because it refers to *ouvrages*, the subject of its governing verb ; and *en* with the article in the second clause, because it does not refer to the subject of its governing verb, *chacun*, but to *ouvrages*, which precedes. *Cet homme est fort aimable ; chacun recherche sa société.* Here *sa* is used because it refers to a person.

3. The possessive adjective is used, also, in agreement with the object of a preposition ; as, *Paris est une ville remarquable ; les étrangers admirent la beauté de ses édifices.*

VIII.

*Y*, like *en*, is commonly used in reference to things. *Lui* and *leur*, however, may be used in reference to things instead of *y*, by a kind of personification; as, *Le travail est mon sauveur, je lui dois la vie*. *Y* is sometimes applied to persons, but then they are alluded to in the character of things, or designated vaguely; *C'est un honnête homme; fiez-vous-y*. That is, *fiez-vous à cela, à ce que je vous dis*. Usage, also, sanctions *y* in a few other cases; as, *Pensez-vous à moi? J'y pense*.

X.

1. *Nous* in French, like *we* and *us* in English, is sometimes used in reference to a single person, and the adjective and participle belonging to it must then be singular; as,

A writer says of himself, *Nous sommes forcés de nous arrêter ici*.

2. *Vous*, used to address one person, follows the same rule; as,

*Madame, vous êtes bien fatiguée*.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>Le mien,</i>	<i>la mienne,</i>	<i>les miens,</i>	<i>les miennes,</i>	mine.
<i>le tien,</i>	<i>la tienne,</i>	<i>les tiens,</i>	<i>les tiennes,</i>	thine.
<i>le sien,</i>	<i>la sienne,</i>	<i>les siens,</i>	<i>les siennes,</i>	his, hers.
<i>le nôtre,</i>	<i>la nôtre,</i>	<i>les nôtres,</i>	<i>les nôtres,</i>	ours.
<i>le vôtre,</i>	<i>la vôtre,</i>	<i>les vôtres,</i>	<i>les vôtres,</i>	yours.
<i>le leur,</i>	<i>la leur,</i>	<i>les leurs,</i>	<i>les leurs,</i>	theirs.

1. These pronouns are never used before a noun, and always begin with the article.

2. *Nôtre* and *vôtre*, when preceded by the article (i. e. when they are pronouns) always have a circumflex accent over *o*, as above.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

BOTH NUMBERS AND GENDERS.	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.
NOM. <i>Qui,</i>	<i>Lequel,</i>	<i>laquelle,</i>	<i>lesquels,</i>	<i>lesquelles,</i>
GEN. <i>de qui, dont,</i>	<i>duquel,</i>	<i>de laquelle,</i>	<i>desquels,</i>	<i>desquelles,</i>
DAT. <i>à qui, à quoi,</i>	<i>auquel,</i>	<i>à laquelle,</i>	<i>auxquels,</i>	<i>auxquelles,</i>
ACC. <i>que,</i>	<i>lequel,</i>	<i>laquelle,</i>	<i>lesquels,</i>	<i>lesquelles,</i>

*Où*, in which (place), where.

*D'où*, from which (place), from where, whence.

*Par où*, by or through which (place), where.

2. *QUI*, *QUE*, *DONT*, adopt the gender and number of their antecedent, although invariable in form. They apply either to persons or things.

3. *QUI*, as a relative pronoun, is always nominative, or the object of a preposition. In this last case it applies only to persons. The corresponding word for things is *lequel*. *Que* is used only before the verb, and never with a preposition; as,

*Crois-tu toujours ceux qui parlent beaucoup ?  
 Connaissez-vous les personnes que nous avons rencontrées ?  
 Nous avons apporté tout ce dont nous avons besoin.  
 Les fabricants pour qui vous travaillez  
 C'est encore ici une des raisons (pour laquelle) je veux aller à la campagne.*

4. A relative pronoun can not have for antecedent an adjective, except when the latter is used as a noun,—i. e., preceded by an article or determinative adjective ; as,

<i>Nous étions deux ou trois voyageurs qui</i>	<i>We were two or three travellers who were</i>
<i>étaient du même avis.</i>	<i>of the same opinion.</i>
<i>Vous êtes le seul qui ait réussi.</i>	<i>You are the only one who has succeeded.</i>

5. *Lequel, duquel*, are used instead of *qui, que, dont*, to avoid an ambiguity ; as, *J'ai vu le mari de votre sœur, LEQUEL viendra me voir. Je dois recevoir une lettre de mes enfants, LAQUELLE j'attends avec impatience. La bonté de Dieu de LAQUELLE je connais la grandeur. Qui, que, and dont*, in these sentences, would cause ambiguity ; when they would not, they are to be used. *Duquel* is used for *dont* also, when its antecedent is followed by a preposition ; as, *L'homme à la réputation DUQUEL vous voulez nuire ; and not l'homme à la réputation DONT vous voulez nuire.*

*Dont, of whom, of which, from whom, from which, whose*, is preferred to *duquel, de laquelle*, etc., where there is no interrogation, and when no ambiguity arises from its use. It is employed for both persons and things and animals.

6. With a preposition, *lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*, are generally preferred to *quoi* ; as,

<i>Les raisons sur lesquelles (better than sur</i>	<i>The reasons on which you support your argu-</i>
<i>quoi) vous appuyez votre raisonnement.</i>	<i>ment.</i>

7. After a demonstrative pronoun or noun, *qui, que, dont* only are used, unless a preposition precede, in which case *lequel*, etc., can be used.

<i>Celui qui vous parle.</i>	<i>The one who speaks to you.</i>
<i>Ceux que vous connaissez.</i>	<i>Those whom you know.</i>
<i>Celui à qui or auquel vous parlez.</i>	<i>He to whom you speak.</i>

8. When the antecedent is indefinite (as *ce, rien, quelqu'un, quelque chose*), *qui, que, dont*, and not *lequel*, must be used. With a preposition, and when the antecedent is understood, *qui or quoi* must be used.

<i>Voilà ce que l'on gagne.</i>	<i>Behold what one gains.</i>
<i>Avouez ce qui vous embarrasse.</i>	<i>Confess what embarrasses you.</i>
<i>Cherchez ce dont vous avez besoin.</i>	<i>Seek that of which you have need.</i>
<i>Je ne sais ce à quoi vous vous occupez.</i>	<i>I know not in what you are occupied.</i>
<i>Cherchez à qui vous plaindra.</i>	<i>Seek some one to complain to.</i>
<i>Quoi qu'on en dise.</i>	<i>Whatever one may say.</i>
<i>Qui sert bien son pays sert souvent un ingrat.</i>	<i>He who serves his country well often serves an ungrateful one.</i>

9. *Que, whom, which, that*, either relative or conjunction, connecting a dependent to a principal clause, though often understood in English, must always be expressed in French ; as,

<i>L'homme que je vois.</i>	<i>The man (whom) I see.</i>
<i>Le livre que vous avez est à moi.</i>	<i>The book you have is mine.</i>
<i>Je crois qu'il viendra.</i>	<i>I believe (that) he will come.</i>

10. *Où, d'où, par où*, carry with them some idea of motion and locality ; as, *Le peril d'où il est sorti. La ville d'où je viens.* When extraction of race is spoken of, *dont* is employed :

*La maison d'où je sors.*  
*La maison dont je sors.*

The house from which I go out.  
The house from which I am sprung.

*Which*, preceded by a preposition, and referring to a noun implying locality, is translated *où, d'où, par où*. When locality is not implied, it is as in English.

## INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. *QUI ? who, whom ?* is used for persons and personified things only. It can be in any case, and either before or after the verb ; as,

*Qui ? Qui cherchez-vous ?*  
*De qui parlez-vous ?*  
*Sur qui comptez-vous ?*

Who ? Whom do you seek ?  
Of whom do you speak ?  
On whom do you rely ?

2. *QUE, QUOI ? what, which ?* are used for things only. *Que* is used before the verb ; *quoi ?* alone, after the verb, or with a preposition. *Que* can not be used in the nominative ; but *what, which ?* in that case must be rendered by *Qu'est-ce que ?* as,

*Que veut cet homme ?*  
*Que pensez-vous de ce livre ?*  
*Quoi ? Savez-vous quoi ?*  
*A quoi pensez-vous ?*  
*Sur quoi se repose-t-il ?*  
*Qu'est-ce qui fait tant de bruit ?*

What does that man wish for ?  
What do you think of that book ?  
What ? Do you know what ?  
Of what are you thinking ?  
On what does he repose ?  
What makes so much noise ?

3. *LEQUEL, LAQUELLE, LESQUELS, LESQUELLES ? which one, which ones ?* are used to distinguish one or more individuals from others of the same kind, and are employed either with or without a preposition ; as,

*LEQUEL des deux préférez-vous ?*  
*De LAQUELLE parlez-vous ?*  
*AUXQUELS t'adresses-tu ?*  
*Pour LESQUELLES vous déclarez-vous ?*

Which of the two do you prefer ?  
Of which one do you speak ?  
To which ones dost thou address thyself ?  
For which ones do you declare ?

4. *Où ? where, in which place ?*

*D'où ? Whence ? where from ? from what place ?*

*Par où ? Which way ? through or by what place ?*

*Où vont ces hommes ?*  
*D'où vient-il ?*  
*Par où a-t-il disparu ?*

Where are those men going ?  
Whence does he come ?  
Which way has he disappeared ?

## DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

## SINGULAR.

Masculine. Feminine.

1. *Celui, celle*, this, that, the one.  
*celui-ci, celle-ci*, this, this one.  
*celui-là, celle-là*, that, that one.

## PLURAL.

Masculine. Feminine.

1. *Ceux, celles*, these, those, the ones.  
*ceux-ci, celles-ci*, these.  
*ceux-là, celles-là*, those.
2. *Ce*, this, that. *Ceci*, this (thing). *Cela*, that (thing).
3. *Celui, ceux, celle, celles*, are definite ; i. e., always relate to a person or

thing mentioned before, or specified in the sentence, often in the following clause, and can never be understood, as in English, with the possessive case.

*Mon livre et celui de mon frère.*  
*Je parle de ceux que vous voyez.*

My book and my brother's.  
I speak of those whom you see.

4. *He, him, she, her, they, them, the one*, when followed by a relative pronoun, are always rendered in French by demonstrative pronouns; as,

*Je connais CELUI QUE vous verrez.*  
*Apportez CEUX QUI sont sur la table.*

I know him whom you will see.  
Bring those which are on the table.

5. In distinguishing different persons or objects, *this, these, the latter*, are rendered by demonstrative pronouns with *ci* annexed; and *that, those, the former*, by the same, with *là* annexed; as,

*CELUI-CI est bon, CEUX-LÀ sont meilleurs.* This one is good, those are better.

6. *CECI* and *CELA* are used absolutely; that is, not relating to a person or thing named before.

*CECI est de l'or; CELA est du cuivre.* This is gold; that is copper.

7. *Ce*, with one of the relative pronouns *qui, que, dont, or quoi* with a preposition, means *that which*. *What*, meaning *that which*, therefore, is always *ce qui, ce que, ce dont, or ce à quoi*.

*Ce qui est possible, what (that which) is possible.*

*Ce que je desire; what (that which) I desire.*

*Ce dont il agit, what is at stake.*

*Ce à quoi je pense, what I think of.*

8. When the verb *être* is followed by a pronoun, a definite noun, a preposition, an adverb, a numeral, a verb, or an adjective referring to a proposition just stated, or used as a noun, then the pronouns *it, that, he, she, they, we, you*, are translated by *ce*; as, *C'est lui*, it is he; *c'est nous*, it is we; *ce sont eux*, it is they; *c'est un livre*, it is a book; *c'est pour vous*, it is for you; *c'est prudemment pensé*; *c'est le vingt-cinq août*, it is the twenty-fifth of August; *c'est agir en honnête homme*, it is to act as an honest man; *c'est agréable*, it is agreeable.

*C'est l'homme que j'estime.*  
*Ce sont les seuls que je connais.*  
*C'est contre vous qu'il parle.*

*He is the man whom I esteem.*  
*They are the only ones whom I know.*  
*It is against you that he speaks.*

9. When the predicate consists merely of *être*, with a past participle, an adjective, or a noun used as an adjective, the personal pronoun is used for the subject; as,

*IL est grand. ELLE est belle.*  
*IL est homme de bien. ELLES sont actrices.*

He is tall. She is beautiful.  
He is an honest man. They are actresses.

When it refers to what follows, and not to a proposition just stated, it is translated by *il* and not by *ce*; as,

*IL est utile à l'homme de se taire.*  
*IL est certain que vous réussirez.*  
*IL est de mon devoir d'agir en cette affaire.*

It is useful to man to remain silent.  
It is certain that you will succeed.  
It is my duty to act in this affair.

REM.—When *être* is followed by a definite noun, as an attribute to a person or thing mentioned before, usage authorizes *c'est, ce sont*, or *il est, ils sont*, etc., though *ce* is preferable; as,

*Vous aimez Jean, C'EST (IL EST) mon ami.*  
*Vous connaissez ces dames, CE SONT (ELLES SONT) nos parentes.*

You love John; he is my friend.  
You are acquainted with those ladies; they are our relations.

10. *Ce* is used as a pleonasm in the second member of a sentence before *être*. First, when the first member begins with *ce* and a relative pronoun ; as,
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <i>Ce qui importe à l'homme c'est de remplir ses devoirs.</i> | What is important to man is to fulfill his duties. |
| <i>Ce qui est certain, c'est que le monde est de travers.</i> | What is certain is that the world is out of order. |

Secondly, after a clause of some length, and which is the predicate of *être* ; as,

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <i>Le plus beau présent qui ait été fait aux hommes c'est l'amitié.</i> | The most beautiful present which has been made to men is friendship. |
|---|--|

**REM.**—In such cases *ce* may sometimes be omitted, but it is indispensable when *être* is followed by a plural noun ; as,

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <i>Ce qu'il aime est (or c'est) la gloire.</i>                            | What he loves is glory.                                     |
| <i>Ce qu'il désapprouve, ce sont nos défauts.</i>                         | What he disapproves of is our faults.                       |
| <i>La partie la plus vexante de toute l'affaire, ce sont les injures.</i> | The part the most vexing of all the affair, are the wrongs. |

Thirdly, after several infinitives, or between two ; as,

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <i>Manger, boire, dormir, c'est toute sa vie.</i>   | To eat, drink, and sleep, is all his life. |
| <i>Épargner les plaisirs, c'est les multiplier.</i> | To spare pleasures is to multiply them.    |

#### INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

##### RECAPITULATION—PARTICULARS.

Some of the words commonly ranked under this head can not strictly be considered as pronouns ; but from their relation to other words which are so, they are best treated of here. Indefinite pronouns are accordingly ranged in four classes :

1. Those which are never joined to a noun.
2. Those which are always joined to a noun.
3. Those which are sometimes with and sometimes without a noun.
4. Those which are followed by *que* and *qui*.

##### I.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS WHICH ARE NEVER JOINED TO NOUNS.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. <i>On</i> , they, one, people.              | <i>Quiconque</i> , whoever, whosoever.            |
| <i>Quelqu'un</i> , somebody.                   | <i>Quelqu'un, quelqu'une</i> , some one.          |
| <i>Chacun, chacune</i> , each one.             | <i>Quelques-uns, quelques-unes</i> , some, a few. |
| <i>L'un l'autre</i> , one another, each other. | <i>Tout le monde</i> , every body.                |
| <i>Personne</i> , nobody.                      | <i>L'un—l'autre</i> , one—the other.              |
|  | <i>Rien</i> , nothing.                            |

2. *On* and *quiconque*, though essentially masculine singular, have the adjective feminine when applied expressly to females ; as, *On n'est pas toujours JEUNE et BELLE. Mesdames, quiconque de vous sera assez HARDIE pour médire de moi, je l'en ferai repentir.* *On* is employed in the same manner in the plural ; as, *On n'est pas des esclaves pour souffrir un si mauvais traitement !*

3. *L'on* is often used for *on* after *et* or a vowel, for euphony ; as, *Si L'on voit ; Où L'on voudra ; Et L'on décida, etc.*

REM.—This euphonic *i* is not necessarily used, and must be carefully avoided when *on* is followed by *i*; as, *Si l'on les voyait*, etc.

4. *On* is to be repeated before every verb of which it is the subject.

*On l'aime et on le loue.*

One loves and praises him.

5. In regard to place, this pronoun follows the rules of the subject personal pronouns.

5. *Quiconque* relates only to persons, and is never plural. It governs the indicative and the second verb without a subject; as,

*Quiconque a dit cela, n'a pas dit la vérité.*

Whoever said that did not tell the truth.

*Quiconque est riche est estimé.*

Whoever is rich is esteemed.

*Ce discours s'adresse à quiconque est coupable.*

This discourse is addressed to whoever is guilty

7. *QUELQU'UN*, (some one, somebody, any body, any one), when not referring to a noun, is masculine singular; as,

*Quelqu'un me l'a dit.*

Somebody told me so.

*Est-il venu quelqu'un me demander aujourd'hui?*

Has any one come and asked for me to-day

(1.) It can be feminine and plural only when subject of the verb.

*Quelqu'une de vous mesdames a-t-elle lu cet ouvrage?*

Has any one of you ladies read that work?

*Quelques-uns assurent que le général est venu.*

Some affirm that the general has come.

(2.) Referring to a noun it means *some of*, *any of*; it refers to persons or things, and may be of either gender and number.

*Je connais quelqu'une (or quelques-unes) de ces dames.*

I know some one (or some) of those ladies.

*Quelqu'un de ces messieurs, quelques-uns de ces livres.*

Some one of those gentlemen, some of those books.

REM.—*Some of*, *any of*, before a noun singular preceded by a possessive or demonstrative adjective, is *un peu de*; as,

*Donnez-moi un peu de votre (or ce) pain.*

Give me some of your (or that) bread.

8. *CHACUN, CHACUNE*, each, each one.

*Tout le monde*, every one, every body. } no plural.

*Chacun* means all the persons spoken of, but taken individually, one after another. *Tout le monde* means all taken together.

*Il faut que chacun paie son écot.*

Each one must pay his share.

*Tout le monde le dit.*

Every body says so.

(1.) *Tout le monde* is always masculine, as is also *chacun* when used as above in reference to persons and in an indeterminate manner.

*Tout le monde était fort embarrassé.*

Every body was much embarrassed.

*Chacun prend son plaisir où il le trouve.*

Each one takes his pleasure where he finds it.

(2.) *Chacun*, not used indeterminately, as above, may refer to persons or things, and may be of either gender; as,

*Chacun de ces messieurs; chacune de ces dames.*

Each one of those gentlemen; each one of those ladies.

*Chacun de ces livres; chacune de ces fleurs.*

Each one of these books; each one of these flowers.

(3.) *Each of* is always *chacun de*; as, *Chacun de nous*, each of us.

(4.) The possessive adjective referring to *chacun* is sometimes *son*, *sa*, and some-

times *leur, leurs*. It is *son, sa, ses*, when *chacun* comes after the direct object of the verb, and when the verb has no direct object; but, when *chacun* precedes such object, it is *leur, leurs*; as,

*Les deux rois firent chanter des te-deum, chacun, dans son camp.*

The two kings had *te deums* sung each in his camp.

*Tous les juges ont opiné, chacun, selon ses lumières.*

All the judges gave their opinions each according to his knowledge.

*Tous les peuples ont, chacun, leurs défauts et leurs préjugés.*

All people have each their faults and their prejudices.

9. *AUTRUI*, (other people, others), is used only for persons, meaning *your like, your neighbors*; it has no variation of gender or number, and is always the object of a preposition; as,

*N'envie pas le bien d'autrui.*

Envy not the good of others.

*Faites à autrui ce que vous voudriez qu'on vous fit.*

Do to others what you would that they should do to you.

(1) *Son, sa, ses, leur, leurs*, are not to be used in reference to *autrui*, except when the noun to which they belong is preceded by a preposition, but *en* is used in their place. *En épousant les intérêts d'autrui, nous ne devons pas en épouser les passions.*

10. *L'UN L'AUTRE, LES UNS LES AUTRES,*

*L'UNE L'AUTRE, LES UNES LES AUTRES,*

} each other, one another.

This pronoun denotes reciprocity; it applies to persons and things, and is of either gender and number.

*Ils s'aident l'un l'autre.*

They aid each other.

*Ces arbres se nuisent les uns aux autres.*

Those trees injure each other.

11. *UN* or *L'UN*—*L'AUTRE*, (the one—the other), is applied to both persons and things, and is of either gender and number.

*Un (or l'un) chantait, l'autre dansait.*

One sang, the other danced.

*Les uns riaient, les autres pleuraient.*

Some laughed, the others wept.

12. *PERSONNE*, (nobody, no one), a pronoun, is always masculine singular; *personne*, person, a noun, is feminine, and may be plural.

*Personne n'est venu.*

No one has come.

*La fierté ne convient à personne.*

Pride becomes no one.

*Personne ne sait où il va sur cette terre de misères.*

No one knows where he is going in this world of misery.

*La personne est venue.*

The person has come.

*Les personnes qui sont venues.*

The persons who have come.

13. *RIEN*, (nothing, not any thing), is a noun or pronoun. As a noun it may be plural; as,

*Il s'amuse à des riens.*

He amuses himself with trifles.

As a pronoun it is always masculine singular.

(1) *Quelqu'un* and *quelque chose* can be used with a negative only in questions, and when one expects an affirmative answer; in other cases, *personne* and *rien* must be employed.

*N'avez-vous pas quelqu'un à recommander?*

Have you not some one to recommend?

*Nous n'avons personne.*

We have no one.

*N'y a-t-il pas quelque chose là dedans?*

Is there not something within there?

*Il n'y a rien de beau ni de bon.*

There is nothing.

(2) *PERSONNE*, (any body); *RIEN*, (anything), without *ne*, are used when the verb is understood, when it is interrogative, and in phrases expressing uncertainty.



<i>Personne a-t-il jamais raconté plus naïvement? Personne.</i>	Did any one ever relate more simply? No one.
<i>Il vaut mieux que personne que je connaisse.</i>	He is worth more than any one whom I know.
<i>Je doute que rien vous convienne mieux.</i>	I doubt whether any thing would suit you better.

#### II.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS ALWAYS JOINED TO A NOUN, PROPERLY INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

<i>Quelque, some.</i>	<i>Chaque, each, every.</i>
<i>Quelconque, whoever, whatever.</i>	<i>Certain, certain.</i>

1. QUELQUE, QUELQUES, (some, any), masculine and feminine, denote one or several in a number of persons or things.

<i>Quelque est a dit cela sans doute, et quelques méchantes langues l'ont répété.</i>	Some stupid one, no doubt, said that, and some evil tongues have repeated it.
<i>Avez-vous des nouvelles à nous donner?</i>	Have you any news to impart to us?

2. CHAQUE, (each, every), has no plural, and is used of persons and things. *Each, every*, before a noun in a distributive sense, is *chaque*; as,

<i>Chaque âge a ses devoirs à remplir.</i>	Each age has its duties to fulfill.
<i>A chaque jour suffit sa peine.</i>	Sufficient for each day is its evil.

(1.) *Each, every*, before a noun implying plurality or habit, is *tous les*.

<i>Je le vois tous les jours.</i>	I see him every day.
<i>Toutes les dames qui étaient là, etc.</i>	Every lady who was there, etc.

3. QUELCONQUE, (whoever, whatever), may be either gender, and follows the noun, meaning *whatever one* (he, she, it, etc.), *may be*.

<i>Donnes-moi un livre quelconque.</i>	Give me a book, whatever (one it may be).
<i>Il n'y a homme quelconque qui ne sache cela.</i>	There is no man whatever who does not know that.

4. CERTAIN, (certain).

<i>Certain auteur a dit.</i>	A certain author has said.
<i>Certaines personnes disent.</i>	Certain persons say.

REM.—*Certain* frequently means *certain*, and is then placed after the noun; as, *Un certain fait*, a certain fact; *Un fait certain*, a positive fact.

#### III.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS SOMETIMES JOINED TO NOUNS, SOMETIMES NOT.

<i>Nul, no, no one, none.</i>	<i>Aucun, no, not one.</i>
<i>Pas un, no, none, not one.</i>	<i>Autre, other.</i>
<i>L'un et l'autre, both.</i>	<i>L'un ou l'autre, either.</i>
<i>Ni l'un ni l'autre, neither.</i>	<i>Même, same.</i>
<i>Tel, such.</i>	<i>Plusieurs, several.</i>
<i>Tout, all, every thing.</i>	<i>Le tout, the whole.</i>
<i>Tous, toutes,</i>	<i>All of them.</i>

1. NUL, (none, no one, no), has no plural, and is used with *NE*. As an indefinite pronoun it is masculine, and used as subject only; as,

<i>Nul ne sait ce qu'il fera demain.</i>	No one knows what he will do to-morrow.
--	---

(1.) As an adjective or pronoun in a more definite sense it may be of either gender; as,

*Nul homme ne peut l'intimider.*

No man can intimidate him.

*Nulle mauvaise raison ne peut le persuader.*

No bad reason can persuade him.

*Nul d'eux (or nulle d'elles) ne l'a rencontré.*

No one of them has met him.

2. **AUCUN**, (no, not one, none), as a pronoun, is always singular; it is used with *ne*, and always relates to persons or things spoken of; as,

*Avez-vous vu ces messieurs?—Aucun n'est venu.*

Have you seen those gentlemen?—No one has come.

*Avez-vous parlé à une de ces dames?—Aucune.*

Have you spoken to one of those ladies?—To no one.

(1.) As an adjective, also, it is generally singular; it is used with *ne*, and is of either gender.

*Je ne hais aucun homme.*

I hate no man.

*Je n'ai aucun livre.*

I have no book.

*Je ne connais aucune de ces dames.*

I know no one of these ladies.

(2.) In interrogative sentences it is used without *ne*.

*Aucun peuple fut-il jamais plus heureux?*

Was any people ever more happy?

*REM.—It is sometimes plural; as,*

*Il ne m'a rendu aucune soignée.*

He has paid me no attentions whatever.

3. **PAS UN**, (no one, not one), as a pronoun, is always masculine, and used only as subject; as,

*Pas un ne le croit.*

No one believes it.

*Pas un ne le dit.*

No one says so.

As an adjective it has either gender, but no plural.

*Il n'y a pas une erreur dans cet ouvrage.*

There is not one error in that work.

*Je ne connais pas un de vos juges.*

I know not one of your judges.

*REM.—Nul is stronger than pas un which, it-self, also expresses a more general exclusion than aucun.*

4. **AUTRE**, (other), both pronoun and adjective, takes either gender and number; as,

*Je vous prenais pour un autre or une autre.*

I took you for another.

*Si vous avez perdu votre livre, achetez-en un autre.*

If you have lost your book, buy another.

*Il y a d'autres messieurs et d'autres dames dans le jardin.*

There are other gentlemen and other ladies in the garden.

5. **L'UN ET L'AUTRE**, (the one and the other, both), is of either gender and number. Speaking of only two, the singular is used; of more than two, the plural.

*L'un et l'autre ont écrit à leur père.*

Both have written to their father.

*Les uns et les autres viendront.*

All of them will come.

*Il peut écrire de l'une et de l'autre main.*

He can write with either hand.

6. **PLUSIEURS** is used as a pronoun and as an adjective, is never varied, and is always plural. *Plusieurs ont cru le monde éternel. Il est arrivé plusieurs bâtiments. Avoir plusieurs affaires.*

#### IV.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS FOLLOWED BY *QUE* OR *QUI*.

*Qui que, whoever.*

*Quel que,*

*Qui que ce soit qui,* { whoever,  
whosoever,  
whomsoever.

*Quelle que,* } whoever,  
*Quels que,* } whatever.  
*Quelles que,*

*Quoi que, whatever.*

*Quelque que, } whatever.*

*Quelques que, } whatever.*

*Tout que, toute que, however.*

*Quoi que ce soit qui, } whatever.*

*Quoi que ce soit que, } whatever.*

*Tel que, tels que, } such as.*

*Telle que, telles que, } such as.*

*Quelque-que, si-que, however.*

1. **QUI QUE, QUI QUE CE SOIT QUI OR QUE** (whoever, whoever it may be, who-soever, whomsoever), governs the subjunctive.

*Qui que vous voyiez chez cet homme, taisez-vous.*

Whomsoever you may see at the house of that man, be silent.

*Qui que vous soyez, craignez l'oisiveté.*

Whoever you may be, fear idleness.

*Qui que ce soit qui vous parle, ne répondez pas.*

Whoever may speak to you, do not reply.

*Qui que ce soit que vous rencontriez là, ne vous fâchez pas.*

Whoever you may meet there, do not get angry.

REM.—Negatively, this pronoun may be as follows:

*Je n'ai vu qui que ce soit, or Je n'ai vu personne que ce soit.*

I have seen no one whatever.

2. **QUOI QUE, QUOI QUE CE SOIT, QUOI QUE CE SOIT QUI** (subject), and **QUE CE SOIT QUE** (obj.), govern the subjunctive.

*Quoi qu'il écrive, il fait toujours de bonnes compositions.*

Whatever he may write, he always makes good compositions.

*Quoi que ce soit, vous l'aurez.*

Whatever it may be, you shall have it.

*Quoi que ce soit qui vous tente dans son offre, ne l'acceptez pas.*

Whatever may tempt you in his offer, do not accept it.

*Quoi que ce soit que vous entreprenez, vous réussirez toujours.*

Whatever you undertake, you always succeed.

REM.—Negatively, this pronoun is as follows:

*Je n'ai vu quoi que ce soit, or Je n'ai vu rien que ce soit.*

I have seen nothing whatever.

3. **QUEL QUE, QUELS QUE, QUELLE QUE, QUELLES QUE**, are adjectives, governing the subjunctive.

*Quel que soit cet homme.*

Whoever that man may be.

*Quels que soient ses écrits.*

Whatever may be his writings.

*Quelle que soit cette personne, et quelles que soient ses prétentions, elle n'est pas belle.*

Whatever that person may be, and whatever may be her pretensions, she is not beautiful.

4. **QUELQUE QUE, QUELQUES QUE** (object), **QUELQUE QUI, QUELQUES QUI** (subject), adjectives, governing the subjunctive.

*Quelque travail que vous entreprenez, vous le finissez toujours.*

Whatever work you undertake, you always finish it.

*Quelques beaux travaux qu'il fasse, on ne l'apprécie jamais.*

Whatever fine work he performs, they never appreciate him.

*Quelques belles fleurs que vous ayez, elles mourront.*

Whatever beautiful flowers you may have, they will die.

*Quelques plaisirs qui vous attirent dans le monde, restez avec votre mère.*

Whatever pleasures may attract you into the world, remain with your mother.

5. **QUELQUE-QUE, SI-QUE, and TOUT-QUE** (however), are adverbs, the two first governing the subjunctive, and the last, the indicative. They are of course invariable.

*QUELQUE avant qu'il sort, or si avant qu'il sort, or tout avant qu'il est, il n'est pas infallible.*

However learned he may be, he is not infallible.

*QUELQUE respectée qu'elle sort, or si respectée qu'elle sort, or toute respectée qu'elle est, elle n'est pas aimée.*

However respected she may be, she is not loved.

6. TEL QUI, TEL QUE, such as, used absolutely, is masculine singular; otherwise it agrees with its noun in gender and number.

*Tel qui rit vendredi, dimanche pleurera.*

Such as laugh on Friday will weep on Sunday.

*Tel qui sème ne recueille pas toujours.*

Such as sow do not always reap.

*Tel que vous voyez sourire a souvent bien des larmes rentrées au fond du cœur.*

He whom you see smile has often many tears suppressed at the bottom of his heart.

*C'est un homme tel qu'il nous le faut.*

He is a man such as we need.

*Elle est telle que je vous l'ai dépeinte.*

She is such as I have depicted her to you.

*J'aime les ouvrages destinés au théâtre tels que les comédies, les tragédies, etc.*

I like the works intended for the theatre, such as comedies, tragedies, etc.

## VERBS.

## AGREEMENT OF VERBS.

1. Every verb in a personal mood must have a subject expressed or understood.

2. The verb agrees with its subject in number and person; that is, *je* or its equivalent requires the first person singular of the verb, *tu* or its equivalent the second, and any other subject singular the third; *nous* or its equivalent requires the first person plural of the verb, *vous* or its equivalent the second, and any other subject plural the third; as,

*Je parle, nous voulons, ils vont.*

I speak, we wish, they go.

3. GENERAL RULE.—When two or more words in the singular number form the subject, the verb is plural; and if the words are of different persons, the verb is of the first rather than the second, and of the second rather than of the third; as,

*Ni l'or ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux.*

Neither gold nor greatness makes us happy.

*Jeune et moi nous étudions.*

John and I study.

*Toi et ton frère vous irez.*

Thou and thy brother will go.

*Vous, lui et elle, vous serez récompensés.*

You and he and she will be recompensed.

*La FLATTERIE, la PERDUE et l'INGRATITUDE sont le caractère de la plupart des courtisanes.*

Flattery, perfidy, ingratitude, is the character of the most part of courtiers.

4. EXCEPTIONS.—(1.) When, however, several nouns singular forming the subject are synonymous, and used without the conjunction *et*, the verb is singular; as,

*Son COURAGE, son INTÉPRIDITÉ étonne les plus braves.*

His courage, his intrepidity, astonish the bravest.

5. (2.) When the words composing the subject are placed as a climax, or contain an expression uniting in it all the preceding words, as *tout, rien, personne*, the verb is also singular; as,

*Ce sacrifice votre intérêt, votre honneur, DIEU l'exige.* This sacrifice your interest, your honor, God demand.

*Le temps, les biens, la vie, tout est à la patrie.* Time, property, life, all belong to one's country.

6. (3.) When two subjects singular are connected by *ou*, the verb is singular; as,

*Ou ton sang ou le mien LAVERA cette injure.* Either thy blood or mine shall wash out that injury.

7. When, however, the subjects singular connected by *ou* are of different persons, or taken collectively as the subject, the verb must be plural; as,

*Le temps ou la mort SONT nos remèdes.* Time or death are our remedies.  
*Vous ou votre ami irez chez le préfet.* You or your friend will go to the prefect's.

8. (4.) When two subjects are connected by one of the conjunctions *comme*, *de même que*, *ainsi que*, *aussi bien que*, the verb agrees with the first, the second belonging to a verb understood; as,

*La vertu, ainsi que le savoir, a son prix.* Virtue as well as knowledge has its price.

9. *Ni l'un ni l'autre*, and all subjects connected by *ni*, take the verb in the plural, except when only one of the subjects can perform the action of the verb; as,

*J'ai lu vos deux discours, ni l'un ni l'autre ne sont bons.\** I have read your two discourses; neither of them is good.

*Ni l'une ni l'autre de ces dames n'est ma mère.\** Neither of these ladies is my mother.

10. After two or more infinitives employed as subjects, the verb is plural, except it be the verb *être* preceded by *ce*; as, *Bien dire et bien penser ne sont rien sans bien faire. Boire, manger, dormir, c'est toute son occupation.*

11. The verb *être* preceded by *ce* is plural only when followed by the third person plural; as, *Ce SONT LES VICES qui dégradent l'homme; ce SONT EUX qui le rendent malheureux. C'est nous. C'est vous. C'est le travail et l'application, etc.*

12. When a collective noun is followed by *de* and another noun plural, the agreement of the verb is determined by the fitness of the noun to perform the action; as, *Une nuée de barbares désolèrent le pays.† Une FOULE d'ENFANTS ENCOMBRAIT la rue.†* Generally the verb agrees with the collective noun when it is *general* or preceded by the definite article, and with the following noun when the collective is *partitive*, or preceded by the indefinite article; as, *La nuée des barbares traversa le pays.*

13. From this illustration it may be easily understood that when there are two verbs in such sentences, one of them can have more especial reference to the collective noun, and the other to the following plural; as, *La moitié des*

\* In the former of these sentences the verb is plural, because both discourses might be good; in the latter it is singular, because only one of the ladies can be his mother. The same distinction may be seen in the following sentences: *Ni l'un ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux. Ni mon ami ni le vôtre ne sera nommé ambassadeur à Saint-Petersbourg.*

† In the former of these sentences the verb is plural, because the act of desolating is more fitly referred to barbarians than to cloud; in the latter it is singular, because the act of encumbering is more fitly referred to crowd than to children.

troupes qui firent la guerre périt de misère. Le tiers des livres qui parurent ne fut pas vendu.

14. The verb agrees with the noun following *beaucoup*, *peu*, *la plupart*, even when it is understood, the same as if it were expressed; as, *La plupart (des hommes) SONT sujets à des infirmités. Beaucoup AIMENT le jeu. Peu TRAVAILLENT avec ardeur.*

15. As the relative takes the gender, number, and person of its antecedent, of course in all these cases which have now been specified, the relative which represents these subjects will take the verb in the same number and person as the subjects themselves; as,

*Celle réservée, celle retenue QUI nous CHARME.*  
*C'est vous ou moi qui répondrons.*  
*C'est votre intérêt, votre honneur, Dieu QUI EXIGE, etc.*  
*C'est l'un et l'autre qui méritent des éloges.*  
*Ce n'est ni la fortune ni le rang QUI FONT le bonheur.*  
*Ce n'est ni l'un ni l'autre QUI EST mon père.*  
*Une foule de soldats QUI COMBATTENT vaillamment.*

## CONJUGATIONS.

1. French verbs are divided into four classes or conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the present infinitive.

2. The first and most numerous conjugation terminates in *er*; as, *aim-er*.

3. The second in *ir*; as, . . . . . *fin-ir*.

4. The third, and least numerous, in *oir*; as, . . . . . *rec-evoir*.

5. The fourth in *re*; as, . . . . . *rend-re*.

6. The *stem* or *radical* (that is, the part which precedes the above-mentioned terminations) remains unchanged through the whole conjugation in all regular verbs.

For the full conjugation of the verbs, see page 477 and following.

## AUXILIARY VERBS.

1. There are two AUXILIARY VERBS in French, *avoir* and *être*.

2. *All transitive verbs* in the active voice, and *most neuter verbs*, take *avoir* for their auxiliary.

3. *All passive verbs*, *all reflexive verbs*, and a *few neuter verbs*, always take *être* for their auxiliary. The following neuter verbs are of this class: *Aller, arriver, choir, décider, éclore, entrer, mourir, naître, partir, rentrer, retomber, retourner*, and *venir*, and its derivatives *advenir, devenir, disconvenir, intervenir, parvenir, provenir, revenir, redevenir, survenir*.

N. B.—*Prévenir* and *subvenir* are the only ones that take *avoir*.

4. Some neuter verbs take *avoir* for auxiliary when they refer to *action*, and *être* when they refer to *state*; as,

*Il a changé tout-à-coup.*

He changed suddenly.

*Il est bien changé depuis peu.*

He has changed much of late.

The following sometimes take *avoir* and sometimes *être*, according to the above distinction: *Aborder, accoucher, accourir, accroître, apparaître, augmenter, baisser, cesser, changer, convenir, croître, déborder, décamper, déchoir, dégé-*

*nérer, déménager, dépérir, descendre, disparaître, échapper, échoir, embellir, empirer, expirer, grandir, monter, passer, redescendre, rajeunir, remonter, réparer, ressortir, rester, résulter, sonner, sortir, tomber, vieillir.*

## MOODS AND TENSES.

1. French verbs have six moods: the *indicative, conditional, imperative, subjunctive, infinitive, and participle.*

2. The *indicative, conditional, imperative, and subjunctive*, are called *personal moods*, because they admit of different persons.

3. The *infinitive and participle* are called *impersonal moods*, because they do not change for the persons.

4. Each of these moods has one or more tenses as mentioned in the following paragraphs.

## INDICATIVE.

1. The INDICATIVE MOOD is used to *affirm or deny positively, and to ask questions*, and is sometimes called AFFIRMATIVE; as,

<i>Je parle. Tu ne vois pas.</i>	I speak. Thou dost not see.
<i>Avez-vous dîné? Il viendra.</i>	Have you dined? He will come.

2. The indicative mood has the following tenses: the *present, imperfect, past definite, past indefinite or pluperfect, past anterior, past anterior indefinite, future absolute, and future anterior.*

3. The present and two futures correspond to the same divisions of time in English, and have a similar use. The others differ from our divisions of time, and require careful study from the learner.

4. The IMPERFECT represents an action or state as unfinished in past time. It represents it as *continuous, habitual, or repeated.* It corresponds, for the most part, to *was* with the present participle, or *used* with the infinitive. It is used also instead of the conditional after *si*, when *si* cannot be rendered by *whether*—or;

<i>Je parlais toute la journée, quand j'étais à la ville.</i>	I spoke (was speaking) the whole day, when I was in the city.
<i>Tu travaillais quand je dormais.</i>	Thou wast working when I was sleeping.
<i>Il allait à l'église quand tout à coup il reçut une tuile sur la tête.</i>	He was going to church, when he suddenly received a tile upon his head.
<i>Si j'avais de l'argent je voyagerais.</i>	If I had money I would travel.

5. The PAST DEFINITE represents an action or state as finished in some past time, stated or well understood by the speakers, and of which the present day can form no part. It is generally used in the narration of past events, and is therefore often called the *historical tense.*

<i>Romulus tua son frère.</i>	Romulus killed his brother.
<i>Hier j'allai à l'église.</i>	esterday I went to church.

6. The PAST INDEFINITE represents an action or state as finished in a period of past time not specified, or in present time, as *to-day, this week, this month, this year, this century, etc.*

<i>J'ai fini mon ouvrage.</i>	I have finished my work.
<i>Je l'ai vu ce matin, cette semaine, cette année, etc.</i>	I saw him this morning, this week, this year, etc.

7. This tense is used in conversation in preference to the past definite, EXCEPT IN NARRATIVES.

8. The PLUPERFECT expresses an action or state as finished before another, or before a past time specified. There are two pluperfects in French, the *mediate* and the *immediate*.

9. In the ordinary *pluperfect*, which is called *mediate*, there can be a certain time elapsed, between the two actions or times specified. It is also used to express something *continuous, habitual, or repeated*; as,

*J'AVAIS DÉJEUNÉ quand je suis allé chez mon frère.* I had breakfasted when I went to my brother's.

*IL AVAIT TRAVAILLÉ longtemps quand tu es venu.* He had worked long when you came.

*Tous les jours quand nous étions revenus de la chasse, nous nous reposions.* Every day when we had returned from hunting, we used to rest.

10. The PAST ANTERIOR, which is the *immediate* pluperfect, represents an action or state as finished immediately prior to some other past time; as,

*Hier aussitôt que j'eus fini mon ouvrage, j'allai chez lui.* Yesterday, as soon as I had finished my work, I went to his house

11. The PAST ANTERIOR INDEFINITE also expresses an action or state finished immediately before another time—according to some grammarians limited to the present day; as,

*Aussitôt que j'ai eu écrit ma lettre ce matin, je l'ai envoyée à la poste.* As soon as I had finished my letter this morning, I sent it to the post-office.

But this tense is little used. (See Lesson 77, page 264.)

#### CONDITIONAL.

1. The CONDITIONAL MOOD expresses the meaning of the verb under a condition or supposition, corresponding to *should* or *would* with the verb in English. It has two tenses:

2. The PRESENT CONDITIONAL, to express a present or future; as,

*Si j'avais le temps, j'apprendrais le français.* If I had the time, I would learn the French language. (See Lessons 93 and 94.)

3. The PAST CONDITIONAL, to express a present or future to some past time; as,

*Si j'avais eu le temps, j'aurais appris le français.* If I had had the time, I would have learned the French language.

4. The SECOND CONDITIONAL COMPOUND is used after *si* instead of the above.

*Si j'eusse eu (and not si j'aurais eu) le temps, je serais allé vous voir.* If I had had the time, I would have gone to see you.

#### IMPERATIVE.

The IMPERATIVE MOOD has the same use in French as in English; but the French, having no first person singular of this mood, use the first person plural in its place. (See Lesson 44.)

*Soyons diligent.*

Let me be diligent.



## SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The **SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD**, so called because it follows (is *subjoined* to) another verb, does not affirm positively the action, but states it as subject to doubt, or as a mere conception of the mind, or springing from some emotion. It has four tenses: *the present, imperfect, perfect, and pluperfect.*

2. The **PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE** is used after a present, or future of the indicative, to denote something present or future to it; as,

*Je veux qu'il vienne; sa mère aussi voudra qu'il vienne.* I will have him come; his mother also will have him come.

3. The **PERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE** is used after a present or future of the indicative to denote something past to it; as,

*Je ne crois pas qu'il soit arrivé.* I do not believe that he has arrived.  
*Je ne croirai pas qu'il soit arrivé.* I shall not believe that he has arrived.

4. The **IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE** is used after all the past and conditional tenses to denote something present or future to them; as,

*Je voulais } qu'il vint. I wished him to come.*  
*Je voulais } qu'il vint. I had wished him to come.*  
*J'aurais voulu } qu'il vint. I should wish him to come.*  
*J'aurais voulu } qu'il vint. I should have wished him to come.*

5. The **PLUPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE** is used after the same tenses to denote something past to them.

*J'avais peur qu'il ne fût pas venu.* I feared that he had not come.

## USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.\*

6. Verbs which do not affirm a thing positively, all those which express will, desire, fear, pleasure, approbation, or any emotion, followed by *que*, govern the subjunctive; as,

*Je désire que nous y alliez.* I desire you to go there.  
*Je craignais qu'il n'y allât pas.* I feared that he would not go there.

7. Impersonal verbs, and impersonal expressions, which do not affirm positively, followed by *que*, govern the subjunctive; as,

*Il faut que j'aille chez moi.* It is necessary for me to go home.

8. The relative pronouns, when they are preceded by an indefinite expression, or by a superlative, or word having the force of a superlative, govern the subjunctive, when they do not refer to what is known and definite; as,

*Je veux un cheval qui soit beau.* I wish for a horse which may be beautiful.  
*Y a-t-il quelqu'un qui puisse faire cela ?* Is there any one who can do that?

9. Conjunctions which so modify the following verb that it does not affirm positively, govern that verb in the subjunctive; as,

*Pourvu qu'il soit ici.* Provided that he be here.  
*Afin qu'il fasse cela.* In order that he may do that.

\* See Lessons 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 99, 100, and 101.

10. Verbs used interrogatively or negatively govern the subjunctive, provided the speaker looks upon what the verb expresses as doubtful or false.

*Je ne crois pas qu'il soit mon ami.  
Pensez-vous qu'il soit honnête ?*

I do not believe that he is my friend.  
Do you think that he is honest ?

11. *Qui que, quoi que, quel que, quelque que, si que*, govern the following verb in the subjunctive ; as,

*Qui que ce soit qui vous parle, répondez  
poliment.  
Quoi qu'il fasse, il sera blâmé.*

Whoever he may be that speaks to you  
answer politely.  
Whatever he may do, he will be blamed.

12. That the indicative expresses what the speaker regards as a fact, or truth, and the subjunctive a mere conception of the mind, may be seen in the following sentences :

1. *Je sais qu'il va à l'église.*
2. *Vous voulez qu'il aille à l'église !*
3. *Il est certain que vous étudiez.*
4. *Il est nécessaire que vous étudiez.*
5. *Je connais un homme qui est honnête.*
6. *Je veux trouver un homme qui soit honnête.*
7. *Parce qu'il fait son devoir.*
8. *Pourvu qu'il fasse son devoir.*
9. *Croyez-vous qu'il y a un Dieu ?*
10. *Croyez-vous qu'il y ait des revenants ? \**

- I know that he goes to church.  
You will have him go to church !  
It is certain that you study.  
It is necessary that you study.  
I know a man who is honest.  
I wish to find a man who may be honest.  
Because he does his duty.  
Provided he does his duty.  
Do you believe that there is a God ?  
Do you believe that there are ghosts ?

## INFINITIVE.

1. The INFINITIVE MOOD has two tenses ; THE PRESENT, to express an action or state in an unspecified time, or as present or future in regard to time specified ; as,

*Il faut FAIRE son devoir.  
Il aurait fallu FAIRE son devoir.  
Il faudra FAIRE son devoir.*

One must do his duty.  
One must have done his duty.  
It will be necessary to do one's duty.

2. THE PAST, used to express some action or state as anterior to some specified act or time.

*Il faut AVOIR FAIT son devoir.  
Il aurait fallu AVOIR FAIT son devoir.*

It is necessary to have done one's duty.  
It would have been necessary to have done one's duty.

3. The infinitive has for the most part the same use as in English. It differs, however, in some respects.

4. When of two verbs in English connected by *and*, the second denotes the purpose or object of the first, it is rendered by the infinitive in French ; as,

*Venez me VOIR.  
J'irai CHERCHER mes livres demain.*

Come and see me.  
I will go and look for my books to-morrow.

\* In the first of the above phrases, the speaker represents going to church as a fact, and uses the indicative mood. In the second, he speaks of it as a thing that he wishes merely, and uses the subjunctive. In the third, he speaks of studying as a fact, and uses the indicative. In the fourth, only as something necessary, and uses the subjunctive. In the fifth, he speaks of a man that he knows, and uses the indicative. In the sixth, only of one he conceives of, and wishes to find, and uses the subjunctive. In the seventh, he speaks of one's doing his duty as a fact, and uses the indicative. In the eighth, merely as something that might be done, and uses the subjunctive. In the ninth, he speaks of God, whom he believes to exist, and uses the indicative. In the tenth, of ghosts, which he regards as mere creatures of the fancy, and uses the subjunctive.

• 5. After any preposition except *en*, when the present participle is used in English, the infinitive must be used in French; as,

*Il apprend sans beaucoup étudier.*

He learns without studying much.

*Que gagnez-vous à faire cela ?*

What do you gain by doing that ?

6. Verbs which with a change of subject are followed by *que* with the indicative or subjunctive, generally take the infinitive when the subject is unchanged; as,

*Il croit pouvoir faire cela.*

He thinks that he can do that.

*Croyez-vous réussir ?*

Do you believe that you will succeed ?

7. The following verbs govern the infinitive without a preposition :

Aimer mieux,	Croire,	Faillir,	Penser,	Sentir,
Affirmer,	Daigner,	Faire,	Pouvoir,	Souhaiter,
Aller,	Déclarer,	Falloir,	Prétendre,	Soutenir,
Apercevoir,	Déposer,	S'imaginer,	Publier,	Témoiner,
Assurer,	Désirer,	Laisser,	Rapporter,	Se trouver,
Avoir beau,	Devoir,	Mener,	Reconnaître,	Valoir mieux,
Avouer,	Écouter,	Nier,	Regarder,	Venir,
Compter,	Entendre,	Observer,	Retourner,	Volr,
Confesser,	Envoyer,	Oser,	Revenir,	Vouloir, etc.
Considérer,	Epler,	Oùir,	Savoir,	
Courir,	Espérer,	Paraître,	Sembler,	

8. The following verbs, many of which have been given in the previous lessons, take *à* before the following infinitive :

Abaisser,	Avoir,	Destiner,	S'exposer,
Aboutir,	Avoir quelque chose,	Déterminer (or <i>de</i> ),	Se fatiguer,
S'abuser,	N'avoir rien,	Se déterminer,	Se fier,
Accéder,	Balancer,	Se dévoter,	Forcer (or <i>de</i> ),
S'accorder,	Borner,	Disposer,	Gagner,
Accoutumer (or <i>de</i> ),	Se borner,	Se disposer,	Habituer,
S'accoutumer,	Chercher,	Se divertir,	S'habituer,
S'acharner,	Commencer (or <i>de</i> ),	Donner,	Haïr,
Adhérer,	Se complaire,	Dresser,	Se hasarder,
Admettre,	Concourir,	Éclairer,	Hésiter,
S'aguerir,	Condamner,	S'efforcer (or <i>de</i> ),	Inciter,
Aider,	Condescendre,	Embarrasser,	Incliner,
Aimer,	Consentir (or <i>de</i> ),	Employer,	Instruire,
Amuser,	Consister,	S'empreser (or <i>de</i> ),	S'intéresser,
S'amuser,	Conspirer,	Encourager,	Inviter,
Animer,	Se consumer,	S'endurcir,	Lasser (or <i>de</i> ),
S'appliquer,	Continuer (or <i>de</i> ),	Engager,	Se lasser,
Apprendre,	Contraindre (or <i>de</i> ),	S'engager,	Limiter,
Apprêter,	Contribuer,	Enhardir,	Se livrer,
S'apprêter,	Convier (or <i>de</i> ),	Enseigner,	Manquer (or <i>de</i> ),
S'arrêter,	Coûter,	S'entendre,	Mettre,
Arriver,	Décider (or <i>de</i> ),	Essayer (or <i>de</i> ),	Se mettre,
Aspirer,	Se décider,	Être (or <i>de</i> ),	Montrer,
Assigner,	Défier (or <i>de</i> ),	S'étudier,	Se nuire,
S'assujétir,	Demander (or <i>de</i> ),	S'évertuer,	Obliger (or <i>de</i> ),
S'astreindre,	Demeurer,	Exceller,	S'obstiner,
S'attacher,	Dépenser,	Exciter,	S'occuper (or <i>de</i> ),
S'attendre,	Se déplaire,	Exercer,	S'offrir,
Autoriser,	Désapprendre,	S'exercer,	S'opiniâtrer,
S'avilir,	Désobéir,	Exhorter,	Parvenir,

Passer son temps,	Prendre plaisir,	Résister,	Tâcher (or <i>de</i> ),
Avoir peine,	Préparer,	Êster,	Tarder (or <i>de</i> ),
Pencher,	Se préparer,	Se résoudre,	Tendre,
Penser,	Présenter,	Retrancher,	Tenir,
Perdre,	Prétendre,	Réussir,	Travailler,
Persévérer,	Se prêter,	Revener,	Trembler,
Persister,	Procéder,	Rêver (or <i>de</i> ),	Trouver,
Plaire (or <i>de</i> ),	Provoquer,	Risquer (or <i>de</i> ),	Venir (or <i>de</i> ),
Se plaire,	Réduire,	Servir,	Viser,
Se plier,	Se réduire,	Songer,	Vouer,
Porter,	Renoncer,	Subvenir,	Se vouer.
Pourvoir,	Répugner (or <i>de</i> ),	Suffire (or <i>pour</i> ),	
Pousser,	Se résigner,	Surprendre,	

9. THE PREPOSITION *à* stands before the infinitive after verbs expressing prompting or exciting to something, after adjectives and participles which express inclination, fitness, determination, preparation, or custom; as, *Adroit, Ardent, Assidu, Attentif, Disposé, Enclin, Exact, Exposé, Fondé, Habile, Intéressé, Opiniâtre, Ponctuel, Porté, Prêt, Prompt, Propre, Sujet.*

10. The preposition *à* stands before infinitives used in a passive sense; as, *C'est une chose à désirer*, It is a thing to be desired; before those which follow adjectives in the superlative, or having a superlative meaning; as, *le dernier à faire son devoir*; and generally when the question, *to or for what?* may be asked; as, *bon à manger.*

11. THE PREPOSITION *de*, on the other hand, is used before the infinitive when the question *what?* rather than *to or for what?* may be asked; as, *Je vous permets d'avoir cela*; when the infinitive stands as the direct object of a verb; as, *Je vous ordonne de sortir*; when it supplies the place of *of* with a noun or present participle; as, *au lieu de faire*; and when *il est* (imp.) is followed by an adjective; as, *Il est bon de savoir cela.*

12. The following verbs and phrases, many of which have been given in the previous lessons, take *de* after them before the following infinitive:

S'abstenir,	Approuver,	Avoir sujet,	Conclure,
Abuser,	Appréhender,	Blâmer,	Conjurer,
Accoutumer (or <i>d</i> ),	Être à propos,	Avoir besoin,	Conseiller,
S'accommoder,	Arrêter,	Être bien,	Consentir (or <i>d</i> ),
Accuser,	Attendre (or <i>d</i> ),	Être bien aise,	Consoler,
Être accusé,	Attendrir,	Avoir le bonheur,	Se contenter,
S'accuser,	Attrister,	Avoir le bonté,	Continuer (or <i>d</i> ),
Acchever,	S'attrister,	Brûler,	Contraindre (or <i>d</i> ),
S'acquitter,	Avant,	Consurer,	Convaincre,
Affecter,	Avantage,	Cesser,	Convier (or <i>d</i> ),
Affliger,	Avertir,	Avoir le chagrin,	Convenir,
S'affliger,	S'aviser,	Chagriner,	Corriger,
S'agir,	Avoir bien à cœur,	Se chagriner,	Craindre,
Être alarmé,	Avoir coutume,	Charger,	Décharger,
Ambitionner,	Avoir dessein,	Se charger,	Décider (or <i>d</i> ),
À moins (que),	Avoir honte,	Choisir,	Décourager,
S'amouracher,	Avoir l'air,	Commander,	Dédaigner,
Appartenir,	Avoir la liberté,	Commencer (or <i>d</i> ),	Défendre,
S'apercevoir,	Avoir peur,	Commode,	Défier (or <i>d</i> ),
S'applaudir,	Avoir pitié,	Complaisance,	Se défier,

Dégouter,	Être (or <i>d</i> ),	S'informer,	Prescrire,
Délibérer,	Être accusé,	S'ingérer,	Presser,
Demander (or <i>d</i> ),	Être alarmé,	Injustice,	Se presser,
Se démettre,	Être charmé,	S'inquiéter,	Procuser,
Se dépêcher,	Être consterné,	Inspirer,	Prier,
Dépendre (imp.),	Convenable,	Intention,	Priver,
Déplaire,	Être effrayé,	Interdire,	Professer,
Désaccoutumer,	Être embarrassé,	Inutile,	Profiter,
Désespérer,	Être en droit,	Jouir,	Promettre,
Se désespérer,	Être en état,	Jurer,	Se promettre,
Se déahabituer,	Être fâché,	Justifier,	Proposer,
Le désir,	Être étonné,	Juste,	Se proposer,
Désirer (or <i>without</i> ),	Être frappé,	Justifier,	Protester,
Se désister,	Être joyeux,	Laisser (or <i>d</i> ),	Punir,
Désoler,	Être pressé,	Louer,	Que (than),
Se désoler,	Être surpris (or <i>d</i> ),	Mander,	Avoir raison,
Déterminer (or <i>d</i> ),	Être triste,	Faire mal,	Raisonnaable,
Détester,	Éviter,	Malheur,	Se rappeler,
Détourner,	Excuser,	Manquer (or <i>d</i> ),	Être rassasié,
Se devoir,	S'excuser,	Médire,	Être ravi,
Différer,	Exempter,	Méditer,	Se rebuter,
Dire,	S'exempter,	Se mêler,	Recommander,
Discontinuer,	Exiger,	Menacer,	Refuser (or <i>d</i> ),
Disconvenir,	Se fâcher,	Mériter,	Regret,
Se disculper,	Faiblesse,	Mettre hors d'état,	Regretter,
Dispenser,	Faillir (or <i>d</i> ),	Être mieux,	Réjouir,
Se dispenser,	Faire bien,	Mourir,	Se réjouir,
Disposer,	Faire mine,	Se moquer,	Remercier,
Dissuader,	Faire plaisir,	Y avoir moyen,	Se repentir,
Divertir,	Faire signe,	Négliger,	Reprendre,
Domage,	Faire semblant,	Nier,	Réprimander,
Donner lieu,	Felndre,	Notifier,	Reprocher,
Donner ordre,	Féliciter,	Obliger (or <i>d</i> ),	Se reprocher,
Douter,	Se féliciter,	S'occuper (or <i>d</i> ),	Répugner (or <i>d</i> ),
Droit,	Finir,	Offrir,	Résoudre,
Écrire,	Se flatter,	Omettre,	Se ressouvenir,
Édifier,	À force,	Ordonner,	Retenir,
S'édifier,	Forcer (or <i>d</i> ),	Oublier,	Ridicule,
S'efforcer (or <i>d</i> ),	Fremir,	Pardonnez,	Rire,
Effrayer,	Se garder,	Parler,	Risquer (or <i>d</i> ),
S'effrayer,	Avoir garde,	Se passer,	Rougir,
S'émanciper,	Prendre garde,	Patience,	Se saisir,
S'emparer,	Gémir,	Permettre,	Satisfaction,
Empêcher,	Générosité,	Persuader,	L'avoir bon gré,
S'empreser (or <i>d</i> ),	Gêner,	Se piquer,	Se scandaliser,
Enjoindre,	Se glorifier,	Plaindre,	Seoir,
S'ennuyer,	Rendre grâce,	Se plaindre,	Servir (or <i>d</i> ),
S'enorgueillir,	Gronder,	Plaisir,	Avoir soin,
Enrager,	Se hasarder (or <i>d</i> ),	Plaire,	Prendre soin,
Entreprendre,	Se hâter,	Politesse,	Sommer,
Envie,	Honnêteté,	Possible,	Se soucier,
Épouvanter,	Honneur,	Plutôt que,	Souffrir,
Espérer (or <i>without</i> ),	Impossible,	Le pouvoir,	Souhaiter (or <i>without</i> ),
Avoir l'esprit,	Imprudence,	Précaution,	Soupçonner,
Essayer (or <i>d</i> ),	Imputer,	Préférer (or <i>without</i> ),	Se souvenir,
S'étonner,	S'indigner,	Prendre sur soi,	Suffire (or <i>d</i> ),

Suggérer,	Tarder (or <i>d</i> ),	Tort,	Valoir la peine,
Supplier,	Temps,	Trembler,	Se vanter,
Tâcher (or <i>d</i> ),	Tenter,	Se trouver,	Venir (or <i>d</i> ),
Prendre à tâche,	Être tenté,	User,	Venir à bout.

13. Several of the above verbs may take either *d* or *de* before the infinitive; but for the most part not without some difference in their signification.

*Accoutumer*, used actively, takes *d*; when neuter, *de*.

*Je l'ai accoutumé à travailler. Il avait accoutumé d'aller.*

*Commencer* with *d* means to begin something progressive; with *de*, something not progressive.

*Cet élève commence à parler français. Il a commencé d'étudier à dix heures.*

*Consentir* with *d* means to consent freely; with *de*, not to oppose.

*Je consens à vous suivre. Je consens de le voir.*

*Continuer* with *d* means to continue without interruption; with *de*, at intervals.

*Il continuait à le frapper. Il continuait de le voir.*

*Contraindre* with *d* means to constrain to some action; with *de*, from action.

*On le contraignit à marcher. On le contraignit de se taire.*

*Convier* with *d* means to invite; with *de*, to beg, intreat. This distinction is not always observed.

*Je l'ai convié à dîner. Je l'ai convié de faire sa tâche.*

*Décider* takes *d* as an active or passive verb; *de*, as a neuter verb.

*Cette raison m'a décidé à partir. Nous décidâmes de partir.*

*Défier* with *d* means to challenge to something; with *de*, to defy.

*Je vous défie de boire. Je vous défie de m'en donner la moindre preuve.*

*Demander* with *d* means to demand something active or positive; with *de*, something passive.

*Il demande à boire. Il demande d'être écouté.*

*Déterminer* takes *d* with a direct object; *de*, without such an object.

*Je le déterminai à partir. Il a déterminé de rebâtir sa maison.*

*S'efforcer* with *d* means to attempt what depends wholly on our will; with *de*, what does not depend wholly on our will.

*Il s'efforce à parler. Elle s'efforce de plaire.*

*S'empresse* takes *d* when the action passes to an object; otherwise *de*.

*Il s'est empressé à vous rendre service. Il s'est empressé de rendre service.*

*Essayer* takes *d* with reference to the efforts; *de*, with reference to the object.

*Ce malade a essayé à marcher. J'ai essayé de le persuader.*

*Être* with *d* denotes turn; with *de*, right or duty.

*C'est à vous à jouer. C'est au fils d'obéir et non au père.*

*Forcer* takes *d* when the action has an object; *de*, when it has not. This distinction is not much observed.

*Il le force à faire sa tâche. Il le force de partir.*

*Se hasarder de*, when the second verb indicates an action, the cause and effect of which are confined to the agent; *d*, when the second verb denotes an action that constitutes the object of the verb.

*Il se hasarde de me répondre. Je me hasarde à vous faire une proposition.*

*Laisser* with *d* means to leave, to allow; with *de*, to fail, used in negations.

*Cela laisse beaucoup à penser. Il ne laisse pas d'être honnête.*

*Manquer* with *d* means to fail of some duty; with *de*, to have like—to escape—to be near.

*Il manque à remplir ses devoirs. Il a manqué de vous trouver ici. Il a manqué d'être tard.*

*Obliger*, meaning to impose necessity, *à* or *de*; meaning to confer obligation or favor, it takes *de* only.

*Je l'oblige à étudier. Vous m'obligerez beaucoup de faire cela. Être obligé* takes *de*.  
*S'occuper* with *à* means to labor at; with *de*, to occupy one's thoughts with.

*Il s'occupe à lire. Il s'occupe de détruire les abus.*

*Plaire* takes *à* as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.

*Il se plaît à lire. Il ne se plaît pas de vous obéir.*

*Répugner* takes *à* as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.

*Je répugne à faire cela. Il me répugne de faire cela.*

*Risquer* takes *à* as an active verb; *de*, as a neuter verb.

*Vous risquez tout à prendre ce parti. Vous risquez de tomber.*

*Servir* takes *à* as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.

*Ce bateau sert à passer la rivière. Que sert-il de s'emporter ?*

*Suffire* takes *à* or *pour* as a personal verb; *de*, as an impersonal verb.

*Ce domestique ne saurait suffire à servir tant de personnes. Il suffit de vous le dire.*

*Tâcher* takes *à* when the action passes from the subject; *de*, when it does not.

*Il tâche à me nuire. Il tâche de se débarrasser de ses dettes.*

*Tarder* takes *à* when the object is without; *de*, when it is within, and with a dative.

*Il tarde à vous punir. Il me tarde de vous voir.*

*Venir* with *à* means to happen, to begin; with *de*, to have just; with neither, to come.

*S'il vient à mourir. Il vient de partir. Je viens adorer l'Éternel.*

*Refuser* takes *à* before *dîner, manger, déjeuner*, etc., *de* *quel* being understood. It takes *de* before other infinitives.

*Il lui refuse à manger. Il refuse de venir.*

*Désirer* takes *de* when there is any obstacle to the desire. When there is no obstacle, it governs the infinitive without a preposition.

*Espérer* takes *de* when uncertainty is implied; otherwise no preposition.

*J'espère bien le revoir. Peut-on espérer de vous revoir ?*

*Préférer* takes *de* before an infinitive with an accessory; otherwise no preposition.

*Je préfère mourir. Je préfère de mourir avec vous, plutôt que de vous trahir.*

*Souhaiter* takes or omits *de* when the action is confined to the subject; otherwise it requires the subjunctive.

*Je souhaiterais pouvoir; or, de pouvoir vous obliger. Je souhaite qu'il vienne.*

*Pour*, *for*, *in order to*, is used before the infinitive to denote the end, design, or cause for which any thing is done.

#### PARTICIPLES.

The PARTICIPLE, so called because it participates of the nature of a verb and an adjective (that is, it expresses action, existence, or state, and also qualification) is *variable* or *invariable*.

2. Present participles, used as verbs, that is, when the main idea expressed is action or existence, always remain invariable; as,

*Ces hommes, RECONNAISSANT leur faute, s'empresèrent de la réparer.* These men recognizing their mistake, hastened to repair it.

3. Participles used as adjectives, that is, to express a quality or state, are *variable*, and agree in gender and number with their nouns; as,

*J'estime les enfants RECONNAISSANTS.*

I esteem grateful children.

*Les lettres que mes amis ont ÉCRITES.*

The letters which my friends have written.

The above two rules, taken in their full extent, comprehend the whole doctrine of the variation of the participle, and all its cases may be reduced to these. The learner, however, may find at first a clearer and easier, though less philosophic, guide in the following rules.

## PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

1. The present participle is invariable: First, when it is or can be preceded by *en*; as,

*Messieurs en agissant ainsi, vous nous offènsez.*      Sirs, by acting thus you offend us.

Secondly, when it has a direct object; as,

*Nos soldats, remportant la victoire, etc.*      Our soldiers gaining the victory, etc.

Thirdly, when it can, without altering the meaning, be changed to any tense of the verb, preceded by *qui*; as,

*Voyez-vous ces navires voguant (qui voguent) près du rivage?*      Do you see those vessels sailing near the shore?

*Nous contemplerons la rosée brillant (qui brillera) sur les feuilles.*      We shall or will look at the dew glittering on the leaves.

2. The present participle becomes an adjective, and is varied when it can, without changing the meaning, be preceded by some tense of *être* and *qui*; as,

*C'est une femme obligeante (qui est).*      She is an obliging woman.

*Il nous raconta des histoires amusantes (qui étaient amusantes).*      He related to us some amusing stories.

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

1. Past participles used without an auxiliary may be considered as adjectives, and vary as such.

*Des habits faits à la nouvelle mode.*      Coats made in the new fashion.

*Des robes faites à la nouvelle mode.*      Gowns made in the new fashion.

2. The following, however, when they precede the word which they qualify, are not varied: *Excepté, supposé, passé, vu, ci-joint, ci-inclus*; as, *Excepté mes amis; SUPPOSÉ ces projets; PASSÉ cette heure; VU ces faits; CI-JOINT vous trouverez copie; CI-INCLUS vous recevrez mes lettres.*

3. The past participle accompanied by *être*, in verbs not reflective, agrees with the subject of the verb; as,

*Elle est respectée. Nous sommes venus.*      She is respected. We have come.

4. When accompanied by *avoir* in transitive verbs, and by *être* in reflective verbs, it agrees with the direct object of the verb when the object precedes, but remains unchanged when the object follows; as,

*J'ai vu les dames. Je les ai vues.*      I have seen the ladies. I have seen them.

*Il s'est chauffé les pieds.*      He has warmed his feet.

*Il se les est chauffés.*      He has warmed them.

5. The past participle, followed by an infinitive, is unvaried when the infinitive is its object, but agrees with the preceding noun or pronoun when that is its object; \* as,

\* The preceding noun or pronoun may be known to be the object of the participle if the infinitive can be changed to the present participle and preserve the sense: *Je les ai vus repousser les ennemis.* Here we can say, *je les ai vus repoussant les ennemis*, and



*La route qu'il avait résolu de suivre.*  
*Ils nous ont empêchés de réussir.*  
*Il les a fait courir.*

The route which he had resolved to follow.  
 They have prevented us from succeeding.  
 He made them run.

6. Sometimes the close of a sentence preceded by *que* is the object of the participle, which is then unvaried; as,

*La lettre que j'ai présumé que vous recevriez.*

The letter which I presumed that you would receive.

7. When an infinitive is understood after the participles *dû*, *pu*, *voulu*, and some others, they are not varied, their object being the infinitive understood; as, *Je lui ai rendu tous les services que j'ai* *DU*, or *PU*, or *VOULU* (*lui rendre* being understood).\*

8. In like manner, when the close of the sentence understood is the object of the participle, it is not varied; as, *Je lui aurais fait tous les vers qu'il aurait voulu* (*QUE JE LUI FISSE* being understood).

9. The past participle following *le peu*, when it signifies a small quantity, agrees with the noun following *le peu*; but when it signifies lack or destitution, the participle is not varied; as, *Le peu d'affection que vous lui avez TÉMOIGNÉE lui a rendu le courage.* *Le peu d'affection que vous lui avez TÉMOIGNÉ l'a découragé.* In the former of these sentences, *le peu d'affection* denotes some affection, though but little; in the latter, it denotes lack or destitution of affection.

It may be taken as a general rule, that when the sense allows the suppression of *le peu*, as in the former of these sentences, the participle is varied, otherwise not.

10. The past participle is not varied to agree with an indirect object, nor is the participle of an impersonal verb ever varied; as, *Les chaleurs qu'il a FAIT pendant l'été.*

REM.—The participles *coûté*, *valu*, *pesé*, formerly subject to some exceptions, now follow the general rule.

11. After these examples the learner will generally find it easy on reflection to determine the object of the participle. *Les dix ans qu'il a vécu, il les a vécus heureux.* Here the participle is not varied, because the verb is neuter, and the pronouns are governed by *pendant* understood. *L'affaire fut moins sérieuse que je ne l'avais PENSÉE.* Here *l' (le)* is equivalent to *cela*, and is not feminine; hence the participle is unvaried. *Les livres qu'il nous a PRÊTÉS de lui prêter.* Here *qui* is the object of *prêter*, and *nous* of the participle. When *eu* and *donné* are followed by a preposition and infinitive, the object may belong either to the participle or to the infinitive; as, *Les obstacles que j'ai eus à surmonter*; or, *que j'ai eu à surmonter*: both are admissible.

*les* is the object of *eus*. *Je les ai vu repousser par les ennemis.* Here we can not say, *je les ai vus repoussant par les ennemis*, and accordingly *repousser*, not *les*, is the object of the participle.

REMARK.—Although the above sentence, *je les ai vus repousser les ennemis*, is grammatical, it is not the idiomatic grammar of the best modern French writers, who do not like giving two direct objects to a transitive verb. Instead of *les*, therefore, they would say, *Je LEUR ai vu repousser les ennemis.*

\* The participle *pu* has no feminine; but *pu* and *voulu* follow the general rule when there is no infinitive understood after them; as, *Il m'a payé les sommes qu'il m'a dûes.* *Il veut fortement les choses qu'il a une fois voulu.*

## ADVERBS.

1. Adverbs are generally placed immediately after the verbs which they modify, except those of place and time, which stand as in English; as,

*Je vais SOUVENT à la pêche.*  
*Où est votre frère ?*

I often go a fishing.  
Where is your brother?

2. In compound tenses, the adverb is commonly placed between the auxiliary and the participle, except *aujourd'hui*, *demain*, *hier*, long adverbs generally, and adverbial expressions, which are placed after the participle; as,

*Il a BIEN fait son ouvrage.*  
*Il a BEAUCOUP travaillé.*  
*Il l'a fait ADMIRABLEMENT.*  
*Il l'a fait DE BON CŒUR.*

He has done his work well.  
He has worked much.  
He has done it admirably.  
He has done it willingly.

## NEGATIVES.

1. The negatives in French are *ne*, *ne pas*, and *ne point*. *Ne* is weaker than *ne pas*, and *ne point* is stronger.

2. *Pas* is employed to express something accidental, and *point*, something habitual or permanent; as,

*Il n'étudie PAS. Il ne lit PAS.*  
*Il n'étudie POINT. Il ne lit POINT.*

He does not study. He does not read.  
He never studies. He never reads.

3. *Pas* and *point*, in interrogations, have sometimes different senses. *Pas* may be used when the meaning is affirmative; *point* always implies doubt. *Ne le savez-vous pas ?* may imply, *you certainly know it*; *ne le savez-vous point ?* is an emphatic inquiry, whether you do not know it.

4. When *pas*, *point*, or any monosyllabic adverb of manner or quantity, as *bien*, *mal*, *trop*, *peu*, is joined to an infinitive, it almost always precedes it; as,

*Évitez les tentations afin de n'y PAS succomber.*

Avoid temptations in order not to yield to them.

*Je vous ai dit de ne pas trop marcher.*

I told you not to walk too much.

5. With two infinitives, *pas* may be placed between them; but the negation is more forcible when *ne pas* precedes both; as,

*Je voudrais ne pas SAVOIR ÉCRIRE, disait Néron, forcé de signer un arrêt de mort.*

I should wish not to know how to write, said Nero, when forced to sign a sentence of death.

6. *Pas* and *point* are always omitted when there is in the phrase any other negative, as *aucun*, *nul*, *personne*, *guère*, *jamais*, *nullement*, *ni* repeated, *plus rien*, or *ne que* (meaning *only*), etc.

7. *Pas* and *point* are generally omitted with *pouvoir*, *oser*, *cesser*, and *savoir*, in the conditional (meaning *pouvoir*), when these verbs are followed by an infinitive, and in familiar language with *bouger*; as,

*Il NE PEUT faire cela.*  
*Je NE BOUGERAI de là.*  
*Je NE SAURAI faire cela.*

He cannot do that.  
I will not stir from there.  
I can not do that.

8. *Pas* and *point* are omitted also when the phrase contains an expression having the force of a negative; as,

*Il NE voit goutte.*  
*Je NE l'ai vu DE MA VIE.*

He does not see at all.  
I have never seen it in my life.

## EMPLOYMENT OF NE.

9. Verbs of fear, as *appréhender*, *avoir peur*, *craindre*, *trembler*, not negative, as also the expressions *à moins que*, *de crainte que*, *de peur que*, and *que* in the sense of *sans que*, take *ne* before the following verb; as,

*Il A PEUR QUE JE NE change d'avis.*  
*DE PEUR qu'il NE soit malade.*

He is afraid that I ~~may~~ change my opinion.  
For fear that he may be sick.

10. *Autre*, *autrement*, and comparatives of superiority and inferiority in phrases not negative, take *ne* before the following verb; as,

*Je vous entends MEUX QUE vous NE pensez.*  
*Il agit AUTREMENT qu'il NE parla.*  
*Il est PLUS prudent qu'il n'était.*

I understand you better than you think.  
He acts differently from what he speaks.  
He is more prudent than he was.

11. *Contester*, *désespérer*, *disconvenir*, *douter*, and *nier*, when negative or interrogative, generally take *ne* before the following verb; as, *ON NE PEUT PAS DOUTER que les pôles NE soient couverts d'une coupole de glace. DOUTES-TU qu'il NE veuille implorer ma clémence?*

12. *Empêcher*, *éviter*, *prendre garde*, and *se garder*, meaning to employ means that something may not happen, take *ne* before the following verb; as, *PRENEZ GARDE qu'on NE vous trompe.*

13. *Il s'en faut*, when interrogative or accompanied by a negative, or words having the force of a negative, takes *ne* before the following verb; as does also *il y a*, followed by *que* in the sense of *depuis que*, when the phrase can be made negative in English; as,

*Il NE s'EN FAUT pas de beaucoup qu'il NE soit riche.*

It does not want much of his being rich.

*IL Y A deux ans que JE NE l'ai vu.*

I have not seen him these two years.

## PREPOSITIONS.

## LIST OF PREPOSITIONS.

<i>À travers,</i>	} through.	<i>Loin de,</i>	far from.
<i>Au travers de,</i>			
<i>Attendu,</i>	on account of.	<i>Malgré,</i>	in spite of.
<i>Après,</i>	after.	<i>Moyennant,</i>	by means of.
<i>Àuprès de,</i>	near.	<i>Nonobstant,</i>	notwithstanding.
<i>Autour de,</i>	around.	<i>Outre,</i>	besides.
<i>Avant,</i>	before.	<i>Par,</i>	by.
<i>Avec,</i>	with.	<i>Par-delà,</i>	on the other side.
<i>Chez,</i>	at.	<i>Parmi,</i>	among.
<i>Concernant,</i>	concerning	<i>Pendant,</i>	in time of. <i>during</i>

<i>Contre,</i>	against.	<i>Près de,</i>	near.
<i>Dans,</i>	in.	<i>Pour,</i>	for.
<i>Depuis,</i>	since.	<i>Proche de,</i>	near.
<i>Derrière,</i>	behind.	<i>Sauf,</i>	save.
<i>Dès,</i>	from.	<i>Sans,</i>	without.
<i>Devant,</i>	before.	<i>Selon,</i>	according to.
<i>Durant,</i>	during.	<i>Sous,</i>	under.
<i>Entre,</i>	between.	<i>Suivant,</i>	according to.
<i>Envers,</i>	towards.	<i>Sur,</i>	on.
<i>Excepté,</i>	except.	<i>Touchant,</i>	touching.
<i>Hormis,</i>	save.	<i>Vers,</i>	towards.
<i>Hors,</i>	out.	<i>Vis-à-vis de,</i>	opposite.
<i>Jusqu'à,</i>	as far as.	<i>Voici, voilà,</i>	behold.

1. *À*, *in*, *to*, before the name of a city or of a country which is masculine, is *à*, and before one which is feminine, is *en*; *from*, before all, is *de*. *Il est à Boston. Il va au Mexique, au Canada. Il est né en France.*

2. *In* after a superlative, and equivalent to *of*, is *de* in French; as, *C'est l'homme le plus riche de notre ville.* He is the richest man in our city.

3. *Dans* has a sense precise, *en* vague and indefinite; therefore *dans* is used before a definite noun, and *en* before an indefinite noun; as,

*Il entre dans la prison.*

He goes into the prison.

*Il est en prison.*

He is in prison.

4. Before a noun of time, *en* means the whole period of time; *dans* means at the end of it.

*Il peut faire cela en trois semaines.*

He can do that in three weeks.

*Il arrivera dans trois semaines.*

He will arrive in (at the end of) three weeks.

5. *À*, *de*, and *en*, are generally to be repeated before each of their objects; as,

*Je parle à l'homme et à son fils.*

I speak of the man and his son.

*Nous parlons de vous et de lui.*

We speak of you and of him.

6. *En*, meaning *while*, or *by*, is the only preposition which can be followed by the present participle in French; all others govern the infinitive; as,

*Il lit en mangeant.*

He reads while eating.

*Afin d'apprendre. Pour voir mes amis.*

In order to learn. To see my friends.

*Sans étudier. À faire cela.*

Without studying. By doing that.

REM.—We see from these examples that when the preposition in English governing a participial noun can not be rendered into French by *en*, the participial noun is generally to be translated by the infinitive.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

## LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL CONJUNCTIONS.

<i>Ainsi que,</i>	as.	<i>Mais,</i>	but.
<i>À moins que,</i>	unless.	<i>Ni,</i>	neither.

<i>Au cas que,</i>	in case that.	<i>Néanmoins,</i>	nevertheless.
<i>En cas que,</i>	"	<i>Non que,</i>	not that.
<i>Au moins,</i>	at least.	<i>Or,</i>	now.
<i>Du moins,</i>	"	<i>Ou,</i>	or.
<i>À condition que,</i>	on condition that.	<i>Pourquoi,</i>	why.
<i>Bien que,</i>	although.	<i>Pourtant,</i>	however.
<i>Bien entendu que,</i>	on condition that.	<i>Pour que,</i>	in order that.
<i>Car,</i>	for.	<i>Pourvu que,</i>	provided that.
<i>Cependant,</i>	nevertheless.	<i>Parce que,</i>	because.
<i>De sorte que,</i>	so that.	<i>Que,</i>	that.
<i>De manière que,</i>	"	<i>Quoique,</i>	although.
<i>En sorte que,</i>	"	<i>Puisque,</i>	since.
<i>Encore que,</i>	although.	<i>Si,</i>	if.
<i>Et,</i>	and.	<i>Soit que,</i>	whether, or.
<i>C'est pourquoi,</i>	therefore.	<i>Sinon,</i>	or, otherwise.
<i>Donc,</i>	then.	<i>Toutefois,</i>	although.
<i>Sinon que,</i>	except that.	<i>Si ce n'est que,</i>	except that.
<i>Outre que,</i>	besides that.	<i>Vu que,</i>	because.
<i>À cause que,</i>	because.	<i>Attendu que,</i>	because.

1. To avoid repetition, *que* is often used for *parce que*, *pendant que*, and other conjunctions ending in *que*, repeated in a second clause. It is used in the same way for *comme*, *quand*, *lorsque*, and *si*.

<i>PENDANT qu'il dîne, et qu'il parlait,</i>	While he was breakfasting, and while he was talking, we read.
<i>COMME il était tard et que vous n'étiez pas ici, votre ami est allé chez lui.</i>	As it was late, and as you were not here, your friend went home.
<i>QUAND on est riche et qu'on est généreux, on ne manque pas d'amis.</i>	When one is rich, and when he is generous, he does not lack friends.
<i>Si vous avez des amis, et que vous désirez les conserver, prouvez-leur votre estime.</i>	If you have friends, and if you desire to preserve them, prove to them your esteem.

2. The following conjunctions govern the subjunctive according to Rule IV., p. 293 :

<i>À condition que,</i>	<i>Ce n'est pas que,</i>	<i>Hors que,</i>	<i>Pour peu que,</i>
<i>À Dieu ne plaise que,</i>	<i>De crainte que,</i>	<i>Jusqu'à ce que,</i>	<i>Pour que,</i>
<i>À ce que,</i>	<i>De peur que,</i>	<i>Loin que,</i>	<i>Pourvu que,</i>
<i>Afin que,</i>	<i>Dieu veuille que,</i>	<i>Moyennant que,</i>	<i>Quoique,</i>
<i>À la bonne heure que,</i>	<i>Excepté que,</i>	<i>Nonobstant que,</i>	<i>Sans que,</i>
<i>À moins que,</i>	<i>Encore que,</i>	<i>Non pas que,</i>	<i>Si peu que,</i>
<i>Au cas que,</i>	<i>En cas que,</i>	<i>Non que,</i>	<i>Soit que,</i>
<i>Avant que,</i>	<i>En attendant que,</i>	<i>Plaise à Dieu que,</i>	<i>Si tant est que,</i>
<i>Bien loin que,</i>	<i>Fasse le Ciel que,</i>	<i>Plût à Dieu que,</i>	<i>Supposé que.</i>
<i>Bien que,</i>	<i>Hormis que,</i>	<i>Posé le cas que,</i>	

Also *que* used for any of the above conjunctions, or a second *si*, as in the last example above.

The following, like the relatives, sometimes govern the subjunctive and sometimes the indicative :

<i>De façon que,</i>	<i>De sorte que,</i>	<i>Tellement que,</i>	<i>Sinon que.</i>
<i>De manière que,</i>	<i>En sorte que,</i>	<i>Si ce n'est que,</i>	

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB AVOIR, TO HAVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.						
Avoir,	PRESENT.	<i>to have.</i>	Avoir eu,	PAST.	<i>to have had.</i>	
	PARTICIPLES.					
Ayant,	PRESENT.	<i>having.</i>	Ayant eu,	PAST.	<i>having had.</i>	
	PAST.	<i>had.</i>				
Eu (m.), eue (f.),						
INDICATIVE MOOD.						
J'ai, Tu as, Il a, Nous avons, Vous avez, Ils ont,	PRESENT.	<i>I have. thou hast. he has. we have. you have. they have.</i>	J'ai eu, Tu as eu, Il a eu, Nous avons eu, Vous avez eu, Ils ont eu,	PAST INDEFINITE.	<i>I have had. thou hast had. he has had. we have had. you have had. they have had.</i>	
	IMPERFECT.	<i>I had. thou hadst. he had. we had. you had. they had.</i>		PLUPERFECT.	<i>I had had. thou hadst had. he had had. we had had. you had had. they had had.</i>	
	PAST DEFINITE.	<i>I had. thou hadst. he had. we had. you had. they had.</i>		PAST ANTERIOR.	<i>I had had. thou hadst had. he had had. we had had. you had had. they had had.</i>	
	FUTURE.	<i>I shall have. thou wilt have. he will have. we shall have. you will have. they will have.</i>		FUTURE PERFECT.	<i>I shall have had. thou wilt have had. he will have had. we shall have had. you will have had. they will have had.</i>	
	CONDITIONAL.	<i>I should have. thou wouldst have. he would have. we should have. you would have. they would have.</i>		PAST CONDITIONAL.	<i>I should have had. thou wouldst have had. he would have had. we should have had. you would have had. they would have had.</i>	
Alé, Qu'il ait, Ayez, Qu'ils aient,						
IMPERATIVE MOOD.						
Aie, Qu'il ait, Ayez, Qu'ils aient,						
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.						
Que j'aie, Que tu aies, Qu'il ait, Que nous ayons, Que vous ayez, Qu'ils aient,	PRESENT.	<i>that I may have. that thou mayest have. that he may have. that we may have. that you may have. that they may have.</i>	Que j'aie eu, Que tu aies eu, Qu'il ait eu, Que nous ayons eu, Que vous ayez eu, Qu'ils aient eu,	PAST.	<i>that I may have had. that thou mayest have had. that he may have had. that we may have had. that you may have had. that they may have had.</i>	
	IMPERFECT.	<i>that I might have. that thou mightest have. that he might have. that we might have. that you might have. that they might have.</i>		PLUPERFECT.	<i>that I might have had. that thou mightest have had. that he might have had. that we might have had. that you might have had. that they might have had.</i>	

## CONJUGATION OF AVOIR, TO HAVE, NEGATIVELY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
Ne pas avoir,	PRESENT.	<i>not to have.</i>	PAST.
		N'avoir pas eu,	<i>not to have had.</i>
PARTICIPLES.			
N'ayant pas,	PRESENT.	<i>not having.</i>	PAST.
	PAST.	N'ayant pas eu,	<i>not having had.</i>
Pasgu,			

INDICATIVE MOOD.			
Je n'ai pas, Tu n'as pas, Il n'a pas, Nous n'avons pas, Vous n'avez pas, Ils n'ont pas,	PRESENT.	<i>I have not, thou hast not, he has not, we have not, you have not, they have not.</i>	PAST INDEFINITE.
			Je n'ai pas eu, Tu n'as pas eu, Il n'a pas eu, Nous n'avons pas eu, Vous n'avez pas eu, Ils n'ont pas eu, <i>I have not had, thou hast not had, he has not had, we have not had, you have not had, they have not had.</i>
Je n'avais pas, Tu n'avais pas, Il n'avait pas, Nous n'avions pas, Vous n'aviez pas, Ils n'avaient pas,	IMPERFECT.	<i>I had not, thou hadest not, he had not, we had not, you had not, they had not.</i>	PLUPERFECT.
			Je n'avais pas eu, Tu n'avais pas eu, Il n'avait pas eu, Nous n'avions pas eu, Vous n'aviez pas eu, Ils n'avaient pas eu, <i>I had not had, thou hadest not had, he had not had, we had not had, you had not had, they had not had.</i>
Je n'eus pas, Tu n'eus pas, Il n'eut pas, Nous n'eûmes pas, Vous n'eûtes pas, Ils n'eurent pas,	PAST DEFINITE.	<i>I had not, thou hadest not, he had not, we had not, you had not, they had not.</i>	PAST ANTERIOR.
			Je n'eus pas eu, Tu n'eus pas eu, Il n'eut pas eu, Nous n'eûmes pas eu, Vous n'eûtes pas eu, Ils n'eurent pas eu, <i>I had not had, thou hadest not had, he had not had, we had not had, you had not had, they had not had.</i>
Je n'aurai pas, Tu n'auras pas, Il n'aura pas, Nous n'aurons pas, Vous n'aurez pas, Ils n'auront pas,	FUTURE.	<i>I shall not have, thou wilt not have, he will not have, we shall not have, you will not have, they will not have.</i>	FUTURE PERFECT.
			Je n'aurai pas eu, Tu n'auras pas eu, Il n'aura pas eu, Nous n'aurons pas eu, Vous n'aurez pas eu, Ils n'auront pas eu, <i>I shall not have had, thou wilt not have had, he will not have had, we shall not have had, you will not have had, they will not have had.</i>
Je n'aurais pas, Tu n'aurais pas, Il n'aurait pas, Nous n'aurions pas, Vous n'auriez pas, Ils n'auraient pas,	CONDITIONAL.	<i>I should not have, thou wouldst not have, he would not have, we should not have, you would not have, they would not have.</i>	PAST CONDITIONAL.
			Je n'aurais pas eu, Tu n'aurais pas eu, Il n'aurait pas eu, Nous n'aurions pas eu, Vous n'auriez pas eu, Ils n'auraient pas eu, <i>I should not have had, thou wouldst not have had, he would not have had, we should not have had, you would not have had, they would not have had.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
N'aie pas, Qu'il n'ait pas, N'ayons pas,	<i>have (thou) not, let him not have, let us not have.</i>	N'ayez pas, Qu'ils n'aient pas,	<i>have (you) not, let them have.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
Que je n'aie pas, Que tu n'aies pas, Qu'il n'ait pas, Que nous n'ayons pas, Que vous n'ayez pas, Qu'ils n'aient pas,	PRESENT.	<i>that I may not have, that thou mayest not have, that he may not have, that we may not have, that you may not have, that they may not have.</i>	PERFECT.
			Que je n'aie pas eu, Que tu n'aies pas eu, Qu'il n'ait pas eu, Que nous n'ayons pas eu, Que vous n'ayez pas eu, Qu'ils n'aient pas eu, <i>that I may not have had, that thou mayest not have had, that he may not have had, that we may not have had, that you may not have had, that they may not have had.</i>
Que je n'eusse pas, Que tu n'eusses pas, Qu'il n'eût pas, Que nous n'eussions pas, Que vous n'eussiez pas, Qu'ils n'eussent pas,	IMPERFECT.	<i>that I might not have, that thou mightest not have, that he might not have, that we might not have, that you might not have, that they might not have.</i>	PLUPERFECT.
			Que je n'eusse pas eu, Que tu n'eusses pas eu, Qu'il n'eût pas eu, Que nous n'eussions pas eu, Que vous n'eussiez pas eu, Qu'ils n'eussent pas eu, <i>that I might not have had, that thou mightest not have had, that he might not have had, that we might not have had, that you might not have had, that they might not have had.</i>

CONJUGATION OF AVOIR, TO HAVE, INTERROGATIVELY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
Avoir,	PRESENT.	to have.	Avoir en, PAST. to have had.
PARTICIPLES.			
Ayant,	PRESENT.	having.	Ayant en, PAST. having had.
Eu,	PAST.	had.	
INDICATIVE MOOD.			
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
AI-je ?	have I ?	AI-je en ?	have I had ?
As-tu ?	hast thou ?	As-tu en ?	hast thou had ?
A-t-il ?	has he ?	A-t-il en ?	has he had ?
Avons-nous ?	have we ?	Avons-nous en ?	have we had ?
Avez-vous ?	have you ?	Avez-vous en ?	have you had ?
Ont-ils ?	have they ?	Ont-ils en ?	have they had ?
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Avais-je ?	had I ?	Avais-je en ?	had I had ?
Avais-tu ?	hadst thou ?	Avais-tu en ?	hadst thou had ?
Avait-il ?	had he ?	Avait-il en ?	had he had ?
Avions-nous ?	had we ?	Avions-nous en ?	had we had ?
Aviez-vous ?	had you ?	Aviez-vous en ?	had you had ?
Avaient-ils ?	had they ?	Avaient-ils en ?	had they had ?
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Eus-je ?	had I ?	Eus-je en ?	had I had ?
Eus-tu ?	hadst thou ?	Eus-tu en ?	hadst thou had ?
Eut-il ?	had he ?	Eut-il en ?	had he had ?
Eûmes-nous ?	had we ?	Eûmes-nous en ?	had we had ?
Eûtes-vous ?	had you ?	Eûtes-vous en ?	had you had ?
Eurent-ils ?	had they ?	Eurent-ils en ?	had they had ?
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Aurai-je ?	shall I have ?	Aurai-je en ?	shall I have had ?
Auras-tu ?	wilt thou have ?	Auras-tu en ?	wilt thou have had ?
Aura-t-il ?	will he have ?	Aura-t-il en ?	will he have had ?
Aurons-nous ?	shall we have ?	Aurons-nous en ?	shall we have had ?
Aurez-vous ?	will you have ?	Aurez-vous en ?	will you have had ?
Auront-ils ?	will they have ?	Auront-ils en ?	will they have had ?
CONDITIONAL.		PAST CONDITIONAL.	
Aurais-je ?	should I have ?	Aurais-je en ?	should I have had ?
Aurais-tu ?	wouldst thou have ?	Aurais-tu en ?	wouldst thou have had ?
Aurait-il ?	could he have ?	Aurait-il en ?	would he have had ?
Aurions-nous ?	should we have ?	Aurions-nous en ?	should we have had ?
Auriez-vous ?	would you have ?	Auriez-vous en ?	would you have had ?
Auraient-ils ?	would they have ?	Auraient-ils en ?	would they have had ?



## CONJUGATION OF AVOIR, NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
N'ai-je pas ?	<i>have I not ?</i>	N'ai-je pas eu ?	<i>have I not had ?</i>
N'as-tu pas ?	<i>hast thou not ?</i>	N'as-tu pas eu ?	<i>hast thou not had ?</i>
N'a-t-il pas ?	<i>has he not ?</i>	N'a-t-il pas eu ?	<i>has he not had ?</i>
N'avons-nous pas ?	<i>have we not ?</i>	N'avons-nous pas eu ?	<i>have we not had ?</i>
N'avez-vous pas ?	<i>have you not ?</i>	N'avez-vous pas eu ?	<i>have you not had ?</i>
N'ont-ils pas ?	<i>have they not ?</i>	N'ont-ils pas eu ?	<i>have they not had ?</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
N'avais-je pas ?	<i>had I not ?</i>	N'avais-je pas eu ?	<i>had I not had ?</i>
N'avais-tu pas ?	<i>hadst thou not ?</i>	N'avais-tu pas eu ?	<i>hadst thou not had ?</i>
N'avait-il pas ?	<i>had he not ?</i>	N'avait-il pas eu ?	<i>had he not had ?</i>
N'avions-nous pas ?	<i>had we not ?</i>	N'avions-nous pas eu ?	<i>had we not had ?</i>
N'aviez-vous pas ?	<i>had you not ?</i>	N'aviez-vous pas eu ?	<i>had you not had ?</i>
N'ont-ils pas ?	<i>had they not ?</i>	N'avaient-ils pas eu ?	<i>had they not had ?</i>
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
N'eus-je pas ?	<i>had I not ?</i>	N'eus-je pas eu ?	<i>had I had ?</i>
N'eus-tu pas ?	<i>hadst thou not ?</i>	N'eus-tu pas eu ?	<i>hadst thou not had ?</i>
N'eut-il pas ?	<i>had he not ?</i>	N'eut-il pas eu ?	<i>had he not had ?</i>
N'eûmes-nous pas ?	<i>had we not ?</i>	N'eûmes-nous pas eu ?	<i>had we not had ?</i>
N'eûtes-vous pas ?	<i>had you not ?</i>	N'eûtes-vous pas eu ?	<i>had you not had ?</i>
N'eurent-ils pas ?	<i>had they not ?</i>	N'eurent-ils pas eu ?	<i>had they not had ?</i>
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
N'aurai-je pas ?	<i>shall I not have ?</i>	N'aurai-je pas eu ?	<i>shall I not have had ?</i>
N'auras-tu pas ?	<i>wilt thou not have ?</i>	N'auras-tu pas eu ?	<i>wilt thou not have had ?</i>
N'aura-t-il pas ?	<i>will he not have ?</i>	N'aura-t-il pas eu ?	<i>will he not have had ?</i>
N'aurons-nous pas ?	<i>shall we not have ?</i>	N'aurons-nous pas eu ?	<i>shall we not have had ?</i>
N'aurez-vous pas ?	<i>will you not have ?</i>	N'aurez-vous pas eu ?	<i>will you not have had ?</i>
N'auront-ils pas ?	<i>will they not have ?</i>	N'auront-ils pas eu ?	<i>will they not have had ?</i>
CONDITIONAL.		PAST CONDITIONAL.	
N'aurais-je pas ?	<i>should I not have ?</i>	N'aurais-je pas eu ?	<i>should I not have had ?</i>
N'aurais-tu pas ?	<i>wouldst thou not have ?</i>	N'aurais-tu pas eu ?	<i>wouldst thou not have had ?</i>
N'aurait-il pas ?	<i>would he not have ?</i>	N'aurait-il pas eu ?	<i>would he not have had ?</i>
N'aurions-nous pas ?	<i>should we not have ?</i>	N'aurions-nous pas eu ?	<i>should we not have had ?</i>
N'auriez-vous pas ?	<i>would you not have ?</i>	N'auriez-vous pas eu ?	<i>would you not have had ?</i>
N'auraient-ils pas ?	<i>would they not have ?</i>	N'auraient-ils pas eu ?	<i>would they not have had ?</i>

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *ETRE*, TO BE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
<i>Être</i> ,	PRESENT. <i>to be.</i>	Avoir été,	PAST. <i>to have been.</i>
PARTICIPLES.			
Étant,	PRESENT. <i>being.</i>	Ayant été,	PAST. <i>having been.</i>
Été,	PAST. <i>been.</i>		
INDICATIVE MOOD.			
Je suis,	PRESENT. <i>I am.</i>	J'ai été,	PAST INDEFINITE. <i>I have been.</i>
Tu es,	<i>thou art.</i>	Tu as été,	<i>thou hast been.</i>
Il est,	<i>he is.</i>	Il a été,	<i>he has been.</i>
Nous sommes,	<i>we are.</i>	Nous avons été,	<i>we have been.</i>
Vous êtes,	<i>you are.</i>	Vous avez été,	<i>you have been.</i>
Ils sont,	<i>they are.</i>	Ils ont été,	<i>they have been.</i>
J'étais,	IMPERFECT. <i>I was.</i>	J'avais été,	PLUPERFECT. <i>I had been.</i>
Tu étais,	<i>thou wast.</i>	Tu avais été,	<i>thou hadst been.</i>
Il était,	<i>he was.</i>	Il avait été,	<i>he had been.</i>
Nous étions,	<i>we were.</i>	Nous avions été,	<i>we had been.</i>
Vous étiez,	<i>you were.</i>	Vous aviez été,	<i>you had been.</i>
Ils étaient,	<i>they were.</i>	Ils avaient été,	<i>they had been.</i>
Je fus,	PAST DEFINITE. <i>I was.</i>	J'eus été,	PAST ANTERIOR. <i>I had been.</i>
Tu fus,	<i>thou wast.</i>	Tu eus été,	<i>thou hadst been.</i>
Il fut,	<i>he was.</i>	Il eut été,	<i>he had been.</i>
Nous fûmes,	<i>we were.</i>	Nous eûmes été,	<i>we had been.</i>
Vous fûtes,	<i>you were.</i>	Vous eûtes été,	<i>you had been.</i>
Ils furent,	<i>they were.</i>	Ils eurent été,	<i>they had been.</i>
Je serai,	FUTURE. <i>I shall be.</i>	J'aurai été,	FUTURE PERFECT. <i>I shall have been.</i>
Tu seras,	<i>thou wilt be.</i>	Tu auras été,	<i>thou shalt have been.</i>
Il sera,	<i>he will be.</i>	Il aura été,	<i>he will have been.</i>
Nous serons,	<i>we shall be.</i>	Nous aurons été,	<i>we shall have been.</i>
Vous serez,	<i>you will be.</i>	Vous aurez été,	<i>you will have been.</i>
Ils seront,	<i>they will be.</i>	Ils auront été,	<i>they will have been.</i>
Je serais,	CONDITIONAL. <i>I should be.</i>	J'aurais été,	PAST CONDITIONAL. <i>I should have been.</i>
Tu serais,	<i>thou wouldest be.</i>	Tu aurais été,	<i>thou wouldest have been.</i>
Il serait,	<i>he would be.</i>	Il aurait été,	<i>he would have been.</i>
Nous serions,	<i>we should be.</i>	Nous aurions été,	<i>we should have been.</i>
Vous seriez,	<i>you would be.</i>	Vous auriez été,	<i>you would have been.</i>
Ils seraient,	<i>they would be.</i>	Ils auraient été,	<i>they would have been.</i>
IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
Sois,	<i>be (thou).</i>	Soyez,	<i>be (you).</i>
Qu'il soit,	<i>let him be.</i>	Qu'ils soient,	<i>let them be.</i>
Soyez,	<i>let us be.</i>		
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
Que je sois,	PRESENT. <i>that I may be.</i>	Que j'aie été,	PERFECT. <i>that I may have been.</i>
Que tu sois,	<i>that thou mayest be.</i>	Que tu aies été,	<i>that thou mayest have been.</i>
Qu'il soit,	<i>that he may be.</i>	Qu'il ait été,	<i>that he may have been.</i>
Que nous soyons,	<i>that we may be.</i>	Que nous ayons été,	<i>that we may have been.</i>
Que vous soyez,	<i>that you may be.</i>	Que vous ayez été,	<i>that you may have been.</i>
Qu'ils soient,	<i>that they may be.</i>	Qu'ils aient été,	<i>that they may have been.</i>
Que je fusse,	IMPERFECT. <i>that I might be.</i>	Que j'eusse été,	PLUPERFECT. <i>that I might have been.</i>
Que tu fusses,	<i>that thou mightest be.</i>	Que tu eusses été,	<i>that thou mightest have been.</i>
Qu'il fût,	<i>that he might be.</i>	Qu'il eût été,	<i>that he might have been.</i>
Que nous fussions,	<i>that we might be.</i>	Que nous eussions été,	<i>that we might have been.</i>
Que vous fussiez,	<i>that you might be.</i>	Que vous eussiez été,	<i>that you might have been.</i>
Qu'ils fussent,	<i>that they might be.</i>	Qu'ils eussent été,	<i>that they might have been.</i>

FIRST CONJUGATION—IN *ER*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
Parler,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>to speak.</i>	Avoir parlé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>to have spoken.</i>
PARTICIPLES.			
Parlant,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>speaking.</i>	Ayant parlé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>having spoken.</i>
Parlé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>spoken.</i>		
INDICATIVE MOOD.			
Je parle, Tu parles, Il parle, Nous parlons, Vous parlez, Ils parlent,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>I speak. thou speakest. he speaks. we speak. you speak. they speak.</i>	J'ai parlé, Tu as parlé, Il a parlé, Nous avons parlé, Vous avez parlé, Ils ont parlé,	<b>PAST INDEFINITE.</b> <i>I have spoken. thou hast spoken. he has spoken. we have spoken. you have spoken. they have spoken.</i>
Je parlais, Tu parlais, Il parlait, Nous parlions, Vous parliez, Ils parlaient,	<b>IMPERFECT.</b> <i>I was speaking. thou wast speaking. he was speaking. we were speaking. you were speaking. they were speaking.</i>	J'avais parlé, Tu avais parlé, Il avait parlé, Nous avions parlé, Vous aviez parlé, Ils avaient parlé,	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b> <i>I had spoken. thou hadst spoken. he had spoken. we had spoken. you had spoken. they had spoken.</i>
Je parlerai, Tu parleras, Il parlera, Nous parlerons, Vous parlerez, Ils parleront,	<b>PAST DEFINITE.</b> <i>I spoke. thou speakest. he spoke. we spoke. you spoke. they spoke.</i>	J'eus parlé, Tu eus parlé, Il eut parlé, Nous eûmes parlé, Vous eûtes parlé, Ils eurent parlé,	<b>PAST ANTERIOR.</b> <i>I had spoken. thou hadst spoken. he had spoken. we had spoken. you had spoken. they had spoken.</i>
Je parlerai, Tu parleras, Il parlera, Nous parlerons, Vous parlerez, Ils parleront,	<b>FUTURE.</b> <i>I shall speak. thou wilt speak. he will speak. we shall speak. you will speak. they will speak.</i>	J'aurai parlé, Tu auras parlé, Il aura parlé, Nous aurons parlé, Vous aurez parlé, Ils auront parlé,	<b>FUTURE PERFECT.</b> <i>I shall have spoken. thou wilt have spoken. he will have spoken. we shall have spoken. you will have spoken. they will have spoken.</i>
Je parlerais, Tu parlerais, Il parlerait, Nous parlerions, Vous parleriez, Ils parleraient,	<b>CONDITIONAL.</b> <i>I should speak. thou wouldst speak. he would speak. we should speak. you would speak. they would speak.</i>	J'aurais parlé, Tu aurais parlé, Il aurait parlé, Nous aurions parlé, Vous auriez parlé, Ils auraient parlé,	<b>PAST CONDITIONAL.</b> <i>I should have spoken. thou wouldst have spoken. he would have spoken. we should have spoken. you would have spoken. they would have spoken.</i>
IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
Parle, Qu'il parle, Parlons,	<i>speak (thou). let him speak. let us speak.</i>	Parlez, Qu'ils parlent,	<i>speak (you). let them speak.</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
Que je parle, Que tu parles, Qu'il parle, Que nous parlions, Que vous parliez, Qu'ils parlent,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>that I may speak. that thou mayest speak. that he may speak. that we may speak. that you may speak. that they may speak.</i>	Que j'aie parlé, Que tu aies parlé, Qu'il ait parlé, Que nous ayons parlé, Que vous ayez parlé, Qu'ils aient parlé,	<b>PERFECT.</b> <i>that I may have spoken. that thou mayest have spoken. that he may have spoken. that we may have spoken. that you may have spoken. that they may have spoken.</i>
Que je parlasse, Que tu parlasses, Qu'il parlât, Que nous parlâssions, Que vous parlassiez, Qu'ils parlâssent,	<b>IMPERFECT.</b> <i>that I might speak. that thou mightest speak. that he might speak. that we might speak. that you might speak. that they might speak.</i>	Que j'eusse parlé, Que tu eusses parlé, Qu'il eût parlé, Que nous eussions parlé, Que vous eussiez parlé, Qu'ils eussent parlé,	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b> <i>that I might have spoken. that thou mightest have spoken. that he might have spoken. that we might have spoken. that you might have spoken. that they might have spoken.</i>

CONJUGATION OF *PARLER*, TO SPEAK, NEGATIVELY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Ne pas parler,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>not to speak.</i>	N'avoir pas parlé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>not to have spoken.</i>
----------------	---	--------------------	--

PARTICIPLES.

Ne parlant pas,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>not speaking.</i>	N'ayant pas parlé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>not having spoken.</i>
Pas parlé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>not spoken.</i>		

INDICATIVE MOOD.

<b>PRESENT.</b>	<b>PAST INDEFINITE.</b>
Je ne parle pas, <i>I do not speak.</i>	Je n'ai pas parlé, <i>I have not spoken.</i>
Tu ne parles pas, <i>thou dost not speak.</i>	Tu n'as pas parlé, <i>thou hast not spoken.</i>
Il ne parle pas, <i>he does not speak.</i>	Il n'a pas parlé, <i>he has not spoken.</i>
Nous ne parlons pas, <i>we do not speak.</i>	Nous n'avons pas parlé, <i>we have not spoken.</i>
Vous ne parlez pas, <i>you do not speak.</i>	Vous n'avez pas parlé, <i>you have not spoken.</i>
Ils ne parlent pas, <i>they do not speak.</i>	Ils n'ont pas parlé, <i>they have not spoken.</i>

<b>IMPERFECT.</b>	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b>
Je ne parlais pas, <i>I did not speak.</i>	Je n'avais pas parlé, <i>I had not spoken.</i>
Tu ne parlais pas, <i>thou didst not speak.</i>	Tu n'avais pas parlé, <i>thou hadst not spoken.</i>
Il ne parlait pas, <i>he did not speak.</i>	Il n'avait pas parlé, <i>he had not spoken.</i>
Nous ne parlions pas, <i>we did not speak.</i>	Nous n'avions pas parlé, <i>we had not spoken.</i>
Vous ne parliez pas, <i>you did not speak.</i>	Vous n'aviez pas parlé, <i>you had not spoken.</i>
Ils ne parlaient pas, <i>they did not speak.</i>	Ils n'avaient pas parlé, <i>they had not spoken.</i>

<b>PAST DEFINITE.</b>	<b>PAST ANTERIOR.</b>
Je ne parlais pas, <i>I did not speak.</i>	Je n'eus pas parlé, <i>I had not spoken.</i>
Tu ne parlais pas, <i>thou didst not speak.</i>	Tu n'eus pas parlé, <i>thou hadst not spoken.</i>
Il ne parla pas, <i>he did not speak.</i>	Il n'eut pas parlé, <i>he had not spoken.</i>
Nous ne parlâmes pas, <i>we did not speak.</i>	Nous n'eûmes pas parlé, <i>we had not spoken.</i>
Vous ne parlatés pas, <i>you did not speak.</i>	Vous n'eûtes pas parlé, <i>you had not spoken.</i>
Ils ne parlèrent pas, <i>they did not speak.</i>	Ils n'eurent pas parlé, <i>they had not spoken.</i>

<b>FUTURE.</b>	<b>FUTURE PERFECT.</b>
Je ne parlerai pas, <i>I shall not speak.</i>	Je n'aurai pas parlé, <i>I shall not</i>
Tu ne parleras pas, <i>thou wilt not speak.</i>	Tu n'auras pas parlé, <i>thou wilt not</i>
Il ne parlera pas, <i>he will not speak.</i>	Il n'aura pas parlé, <i>he will not</i>
Nous ne parlerons pas, <i>we shall not speak.</i>	Nous n'aurons pas parlé, <i>we shall not</i>
Vous ne parlerez pas, <i>you will not speak.</i>	Vous n'aurez pas parlé, <i>you will not</i>
Ils ne parleront pas, <i>they will not speak.</i>	Ils n'auront pas parlé, <i>they will not</i>

<b>CONDITIONAL.</b>	<b>PAST CONDITIONAL.</b>
Je ne parlerais pas, <i>I should not speak.</i>	Je n'aurais pas parlé, <i>I should not</i>
Tu ne parlerais pas, <i>thou wouldst not speak.</i>	Tu n'aurais pas parlé, <i>thou wouldst not</i>
Il ne parlerait pas, <i>he would not speak.</i>	Il n'aurait pas parlé, <i>he would not</i>
Nous ne parlerions pas, <i>we should not speak.</i>	Nous n'aurions pas parlé, <i>we should not</i>
Vous ne parleriez pas, <i>you would not speak.</i>	Vous n'auriez pas parlé, <i>you would not</i>
Ils ne parleraient pas, <i>they would not speak.</i>	Ils n'auraient pas parlé, <i>they would not</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne parle pas, <i>speak (thou) not.</i>	Ne parlez pas, <i>speak (you) not.</i>
Qu'il ne parle pas, <i>let him not speak.</i>	Qu'ils ne parlent pas, <i>let them not speak.</i>
Ne parlons pas, <i>let us not speak.</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<b>PRESENT.</b>	<b>PERFECT.</b>
Que je ne parle pas, <i>that I may</i>	Que je n'aie pas parlé, <i>that I may</i>
Que tu ne parles pas, <i>that thou mayest</i>	Que tu n'aies pas parlé, <i>that thou mayest</i>
Qu'il ne parle pas, <i>that he may</i>	Qu'il n'ait pas parlé, <i>that he may</i>
Que nous ne parlions pas, <i>that we may</i>	Que nous n'ayons pas parlé, <i>that we may</i>
Que vous ne parliez pas, <i>that you may</i>	Que vous n'ayiez pas parlé, <i>that you may</i>
Qu'ils ne parlent pas, <i>that they may</i>	Qu'ils n'aient pas parlé, <i>that they may</i>

<b>IMPERFECT.</b>	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b>
Que je ne parlasse pas, <i>that I might</i>	Que je n'eusse pas parlé, <i>that I might</i>
Que tu ne parlasses pas, <i>that thou mightest</i>	Que tu n'eusses pas parlé, <i>that thou mightest</i>
Qu'il ne parlât pas, <i>that he might</i>	Qu'il n'eût pas parlé, <i>that he might</i>
Que nous ne parlâssions pas, <i>that we might</i>	Que nous n'eussions pas parlé, <i>that we might</i>
Que vous ne parlâssiez pas, <i>that you might</i>	Que vous n'eussiez pas parlé, <i>that you might</i>
Qu'ils ne parlâssent pas, <i>that they might</i>	Qu'ils n'eussent pas parlé, <i>that they might</i>

CONJUGATION OF *PARLER*, TO SPEAK, INTERROGATIVELY.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.			PAST INDEFINITE.		
Parlé-je ?	<i>do I speak ?</i>	Al-je parlé ?	<i>have I spoken ?</i>		
Parles-tu ?	<i>dost thou speak ?</i>	As-tu parlé ?	<i>hast thou spoken ?</i>		
Parle-t-il ?	<i>does he speak ?</i>	A-t-il parlé ?	<i>has he spoken ?</i>		
Parlons-nous ?	<i>do we speak ?</i>	Avons-nous parlé ?	<i>have we spoken ?</i>		
Parlez-vous ?	<i>do you speak ?</i>	Avez-vous parlé ?	<i>have you spoken ?</i>		
Parlent-ils ?	<i>do they speak ?</i>	Ont-ils parlé ?	<i>have they spoken ?</i>		
IMPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT.		
Parlais-je ?	<i>was I speaking ?</i>	Avais-je parlé ?	<i>had I spoken ?</i>		
Parlais-tu ?	<i>wasst thou speaking ?</i>	Avais-tu parlé ?	<i>hadst thou spoken ?</i>		
Parlait-il ?	<i>was he speaking ?</i>	Avait-il parlé ?	<i>had he spoken ?</i>		
Parlions-nous ?	<i>were we speaking ?</i>	Avions-nous parlé ?	<i>had we spoken ?</i>		
Parliez-vous ?	<i>were you speaking ?</i>	Aviez-vous parlé ?	<i>had you spoken ?</i>		
Parlaient-ils ?	<i>were they speaking ?</i>	Avaient-ils parlé ?	<i>had they spoken ?</i>		
PAST DEFINITE.			PAST ANTERIOR.		
Parlai-je ?	<i>did I speak ?</i>	Eus-je parlé ?	<i>had I spoken ?</i>		
Parlas-tu ?	<i>didst thou speak ?</i>	Eus-tu parlé ?	<i>hadst thou spoken ?</i>		
Parla-t-il ?	<i>did he speak ?</i>	Eut-il parlé ?	<i>had he spoken ?</i>		
Parlâmes-nous ?	<i>did we speak ?</i>	Eûmes-nous parlé ?	<i>had we spoken ?</i>		
Parlâtes-vous ?	<i>did you speak ?</i>	Eûtes-vous parlé ?	<i>had you spoken ?</i>		
Parlèrent-ils ?	<i>did they speak ?</i>	Eurent-ils parlé ?	<i>had they spoken ?</i>		
FUTURE.			FUTURE PERFECT.		
Parlerai-je ?	<i>shall I speak ?</i>	Aurai-je parlé ?	<i>shall I have spoken ?</i>		
Parleras-tu ?	<i>wilt thou speak ?</i>	Anras-tu parlé ?	<i>wilt thou have spoken ?</i>		
Parlera-t-il ?	<i>will he speak ?</i>	Aura-t-il parlé ?	<i>will he have spoken ?</i>		
Parlerons-nous ?	<i>shall we speak ?</i>	Aurons-nous parlé ?	<i>shall we have spoken ?</i>		
Parlerez-vous ?	<i>will you speak ?</i>	Aurez-vous parlé ?	<i>will you have spoken ?</i>		
Parleront-ils ?	<i>will they speak ?</i>	Auront-ils parlé ?	<i>will they have spoken ?</i>		
CONDITIONAL.			PAST CONDITIONAL.		
Parlerais-je ?	<i>should I speak ?</i>	Aurais-je parlé ?	<i>should I have spoken ?</i>		
Parlerais-tu ?	<i>wouldst thou speak ?</i>	Aurais-tu parlé ?	<i>wouldst thou have spoken ?</i>		
Parlerait-il ?	<i>would he speak ?</i>	Aurait-il parlé ?	<i>would he have spoken ?</i>		
Parlerions-nous ?	<i>should we speak ?</i>	Aurions-nous parlé ?	<i>should we have spoken ?</i>		
Parleriez-vous ?	<i>would you speak ?</i>	Auriez-vous parlé ?	<i>would you have spoken ?</i>		
Parleraient-ils ?	<i>would they speak ?</i>	Aurient-ils parlé ?	<i>would they have spoken ?</i>		

CONJUGATION OF *PARLER* NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Ne parlai-je pas ?	<i>do I not speak ?</i>	N'ai-je pas parlé ?	<i>have I not spoken ?</i>
Ne parles-tu pas ?	<i>dost thou not speak ?</i>	N'as-tu pas parlé ?	<i>hast thou not spoken ?</i>
Ne parle-t-il pas ?	<i>does he not speak ?</i>	N'a-t-il pas parlé ?	<i>has he not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlons-nous pas ?	<i>do we not speak ?</i>	N'avons-nous pas parlé ?	<i>have we not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlez-vous pas ?	<i>do you not speak ?</i>	N'avez-vous pas parlé ?	<i>have you not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlent-ils pas ?	<i>do they not speak ?</i>	N'ont-ils pas parlé ?	<i>have they not spoken ?</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Ne parlais-je pas ?	<i>was I not speaking ?</i>	N'avais-je pas parlé ?	<i>had I not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlais-tu pas ?	<i>wast thou not speaking ?</i>	N'avais-tu pas parlé ?	<i>hadst thou not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlait-il pas ?	<i>was he not speaking ?</i>	N'avait-il pas parlé ?	<i>had he not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlions-nous pas ?	<i>were we not speaking ?</i>	N'avions-nous pas parlé ?	<i>had we not spoken ?</i>
Ne parliez-vous pas ?	<i>were you not speaking ?</i>	N'aviez-vous pas parlé ?	<i>had you not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlaient-ils pas ?	<i>were they not speaking ?</i>	N'avaient-ils pas parlé ?	<i>had they not spoken ?</i>
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Ne parlai-je pas ?	<i>did I not speak ?</i>	N'eus-je pas parlé ?	<i>had I not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlais-tu pas ?	<i>didst thou not speak ?</i>	N'eus-tu pas parlé ?	<i>hadst thou not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlait-il pas ?	<i>did he not speak ?</i>	N'eut-il pas parlé ?	<i>had he not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlâmes-nous pas ?	<i>did we not speak ?</i>	N'eûmes-nous pas parlé ?	<i>had we not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlâtes-vous pas ?	<i>did you not speak ?</i>	N'eûtes-vous pas parlé ?	<i>had you not spoken ?</i>
Ne parlaient-ils pas ?	<i>did they not speak ?</i>	N'eurent-ils pas parlé ?	<i>had they not spoken ?</i>
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Ne parlerai-je pas ?	<i>shall I not speak ?</i>	N'aurai-je pas parlé ?	<i>shall I not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parleras-tu pas ?	<i>wilt thou not speak ?</i>	N'auras-tu pas parlé ?	<i>wilt thou not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parlera-t-il pas ?	<i>will he not speak ?</i>	N'aura-t-il pas parlé ?	<i>will he not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parlerons-nous pas ?	<i>shall we not speak ?</i>	N'aurons-nous pas parlé ?	<i>shall we not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parlerez-vous pas ?	<i>will you not speak ?</i>	N'aurons-vous pas parlé ?	<i>will you not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parleront-ils pas ?	<i>will they not speak ?</i>	N'auront-ils pas parlé ?	<i>will they not have spoken ?</i>
CONDITIONAL.		PAST CONDITIONAL.	
Ne parlerais-je pas ?	<i>should I not speak ?</i>	N'aurais-je pas parlé ?	<i>should I not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parlerais-tu pas ?	<i>wouldst thou not speak ?</i>	N'aurais-tu pas parlé ?	<i>wouldst thou not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parlerait-il pas ?	<i>would he not speak ?</i>	N'aurait-il pas parlé ?	<i>would he not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parlerions-nous pas ?	<i>should we not speak ?</i>	N'aurions-nous pas parlé ?	<i>should we not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parleriez-vous pas ?	<i>would you not speak ?</i>	N'auriez-vous pas parlé ?	<i>would you not have spoken ?</i>
Ne parleraient-ils pas ?	<i>would they not speak ?</i>	N'auraient-ils pas parlé ?	<i>would they not have spoken ?</i>

SECOND CONJUGATION—IN *IR*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>to finish.</i>	<b>PAST.</b>	<i>to have finished.</i>
<b>Finir,</b>	<i>Avoir fini,</i>		

PARTICIPLES.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>finishing.</i>	<b>PAST.</b>	<i>having finished.</i>
<b>Finissant,</b>	<i>Ayant fini,</i>		
<b>Fin,</b>	<i>finished.</i>		

INDICATIVE MOOD.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>I finish.</i>	<b>PAST INDEFINITE.</b>	<i>I have finished.</i>
<b>Je finis,</b>	<i>Tu as fini,</i>		<i>thou hast finished.</i>
<b>Tu finis,</b>	<i>Il a fini,</i>		<i>he has finished.</i>
<b>Il finit,</b>	<i>Nous avons fini,</i>		<i>we have finished.</i>
<b>Nous finissons,</b>	<i>Vous avez fini,</i>		<i>you have finished.</i>
<b>Vous finissez,</b>	<i>Ils ont fini,</i>		<i>they have finished.</i>
<b>Ils finissent,</b>			

<b>IMPERFECT.</b>	<i>I was finishing.</i>	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b>	<i>I had finished.</i>
<b>Je finissais,</b>	<i>Tu avais fini,</i>		<i>thou hadst finished.</i>
<b>Tu finissais,</b>	<i>Il avait fini,</i>		<i>he had finished.</i>
<b>Il finissait,</b>	<i>Nous avions fini,</i>		<i>we had finished.</i>
<b>Nous finissions,</b>	<i>Vous aviez fini,</i>		<i>you had finished.</i>
<b>Vous finissiez,</b>	<i>Ils avaient fini,</i>		<i>they had finished.</i>
<b>Ils finissaient,</b>			

<b>PAST DEFINITE.</b>	<i>I finished.</i>	<b>PAST ANTERIOR.</b>	<i>I had finished.</i>
<b>Je finis,</b>	<i>Tu eus fini,</i>		<i>thou hadst finished.</i>
<b>Tu finis,</b>	<i>Il eut fini,</i>		<i>he had finished.</i>
<b>Il finit,</b>	<i>Nous eûmes fini,</i>		<i>we had finished.</i>
<b>Nous finîmes,</b>	<i>Vous eûtes fini,</i>		<i>you had finished.</i>
<b>Vous finîtes,</b>	<i>Ils eurent fini,</i>		<i>they had finished.</i>
<b>Ils finirent,</b>			

<b>FUTURE.</b>	<i>I shall finish.</i>	<b>FUTURE PERFECT.</b>	<i>I shall have finished.</i>
<b>Je finirai,</b>	<i>Tu auras fini,</i>		<i>thou wilt have finished.</i>
<b>Tu finiras,</b>	<i>Il aura fini,</i>		<i>he will have finished.</i>
<b>Il finira,</b>	<i>Nous aurons fini,</i>		<i>we shall have finished.</i>
<b>Nous finirons,</b>	<i>Vous aurez fini,</i>		<i>you will have finished.</i>
<b>Vous finirez,</b>	<i>Ils auront fini,</i>		<i>they will have finished.</i>
<b>Ils finiront,</b>			

<b>CONDITIONAL.</b>	<i>I should finish.</i>	<b>PAST CONDITIONAL.</b>	<i>I should have finished.</i>
<b>Je finirais,</b>	<i>Tu aurais fini,</i>		<i>thou wouldst have finished.</i>
<b>Tu finirais,</b>	<i>Il aurait fini,</i>		<i>he would have finished.</i>
<b>Il finirait,</b>	<i>Nous aurions fini,</i>		<i>we should have finished.</i>
<b>Nous finirions,</b>	<i>Vous auriez fini,</i>		<i>you would have finished.</i>
<b>Vous finiriez,</b>	<i>Ils auraient fini,</i>		<i>they would have finished.</i>
<b>Ils finiraient,</b>			

IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
<b>Finis,</b>	<i>Finish (thou).</i>	<b>Finissez,</b>	<i>Finish (you).</i>
<b>Qu'il finisse,</b>	<i>let him finish.</i>	<b>Qu'ils finissent,</b>	<i>let them finish.</i>
<b>Finissons,</b>	<i>let us finish.</i>		

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>that I may finish.</i>	<b>PERFECT.</b>	<i>that I may have finished.</i>
<b>Que je finisse,</b>	<i>that thou mayest finish.</i>	<b>Que j'aie fini,</b>	<i>that thou mayest have finished.</i>
<b>Que tu finisses,</b>	<i>that he may finish.</i>	<b>Qu'il ait fini,</b>	<i>that he may have finished.</i>
<b>Qu'il finisse,</b>	<i>that we may finish.</i>	<b>Que nous ayons fini,</b>	<i>that we may have finished.</i>
<b>Que nous finissions,</b>	<i>that you may finish.</i>	<b>Que vous ayez fini,</b>	<i>that you may have finished.</i>
<b>Que vous finissiez,</b>	<i>that they may finish.</i>	<b>Qu'ils aient fini,</b>	<i>that they may have finished.</i>
<b>Qu'ils finissent,</b>			

<b>IMPERFECT.</b>	<i>that I might finish.</i>	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b>	<i>that I might have finished.</i>
<b>Que je finisse,</b>	<i>that thou mightest finish.</i>	<b>Que j'eusse fini,</b>	<i>that thou mightest have finished.</i>
<b>Que tu finisses,</b>	<i>that he might finish.</i>	<b>Qu'il eût fini,</b>	<i>that he might have finished.</i>
<b>Qu'il finit,</b>	<i>that we might finish.</i>	<b>Que nous eussions fini,</b>	<i>that we might have finished.</i>
<b>Que nous finissions,</b>	<i>that you might finish.</i>	<b>Que vous eussiez fini,</b>	<i>that you might have finished.</i>
<b>Que vous finissiez,</b>	<i>that they might finish.</i>	<b>Qu'ils eussent fini,</b>	<i>that they might have finished.</i>
<b>Qu'ils finissent,</b>			

THIRD CONJUGATION—IN *OIR*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Recevoir,	PRESENT.	to receive.	Avoir reçu,	PAST.	to have received.
-----------	----------	-------------	-------------	-------	-------------------

PARTICIPLES.

Recevant,	PRESENT.	receiving.	Ayant reçu,	PAST.	having received.
Reçu,	PAST.	received.			

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Je reçois,	PRESENT.	<i>I receive.</i>	J'ai reçu,	PAST INDEFINITE.	<i>I have received.</i>
Tu reçois,		<i>thou receivest.</i>	Tu as reçu,		<i>thou hast received.</i>
Il reçoit,		<i>he receives.</i>	Il a reçu,		<i>he has received.</i>
Nous recevons,		<i>we receive.</i>	Nous avons reçu,		<i>we have received.</i>
Vous recevez,		<i>you receive.</i>	Vous avez reçu,		<i>you have received.</i>
Ils reçoivent,		<i>they receive.</i>	Ils ont reçu,		<i>they have received.</i>

Je recevais,	IMPERFECT.	<i>I was receiving.</i>	J'avais reçu,	PLUPERFECT.	<i>I had received.</i>
Tu recevais,		<i>thou wast receiving.</i>	Tu avais reçu,		<i>thou hadst received.</i>
Il recevait,		<i>he was receiving.</i>	Il avait reçu,		<i>he had received.</i>
Nous recevions,		<i>we were receiving.</i>	Nous avions reçu,		<i>we had received.</i>
Vous receviez,		<i>you were receiving.</i>	Vous aviez reçu,		<i>you had received.</i>
Ils recevaient,		<i>they were receiving.</i>	Ils avaient reçu,		<i>they had received.</i>

Je reçus,	PAST DEFINITE.	<i>I received.</i>	J'eus reçu,	PAST ANTERIOR.	<i>I had received.</i>
Tu reçus,		<i>thou receivest.</i>	Tu eus reçu,		<i>thou hadst received.</i>
Il reçut,		<i>he received.</i>	Il eut reçu,		<i>he had received.</i>
Nous reçûmes,		<i>we received.</i>	Nous eûmes reçu,		<i>we had received.</i>
Vous reçûtes,		<i>you received.</i>	Vous eûtes reçu,		<i>you had received.</i>
Ils reçurent,		<i>they received.</i>	Ils eurent reçu,		<i>they had received.</i>

Je recevrai,	FUTURE.	<i>I shall receive.</i>	J'aurai reçu,	FUTURE PERFECT.	<i>I shall have received.</i>
Tu recevras,		<i>thou wilt receive.</i>	Tu auras reçu,		<i>thou wilt have received.</i>
Il recevra,		<i>he will receive.</i>	Il aura reçu,		<i>he will have received.</i>
Nous recevrons,		<i>we shall receive.</i>	Nous aurons reçu,		<i>we shall have received.</i>
Vous recevrez,		<i>you will receive.</i>	Vous aurez reçu,		<i>you will have received.</i>
Ils recevront,		<i>they will receive.</i>	Ils auront reçu,		<i>they will have received.</i>

Je recevrais,	CONDITIONAL.	<i>I should receive.</i>	J'aurais reçu,	PAST CONDITIONAL.	<i>I should have received.</i>
Tu recevrais,		<i>thou wouldst receive.</i>	Tu aurais reçu,		<i>thou wouldst have received.</i>
Il recevrait,		<i>he would receive.</i>	Il aurait reçu,		<i>he would have received.</i>
Nous recevriions,		<i>we should receive.</i>	Nous aurions reçu,		<i>we should have received.</i>
Vous recevriez,		<i>you would receive.</i>	Vous auriez reçu,		<i>you would have received.</i>
Ils recevraient,		<i>they would receive.</i>	Ils auraient reçu,		<i>they would have received.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Reçois,	receive (thou).	Recevez,	receive (you).
Qu'il reçoive,	let him receive.	Qu'ils reçoivent,	let them receive.
Recevons,	let us receive.		

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Que je reçoive,	PRESENT.	<i>that I may receive.</i>	Que j'aie reçu,	PERFECT.	<i>that I may</i>
Que tu reçoives,		<i>that thou mayest receive.</i>	Que tu aies reçu,		<i>that thou mayest</i>
Qu'il reçoive,		<i>that he may receive.</i>	Qu'il ait reçu,		<i>that he may</i>
Que nous recevions,		<i>that we may receive.</i>	Que nous ayons reçu,		<i>that we may</i>
Que vous receviez,		<i>that you may receive.</i>	Que vous ayez reçu,		<i>that you may</i>
Qu'ils reçoivent,		<i>that they may receive.</i>	Qu'ils aient reçu,		<i>that they may</i>

Que je reçusse,	IMPERFECT.	<i>that I might receive.</i>	Que j'eusse reçu,	PLUPERFECT.	<i>that I might</i>
Que tu reçusses,		<i>that thou mightest receive.</i>	Que tu eusses reçu,		<i>that thou mightest</i>
Qu'il reçût,		<i>that he might receive.</i>	Qu'il eût reçu,		<i>that he might</i>
Que nous reçussions,		<i>that we might receive.</i>	Que nous eussions reçu,		<i>that we might</i>
Que vous reçussiez,		<i>that you might receive.</i>	Que vous eussiez reçu,		<i>that you might</i>
Qu'ils reçussent,		<i>that they might receive.</i>	Qu'ils eussent reçu,		<i>that they might</i>



FOURTH CONJUGATION—IN *RE*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>to sell.</i>	<b>PAST.</b>	<i>to have sold.</i>
Vendre,		Avoir vendu,	
PARTICIPLES.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>selling.</i>	<b>PAST.</b>	<i>having sold.</i>
Vendant,		Ayant vendu,	
<b>PAST.</b>	<i>sold.</i>		
Vendu,			
INDICATIVE MOOD.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>I sell.</i>	<b>PAST INDEFINITE.</b>	<i>I have sold.</i>
Je vends,		J'ai vendu,	
Tu vends,	<i>thou sellest.</i>	Tu as vendu,	<i>thou hast sold.</i>
Il vend,	<i>he sells.</i>	Il a vendu,	<i>he has sold.</i>
Nous vendons,	<i>we sell.</i>	Nous avons vendu,	<i>we have sold.</i>
Vous vendez,	<i>you sell.</i>	Vous avez vendu,	<i>you have sold.</i>
Ils vendent,	<i>they sell.</i>	Ils ont vendu,	<i>they have sold.</i>
<b>IMPERFECT.</b>	<i>I was selling.</i>	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b>	<i>I had sold.</i>
Je vendais,		J'avais vendu,	
Tu vendais,	<i>thou wast selling.</i>	Tu avais vendu,	<i>thou hadst sold.</i>
Il vendait,	<i>he was selling.</i>	Il avait vendu,	<i>he had sold.</i>
Nous vendions,	<i>we were selling.</i>	Nous avions vendu,	<i>we had sold.</i>
Vous vendiez,	<i>you were selling.</i>	Vous aviez vendu,	<i>you had sold.</i>
Ils vendaient,	<i>they were selling.</i>	Ils avaient vendu,	<i>they had sold.</i>
<b>PAST DEFINITE.</b>	<i>I sold.</i>	<b>PAST ANTERIOR.</b>	<i>I had sold.</i>
Je vendis,		J'eus vendu,	
Tu vendis,	<i>thou soldest.</i>	Tu eus vendu,	<i>thou hadst sold.</i>
Il vendit,	<i>he sold.</i>	Il eut vendu,	<i>he had sold.</i>
Nous vendîmes,	<i>we sold.</i>	Nous eûmes vendu,	<i>we had sold.</i>
Vous vendîtes,	<i>you sold.</i>	Vous eûtes vendu,	<i>you had sold.</i>
Ils vendirent,	<i>they sold.</i>	Ils eurent vendu,	<i>they had sold.</i>
<b>FUTURE.</b>	<i>I shall sell.</i>	<b>FUTURE PERFECT.</b>	<i>I shall have sold.</i>
Je vendrai,		J'aurai vendu,	
Tu vendras,	<i>thou wilt sell.</i>	Tu auras vendu,	<i>thou wilt have sold.</i>
Il vendra,	<i>he will sell.</i>	Il aura vendu,	<i>he will have sold.</i>
Nous vendrons,	<i>we shall sell.</i>	Nous aurons vendu,	<i>we shall have sold.</i>
Vous vendrez,	<i>you will sell.</i>	Vous aurez vendu,	<i>you will have sold.</i>
Ils vendront,	<i>they will sell.</i>	Ils auront vendu,	<i>they will have sold.</i>
<b>CONDITIONAL.</b>	<i>I should sell.</i>	<b>PAST CONDITIONAL.</b>	<i>I should have sold.</i>
Je vendrais,		J'aurais vendu,	
Tu vendrais,	<i>thou wouldst sell.</i>	Tu aurais vendu,	<i>thou wouldst have sold.</i>
Il vendrait,	<i>he would sell.</i>	Il aurait vendu,	<i>he would have sold.</i>
Nous vendrions,	<i>we should sell.</i>	Nous aurions vendu,	<i>we should have sold.</i>
Vous vendriez,	<i>you would sell.</i>	Vous auriez vendu,	<i>you would have sold.</i>
Ils vendraient,	<i>they would sell.</i>	Ils auraient vendu,	<i>they would have sold.</i>
IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
Vends,	<i>sell (thou).</i>	Vendez,	<i>sell (you).</i>
Qu'il vende,	<i>let him sell.</i>	Qu'ils vendent,	<i>let them sell.</i>
Vendons,	<i>let us sell.</i>		
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
<b>PRESENT.</b>	<i>that I may sell.</i>	<b>PERFECT.</b>	<i>that I may have sold.</i>
Que je vende,		Que j'aie vendu,	
Que tu vendes,	<i>that thou mayest sell.</i>	Que tu aies vendu,	<i>that thou mayest have sold.</i>
Qu'il vende,	<i>that he may sell.</i>	Qu'il ait vendu,	<i>that he may have sold.</i>
Que nous vendions,	<i>that we may sell.</i>	Que nous ayons vendu,	<i>that we may have sold.</i>
Que vous vendiez,	<i>that you may sell.</i>	Que vous ayez vendu,	<i>that you may have sold.</i>
Qu'ils vendent,	<i>that they may sell.</i>	Qu'ils aient vendu,	<i>that they may have sold.</i>
<b>IMPERFECT.</b>	<i>that I might sell.</i>	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b>	<i>that I might have sold.</i>
Que je vendisse,		Que j'eusse vendu,	
Que tu vendisses,	<i>that thou mightest sell.</i>	Que tu eusses vendu,	<i>that thou mightest have sold.</i>
Qu'il vendît,	<i>that he might sell.</i>	Qu'il eût vendu,	<i>that he might have sold.</i>
Que nous vendissions,	<i>that we might sell.</i>	Que nous eussions vendu,	<i>that we might have sold.</i>
Que vous vendissiez,	<i>that you might sell.</i>	Que vous eussiez vendu,	<i>that you might have sold.</i>
Qu'ils vendissent,	<i>that they might sell.</i>	Qu'ils eussent vendu,	<i>that they might have sold.</i>

CONJUGATION OF A REFLECTED VERB.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
Se lever,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>to rise.</i>	S'être levé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>to have risen.</i>
PARTICIPLES.			
Se levant,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>rising.</i>	S'étant levé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>having risen.</i>
Levé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>risen.</i>		
INDICATIVE MOOD.			
Je me lève,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>I rise.</i>	Je me suis levé,	<b>PAST INDEFINITE.</b> <i>I have risen.</i>
Tu te lèves,	<i>thou risest.</i>	Tu t'es levé,	<i>thou hast risen.</i>
Il se lève,	<i>he rises.</i>	Il s'est levé,	<i>he has risen.</i>
Nous nous levons,	<i>we rise.</i>	Nous nous sommes levés,	<i>we have risen.</i>
Vous vous levez,	<i>you rise.</i>	Vous vous êtes levés,	<i>you have risen.</i>
Ils se lèvent,	<i>they rise.</i>	Ils se sont levés,	<i>they have risen.</i>
Je me levais,	<b>IMPERFECT.</b> <i>I was rising.</i>	Je m'étais levé,	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b> <i>I had risen.</i>
Tu te levais,	<i>thou wast rising.</i>	Tu t'étais levé,	<i>thou hadst risen.</i>
Il se levait,	<i>he was rising.</i>	Il s'était levé,	<i>he had risen.</i>
Nous nous levions,	<i>we were rising.</i>	Nous nous étions levés,	<i>we had risen.</i>
Vous vous leviez,	<i>you were rising.</i>	Vous vous étiez levés,	<i>you had risen.</i>
Ils se levaient,	<i>they were rising.</i>	Ils s'étaient levés,	<i>they had risen.</i>
Je me levai,	<b>PAST DEFINITE.</b> <i>I rose.</i>	Je me fus levé,	<b>PAST ANTERIOR.</b> <i>I had risen.</i>
Tu te levais,	<i>thou roosest.</i>	Tu te fus levé,	<i>thou hadst risen.</i>
Il se leva,	<i>he rose.</i>	Il se fut levé,	<i>he had risen.</i>
Nous nous levâmes,	<i>we rose.</i>	Nous nous fûmes levés,	<i>we had risen.</i>
Vous vous levâtes,	<i>you rose.</i>	Vous vous fûtes levés,	<i>you had risen.</i>
Ils se levèrent,	<i>they rose.</i>	Ils se furent levés,	<i>they had risen.</i>
Je me lèverai,	<b>FUTURE.</b> <i>I shall rise.</i>	Je me serai levé,	<b>FUTURE PERFECT.</b> <i>I shall have risen.</i>
Tu te lèveras,	<i>thou wilt rise.</i>	Tu te seras levé,	<i>thou wilt have risen.</i>
Il se lèvera,	<i>he will rise.</i>	Il se sera levé,	<i>he will have risen.</i>
Nous nous lèverons,	<i>we shall rise.</i>	Nous nous serons levés,	<i>we shall have risen.</i>
Vous vous lèverez,	<i>you will rise.</i>	Vous vous serez levés,	<i>you will have risen.</i>
Ils se lèveront,	<i>they will rise.</i>	Ils se seront levés,	<i>they will have risen.</i>
Je me lèverais,	<b>CONDITIONAL.</b> <i>I should rise.</i>	Je me serais levé,	<b>PAST CONDITIONAL.</b> <i>I should have risen.</i>
Tu te lèverais,	<i>thou wouldst rise.</i>	Tu te serais levé,	<i>thou wouldst have risen.</i>
Il se lèverait,	<i>he would rise.</i>	Il se serait levé,	<i>he would have risen.</i>
Nous nous lèverions,	<i>we should rise.</i>	Nous nous serions levés,	<i>we should have risen.</i>
Vous vous lèveriez,	<i>you would rise.</i>	Vous vous seriez levés,	<i>you would have risen.</i>
Ils se lèveraient,	<i>they would rise.</i>	Ils se seraient levés,	<i>they would have risen.</i>
IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
Lève-toi,	<i>rise (thou).</i>	Lèvez-vous,	<i>rise (you).</i>
Qu'il se lève,	<i>let him rise.</i>	Qu'ils se lèvent,	<i>let them rise.</i>
Lévens-nous,	<i>let us rise.</i>		
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
Que je me lève,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>that I may rise.</i>	Que je me sois levé,	<b>PERFECT.</b> <i>that I may have risen.</i>
Que tu te lèves,	<i>that thou mayest rise.</i>	Que tu te sois levé,	<i>that thou mayest have risen.</i>
Qu'il se lève,	<i>that he may rise.</i>	Qu'il se soit levé,	<i>that he may have risen.</i>
Que nous nous levions,	<i>that we may rise.</i>	Que nous nous soyons levés,	<i>that we may have risen.</i>
Que vous vous leviez,	<i>that you may rise.</i>	Que vous vous soyez levés,	<i>that you may have risen.</i>
Qu'ils se lèvent,	<i>that they may rise.</i>	Qu'ils se soient levés,	<i>that they may have risen.</i>
Que je me levasse,	<b>IMPERFECT.</b> <i>that I might rise.</i>	Que je me fusse levé,	<b>PLUPERFECT.</b> <i>that I might have risen.</i>
Que tu te levasses,	<i>that thou mightest rise.</i>	Que tu te fusses levé,	<i>that thou mightest have risen.</i>
Qu'il se levât,	<i>that he might rise.</i>	Qu'il se fût levé,	<i>that he might have risen.</i>
Que nous nous levassions,	<i>that we might rise.</i>	Que nous nous fussions levés,	<i>that we might have risen.</i>
Que vous vous levassiez,	<i>that you might rise.</i>	Que vous vous fussiez levés,	<i>that you might have risen.</i>
Qu'ils se levassent,	<i>that they might rise.</i>	Qu'ils se fussent levés,	<i>that they might have risen.</i>

CONJUGATION OF ARRIVER, TO ARRIVE, *ÊTRE* AUXILIARY.

	INFINITIVE MOOD.	
	PRESENT.	PAST.
Arriver,	<i>to arrive.</i>	<i>to have arrived.</i>

	PARTICIPLES.	
	PRESENT.	PAST.
Arrivant,	<i>arriving.</i>	<i>having arrived.</i>
Arrivé,	<i>arrived.</i>	

	INDICATIVE MOOD.	
	PRESENT.	PAST INDEFINITE.
J'arrive,	<i>I arrive.</i>	<i>I have arrived.</i>
Tu arrives,	<i>thou arrivest.</i>	<i>thou hadst arrived.</i>
Il arrive,	<i>he arrives.</i>	<i>he has arrived.</i>
Nous arrivons,	<i>we arrive.</i>	<i>we have arrived.</i>
Vous arrivez,	<i>you arrive.</i>	<i>you have arrived.</i>
Ils arrivent,	<i>they arrive.</i>	<i>they have arrived.</i>

	IMPERFECT.	
		PLUPERFECT.
J'arrivais,	<i>I arrived.</i>	<i>I had arrived.</i>
Tu arrivais,	<i>thou arrivest.</i>	<i>thou hadst arrived.</i>
Il arrivait,	<i>he arrived.</i>	<i>he had arrived.</i>
Nous arrivions,	<i>we arrived.</i>	<i>we had arrived.</i>
Vous arriviez,	<i>you arrived.</i>	<i>you had arrived.</i>
Ils arrivaient,	<i>they arrived.</i>	<i>they had arrived.</i>

	PAST DEFINITE.	
		PAST ANTERIOR.
J'arrivai,	<i>I arrived.</i>	<i>I had arrived.</i>
Tu arrivais,	<i>thou arrivest.</i>	<i>thou hadst arrived.</i>
Il arriva,	<i>he arrived.</i>	<i>he had arrived.</i>
Nous arrivâmes,	<i>we arrived.</i>	<i>we had arrived.</i>
Vous arrivâtes,	<i>you arrived.</i>	<i>you had arrived.</i>
Ils arrivèrent,	<i>they arrived.</i>	<i>they had arrived.</i>

	FUTURE.	
		FUTURE PERFECT.
J'arriverai,	<i>I shall arrive.</i>	<i>I shall have arrived.</i>
Tu arriveras,	<i>thou wilt arrive.</i>	<i>thou wilt have arrived.</i>
Il arrivera,	<i>he will arrive.</i>	<i>he will have arrived.</i>
Nous arriverons,	<i>we shall arrive.</i>	<i>we shall have arrived.</i>
Vous arriverez,	<i>you will arrive.</i>	<i>you will have arrived.</i>
Ils arriveront,	<i>they will arrive.</i>	<i>they will have arrived.</i>

	CONDITIONAL.	
		PAST CONDITIONAL.
J'arriverais,	<i>I should arrive.</i>	<i>I should have arrived.</i>
Tu arriverais,	<i>thou wouldst arrive.</i>	<i>thou wouldst have arrived.</i>
Il arriverait,	<i>he would arrive.</i>	<i>he would have arrived.</i>
Nous arriverions,	<i>we should arrive.</i>	<i>we should have arrived.</i>
Vous arriveriez,	<i>you would arrive.</i>	<i>you would have arrived.</i>
Ils arriveraient,	<i>they would arrive.</i>	<i>they would have arrived.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.		
Arrive,	<i>arrive (thou).</i>	<i>arrive (you).</i>
Qu'il arrive,	<i>let him arrive.</i>	<i>let them arrive.</i>
Arrivons,	<i>let us arrive.</i>	

	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.	
	PRESENT.	PERFECT.
Que j'arrive,	<i>that I may arrive.</i>	<i>that I may have arrived.</i>
Que tu arrives,	<i>that thou mayest arrive.</i>	<i>that thou mayest have arrived.</i>
Qu'il arrive,	<i>that he may arrive.</i>	<i>that he may have arrived.</i>
Que nous arrivions,	<i>that we may arrive.</i>	<i>that we may have arrived.</i>
Que vous arriviez,	<i>that you may arrive.</i>	<i>that you may have arrived.</i>
Qu'ils arrivent,	<i>that they may arrive.</i>	<i>that they may have arrived.</i>

	IMPERFECT.	
		PLUPERFECT.
Que j'arrivasse,	<i>that I might arrive.</i>	<i>that I might have arrived.</i>
Que tu arrivasses,	<i>that thou mightest arrive.</i>	<i>that thou mightest have arrived.</i>
Qu'il arrivât,	<i>that he might arrive.</i>	<i>that he might have arrived.</i>
Que nous arrivassions,	<i>that we might arrive.</i>	<i>that we might have arrived.</i>
Que vous arrivassiez,	<i>that you might arrive.</i>	<i>that you might have arrived.</i>
Qu'ils arrivassent,	<i>that they might arrive.</i>	<i>that they might have arrived.</i>

CONJUGATION OF A PASSIVE VERB.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Être aimé,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>to be loved.</i>	Avoir été aimé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>to have been loved.</i>
------------	--	-----------------	--

PARTICIPLES.

Êtant aimé,	<b>PRESENT.</b> <i>being loved.</i>	Ayant été aimé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>having been loved.</i>
Êté aimé,	<b>PAST.</b> <i>been loved.</i>		

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je suis aimé,	<i>I am loved.</i>	J'ai été aimé,	<i>I have been loved.</i>
Tu es aimé,	<i>thou art loved.</i>	Tu as été aimé,	<i>thou hast been loved.</i>
Il est aimé,	<i>he is loved.</i>	Il a été aimé,	<i>he has been loved.</i>
Nous sommes aimés,	<i>we are loved.</i>	Nous avons été aimés,	<i>we have been loved.</i>
Vous êtes aimés,	<i>you are loved.</i>	Vous avez été aimés,	<i>you have been loved.</i>
Ils sont aimés,	<i>they are loved.</i>	Ils ont été aimés,	<i>they have been loved.</i>

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
J'étais aimé,	<i>I was loved.</i>	J'avais été aimé,	<i>I had been loved.</i>
Tu étais aimé,	<i>thou wast loved.</i>	Tu avais été aimé,	<i>thou hadst been loved.</i>
Il était aimé,	<i>he was loved.</i>	Il avait été aimé,	<i>he had been loved.</i>
Nous étions aimés,	<i>we were loved.</i>	Nous avions été aimés,	<i>we had been loved.</i>
Vous étiez aimés,	<i>you were loved.</i>	Vous aviez été aimés,	<i>you had been loved.</i>
Ils étaient aimés,	<i>they were loved.</i>	Ils avaient été aimés,	<i>they had been loved.</i>

PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je fus aimé,	<i>I was loved.</i>	J'eus été aimé,	<i>I had been loved.</i>
Tu fus aimé,	<i>thou wast loved.</i>	Tu eus été aimé,	<i>thou hadst been loved.</i>
Il fut aimé,	<i>he was loved.</i>	Il eut été aimé,	<i>he had been loved.</i>
Nous fûmes aimés,	<i>we were loved.</i>	Nous eûmes été aimés,	<i>we had been loved.</i>
Vous fûtes aimés,	<i>you were loved.</i>	Vous eûtes été aimés,	<i>you had been loved.</i>
Ils furent aimés,	<i>they were loved.</i>	Ils eurent été aimés,	<i>they had been loved.</i>

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Je serai aimé,	<i>I shall be loved.</i>	J'aurai été aimé,	<i>I shall have</i>
Tu seras aimé,	<i>thou wilt be loved.</i>	Tu auras été aimé,	<i>thou wilt have</i>
Il sera aimé,	<i>he will be loved.</i>	Il aura été aimé,	<i>he will have</i>
Nous serons aimés,	<i>we shall be loved.</i>	Nous aurons été aimés,	<i>we shall have</i>
Vous serez aimés,	<i>you will be loved.</i>	Vous aurez été aimés,	<i>you will have</i>
Ils seront aimés.	<i>they will be loved.</i>	Ils auront été aimés.	<i>they will have</i>

CONDITIONAL.		PAST CONDITIONAL.	
Je serais aimé,	<i>I should be loved.</i>	J'aurais été aimé,	<i>I should have been loved.</i>
Tu serais aimé,	<i>thou wouldst be loved.</i>	Tu aurais été aimé,	<i>thou wouldst have been loved.</i>
Il serait aimé,	<i>he would be loved.</i>	Il aurait été aimé,	<i>he would have been loved.</i>
Nous serions aimés,	<i>we should be loved.</i>	Nous aurions été aimés,	<i>we should have been loved.</i>
Vous seriez aimés,	<i>you would be loved.</i>	Vous auriez été aimés,	<i>you would have been loved.</i>
Ils seraient aimés,	<i>they would be loved.</i>	Ils auraient été aimés,	<i>they would have been loved.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sois aimé,	<i>be (thou) loved.</i>	Soyez aimés,	<i>be (you) loved.</i>
Qu'il soit aimé,	<i>let him be loved.</i>	Qu'ils soient aimés,	<i>let them be loved.</i>
Soyons aimés,	<i>let us be loved.</i>		

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je sois aimé,	<i>that I may be loved.</i>	Que j'aie été aimé,	<i>that I may have been loved.</i>
Que tu sois aimé,	<i>that thou mayest be loved.</i>	Que tu aies été aimé,	<i>that thou mayest have been loved.</i>
Qu'il soit aimé,	<i>that he may be loved.</i>	Qu'il ait été aimé,	<i>that he may have been loved.</i>
Que nous soyons aimés,	<i>that we may be loved.</i>	Que nous ayons été aimés,	<i>that we may have been loved.</i>
Que vous soyez aimés,	<i>that you may be loved.</i>	Que vous ayez été aimés,	<i>that you may have been loved.</i>
Qu'ils soient aimés,	<i>that they may be loved.</i>	Qu'ils aient été aimés,	<i>that they may have been loved.</i>

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je fusse aimé,	<i>that I might</i>	Que j'eusse été aimé,	<i>that I</i>
Que tu fusses aimé,	<i>that thou mightest</i>	Que tu eusses été aimé,	<i>that thou</i>
Qu'il fût aimé,	<i>that he might</i>	Qu'il eût été aimé,	<i>that he</i>
Que nous fussions aimés,	<i>that we might</i>	Que nous eussions été aimés,	<i>that we</i>
Que vous fussiez aimés,	<i>that you might</i>	Que vous eussiez été aimés,	<i>that you</i>
Qu'ils fussent aimés,	<i>that they might</i>	Qu'ils eussent été aimés,	<i>that they</i>

*be loved. might have been loved.*

## CONJUGATION OF

## FIRST

INFINITIVE <i>présent</i>	PARTICIPLE <i>présent</i>	PARTICIPLE <i>passé</i>	INDICATIVE <i>présent</i>		INDICATIVE <i>imparfait</i>
ALLER, to go.	Allant,	Allé,	<i>Je vais, tu vas, il va,</i>	<i>nous allons, vous allez, ils vont,</i>	<i>J'allais, etc.,</i>
ENVOYER, to send.	Envoyant,	Envoyé,	<i>J'envoie, tu envoies, il envoie,</i>	<i>nous envoyons, vous envoyez, ils envoient,</i>	<i>J'envoyais, etc.,</i>

## SECOND

ACQUÉRIR, to acquire.	<i>Acquérant,</i>	<i>Acquis,</i>	<i>J'acquiers, tu acquiers, il acquiert,</i>	<i>nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils acquièrent,</i>	<i>J'acquerrais, etc.,</i>
ASSAILLIR, to assail.	<i>Assaillant,</i>	<i>Assailli,</i>	<i>J'assaille, tu assailles, il assaille,</i>	<i>nous assaillons, vous assaillez, ils assaillent,</i>	<i>J'assaillais, etc.,</i>
BOUILLIR, to boil.	<i>Bouillant,</i>	<i>Bouilli,</i>	<i>Je bouis, tu bouis, il bout,</i>	<i>nous bouillons, vous bouillez, ils bouillent,</i>	<i>Je bouillais, etc.,</i>
COURIR, to run.	<i>Courant,</i>	<i>Couru,</i>	<i>Je cours, tu cours, il court,</i>	<i>nous courons, vous courez, ils courent,</i>	<i>Je courais, etc.,</i>
cueILLIR, to gather.	<i>Cueillant,</i>	<i>Cueilli,</i>	<i>Je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille,</i>	<i>nous cueillons, vous cueillez, ils cueillent,</i>	<i>Je cueillais, etc.,</i>
DORMIR, to sleep.	<i>Dormant,</i>	<i>Dormi,</i>	<i>Je dors, tu dors, il dort,</i>	<i>nous dormons, vous dormez, ils dorment,</i>	<i>Je dormais, etc.,</i>
FUIR, to fly.	<i>Fuyant,</i>	<i>Fui,</i>	<i>Je fuis, tu fuis, il fuit,</i>	<i>nous fuyons, vous fuyez, ils fuient,</i>	<i>Je fuyais, etc.,</i>
MENTIR, to lie.	<i>Mentant,</i>	<i>Menti,</i>	<i>Je mens, tu mens, il ment,</i>	<i>nous mentons, vous mentez, ils mentent,</i>	<i>Je mentais, etc.,</i>

\* The third person of both numbers in the imperative tations.  
\*\* We are obliged to suppress *que* from the subjunctive mood in all irregular verbs, for

## THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

## CONJUGATION.

PAST <i>definite</i>	FUTURE and CONDITIONAL	IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE <i>present</i>		SUBJUNCTIVE <i>imperfect</i>
J'allai, etc.,	J'irai, etc., J'irais, etc.,	Va, allons, allez,*	J'aille,** tu ailles, il aille,	nous allions, vous alliez, ils aillent,	J'allasse, etc.
J'envoyai, etc.,	J'envoierai, etc., J'envoierais, etc.,	Envoie, envoyons, envoyez,	J'envoie, tu envoies, il envoie,	nous envoyions, vous envoyiez, ils envoient,	J'envoyasse, etc.

## CONJUGATION.

J'acquis, etc.,	J'acquerrai, etc., J'acquerrais, etc.,	Acquiers, acquérons, acquies,	J'acquiesse, tu acquiesces, il acquiesce,	nous acquiessons, vous acquiessez, ils acquiescent,	J'acquiescasse, etc.
J'assailla, etc.,	Assaillirai, etc., Assaillirais, etc.,	Assaille, assaillons, assailles,	J'assaille, tu assailles, il assaille,	nous assaillons, vous assailliez, ils assaillent,	J'assaillisse, etc.
Je bouillai, etc.,	Je bouillirai, etc., Je bouillirais, etc.,	Boue, bouillons, bouilles,	Je bouille, tu bouilles, il bouille,	nous bouillons, vous bouilliez, ils bouillent,	Je bouillisse, etc.
Je courus, etc.,	Je courrai, etc., Je courrais, etc.,	Cours, courons, cours,	Je cours, tu courses, il cours,	nous courons, vous couriez, ils courent,	Je courusse, etc.
Je cueillis, etc.,	Je cueillirai, etc., Je cueillirais, etc.,	Cueille, cueillons, cueilles,	Je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille,	nous cueillons, vous cueilliez, ils cueillent,	Je cueillisse, etc.
Je dormis, etc.,	Je dormirai, etc., Je dormirais, etc.,	Dors, dormons, dormes,	Je dors, tu dormes, il dors,	nous dormons, vous dormiez, ils dorment,	Je dormisse, etc.
Je fis, etc.,	Je fuirai, etc., Je fuirais, etc.,	Fuis, fuyons, fuyez,	Je fuis, tu fuyes, il fuit,	nous fuyons, vous fuyiez, ils fuient,	Je fuissse, etc.
Je mentis, etc.,	Je mentirai, etc., Je mentirais, etc.,	Mens, mentons, mentes,	Je mente, tu mentes, il mente,	nous mentons, vous mentiez, ils mentent,	Je mentisse, etc.

is always the same as in the subjunctive.  
the sake of abbreviation; but be it remembered that the scholar must not do so in his reci-

INFINITIVE present.	PARTICIPLE present.	PARTICIPLE past.	INDICATIVE present.		INDICATIVE imperfect.
<b>MOURIR,</b> to die.	<i>Mourant,</i>	<i>Mort,</i>	<i>Je meurs,</i> <i>tu meurs,</i> <i>il meurt,</i>	<i>nous mourons,</i> <i>vous mouriez,</i> <i>ils meurent,</i>	<i>Je mourais, etc.,</i>
<b>OUVRIR,</b> to open.	<i>Ouvrant,</i>	<i>Ouvert,</i>	<i>J'ouvre,</i> <i>tu ouvres,</i> <i>il ouvre,</i>	<i>nous ouvrons,</i> <i>vous ouvriez,</i> <i>ils ouvrent,</i>	<i>J'ouvrais, etc.,</i>
<b>VENIR,</b> to come.	<i>Venant,</i>	<i>Venu,</i>	<i>Je viens,</i> <i>tu viens,</i> <i>il vient,</i>	<i>nous venons,</i> <i>vous veniez,</i> <i>ils viennent,</i>	<i>Je venais, etc.,</i>
<b>VÊTRE,</b> to clothe.	<i>Vêtant,</i>	<i>Vêtu,</i>	<i>Je vêts,</i> <i>tu vêts,</i> <i>il vêt,</i>	<i>nous vêtions,</i> <i>vous vêtiez,</i> <i>ils vêtent,</i>	<i>Je vêtissais, etc.,</i>

## THIRD

<b>ASSOIR,</b> to seat.	<i>Assoyant,*</i>	<i>Assis,</i>	<i>J'assieds,</i> <i>tu assieds,</i> <i>il assied,</i>	<i>nous assoyons,</i> <i>vous assoyiez,</i> <i>ils assiedent,</i>	<i>J'assoyais, etc.,</i>
<b>DÉCHOIR,</b> to fall away.	(wanting),	<i>Déchu,</i>	<i>Je déchois,</i> <i>tu déchois,</i> <i>il déchoit,</i>	<i>nous déchoyons,</i> <i>vous déchoyiez,</i> <i>ils déchoient,</i>	<i>Je déchoyais, etc.,</i>
<b>MOUVRE,</b> to move.	<i>Mouvant,</i>	<i>Mu,</i>	<i>Je meus,</i> <i>tu meus,</i> <i>il meut,</i>	<i>nous moueons,</i> <i>vous mouiez,</i> <i>ils meurent,</i>	<i>Je mouvais, etc.,</i>
<b>POUVOIR,</b> to be able.	<i>Pouvant,</i>	<i>Pu,</i>	<i>Je puis, peux,</i> <i>tu peux,</i> <i>il peut,</i>	<i>nous pouvons,</i> <i>vous pouvez,</i> <i>ils peuvent,</i>	<i>Je pouvais, etc.,</i>
<b>SAVOIR,</b> to know.	<i>Sachant,</i>	<i>Su,</i>	<i>Je sais,</i> <i>tu sais,</i> <i>il sait,</i>	<i>nous savons,</i> <i>vous savez,</i> <i>ils savent,</i>	<i>Je savais, etc.,</i>
<b>VALOIR,</b> to be worth.	<i>Valant,</i>	<i>Vais,</i>	<i>Je vauds,</i> <i>tu vauds,</i> <i>il vaut,</i>	<i>nous valons,</i> <i>vous valez,</i> <i>ils valent,</i>	<i>Je valais, etc.,</i>
<b>VOIR,</b> to see.	<i>Voyant,</i>	<i>Vu,</i>	<i>Je vois,</i> <i>tu vois,</i> <i>il voit,</i>	<i>nous voyons,</i> <i>vous voyez,</i> <i>ils voient,</i>	<i>Je voyais, etc.,</i>
<b>VOULOIR,</b> to be willing.	<i>Voulant,</i>	<i>Voulu,</i>	<i>Je veux,</i> <i>tu veux,</i> <i>il veut,</i>	<i>nous voulons,</i> <i>vous voulez,</i> <i>ils veulent,</i>	<i>Je voulais, etc.,</i>

\* This verb is also conjugated by many (and the *Académie*) as follows: *Assoyant*,—*J'assois* and *J'assois*, etc. *J'assois* and *J'assois*, etc. *Assis*, *assois*, etc. *Assis*, *assois*, etc.

† Also, *Voulu*, *qu'il veuille*; *voulons*,

Past definite.	FUTURE and CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE present.		SUBJUNCTIVE imperfect.
<i>Je mourus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je mourrai, etc., Je mourrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Meurs, mourons, mourez,</i>	<i>Je meure, tu meures, il meure,</i>	<i>nous mourions, vous mouriez, ils meurent,</i>	<i>Je mourusse, etc.</i>
<i>J'ouvris, etc.,</i>	<i>J'ouvrirai, etc., J'ouvrirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Ouvre, ouvrons, ouvrez,</i>	<i>J'ouvre, tu ouvres, il ouvre,</i>	<i>nous ouvrons, vous ouvriez, ils ouvrent,</i>	<i>J'ouvrissse, etc.</i>
<i>Je vins, etc.,</i>	<i>Je viendrai, etc., Je viendrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Viens, venons, venez,</i>	<i>Je vienne, tu viennes, il vienne,</i>	<i>nous venions, vous veniez, ils viennent,</i>	<i>Je vinsse, etc.</i>
<i>Je vêtis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je vêtirai, etc., Je vêtirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Vêta, vêtons, vêtez,</i>	<i>Je vête, tu vêtes, il vête,</i>	<i>nous vêtions, vous vêtiez, ils vêtent,</i>	<i>Je vêtisse, etc.</i>

## CONJUGATION.

<i>J'assis, etc.,</i>	<i>J'assiérai, etc., J'assiérats, etc.,</i>	<i>Assieds, asseoyons, asseyez,</i>	<i>J'assie, tu assies, il assie,</i>	<i>nous assieyons, vous assieyez, ils assient,</i>	<i>J'assisssse, etc.</i>
<i>Je déchus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je déchirai, —, Je déchirais, —,</i>	<i>Déchois, déchoyons, déchoyez,</i>	<i>Je déchois, tu déchois, il déchois,</i>	<i>nous déchoyions, vous déchoyiez, ils déchotent,</i>	<i>Je déchusssse, etc.</i>
<i>Je mus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je mourrai, etc., Je mourrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Meus, mourons, mourez.</i>	<i>Je meure, tu meures, il meure,</i>	<i>nous mourions, vous mouriez, ils meurent,</i>	<i>Je musse, etc.</i>
<i>Je pus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je pourrai, etc., (wanting), Je pourrais, etc.,</i>	<i>" "</i>	<i>Je puisse, tu puisses, il puisse,</i>	<i>nous puissions, vous puissiez, ils puissent,</i>	<i>Je pussse, etc.</i>
<i>Je sus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je saurai, etc., Je saurais, etc.,</i>	<i>Sache, sachons, sachez,</i>	<i>Je sache, tu saches, il sache,</i>	<i>nous sachions, vous sachiez, ils sachent,</i>	<i>Je sussse, etc.</i>
<i>Je valus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je vaudrai, etc., Je vaudrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Vaus, valons, valez,</i>	<i>Je vaille, tu vailles, il vaille,</i>	<i>nous vallions, vous valiez, ils valient,</i>	<i>Je valussse, etc.</i>
<i>Je vis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je verrai, etc., Je verrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Vois, voyons, voyez,</i>	<i>Je voie, tu voies, il voie,</i>	<i>nous voyions, vous voyiez, ils voient,</i>	<i>Je vissse, etc.</i>
<i>Je voulus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je voudrai, etc., Je voudrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Veuille, veuillons, veuillez,</i>	<i>Je veuille, tu veuillez, il veuille,</i>	<i>nous voulions, vous vouliez, ils veulent,</i>	<i>Je voulussse, etc.</i>

*J'assis, tu assies, il assie, nous assieyons, vous assieyez, ils assient. J'assieyais, etc.—asseyez, etc. Que j'assie, que tu assies, qu'il assie, que nous assieyions, que vous assieyez, qu'ils assient.*



## FOURTH

INFINITIVE <i>present</i>	PARTICIPLE <i>present</i>	PARTICIPLE <i>past</i>	INDICATIVE <i>present</i>		INDICATIVE <i>imperfect</i>
BATTERE, to beat.	Battant,	Battu,	<i>Je bats,</i> <i>tu bats,</i> <i>il bat,</i>	nous battons, vous battez, ils battent,	<i>Je battais, etc.,</i>
BOIRE, to drink.	Buvant,	Bu,	<i>Je bois,</i> <i>tu bois,</i> <i>il boit,</i>	nous buvons, vous buvez, ils boivent,	<i>Je buvais, etc.,</i>
CONCLURE, to conclude.	Concluant,	Conclu,	<i>Je conclus,</i> <i>tu conclus,</i> <i>il conclut,</i>	nous concluons, vous concluez, ils concluent,	<i>Je conclusais,</i> nous concluions, vous concluez, etc.,
COUDRE, to sew.	Cousant,	Cousu,	<i>Je couds,</i> <i>tu couds,</i> <i>il coud,</i>	nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent,	<i>Je cousais, etc.,</i>
CROIRE, to believe.	Croyant,	Cru,	<i>Je crois,</i> <i>tu crois,</i> <i>il croit,</i>	nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient,	<i>Je croyais,</i> nous croyions, vous croyiez, etc.,
CROÎTRE, to grow.	Croissant,	Crû,	<i>Je crois,</i> <i>tu crois,</i> <i>il croît,</i>	nous croissons, vous croissez, ils croissent,	<i>Je croissais, etc.,</i>
CUIRE, to cook.	Cuisant,	Cuit,	<i>Je cuis,</i> <i>tu cuis,</i> <i>il cuit,</i>	nous cuisons, vous cuisinez, ils cuisent,	<i>Je cuisais, etc.,</i>
DIRE, to say.	Disant,	Dit,	<i>Je dis,</i> <i>tu dis,</i> <i>il dit,</i>	nous disons, vous dites, ils disent,	<i>Je disais, etc.,</i>
ÉCRIRE, to write.	Écrivant,	Écrit,	<i>J'écris,</i> <i>tu écris,</i> <i>il écrit,</i>	nous écrivons, vous écrivez, ils écrivent,	<i>J'écrivais, etc.,</i>
FAIRE, to make.	Faisant,	Fait,	<i>Je fais,</i> <i>tu fais,</i> <i>il fait,</i>	nous faisons, vous faites, ils font,	<i>Je faisais, etc.,</i>
JOINDRE, to join.	Joignant,	Joint,	<i>Je joins,</i> <i>tu joins,</i> <i>il joint,</i>	nous joignons, vous joignez, ils joignent,	<i>Je joignais, etc.,</i>
LIRE, to read.	Lisant,	Lu,	<i>Je lis,</i> <i>tu lis,</i> <i>il lit,</i>	nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent,	<i>Je lisais, etc.,</i>
METTRE, to put.	Mettant,	Mis,	<i>Je mets,</i> <i>tu mets,</i> <i>il met,</i>	nous mettons, vous mettez, ils mettent,	<i>Je mettais, etc.,</i>

## CONJUGATION.

PAST <i>definite.</i>	FUTURE and CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE <i>present.</i>		SUBJUNCTIVE <i>imperfect.</i>
<i>Je battis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je battrai, etc., Je battrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Bate, battons, battez,</i>	<i>Je batte, tu battes, il batte,</i>	<i>nous battions, vous battiez, ils battent,</i>	<i>Je battisse, etc.</i>
<i>Je bus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je boirai, etc., Je boirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Bois, buions, buvez,</i>	<i>Je boive, tu boives, il boive,</i>	<i>nous buvions, vous buviez, ils boivent,</i>	<i>Je busse, etc.</i>
<i>Je conclus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je conclurai, etc., Je conclurais, etc.,</i>	<i>Conclus, concluons, concluez,</i>	<i>Je conclus, tu conclus, il conclus,</i>	<i>nous concluions, vous concluez, ils concluent,</i>	<i>Je conclusse, etc.</i>
<i>Je couis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je coudrai, etc., Je coudrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Couds, cousons, cousez,</i>	<i>Je couse, tu couses, il couse,</i>	<i>nous cousions, vous cousiez, ils cousent,</i>	<i>Je couissee, etc.</i>
<i>Je crus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je croirai, etc., Je croirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Crois, croyons, croyez,</i>	<i>Je croie, tu croies, il croie,</i>	<i>nous croyions, vous croyiez, ils croient,</i>	<i>Je crusse, etc.</i>
<i>Je crûs, etc.,</i>	<i>Je croîtrai, etc., Je croîtrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Crois, croissons, croissez,</i>	<i>Je croisse, tu croisses, il croisse,</i>	<i>nous croissions, vous croissiez, ils croissent,</i>	<i>Je crûssee, etc.</i>
<i>Je cuisis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je cuirai, etc., Je cuirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Cuis, cuissons, cuissez,</i>	<i>Je cuise, tu cuises, il cuise,</i>	<i>nous cuisions, vous cuisiez, ils cuisent,</i>	<i>Je cuisisse, etc.</i>
<i>Je dis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je dirai, etc., Je dirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Dis, disons, dites,</i>	<i>Je dise, tu dises, il dise,</i>	<i>nous disions, vous disiez, ils disent,</i>	<i>Je disse, etc.</i>
<i>J'écrivis, etc.,</i>	<i>J'écrirai, etc., J'écrirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Écris, écrivons, écrivez,</i>	<i>J'écrive, tu écrives, il écrive,</i>	<i>nous écrivions, vous écriviez, ils écrivent,</i>	<i>J'écrivisse, etc.</i>
<i>Je fis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je ferai, etc., Je ferais, etc.,</i>	<i>Fais, faisons, faites,</i>	<i>Je fasse, tu fasses, il fasse,</i>	<i>nous fassions, vous fassiez, ils fassent,</i>	<i>Je fisse, etc.</i>
<i>Je joignis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je joindrai, etc., Je joindrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Joins, joignons, joignez,</i>	<i>Je joigne, tu joignes, il joigne,</i>	<i>nous joignons, vous joigniez, ils joignent,</i>	<i>Je joignisse, etc.</i>
<i>Je lus, etc.,</i>	<i>Je lirai, etc., Je lirais, etc.,</i>	<i>Lis, lisons, lisez,</i>	<i>Je lise, tu lisas, il lise,</i>	<i>nous lisions, vous lisiez, ils lisent,</i>	<i>Je lusse, etc.</i>
<i>Je mis, etc.,</i>	<i>Je mettrai, etc., Je mettrais, etc.,</i>	<i>Mets, mettons, mettez,</i>	<i>Je mette, tu mettes, il mette,</i>	<i>nous mettions, vous mettiez, ils mettent,</i>	<i>Je misse, etc.</i>

INFINITIVE <i>present</i>	PARTICIPLE <i>present</i>	PARTICIPLE <i>past</i>	INDICATIVE <i>present</i>		INDICATIVE <i>imperfect</i>
MOUDRE, to grind.	Moulant,	Moulu,	Je mouds, tu mouds, il moud,	nous moulons, vous moulez, ils moulent,	Je moulais, etc.,
NAÎTRE, to be born.	Naissant,	Né,	Je nais, tu nais, il naît,	nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent,	Je naissais, etc.,
PARAÎTRE.	Paraissant,	Paru,	Je paraïs, tu paraïs, il paraît,	nous paraissions, vous paraissiez, ils paraissent,	Je paraissais, etc.,
PLAIRE, to please.	Plaisant,	Plu,	Je plais, tu plais, il plaît,	nous plaisons, vous plaisez, ils plaisent,	Je plaisais, etc.,
PRENDRE, to take.	Prenant,	Pris,	Je prends, tu prends, il prend,	nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent,	Je prenais, etc.,
RÉSOLURE, to resolve.	Résolvant,	Résous and Résolu,	Je résous, tu résous, il résout,	nous résolvons, vous résolvez, ils résolvent,	Je résolvais, etc.,
RIRE, to laugh.	Riant,	Ri,	Je ris, tu ris, il rit,	nous rions, vous riez, ils rient,	Je riais, etc.,
ROMPRE, to break.	Rompant,	Rompu,	Je romps, tu romps, il rompt,	nous rompons, vous rompez, ils rompent,	Je rompais, etc.,
SUIVRE, to follow.	Suivant,	Suivi,	Je suis, tu suis, il suit,	nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent,	Je suivais, etc.,
TRAIRE, to milk.	Trayant,	Traît,	Je traite, tu traite, il traite,	nous trayons, vous trayez, ils traitent,	Je trayais, etc.,
VAINCRE, to vanquish,	Vainquant,	Vaincu,	Je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vainc,	nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent,	Je vainquais, etc.,
VIVRE, to live.	Vivant,	Vécu,	Je vis, tu vis, il vit,	nous vivons, vous vivez, ils vivent,	Je vivais, etc.,

Past <i>definite.</i>	FUTURE and CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE <i>present.</i>		SUBJUNCTIVE <i>imperfect.</i>
Je moulus,	Je moudrai, etc., Je moudrais, etc.,	Mouds, moulons, moulez,	Je moule, tu moules, il moule,	nous moulions, vous mouliez, ils moulent,	Je moulusse, etc.
Je naquis, etc.,	Je naîtrai, etc., Je naîtrais, etc.,	Naïs, naïssons, naïssez,	Je naisse, tu naisses, il naisse,	nous naissions, vous naissiez, ils naissent,	Je naquisse, etc.
Je parus, etc.,	Paraîtrai, Paraîtrais,	Parais, paraissions, paraïssez,	Je paraisse, tu paraisses, il paraisse,	Nous paraissions, vous paraissiez, ils paraissent,	Je parusse, etc.
Je plus, etc.,	Je plairai, etc., Je plairais, etc.,	Plais, plaisons, plaisez,	Je plaise, tu plaisais, il plaise,	nous plaissions, vous plaissiez, ils plaisent,	Je plusse, etc.
Je pris, etc.,	Je prendrai, etc., Je prendrais, etc.,	Prends, prenons, prenez,	Je prenne, tu prennes, il prenne,	nous prenions, vous preniez, ils prennent,	Je prisse, etc.
Je résolus, etc.,	Je résoudrai, etc., Je résoudrais, etc.,	Résous, résolvons, résolvez,	Je résolve, tu résolves, il résolve,	nous résolvions, vous résolviez, ils résolvent,	Je résolusse, etc.
Je ris, etc.,	Je rirai, etc., Je rirais, etc.,	Ris, rions, riez,	Je rie, tu ries, il rie,	nous rions, vous riez, ils rient,	Je risse, etc.
Je rompis, etc.,	Je romprai, etc., Je romprais, etc.,	Rompe, rompons, rompez,	Je rompe, tu rompes, il rompe,	nous rompions, vous rompiez, ils rompent,	Je rompiasse, etc.
Je suivis, etc.,	Je suivrai, etc., Je suivrais, etc.,	Suis, suivons, suivez,	Je suive, tu suives, il suive,	nous suivions, vous suiviez, ils suivent,	Je suivisse, etc.
(wanting), " "	Je trairai, etc., Je trairais, etc.,	Trais, trayons, trayez,	Je traie, tu traies, il traie,	nous trayions, vous trayiez, ils traient,	(wanting), " "
Je vainquis, etc.,	Je vaincrai, etc., Je vaincrais, etc.,	Vaincs, vainquons, vainquez,	Je vainque, tu vainques, il vainque,	nous vainquions, vous vainquiez, ils vainquent,	Je vain- quisse, etc.
Je vécus, etc.,	Je vivrai, etc., Je vivrais, etc.,	Vis, vivons, vivez,	Je vive, tu vives, il vive,	nous vivions, vous viviez, ils vivent,	Je vécnisse, etc.

## CONJUGATION OF S'EN ALLER, TO GO AWAY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.			
PRESENT.		PAST.	
S'en aller,	<i>to go away.</i>	S'en être allé,	<i>to have gone away.</i>

PARTICIPLES.			
PRESENT.		PAST.	
S'en allant,	<i>going away.</i>	S'en étant allé,	<i>having gone away.</i>
En allé,	<i>gone away.</i>		

INDICATIVE MOOD.			
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je m'en vais,	<i>I go away.</i>	Je m'en suis allé,	<i>I have</i>
Tu t'en vas,	<i>thou goest away.</i>	Tu t'en es allé,	<i>thou hast</i>
Il s'en va,	<i>he goes away.</i>	Il s'en est allé,	<i>he has</i>
Nous nous en allons,	<i>we go away.</i>	Nous nous en sommes allés,	<i>we have</i>
Vous vous en allez,	<i>you go away.</i>	Vous vous en êtes allés,	<i>you have</i>
Ils s'en vont,	<i>they go away.</i>	Ils s'en sont allés,	<i>they have</i>

IMPERFECT.			
PRESENT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je m'en allais,	<i>I went away.</i>	Je m'en étais allé,	<i>I had gone away.</i>
Tu t'en allais,	<i>thou wastest away.</i>	Tu t'en étais allé,	<i>thou hadst gone away.</i>
Il s'en allait,	<i>he went away.</i>	Il s'en était allé,	<i>he had gone away.</i>
Nous nous en allions,	<i>we went away.</i>	Nous nous en étions allés,	<i>we had gone away.</i>
Vous vous en alliez,	<i>you went away.</i>	Vous vous en étiez allés,	<i>you had gone away.</i>
Ils s'en allaient,	<i>they went away.</i>	Ils s'en étaient allés,	<i>they had gone away.</i>

PAST DEFINITE.			
PRESENT.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je m'en allai,	<i>I went away.</i>	Je m'en fus allé,	<i>I had gone away.</i>
Tu t'en allas,	<i>thou wastest away.</i>	Tu t'en fus allé,	<i>thou hadst gone away.</i>
Il s'en alla,	<i>he went away.</i>	Il s'en fut allé,	<i>he had gone away.</i>
Nous nous en allâmes,	<i>we went away.</i>	Nous nous en fûmes allés,	<i>we had gone away.</i>
Vous vous en allâtes,	<i>you went away.</i>	Vous vous en fûtes allés,	<i>you had gone away.</i>
Ils s'en allèrent,	<i>they went away.</i>	Ils s'en furent allés,	<i>they had gone away.</i>

FUTURE.			
PRESENT.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Je m'en irai,	<i>I shall go away.</i>	Je m'en serai allé,	<i>I shall have</i>
Tu t'en iras,	<i>thou wilt go away.</i>	Tu t'en seras allé,	<i>thou wilt have</i>
Il s'en ira,	<i>he will go away.</i>	Il s'en sera allé,	<i>he will have</i>
Nous nous en irons,	<i>we shall go away.</i>	Nous nous en serons allés,	<i>we shall have</i>
Vous vous en irez,	<i>you will go away.</i>	Vous vous en serez allés,	<i>you will have</i>
Ils s'en iront,	<i>they will go away.</i>	Ils s'en seront allés,	<i>they will have</i>

CONDITIONAL.			
PRESENT.		PAST CONDITIONAL.	
Je m'en irais,	<i>I should go away.</i>	Je m'en serais allé,	<i>I should have</i>
Tu t'en irais,	<i>thou shouldst go away.</i>	Tu t'en serais allé,	<i>thou shouldst have</i>
Il s'en irait,	<i>he should go away.</i>	Il s'en serait allé,	<i>he would have</i>
Nous nous en irions,	<i>we should go away.</i>	Nous nous en serions allés,	<i>we should have</i>
Vous vous en iriez,	<i>you should go away.</i>	Vous vous en seriez allés,	<i>you would have</i>
Ils s'en iroient,	<i>they should go away.</i>	Ils s'en seraient allés,	<i>they would have</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.			
PRESENT.		PAST.	
Va-t'en,	<i>go (thou) away.</i>	Allez-vous-en,	<i>go (you) away.</i>
Qu'il s'en aille,	<i>let him go away.</i>	Qu'ils s'en aillent,	<i>let them go away.</i>
Allons-nous-en,	<i>let us go away.</i>		

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Que je m'en aille,	<i>that I may</i>	Que je m'en sois allé,	<i>that I</i>
Que tu t'en ailles,	<i>that thou mayest</i>	Que tu t'en sois allé,	<i>that thou</i>
Qu'il s'en aille,	<i>that he may</i>	Qu'il s'en soit allé,	<i>that he</i>
Que nous nous en allions,	<i>that we may</i>	Que nous nous en soyons allés,	<i>that we</i>
Que vous vous en alliez,	<i>that you may</i>	Que vous vous en soyez allés,	<i>that you</i>
Qu'ils s'en aillent,	<i>that they may</i>	Qu'ils s'en soient allés,	<i>that they</i>

IMPERFECT.			
PRESENT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je m'en allasse,	<i>that I might</i>	Que je m'en fusse allé,	<i>that I</i>
Que tu t'en allasses,	<i>that thou mightest</i>	Que tu t'en fusses allé,	<i>that thou</i>
Qu'il s'en allât,	<i>that he might</i>	Qu'il s'en fût allé,	<i>that he</i>
Que nous nous en allassions,	<i>that we might</i>	Que nous nous en fussions allés,	<i>that we</i>
Que vous vous en allassiez,	<i>that you might</i>	Que vous vous en fussiez allés,	<i>that you</i>
Qu'ils s'en allassent,	<i>that they might</i>	Qu'ils s'en fussent allés,	<i>that they</i>

# IMPERSONAL VERBS.

IMPERSONAL VERBS are those which are used only in the third person singular, and whose subject is only *il*, used generally without reference to any particular antecedent; as,

Il brûle,	<i>It dries,</i>	Il grêle,	<i>It hails,</i>
Il dégèle,	<i>It thaws,</i>	Il neige,	<i>It snows,</i>
Il faut,	<i>It is necessary,</i>	Il pleut,	<i>It rains,</i>
Il gèle,	<i>It freezes,</i>	Il tonne,	<i>It thunders.</i>

The following are also frequently impersonal :

Il arrive,	<i>It happens,</i>	Il semble,	<i>It seems,</i>
Il convient,	<i>It suits,</i>	Il s'en suit que,	<i>It follows that,</i>
Il fait,	<i>It is,</i>	Il vaut mieux,	<i>It is better,</i>
Il importe,	<i>It concerns,</i>	Il y a,	<i>There is.</i>
Il paraît,	<i>It appears,</i>		

	PLEUVOIR,	FALLOIR,	Y AVOIR,
	<i>To rain,</i>	<i>To be necessary,</i>	<i>There to be,</i>
IND. Pr.	Il pleut,	Il faut,	Il y a,
Imp.	Il pleuvait,	Il fallait,	Il y avait,
Simp. Pr.	Il plut,	Il fallut,	Il y eut,
Fut.	Il pleuvra,	Il faudra,	Il y aura,
COND.	Il pleuvrait,	Il faudrait,	Il y aurait,
SUBJ. Pr.	Qu'il pleuve,	Qu'il faille,	Qu'il y ait,
Imp.	Qu'il plût,	Qu'il fallût,	Qu'il y eût.

## IRREGULARITIES.

The following slight irregularities belong to the First Conjugation :

- Verbs terminating in *ger* take a mute *e* before *a* and *o*, in all the persons where either of these letters would immediately follow the *g*; as, *nous mangons, il mange, etc.*
- Verbs in *cer* take a cedilla under the *c* whenever this letter precedes *a* or *o*; as, *il menace, nous plaçons, etc.*
- Verbs in *er* having *é* acute or *e* mute in the penult, change it to *è* grave, when followed by a mute syllable; as, *Répéter, je répète. Lever, je lève, etc.*  
Except that verbs in *éger* always retain *é* acute; as, *Abréger, fabriquer, etc.*
- Verbs in *eler* and *eter*, double the *l* and *t* before *e* mute; as, *Appeler, j'appelle. Jeter, je jette, etc.*  
Except the following six, which take the grave accent over the penult *e*, according to the preceding rule (3). *Acheter, Bourreler, Déceler, Geler, Harceler, and Peler.*
- Verbs in *yer* change *y* into *i* before *e* mute; as, *Essayer, j'essaie, Essayer, il essaie, etc.*
- Verbs in *yer*, and those which have their participle present in *yant*, take an *t* after *y* in the first and second persons plural of the imperfect of the indicative and present of the subjunctive; as *nous essayions—que nous essayions, etc.*
- Verbs in *ier*, and those which have their participle present in *iant*, double the *i* in the same persons and tenses; as, *nous priions, nous riions, que nous étudiions, etc.*
- Verbs in *uer* take a dieresis over the *i* (ï) in the same persons and tenses; as, *nous distribuions, nous contribuions, que nous échouions, etc.*
- Verbs in *êr* keep two *e*'s throughout their conjugation, except before *a*, *i*, and *o*; as, *Je crêpe, je crêpais, crêpis—je crêtais, nous agrêtons, nous crêtons, nous agrêtons, etc.*

## DEFECTIVE,

OR SLIGHTLY IRREGULAR VERBS, WHOSE CONJUGATION NEED NOT BE GIVEN IN FULL.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

BÉNIR has two past participles, *béni*, blessed; *béni*, consecrated; other-wise regular.

DÉFAILLIR, *to fail*, is used only in the INDICATIVE PRESENT plural, *Nous défaillons*, etc.; IMPERFECT, *Je défaillais*; PAST DEFINITE, *Je défaillais*, etc., and the infinitive.

FAILLIR, *to fail*. *Faillants*. *Failli*. *Je faurai, tu feras, il fera, nous faillons, vous faillez, ils faillent*. *Je faillais*. *Je faillis*. *Je faillirai*. *Je faillirai*. It is used principally in the infinitive, the past definite, and the compound tenses.

FÉRIR, *to strike*, is now used only in the phrase *sans coup férir*.

FLEURIR, *to blossom*, when it is applied to the prosperous condition of a person or state, may have the IMPERFECT *florissait*, and must have its PARTICIPLE PRESENT *florissant*.

GÊNER, *to be in bed*, has only *Il gît, nous gisons, vous gisez, il gisent*; IMPERFECT, *Je gisais*, etc.; PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Gisant*.

HAIR, *to hate*, is only irregular by leaving off the disreals of the singular of the present indicative and of the imperative.

OUÏR, *to hear*, is now hardly ever used except in the infinitive, and the tenses compounded of *ouï*, past participle, and *Avoir*.

QUÉRIR, *to fetch*, is used only in the infinitive.

SAILLIR, *to project forth, to be salient*, follows the model of *Cueillir*, used only in the third person.

SUBJUGIR, *to arrive at*, is used only in the infinitive.

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

APPARAÎTRE, *to appear*, is used only in the INFINITIVE and INDICATIVE PRESENT, third person singular, *il apparaît*.

CHOIR, *to fall*, is used only in the INFINITIVE and PAST PARTICIPLE, *Chû, a*.

ÉCHOIR, *to chance to be*, follows the form of *Déchoir*, except that it is used only in the third person singular, and has PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Échécant*.

FOURVOIR, *to provide*, follows the form of *Voir*, except PAST DEFINITE, *Pourvus*; FUTURE, *Pourvoirai*; CONDITIONAL, *Pourvoirais*; IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, *Pourvusse*.

PRÉVOIR, *to foresee*, follows the form of *Voir*, except FUTURE, *Prévoirai*; CONDITIONAL, *Prévoirais*.

SEoir, *to dest*, is used only in the third person of some of the tenses, and follows the form of *Assoir*, *Sied*, *Seyait*, *Sitra*, *Sitrata*.

SIOIR, *to be seated*, has only PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Séant*; PAST PARTICIPLE, *Sis*.

SURSEoir, *to suspend*, follows the form of *Voir*, except FUTURE, *Surseoirai*; CONDITIONAL, *Surseoirais*; PAST PARTICIPLE, *Surse*.

## FOURTH CONJUGATION.

ABSOLURE, *to absolve*, follows the form of *Résoudre*, but has no PAST DEFINITE, no IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, and the PAST PARTICIPLE is *Absous* (feminine), *absoute*.

ACROIER, *to believe*, is used only in the infinitive, and after *Faire*.

BRAYER, *to Bray*, is seldom used except in the INFINITIVE; the INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Il brait, ils braient*; the FUTURE, *Il braira, ils brairont*; and the CONDITIONAL, *Il brairait, ils brairaient*.

- BRUIRE**, to roar, PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *Bruyant*; INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Bruit*; IMPERFECT, *Bruyais, bruyaient* (no other forms).
- CIRCONCIRE**, to circumscribe, follows the form of *Dire*, except INDICATIVE PRESENT second person, *Circonscis*, and PAST PARTICIPLE, *Circoncis*.
- CLORE**, to close, INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Je clos, tu clos, il clot*; FUTURE, *Clorat*; CONDITIONAL, *Clorais*; IMPERATIVE, *Clos*; PAST PARTICIPLE, *Clos*.
- CONTREDIRE**, to contradict, varied as *Dire*, has *Contredises*, in the second person plural INDICATIVE PRESENT. So *Dédire*, to unsay; *Interdire*, to forbid; *Médire de*, to slander; and *Prédire*, to foretell, have this person in *es*, making *Dédises, Interdises, Médises, and Prédises*.
- DÉCONFIRE**, to discomfort, is an old verb, used only in the infinitive, and has PAST PARTICIPLE, *Déconfit*.
- ÉCLORE**, to be hatched, following the model of *Clore*, is used only in the third person.
- ÉSUIVRE**, to follow, is conjugated like *Suivre*, but used only in the third person.
- FORCLORE**, to foreclose, is used only in the INFINITIVE and tenses compounded of the PAST PARTICIPLE, *Forclos*.
- FRIRE**, to fry, has INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Je frie, tu frie, il frit*; FUTURE, *Je frirai*, etc.: CONDITIONAL, *Je frirais*, etc.; IMPERATIVE singular, *Frie*; PAST PARTICIPLE, *Frit* (the rest is wanting, but always made up by conjugating the verb FAIRE with the infinitive FRIRE; as, *je fis frire, j'ai fait frire, faisons frire*, etc.).
- MAUDIRE**, to curse, follows the form of *Dire*, except that it doubles *s* before a vowel.
- OCCIRE**, to kill, is an old verb, used only in the infinitive.
- PAITRE**, to graze, varied as *Paraitre*, has no PRETERITE DEFINITE, no IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, nor any compound tenses. (They are also made up by conjugating FAIRE with the infinitive PAITRE; as, *je fis paitre, que je fesse paitre, j'ai fait paitre, faisons paitre*, etc.)
- SOURDRE**, to well forth, has only INDICATIVE PRESENT, *Sourd, sourdent*.
- SUFFIRE**, to suffice, is conjugated like *Circoncire*, except PAST PARTICIPLE, *Suffit*.
- TÊTRE**, to scathe, has only the compound tenses formed with its PAST PARTICIPLE, *Ténu*.

## TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

The numbers, in the following table, denote the pages where each verb will be found in all its moods and tenses, or some other verb whose paradigm it follows:

	PAGE		PAGE		PAGE
Abatre, conj. as Battre .....	496	Boire .....	496	Construire, as Cuire .....	496
Absoudre .....	502	Bouillir .....	492	Contenir, as Venir .....	494
S'Abstenir, as Venir .....	494	Braire .....	502	Contraindre, as Joindre .....	496
Abstraire, as Traire .....	498	Bruire .....	508	Contredire .....	508
Accourir, as Courir .....	494	Celindre, as Joindre .....	496	Contrefaire, as Faire .....	496
Accroître, as Croître .....	496	Choir .....	502	Contrevenir, as Venir .....	494
Accueillir, as Cueillir .....	492	Circoncise .....	508	Convaincre, as Valoivre .....	498
Acquiescer .....	492	Circonvenir, as Venir .....	494	Convenir, as Venir .....	494
Admettre, as Mettre .....	496	Clore .....	508	Corrompre, as Rompre .....	498
Aller .....	492	Combattre, as Battre .....	496	Coudre .....	496
Apparaître, as Paraître .....	498	Commettre, as Mettre .....	496	Conrir .....	492
Apparoir .....	502	Comparaître, as Paraître .....	498	Couvrir, as Ouvrir .....	494
Appartenir, as Venir .....	494	Complaire, as Plaire .....	498	Craindre, as Joindre .....	496
Apprendre, as Prendre .....	498	Comprendre, as Prendre .....	498	Croire .....	496
Assaillir .....	492	Compromettre, as Mettre .....	496	Croître .....	496
Asseoir .....	494	Conclure .....	496	Cueillir .....	492
S'Asseoir, as Asseoir .....	494	Concourir, as Courir .....	492	Cuire .....	496
Astreindre, as Joindre .....	496	Se Conduire .....	502	Débattre, as Battre .....	496
Atteindre, as Joindre .....	496	Conduire, as Cuire .....	496	Déchoir .....	494
Attraire, as Traire .....	498	Confire, as Contredire .....	508	Déclaire, as Claire .....	508
Avenir, as Venir .....	494	Conjoindre, as Joindre .....	496	Déconfiner, as Contredire .....	508
Avoir .....	477	Connaître, as Paraître .....	498	Déceudre, as Coudre .....	496
Battre .....	496	Conquiescer, as Acquiescer .....	492	Déconvenir, as Ouvrir .....	494
Bailler .....	502	Consentir, as Mentir .....	492	Décrire, as Ecrire .....	496



PAGE	PAGE	PAGE
Décroître, as Croître..... 496	Joindre..... 496	Rédire, as Lire..... 496
Se Dédire, as Contredire..... 503	Lire*..... 496	Re fleurir, as Fleurir..... 502
Déduire, as Cuire..... 496	Luire,* as Cuire..... 496	Reuire,* as Cuire..... 496
Défaillir..... 502	Maintenir, as Venir..... 494	Remettre, as Mettre..... 496
Défaire, as Faire..... 496	Maudire..... 503	Remoudre, as Moudre..... 498
Déjoindre, as Joindre..... 496	Méconnaître, as Croître..... 496	Renaitre, as Naître..... 498
Démentir, as Mentir..... 492	Médire, as Contredire..... 503	Se Rendormir, as Dormir..... 492
Déplaire, as Plaire..... 498	Mentir..... 492	Re paraître, as Paraître..... 498
Desapprendre, as Prendre..... 498	Se Méprendre, as Prendre..... 498	Re paraître, see Paraître..... 508
Deservir, as Mentir..... 492	Mésavénir, as Venir..... 494	Repartir, as Mentir..... 492
Déteindre, as Joindre..... 496	Mésseoir, as Seoir..... 502	Se Repentir, as Mentir..... 492
Détenir, as Venir..... 494	Mettre..... 496	Reprendre, as Prendre..... 498
Détruire, as Cuire..... 496	Moudre..... 498	Requérir, as Acquérir..... 492
Devenir, as Venir..... 494	Mourir..... 494	Résoudre..... 498
Se Dêvêtir, as Vêtir..... 494	Mouvoir..... 494	Ressentir, as Mentir..... 492
Dire..... 496	Naître..... 493	Ressouvenir, as Venir..... 494
Disconvenir, as Venir..... 494	Nuire,* as Cuire..... 496	Restreindre, as Joindre..... 496
Discourir, as Courir..... 492	Obtenir, as Venir..... 494	Retenir, as Venir..... 494
Disparaître, as Paraître..... 498	Offrir, as Ouvrir..... 494	Retraire, as Traire..... 498
Disoudre, as Absoudre..... 502	Oindre, as Joindre..... 496	Revaloir, as Valoir..... 494
Distraire, as Traire..... 498	Omettre, as Mettre..... 496	Revenir, as Venir..... 494
Dormir..... 492	Ouir..... 502	Revêtir, as Vêtir..... 494
Ébattre, as Battre..... 496	Ouvrir..... 494	Revivre, as Vivre..... 498
Ébouillir, as Bouillir..... 492	Paître..... 508	Revoir, as Voir..... 494
Échoir..... 502	Paraître..... 493	Rire..... 493
Éclorre..... 508	Parcourir, as Courir..... 492	Rompre..... 498
Écrire..... 496	Partir, as Mentir..... 492	Rouvrir, as Ouvrir..... 494
Élire, as Lire..... 496	Parvenir, as Venir..... 494	Saillir..... 502
Emboire, as Boire..... 496	Peindre, as Joindre..... 496	Satisfaire, as Faire..... 496
Emoudre, as Moudre..... 498	Permettre, as Mettre..... 496	Savoir..... 494
Emouvoir, as Mouvoir..... 494	Plaindre, as Joindre..... 496	Secourir, as Courir..... 492
Empreindre, as Joindre..... 496	Plaire..... 498	Séduire, as Cuire..... 496
Encœindre, as Joindre..... 496	Pleuvrir..... 501	Sentir, as Mentir..... 492
Enclore, as Clore..... 508	Poudre, as Joindre..... 496	Seoir..... 502
Encourir, as Courir..... 492	Poursuivre, as Sivre..... 498	Servir, as Mentir..... 492
Endormir, as Dormir..... 492	Pourvoir..... 502	Sortir, as Mentir..... 492
Enduire, as Cuire..... 496	Pouvoir..... 494	Souffrir, as Ouvrir..... 494
Enfermer, as Joindre..... 496	Prêdre, as Contredire..... 508	Soumettre, as Mettre..... 498
Enfuir, as Fuir..... 492	Prendre..... 498	Sourdre..... 508
Enjoindre, as Joindre..... 496	Prescrire, as Écrire..... 496	Sourire, as Rire..... 498
S'Enquérir, as Acquérir..... 492	Pressentir, as Mentir..... 492	Souscrire, as Écrire..... 498
S'Enlure, as Sivre..... 498	Prévaloir, as Valoir..... 494	Soustraire, as Traire..... 498
S'Entremettre, as Mettre..... 496	Provenir, as Venir..... 494	Soutenir, as Venir..... 494
Entr'ouvrir, as Ouvrir..... 494	Prévoir..... 502	Souvenir, as Venir..... 494
Entreprendre, as Prendre..... 498	Produire, as Cuire..... 496	Subvenir, as Venir..... 494
Entretenir, as Venir..... 494	Promettre, as Mettre..... 496	Suffire..... 508
Entrevoir, as Voir..... 494	Promouvoir, as Mouvoir..... 494	Suivre..... 498
Envoyer..... 492	Proscrire, as Écrire..... 496	Surgir..... 502
Équivaloir, as Valoir..... 494	Provenir, as Venir..... 494	Sursaire, as Faire..... 498
Êtreindre, as Joindre..... 496	Quérir, as Acquérir..... 492	Surprendre, as Prendre..... 498
Être..... 481	Rabattre, as Battre..... 496	Sursœoir..... 502
Exclure, as Conclure..... 496	Rapprendre, as Prendre..... 498	Survénir, as Venir..... 494
Extraire, as Traire..... 498	Rasseoir, as Asseoir..... 494	Survivre, as Vivre..... 498
Faillir..... 502	Rebattre, as Battre..... 496	Se Taire, as Plaire..... 498
Faire..... 496	Reboire, as Boire..... 496	Teindre, as Joindre..... 496
Falloir..... 501	Rebouillir, as Bouillir..... 492	Tenir, as Venir..... 494
Felindre, as Joindre..... 496	Reconduire, as Cuire..... 496	Tistre..... 501
Férir..... 502	Reconnaître, as Paraître..... 498	Traduire, as Cuire..... 494
Fleurir..... 502	Reconquérir, as Acquérir..... 492	Traire..... 494
Forelore..... 508	Recondre, as Coude..... 496	Transcrire, as Écrire..... 496
Frise..... 508	Recourir, as Courir..... 492	Transmettre, as Mettre..... 496
Fuir..... 492	Recouvrir, as Ouvrir..... 494	Tressaillir, as Assaillir..... 492
Gêler..... 502	Récrire, as Écrire..... 496	Vaincre..... 498
Haïr..... 508	Recroître, as Croître..... 496	Valoir..... 494
Induire, as Cuire..... 496	Recueillir, as Cueillir..... 492	Venir..... 494
Inscrire, as Écrire..... 496	Recuire, as Cuire..... 496	Vêtir..... 494
Instruire, as Cuire..... 496	Redéfaire, as Faire..... 496	Vivre..... 498
Interdire, as Contredire..... 508	Redevenir, as Venir..... 494	Voïr..... 494
Interrompre, as Rompre..... 498	Redire, as Dire..... 496	Vouloir..... 494
Intervenir, as Venir..... 494	Redormir, as Dormir..... 492	
Introduire, as Cuire..... 496	Rédire, as Lire..... 496	

\* *Luire, reluire, nuire*, have the past participles *lué, relué, and nué*.

# DICTIONARY.

## ENGLISH INTO FRENCH.

### EXPLANATIONS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

<i>adj.</i> adjective,	<i>inf.</i> interjection,	<i>prep.</i> preposition,
<i>adv.</i> adverb,	<i>m.</i> masculine,	<i>pron.</i> pronoun,
<i>art.</i> article,	<i>num.</i> numeral,	<i>rel.</i> relative,
<i>conj.</i> conjunction,	<i>part.</i> participle,	<i>s.</i> substantive,
<i>dem.</i> demonstrative,	<i>p.</i> past,	<i>c. a.</i> verb active,
<i>f.</i> feminine,	<i>pl.</i> plural,	<i>c. n.</i> verb neuter,
<i>imp.</i> impersonal,	<i>pres.</i> present,	<i>c. r.</i> verb reflective.

Letters placed after nouns, adjectives, and participles, show that the feminine terminates in those letters. Some words, so common the learner can not be supposed to require their insertion, have been omitted. The figures placed after the French words show the Lesson where such words are introduced—P denotes *preliminary*, and S *supplementary*.

#### A.

- To abide by, *s'en tenir* d, 25 S.  
 Able, *habile*, adj., 53.  
 To be able, *pouvoir*, v. n., 53.  
 About, *environ*, adv., 71.  
 Above all, *sur tout, par dessus tout*, 103.  
 Above, *au dessus de*, prep., 19 S.  
 Absence, *absence*, s. f., 1 S.  
 Absent, *absent*, a. adj., 10 S.  
 To abstain, *s'abstenir*, v. r., 93.  
 To accept, *accepter*, v. a., 71.  
 Accident, *accident*, s. m., 52.  
 To accompany, *accompagner*, v. a., 84.  
 To accomplish, *accomplir*, v. a., 26 S.  
 According to, *selon*, prep., 21 S.  
 Account, *mémoire*, s. m., 4 P.  
 To accuse, *accuser*, v. a., 6 S.  
 Acquaintance, *connaissance*, s. f., 37.  
 To acquiesce in, *en passer par*, 26 S.  
 To acquire, *acquérir*, v. a., 65.  
 Across, *d travers*, prep., 27 S.  
 To act, *agir*, v. n., 99.  
 Action, *fait, acte*, s. m., 58; *action*, s. f., 66.  
 To address, *adresser*, v. a., 8 S.  
 To address one's self, *s'adresser*, v. r., 8 S.  
 Address, *adresse*, s. f., 9 S.  
 Adieu, *adieu*. Adieu until to-morrow, *adieu jusqu'à demain*, 8 S. Adieu until we see each other again, *adieu, jusqu'au revoir*, or *au revoir*, 8 S. To bid adieu, *dire adieu*, 14 S.  
 Admirable, *admirable*, adj., 25 S.  
 Admirably well, *d merveille*, 5 S.  
 To admire, *admirer*, v. a., 41.  
 To advance, *avancer*, v. n., 5 S.  
 Advice, *conseil, avis*, s. m., 8 S.  
 To advise, *conseiller*, v. a., 6 S.  
 Adviser, *conseiller*, s. m., 23 S.  
 Affair, *affaire*, s. f., 54.  
 To affirm, *affirmer*, v. 95.  
 Africa, *Afrique*, s. f., 62.  
 After, *après*, prep., 76.  
 Afternoon, *après-midi, après-dîner*, s. f., 75.  
 Afterwards, *ensuite*, 19 S.

- Again, *encore*, adv., 29.  
 Against, *contre*, prep., 54; against one's liking, *contre son gré*; against one's will, *d contre cœur*, 2 S.  
 Age, *âge*, s. m., 72; *siècle*, s. m., 8 S.  
 To agree, *convenir*, v. 100.  
 Agreeable, *agréable*, adj., 17 P., 56.  
 To aid, *aider*, v. 98.  
 To aim at, *coucher (mettre) en jous*, 24 S.  
 Air, *air*, s. m., 27.  
 Alexander, *Alexandre*, s. m., 79.  
 All, *tout* (m.), *toute* (f.), *tous, toutes* (pl.), 15;  
*tout*, adv., 42.  
 All alone, *tout seul*, 42.  
 Ally, *allié*, 14 S.  
 Almost, *presque*, adv., 58.  
 Alone, *seul*, a. adj., 41.  
 Along, *le long de*, 70.  
 Aloud, *haut, d haute voix*, 16 S.  
 Already, *déjà*, adv., 29.  
 Also, *aussi*, adv., 9 P.  
 Although, *quoique*, conj., 66.  
 America, *Amérique*, s. f., 18.  
 American, *américain*, s. 54.  
 Amiable, *aimable*, adj., 66.  
 Among, *parmi*, prep., 91.  
 To amuse one's self, *s'amuser*, v. r., 93.  
 Amusement, *amusement*, s. m., 90.  
 Amusing, *amusant*, s. 20 S.  
 And I also, *et moi aussi*, 19 S.  
 Anger, *colère*, s. f., 65.  
 Angry, *fâché (contre)*, 64.  
 To get angry, *se fâcher*, 23 S.  
 Animal, *animal*, s. m., 11.  
 To annoy, *ennuyer, tourmenter, gêner*, v. a., 17 S.  
 Annoyance, *ennui, tourment, gêne*, s. f., 17 S.  
 Answer, *répondre*, v. n., 69.  
 Any body, *quelqu'un*, 85.  
 To appear, *apparaître*, v. n., 97.  
 Appetite, *appétit*, s. m., 56.  
 Apple, *pomme*, s. f., 1.  
 Apple-tree, *pommier*, s. m., 24 P., 11 S.  
 Apply to, *s'adresser*, v. r., 8 S.  
 To approach, *s'approcher*, v. r., 15 S.

Apology, *excuse*, a f. 88.  
 Apothecary's shop, *pharmacie*, a f. 41.  
 To appear, *paraître*, v. n. 58.  
 To apprehend, *appréhender*, v. n. 84.  
 Approach, *approche*, a f. 18 S.  
 To approve, *approuver*, 17 S.; *trouver bon*.  
 April, *avril*, a m. 68.  
 Apron, *tablier*, a m. 23 P.  
 Arithmetic, *arithmétique*, a f. 44.  
 Arm, *bras*, a m. 44.  
 Arm-chair, *fauteuil*, a m. 4 S.  
 Arms, *armes*, a f. 8 S.  
 Army, *armée*, a f. 14 S.  
 Around, *autour*, prep. 4 S.  
 Arrangement, *arrangement*, a m. 40.  
 Arrival, *arrivée*, a f. 89.  
 To arrive, *arriver*, v. n. 72.  
 As, *comme*, 73; *en*, 18 S.; *aussi*, *autant*, 50.  
 As—as, *aussi—que*, 50.  
 As many, *autant*; as many as, *autant que*, 51; as much, *autant*; as much as, *autant que*, 51.  
 As far as, *jusqu'à*, prep. 35.  
 As soon as, *aussitôt que*, *sitôt que*, *dès que*, 76.  
 As it should be, *comme il faut*, 11 S.  
 To ascend, *monter*, v. n. 50.  
 To be ashamed, *avoir honte*, 24.  
 To ask, *demande*, v. a. 68.  
 Asia, *Asie*, a f. 62.  
 To assure, *assurer*, v. 93.  
 To astonish, *étonner*, v. n. 83.  
 Astonishing, *étonnant*, e. 26 S.  
 At, *à*, prep. 61.  
 At first, *d'abord*, 9 S.  
 At all events, *quoiqu'il en soit*; at the house of, *chez*, prep. 16; at the same time, *en même temps*, or *au même instant*, 84; at the same time, at once, *à la fois*, 8 S.  
 At least, *au moins*, 71.  
 At present, *à présent*, 82 P., 42.  
 At your service, *à votre service*, *à votre disposition*, *à vos ordres*, 71.  
 At what point, *où*, *en*, 23 S.  
 Atlas, *Atlas*, a m. 26 P.  
 To attach, *attacher*, v. a. 99.  
 To attack, *attaquer*, v. a. 19 S.  
 To attain, *atteindre*, v. 69.  
 Attention, *attention*, a f. 53.  
 Attentive, *attentif*, ea. adj., 15 S.  
 August, *août*, a m. 68.  
 Aunt, *tante*, a f. 16.  
 Author, *auteur*, a m. 18 S.  
 Authority, *autorité*, a f. 94.  
 Autumn, *automne*, a c. 54.  
 Avarice, *avarice*, a f. 15 S.  
 To avoid, *éviter*, v. a. 72.  
 To awake, *éveiller*, 18 S.; *réveiller*, 18 S.; *s'éveiller*, *se réveiller*, 18 S.  
 Ax, *hache*, a f. 59.

## B.

Back, *dos*, a m. 53.  
 Back-door, *porte de derrière*, a f. 91.  
 Bad, *mauvais*, e. adj., 12 P., 3.  
 Bad fortune, *malheur*, a m. 42.  
 Badly, *mal*, adv. 82.  
 Bag, *sac*, a m. 2 P., 4.  
 Baker, *boulangier*, a m. 19.  
 Bald, *chauve*, adj., 43.  
 Ball, *bal*, a m. 65.  
 Bank-bill, *billet de banque*, a m. 25.  
 Barber, *barbier*, a m. 60.  
 Bare-foot, *nu-pieds*, *pièdes nus*, 80.  
 Bare-headed, *nu-tête*, *tête nue*, 80.

Bark, *bargue*, a f. 17.  
 Bargain, *marché*, a m. 4 S.  
 Barrel, *baril*, a m. 30.  
 Basket, *panier*, a m. 99.  
 Bat, *chauve-souris*, a f. 22.  
 Bay, *baie*, a f. 55.  
 To be, *être*, v. n. 29 P., 12.  
 Beak, *bec*, a m. 90.  
 Bean, *haricot*, a m. 20e, a f. 31.  
 Bear, *ours*, a m. 3 P.  
 To bear the stamp of, *être frappé au coin de*, 25 S.  
 Beard, *barbe*, a f. 57.  
 To beat, *battre*, v. a. 43.  
 Beauty, *beauté*, a f. 67.  
 Because, *parce que*, conj., 82.  
 To beckon, *faire signe*, v. 10 S.  
 To become, *devenir*, v. n. 81.  
 To become red, *rougir*, v. n. 90.  
 To become again, *redevenir*, v. n. 94.  
 Bed, *lit*, a m. 6 P.  
 Bed, *bonif*, a m. 11 P., 4.  
 Beer, *bière*, a f. 2.  
 Before, *devant*, *avant*, 39; *avant que*, 84.  
 To begin, *commencer*, v. a. 74.  
 Beginning, *commencement*, a m. 108.  
 To begin speaking, *prendre la parole*, 27 S.  
 To behave, *se comporter*, v. r., 90; *se conduire*, 90.  
 Behind, *derrière*, prep. 91.  
 Belief, *croyance*, a f. 19 S.  
 Bell, *cloche*, a f. 15 S.  
 To belong, *appartenir*, *être*, *de*, 64.  
 Below, *en bas*, 108.  
 Bench, *ban*, a m. 9 P., 24.  
 To bend, *ployer*, v. 24 S.  
 Benefit, *bienfait*, a m. 52.  
 Bent, *courbé*, e. *voûté*, e. 58.  
 Best, *le meilleur*, e. adj., 12; *le mieux*, 50; his best, *son mieux*; to do one's best, *faire de son mieux*, 27 S.  
 Better, *meilleur*, 59; *mieux*, 51.  
 Better than, *mieux que*, 51.  
 To be better, *valoir mieux*, 70.  
 It is better, *il vaut mieux*, 85.  
 To be better off, *être plus aisé*, 94.  
 Between, *entre*, prep. 2 S.  
 To beware, *prendre garde*, 84.  
 Beyond, *au delà de*, prep. 19 S.  
 Big, *gros*, *grosse*, adj., 5 P., 4.  
 Billet, *billet*, a m. 23.  
 Bird, *oiseau*, a m. 11.  
 Birth, *naissance*, a f. 20 S.  
 Biscuit, *biscuit*, a m. 9.  
 Bishop, *évêque*, a m. 23.  
 Bison, *bison*, a m. 20 P.  
 Bit, *morceau*, a m. 43.  
 Bitter, *amer*, e. adj., 43.  
 Black, *noir*, e. adj., 8 P., 20.  
 Blacksmith, *forgeron*, a m. 19.  
 To blame, *blâmer*, v. a. 14.  
 To lay blame on, *s'en prendre*, *de*, 24 S.  
 To bleed, *saigner*, v. a. 5 S.  
 Blind, *aveugle*, adj., 81.  
 Blindman, *aveugle*, a m. 31.  
 Blind of one eye, *borgne*, adj., 81.  
 Blow, *coup*, a m. 42.  
 Blue, *bleu*, e. adj., 12 P., 20.  
 To blush, *rougir*, v. n. 90.  
 Board, *planche*, a f. 12.  
 Boarder, *pensionnaire*, a m. 1 S.  
 Boarding-house, *pension*, a f. 1 S.  
 Boarding-school, *pensionnat*, a m. 1 S.  
 Boat, *bateau*, a m. 5 P., 51.  
 Body, *corps*, a m. 49.  
 Book, *livre*, a m. 14 P., 1.

Bookseller, *marchand de livres*, s. m., 51.  
 Boot, *botte*, s. f., 4.  
 Border, *dordure*, s. f., 40.  
 To be born, *naitre*, v. n., 67.  
 To borrow, *emprunter*, v. a., 55.  
 Both, *l'un et l'autre*, tous deux, 25.  
 Bottle, *bouteille*, s. f., 3, 7 S.  
 Bottom, *fond*, s. m., 53; *bas*, s. m., 73.  
 Bouquet, *douquet*, s. m., 73.  
 Bowl, *bol*, s. m., 5 P.  
 Box, *caisse*, s. f., 34; *botte*, s. f., 44.  
 Boy, *garçon*, s. m., 13 P., 6.  
 Brain, *cerveau*, s. m., 66.  
 Branch, *rameau*, s. m., 24 S.  
 Brandy, *eau de vie*, s. f., 99.  
 Bread, *pain*, s. m., 2.  
 Breadth, *large*, *largeur*, s. f., 14 S.  
 To break, *casser*, 31; *rompre*, 19 S.  
 To break through, *se faire jour à travers*, 27 S.  
 Breakfast, *déjeuner*, s. m., 60.  
 To breakfast, *déjeuner*, 61.  
 Breast, *poitrine*, s. f., 66.  
 To breathe, *respirer*, v. n., 12 S.  
 Brick, *brigue*, s. f., 19.  
 Bridle, *bride*, s. f., 34.  
 Bridge, *pont*, s. m., 19 S.  
 Brief, *bref*, s. m., 3 P.  
 Brilliant, *brillant*, e, adj., 22 P.  
 To bring, *apporter*, v. a., 44; *amener*, v. a., 60.  
 To bring near, *approcher*, v., 15 S.  
 Britains, *Bretons*, s. m., 79.  
 Broad, *large*, adj., 43.  
 Brook, *ruisseau*, s. m., 24.  
 Broom, *balai*, s. m., 4 P., 14.  
 Brother, *frère*, s. m., 15 P., 5.  
 Brother-in-law, *beau-frère*, s. m., 13.  
 Brown, *brun*, e, adj., 12 P.  
 Brush, *brosse*, s. f., 12.  
 Bucket, *seau*, s. m., 5 P., 20 S.  
 Buckwheat, *sarrasin*, s. m., *blé noir*, 61.  
 Buckwheat cake, *crêpe de sarrasin*, 61.  
 Buffalo, *buffle*, s. m., 17 P.  
 Build, *bâtir*, v. a., 72.  
 Bushel, *boisseau*, s. m., 66.  
 Business, *affaire*, s. f., 54.  
 But, *mais*, conj., 23 P., 23.  
 But not, *mais non*, *mais non pas*, 22.  
 But little, *ne-guère*, 67.  
 Butcher, *boucher*, s. m., 3 P.  
 Butter, *beurre*, s. m., 11 P., 3.  
 Button, *bouton*, s. m., 15 P., 6.  
 To buy, *acheter*, v. a., 24.  
 By, *par*, prep., 56.  
 By the side of, *à côté de*, 31.  
 By dint of, *d force de*, 2 S.  
 By means of, *au moyen de*.

C.

Cabbage, *chou*, c. m., 8 P., 61.  
 Cable, *câble*, s. m., 17 P.  
 Caesar, *César*, s. m., 79.  
 Cage, *cage*, s. f., 10 S.  
 Cake, *gâteau*, s. m., 6 P., 11.  
 Calf, *veau*, s. m., 6 S.  
 To call, *appeler*, v. a., 78.  
 To call (style), *traiter de*, 27 S.  
 To call each other thou and thee, *tutoyer*, v. a., 23 S.  
 Charitable, *charitable*, adj., 106.  
 Camel, *chameau*, s. m., 17 P.  
 It can be, *il se peut*, 8 S.  
 Canada, *Canada*, s. m., 62.

Candle, *chandelle*, s. f., 2.  
 Candlestick, *chandelier*, s. m., 2.  
 Cannon, *canon*, s. m., 18 P.  
 Cannon-ball, *boulet*, s. m., 8 P.  
 Canopy, *daïs*, s. m., 3 P.  
 Cap, *bonnet*, s. m., 9.  
 Captain, *capitaine*, s. m., 8.  
 Care, *soin*, s. m., 84.  
 To take care, *avoir soin*, 33.  
 For cash, cash down, *comptant*, *au comptant*, *argent comptant*, 54.  
 Carpenter, *charpentier*, s. m., 23 P., 19.  
 Carpet, *tapis*, s. m., 6 P., 6.  
 Carriage, *voiture*, s. f., 11.  
 To carry, *porter*, v. a., 26.  
 To carry away, *emporter*, v. a., 7 S.  
 Cart, *charrette*, s. f., 57.  
 Case, *caisse*, s. f., 33; *cas*, s. m., 4 S.  
 Cashmere, *cachemire*, 3 S.  
 Cask, *tonneau*, s. m., 30.  
 To cast down, *balancer*, v. a., 30.  
 Cat, *chat*, s. m., 2 P., 22.  
 Catholic, *catholique*, 20 S.  
 Cauliflower, *chou-fleur*, s. m., 13.  
 To cause, *causer*, v. a., 54.  
 Cause, *cause*, s. f., 76.  
 Cavern, *caverne*, s. f., 14.  
 To cease, *cesser*, v., 97.  
 Cedar, *cedre*, s. m., 14 P.  
 Cellar, *cave*, s. f., 14.  
 Cent, *ecu*, *cent*, s. m., 54.  
 Century, *siècle*, s. m., 8 S.  
 Ceremony, *cérémonie*, s. f., 77.  
 Certain, *certain*, e, adj., 16.  
 Certainly, *certainement*, adv., 58.  
 Chain, *chaîne*, s. f., 56.  
 Chair, *chaise*, s. f., 4.  
 Champagne, *champagne*, 66.  
 Change, *monnaie*, s. f., 77.  
 To change, *changer*, v. a., 67.  
 To charm, *charmer*, v. a., 67.  
 Charmed, *charmé*, e, 75.  
 Charming, *charmant*, e, adj., 18, 51.  
 Cheap, *à bon marché*, 57.  
 Cheek, *joue*, s. f., 77.  
 Cheese, *fromage*, s. m., 8 P., 43.  
 Cherry, *cerise*, s. f., 8.  
 Cherry-tree, *cerisier*, s. m., 24 P.  
 Chest, *coffre*, s. m., 14.  
 Chicken, *poulet*, s. m., 3.  
 Chief, *chef*, s. m., 2 P.  
 Child, *enfant*, s. m., 24 P., 16.  
 Chill, *frisson*, s. m., 21 S.  
 Chimney, *cheminée*, s. f., 99.  
 Chin, *menton*, s. m., 59.  
 China, *porcelaine*, s. f., 7.  
 Chink, *sente*, s. f., 42.  
 Chocolate, *chocolat*, s. m., 23.  
 To choose, *choisir*, v. a., 23.  
 Christ, *Christ*, s. m., 30 S.  
 Christian, *chrétien*, s. m., 20 S.  
 Christian era, *ère chrétienne*, 20 S.  
 Christmas, *noël*, s. m., 21 S.  
 Church, *église*, s. f., 23.  
 Cicero, *Cicéron*, s. m., 1 S.  
 Cider, *cidre*, s. m., 6 P.  
 Cigar, *cigare*, s. m., 81.  
 Ciphering, *calcul*, s. m., 73.  
 Circumference, *circonférence*, s. f., 15 S.  
 City, *ville*, s. f., 16.  
 To claim, *reclamer*, v. a., 16 S.  
 Class, *classe*, s. f., 16 S.  
 Clean, *propre*, adj., 23.  
 To clean, *nettoyer*, v. a., 73.  
 Clerk, *commis*, s. m., 22.  
 Climate, *climat*, s. m., 27.

Cloak, *manteau*, a m., 12 P., 8.  
 Clock, *horloge*, a f., *pendule*, a f., 14.  
 Closet, *armoire*, a f., 20.  
 Cloth, *drap*, a m., 2 P., 7.  
 To clothe, *habiller*, v. a., 67.  
 Clothes-press, *garde-robe*, a f., 20.  
 Cloud, *nuage*, a m., 64.  
 Coal, *charbon*, a m., 17 P., 9.  
 Coarse, *gross*, a., adj., 5 P., 4.  
 Coat, *habit*, a m., 7 P., 7.  
 Codfish, *morue*, a f., 14.  
 Coffee, *café*, a m., 2 P.  
 Coffee-cup, *tasse de café*, a f., 51.  
 Coffee with milk, *café au lait*, 61.  
 Coffee without milk, *café noir*, 61.  
 Cold, *froid*, adj., 1 P., a m., 24.  
 Cold, *rhume*, a m., 68.  
 College, *collège*, a m., 78.  
 Color, *couleur*, a f., 40.  
 Comb, *peigne*, a m., 21 P.  
 To come, *venir*, v. n., 23.  
 To come again, *revenir*, v. n., 52.  
 Comedian, *comédien*, a m., 15 S.  
 To command, *commander*, v., 84.  
 Commendable, *louable*, adj., 77.  
 Common, *commun*, a., adj., 6 S.  
 To commit, *commettre*, v., 105.  
 To communicate, *faire part de* (d), 26 S.  
 Companion, *camarade*, a m., 21 P., 105;  
*compagnon*, a m., 103.  
 Company, *compagnie*, a f., 43.  
 To complain, *se plaindre*, v. r., 5 S.  
 Complete, *complet*, e., adj., 23 S.  
 Complexion, *teint*, a m., 12 S.  
 Compliment, *compliment*, a m., 9 S.  
 To compose, *composer*, v. a., 6 S.  
 To comprehend, *comprendre*, v. a., 48.  
 Computation, *calcul*, a m., 78.  
 Comrade, *camarade*, a m., 7 P.  
 To conceal, *cacher*, v. a., 8 S.  
 To conceive, *concevoir*, v., 82.  
 To conclude, *conclure*, v., 95.  
 Conditional, *conditionnel*, adj., 2 S.  
 To conduct, *conduire*, v. a., 84.  
 Conduct, *conduite*, a f., 3 S.  
 Conductor, *conducteur*, a m., 19 S.  
 To confess, *avouer*, v., 96; *confesser*, v., 19.  
 To confide, *confier*, v. a., 41.  
 Conformed, *conformé*, adj., 96.  
 Congress, *congrès*, a m., 6 S.  
 Conqueror, *vainqueur*, a m., 18 S.; as con-  
 queror, *en conquérant*, 8 S.  
 To conquer, *conquérir*, v. a., 79.  
 To consent, *consentir*, v., 65.  
 Consequently, *conséquemment*, adv., 5.  
 Constantly, *constamment*, adv., 6 S.  
 To construct, *construire*, v. a., 90.  
 To contain, *contenir*, v. a., 6 S.  
 To be contending, *être aux prises*, 26 S.  
 On the contrary, *au contraire*, 72.  
 To cook, *cuire*, v. a., 69.  
 Cook, *cuisinier*, *ère*, s., 10.  
 Cooked, *cuit*, e., adj., 81.  
 Cool, *fraîche*, *fraiche*, adj., 4 P., 20.  
 Copper, *cuivre*, a m., 16 P., 13.  
 Copy-book, *cahier*, a m., 23 P., 5.  
 Coral, *corail*, a m., 22 P.  
 Cord, *corde*, a f., 15.  
 Cordial, *liqueur*, a f., 59.  
 Corn, *blé*, a m., 2 P.  
 Corner, *coin*, a m., 8 S.  
 Corporal, *caporal*, a m., 11.  
 To correct, *corriger*, v. a., 60.  
 Correct, *correct*, e., adj., 69.  
 To cost, *coûter*, v. a., 63.  
 Cotton, *coton*, a m., 5.

To cough, *tousser*, v. n., 72.  
 Counsel, *conseil*, *avis*, a m., 3 S.; *opinion*,  
 a f., 3 S.  
 To count, *compter*, v. a., 40.  
 Counterfeit, *faux*, *usure*, 52.  
 Country, *campagne*, a f., 16; *pays*, a m.,  
 27.  
 Countryman, *payean*, *ne*, a., 19 P., 10.  
 Country-house, *maison de campagne*, a f.,  
 72.  
 Courage, *courage*, a m., 83.  
 Cousin, *cousin*, e., a., 90 P., 6.  
 To cover, *couvrir*, v. a., 64.  
 Cow, *vache*, a f., 4.  
 Cravat, *cravate*, a f., 7.  
 Crazy, *fou*, *folle*, adj., 61.  
 Crazyness, *folie*, a f., 4 S.  
 Cream, *crème*, a f., 8.  
 To create, *créer*, v. a., 20 S.  
 Credit, *crédit*, a m., 46.  
 On credit, *d crédit*, 54.  
 Creditor, *créancier*, a m., 15 S.  
 Credulous, *crédule*, adj., 67.  
 Crop, *récolte*, a f., 88.  
 Crown, *couronne*, a f., 7 S.  
 To cry, *crier*, v. n., 6 S.  
 To cry out, *s'écrier*, v. r., 6 S.  
 Cucumber, *concombre*, a m., 14 P.  
 Cup, *tasse*, a f., 15.  
 Cupboard, *buffet*, a m., 30.  
 Curdled, *caillé*, p. part., 23 P.  
 To cure, *guérir*, v. a., 13 S.  
 Curtain, *rideau*, a m., 6 P.  
 Curved, *coûlé*, e., 58.  
 Cushion, *coussin*, a m., 20 P.  
 To cut, cut off, *couper*, v. a., 80.

## D.

Damp, *humide*, adj., 56.  
 To dance, *danser*, v. n., 82.  
 Dancing, *dance*, a f., 90.  
 Dancing-school, *école de danse*, a f., 18 S.  
 Danger, *danger*, a m., 72.  
 Dangerous, *dangerous*, e., adj., 77.  
 To dare, *oser*, v. n., 13 S.  
 Dark, *sombre*, *obscur*, adj., 54.  
 Dart, *dard*, a m., 4 P.  
 Daughter, *filie*, a f., 6.  
 Daughter-in-law, *belle-fille*, a f., 26.  
 Day, *jour*, a m., 54.  
 Day after to-morrow, *après-demain*, 44.  
 Day before yesterday, *avant-hier*, 44.  
 Dead, *mort*, e., adj., 5 P., 23.  
 Dean, *doyen*, a m., 19 P.  
 Deaf, *sourd*, e., adj., 104.  
 Dear, *cher*, *ère*, adj., 57.  
 Debt, *dette*, a f., 13 S.  
 Debtor, *débiteur*, a m., 15 S.  
 To deceive, *tromper*, v. a., 75.  
 December, *décembre*, a m., 63.  
 To decide, *décider*, v. a., 19 S.  
 To declare, *déclarer*, v., 95.  
 Deed, *fait*, *acte*, e., 53.  
 Deer, *daim*, a m., 9 P.  
 Defect, *défaut*, a m., 85.  
 To defend, *défendre*, v. a., 84.  
 Definite, *défini*, 100.  
 Definition, *définition*, a f., 25 S.  
 To delay, *tarder*, v., 18 S.  
 Delirium, *délire*, a m., 5 S.  
 To demand, *demander*, *exiger*, v., 96.  
 Demijohn, *dame-jeanne*, a f., 28.  
 Den, *caverne*, a f., 14.  
 Denmark, *Danemark*, a m., 61.

Dentist, *dentiste*, a. m., 7 S.  
 To deny, *nier*, v. a., 87; *disconvenir*, 87.  
 To depart, *partir*, v. n., 41.  
 Department, *département*, a. m., 23 S.  
 Departure, *départ*, a. m., 12 S.  
 Depth, *profondeur*, a. f., 14 S.  
 To descend, *descendre*, v., 13.  
 To descend again, *redescendre*, 97.  
 To describe, *dépeindre*, v. a., 25.  
 To desire, *désirer*, v. a., 18.  
 Desire, *désir*, a. m., 104.  
 Desk, *pupitre*, a. m., 1.  
 Despair, *désespoir*, a. m., 25 S.  
 To despair, *désespérer*, v., 87.  
 To despise, *mépriser*, v. a., 60.  
 Destined, *destiné*, a. f., 26 S.  
 Destiny, *destinée*, a. f., 19 S.  
 To destroy, *détruire*, v. a., 7 S.  
 Diameter, *diamètre*, a. m., 16 S.  
 Diamond, *diamant*, a. m., 19 P.  
 Dictionary, *dictionnaire*, a. m., 26 P., 21.  
 To die, *mourir*, v. n., 65; *décéder*, v. n., 96.  
 Difference, *différence*, a. f., 2 S.  
 Different, *différent*, a. f., 2 S.  
 Differently, *différemment*, adv., 88.  
 Difficult, *difficile*, adj., 45.  
 Difficulty, *difficulté*, a. f., 82.  
 Diligent, *diligent*, a. f., 74.  
 To dine, *dîner*, v. n., 61.  
 Dinner, *dîner*, a. m., 61.  
 To direct, *diriger*, v. a., 21 S.  
 Dirty, *sale*, adj., 83.  
 To disappear, *disparaître*, v. n., 97.  
 To disapprove, *trouver mauvais*, 84.  
 Discourse, *discours*, a. m., 9 S.  
 To discourse, *discourir*, 11 S.  
 Discreet, *sage*, adj., 87.  
 Dish, *plat*, a. m., 2 P., 2; *mette*, a. m., 7 S.  
 Disinterestedly, *sans intérêt*, 87.  
 Disobedient, *désobéissant*, a. f., 15 S.  
 Displeased, *mécontent*, a. f., 84.  
 To be displeased, *avoir mauvais gré*, 7 S.  
 Disposal, *disposition*, a. f., 40.  
 Distance, *distance*, a. f., 71.  
 Distinctly, *distinctement*, adv., 7 S.  
 Divine, *divin*, a. f., 4 S.  
 To do (in health), *se porter*, v. r., 98.  
 To do evil, *faire du mal*, 79.  
 To do good, *faire du bien*, 79.  
 To do without, *se passer de*, 8 S.  
 Docile, *docile*, adj., 104.  
 Doctor, *docteur*, a. m., 17.  
 Dog, *chien*, a. m., 17 P., 9.  
 Dollar, *dollar*, a. m.; *plastre*, a. f.; *gourde*, a. f., 19.  
 Door, *porte*, a. f., 17.  
 Double, *double*, adj., 17 P.  
 To doubt, *douter*, v. a., 88; without doubt, *sans doute*, 65.  
 Doubtful, *douteux*, a. f., 85.  
 Down stairs, *en bas*, 108.  
 Dozan, *douzaine*, a. f., 94.  
 To draw, *tirer*, v. a., 2 S.  
 Drawer,  *tiroir*, a. m., 43.  
 To dream, *rêver*, v. n., 18 S.  
 Dress, *robe*, a. f., 1.  
 To dress, *habiller*, v. a., 90.  
 To drink, *boire*, v. a., 45.  
 Drink-money, *pour boire*, a. m., 18.  
 Drunk, *ivre*, *gris*, adj., 51.  
 To get drunk, *s'enivrer*, v. r., 21 S.  
 Drunkard, *ivrogne*, a. m., 22 P., 52.  
 During, *pendant*, 60; *durant*, 65; *pendant que*, 60.  
 Duty, *devoir*, a. m., 49.  
 To dry, *écher*, v. a., 89.

Dry, *sec*, *sèche*, adj., 49.  
 Dryness, *sécheresse*, a. f., 55.  
 Duck, *canard*, a. m., 83.  
 Duc, *dé*, a. m., 65.  
 Duke, *duc*, a. m., 25 S.  
 Duration, *durée*, a. f., 104.  
 To dwell, *demeurer*, v. a., 83.  
 To dye, *teindre*, v. a., 93.

E.

Each, *chaque*, adj., 64.  
 Each one, *chacun*, pron., 12 P., 49, 64.  
 Ear, *oreille*, a. f., 99.  
 Earlier, *de meilleure heure*, 68.  
 Early, *de bonne heure*, 68.  
 Early in the morning, *de bon matin*, *de grand matin*, 92.  
 Earth, *terre*, a. f., 61.  
 Earthquake, *trémblement de terre*, a. m., 17 S.  
 Easily, *facilement*, adv., 40.  
 Easy, *facile*, adj., 45.  
 East, *est*, a. m., 39.  
 To eat, *manger*, v. a., 64.  
 Edward, *Edouard*, a. m., 5.  
 Egg, *œuf*, a. m., 16 P., 10.  
 Elbow, *coudé*, a. m., 9 S.  
 Elegant, *élégant*, a. f., 105.  
 Elephant, *éléphant*, a. m., 12 P., 17 S.  
 Eloquence, *éloquence*, a. f., 9 S.  
 Eloquent, *éloquent*, a. f., 9 S.  
 Elsewhere, *ailleurs*, adv., 78.  
 To embarrass, *embarrasser*, v. a., 22 S.  
 To embrace, *embrasser*, v. a., 22 S.  
 Emperor, *empereur*, a. m., 13 S.  
 To employ, *employer*, v. a., 95.  
 To employ to advantage, *faire valoir*, 19 S.  
 Employment, *emploi*, a. m., 97.  
 Empty, *vide*, adj., 80.  
 In emulation, *d'envie*, 24 S.  
 To encumber, *embarrasser*, v. a., 83.  
 End, *fin*, a. f., 69; *bout*, a. m., 9 S.  
 Enemy, *ennemi*, a. m., 18.  
 Engagement, *engagement*, a. m., 10 S.  
 England, *Angleterre*, a. f., 18.  
 English, *anglais*, a. f., 27.  
 To enjoy, *jouir*, v. a., 92.  
 Enough, *assez* (*de*), adv., 17 P., 51.  
 To enter, *entrer*, v. n., 76, 96.  
 Entire, *entier*, *ère*, adj., 97.  
 To entreat, *supplier*, 23 S.  
 Epigram, *épigramme*, a. f., 16.  
 Episcopal, *épiscopal*, a. f., 22 S.  
 Epoch, *époque*, a. f., 30 S.  
 Error, *erreur*, *méprise*, a. f., 55.  
 To escape, *échapper*, v. n., 97.  
 To escape with, *en être quitte pour*, 26 S.  
 To esteem, *estimer*, v. a., 60.  
 Eve, *veille*, a. f., 21 S.  
 Even, *même*, adv., 41.  
 Even if, *quand même*, 95.  
 Even with, *à fleur de*, 19 S.  
 Evening, *soir*, a. m., 32 P., 29; *cotée*, a. f., 67.  
 Event, *événement*, a. m., 80.  
 Ever, *jamais*, adv., 29.  
 Every body, *tout le monde*, 40.  
 Every, *tous les*, etc., 73.  
 Every where, *partout*, adv., 40.  
 Evidently, *évidemment*, adv., 12 S.  
 Evil, *mal*, a. m.; *tori*, a. m., 49.  
 Exactly so, *tout juste*, 41; *exactement*, 96.  
 Exalted, *exalté*, 26 S.  
 To exceed, *dépasser*, v. a., 26 S.  
 Excellent, *excellent*, a. f., 10.

To exclaim, *s'écrier*, v. r., 6 S.  
 Excuse, *excuse*, a. f., 83.  
 To execute, *exécuter*, v. a., 19 S.  
 Executive, *exécutif*, ce, adj., 23 S.  
 Exercise, *exercice*, a. m., 12; *exercice*, a. m., 56.  
 To exist, *exister*, a. f., 22 S.  
 Expense, *dépense*, a. f., 49; *dépenses*, 49.  
 To expire, *expirer*, 97.  
 To explain, *expliquer*, v. a., 1 S.  
 To express, *exprimer*, v. a., 96.  
 To extinguish, *éteindre*, v. a., 55.  
 Extraordinary, *extraordinaire*, adj., 54.  
 Extreme, *extrême*, adj., 14 S.  
 Extremely, *extrêmement*, adv., 14 S.  
 Extremity, *extrémité*, a. f., 5 S.  
 Eye, *œil*, pl.; *yeux*, a. m., 43.

## F.

Face, *visage*, a. m.; *figure*, a. f., 49.  
 To face, *faire face*, 10 S.  
 Fact, *fait*, act., a. m., 58.  
 To fail, *manquer*, v., 10 S.  
 To fail of satisfying, *laisser à désirer*, 25 S.  
 Faith, *foi*, a. f., 74.  
 Fall, *tomber*, v. n., 59; *choir*, v. n., 96.  
 To fall again, *retomber*, v. n., 96.  
 To fall to, *échoir*, v. n., like *déchoir*, p. 494;  
 False, *faux*, se, adj., 52. [also p. 604.  
 Falsely, *faussetement*, adv., 6 S.  
 To be familiar with, *être au fait*, 23 S.  
 Family, *famille*, a. f., 89.  
 Family teacher, *précepteur*, a. m., 14 S.  
 Famous, *fameux*, se, adj., 6 S.  
 Fan, *éventail*, a. m., 23 P.  
 Far, *loin*, adv., 71.  
 To fire a gun, *tirer un fusil*, 24 S.  
 Farmer, *fermier*, a. m., 10 S.  
 Fashion, *mode*, a. f., 57.  
 Fat, *gras*, se, adj., 4 P., 42.  
 Fate, *destin*, a. m., *destinée*, a. f., 19 S.  
 Father, *père*, a. m., 15 P., 6.  
 Father-in-law, *beau-père*, a. m., 86.  
 To fatigue, *fatiguer*, v. a., 71.  
 Fault, *défaut*, a. m., 55; *faute*, a. f., 55.  
 Favor, *grâce*, a. f., 23 S.  
 Fear, *peur*, a. f., 24.  
 To fear, *appréhender*, v. a., 54; *craindre*,  
 v. a., 54.  
 For fear that, *de peur que, de crainte que*, 86.  
 February, *février*, a. m., 63.  
 To feel, *sentir*, v. a., 42.  
 To feign, *feindre*, v. a., 8 S.  
 Fellow-man, *semblable*, 16 S.  
 Feminine, *féminin*, e, adj., 18.  
 Fever, *fièvre*, a. f., 27.  
 Field, *champ*, a. m., 9 P., 16 S.  
 Fifty, *cinquante*, a. f., 94.  
 Fig, *figue*, a. f., 76.  
 To fight, *se battre*, v. r., 23 S.  
 Fig-tree, *figuier*, a. m., 24 P.  
 Figure, *taille*, a. f., 49; *forme, figure*, 74.  
 To fill (with), *remplir (de)*, v. a., 32.  
 To find, *trouver*, v. a., 30.  
 To find fault with, *trouver à redire*, 24 S.  
 Fine, *fin*, e, 41; *beau, belle*, 5 P., 8.  
 Finger, *doigt*, a. m., 1 P., 37.  
 Finger-ring, *bague*, a. f., 7.  
 To finish, *finir*, v. a., 37.  
 Fire, *feu*, a. m., 11 P., 29.  
 Fireman, *pompier*, a. m., 21 S.  
 Firewood, *bûts à brûler*, a. m., 7 S.  
 Fir-tree, *épin*, a. m., 24 S.  
 Fish, *poisson*, a. m., 20 P., 15.  
 Fisherman, *pêcheur*, a. m., 16 P., 19.

Fishing, *pêche*, a. f., 105.  
 Fist, *poing*, a. m., 14 S.  
 To fit, *aller bien, voir*, 76; not to fit, *aller mal, ne pas bien aller*, 74.  
 Fixed, *fixe*, adj., 55.  
 Flash (of lightning), *éclair*, a. m., 6 S.  
 To flatter, *flatter*, v. a., 58.  
 To flatter one's self, *se flatter*, v. r., 93.  
 Flattery, *flatterie*, a. f., 91.  
 Flax, *lin*, a. m., 9 P.  
 Flexible, *flexible*, adj., 24 S.  
 Flint, *caillou*, a. m., 22 P.  
 Floor, *plancher*, a. m., 29 P., 12.  
 Flour, *farine*, a. f., 2.  
 Flower, *fleur*, a. f., 2.  
 Flute, *flûte*, a. f., 64.  
 To fly, *s'enfuir*, v. n., 14 S.  
 Fly, *mouche*, a. f., 16 S.  
 Fog, *brouillard*, a. m., 50.  
 Follow, *suivre*, v. a., 37.  
 Food, *aliment*, a. m., 20 S.  
 Fool, *sot*, 106.  
 Foolish, *sot, sotie*, adj., 1 S.  
 Foolishly, *follement*, adv., 31.  
 Foot, *piéd*, a. m., 33.  
 On foot, *à pied, de pied*, 56.  
 For, *pour*, prep., 51. For, after a verb of motion, is *chercher*, 73.  
 For, *car*, conj., 78.  
 To forbid, *défendre*, v. a., 24.  
 Foreigner, *étranger*, ère, a. m., 10.  
 Fore-runner, *avant-coureur*, a. m., 12.  
 To forget, *oublier*, v. a., 23.  
 To foresee, *prévoir*, v. a., 72.  
 Fork, *fourchette*, a. f., 2.  
 Form, *forme*, a. f., 74.  
 Formerly, *autrefois*, adv., 60.  
 Forthwith, *à l'instant, sur le champ, tout de suite*, 42.  
 Forty, *quarantaine*, a. f., 94.  
 Fortunate, *fortuné*, e, adj., 44.  
 Fountain, *fontaine*, a. f., 85.  
 Fox, *renard*, a. m., 12 P., 105.  
 Frame, *cadre*, a. m., 14 P.  
 France, *France*, a. f., 18.  
 Free, *libre*, adj., 20 S.  
 To freeze, *geler*, v. n., 62.  
 Frenchman, *français*, 27.  
 Frequently, *fréquemment*, adv., 55.  
 Fresh, *fraîche*, adj., 4 P., 30.  
 Friday, *jeudi*, a. m., 58. *pt. de la semaine*  
 Friend, *ami*, e, a. m., 16 P., 6.  
 Friendship, *amitié*, a. f., 91.  
 To frighten, *faire peur (à)*, 16 S.  
 Frightened, *effrayé*, e, 108.  
 From here, *d'ici*, 42.  
 From time to time, *de temps en temps*, 71.  
 Front door, *porte de devant*, 91.  
 Fruit, *fruit*, a. m., 10 P.  
 Fruit-tree, *arbre fruitier*, a. m., 85.  
 Full, *plein*, e, adj., 30.  
 Further, furthermore, *davantage*, 67.  
 Fury, *furie*, a. f., *sureur*, a. f., 24 S.  
 Future, *futur*, e, adj., 97; *avenir*, a. m., 58.  
 In future, *à l'avenir*, 5 S.

## G.

To gain, *gagner*, v. a., 56.  
 Gallant, *galant*, e, adj., 56.  
 Game, *jeu*, a. m., 11 P., 11 S.  
 Garden, *jardin*, a. m., 16 P., 15.  
 Gardener, *jardinier*, ère, a. m., 23 P., 30.  
 To gather, *cueillir*, v. a., 63.  
 Gauls, *gaulois*, a. m., 79.

Gay, gai, a. adj., 52.  
 General, général, a. m., 23 P., 11.  
 Generous, généreux, se, adj., 19.  
 Gentleman, monsieur, a. m., 1.  
 Geography, géographie, a. f., 45.  
 George, George, a. m., 1 P.  
 German, allemand, a. 27.  
 To get, followed by a past part., *is faire*, 88.  
 To get well, guérir, v. n., 13 S.  
 To get clear for, etc., *en être quitte pour*, 26 S.  
 To get used to, *se faire à*, 93.  
 To get off, *s'en tirer à*.  
 Girl, fille, a. f., 6.  
 To give, donner, v. a., 27 P., 26.  
 To give it up (in guessing), *jeter sa langue aux chiens*, 27 S.  
 Glad, aise, adj., 104.  
 Glance, coup d'œil, 15 S.  
 Glass, verre, a. m., 8 P. 8.  
 Glass (pano), vitre, a. f., 16.  
 Globe, globe, a. m., 5 P. 74.  
 Glove, gant, a. m., 9 P. 4.  
 To go up again, remonter, v. n., 96.  
 To gnaw, ronger, v. a., 73.  
 To go, aller, v. n., 22 P., 16.  
 To go to bed, *se coucher*, 5 S.; *aller se coucher*, 12 S.  
 To go up, monter, v. n., 50.  
 To go out, sortir, v. n., 29.  
 To go away, *s'en aller*, v. r., 13 S.  
 To go a hunting, *aller à la chasse*, 105.  
 To go a fishing, *aller à la pêche*, 105.  
 To go a mile, *faire un mille*, 67.  
 Goat, chèvre, a. f., 8.  
 God, Dieu, a. m., 53.  
 Gold, or, a. m., 5 P. 7.  
 Good, bien, a. m., 49.  
 Good, bon, na, adj., 13 P., 4.  
 Good evening, bonsoir, a. m., 74.  
 Good fortune, bonheur, a. m., 43.  
 Good morning, bonjour, a. m., 74.  
 Goodness, bonté, a. f., 43.  
 Good night, bonne nuit, a. f., 74.  
 To govern, gouverner, v. a., 95.  
 Governor, gouverneur, a. m., 83.  
 Gown, robe, a. f., 7.  
 Grain, blé, grain, a. m., 61; *graine*, 71.  
 Grammar, grammaire, a. f., 21.  
 Grand-daughter, petite-fille, a. f., 36.  
 Grandfather, grand-père, a. m., 36.  
 Grandmother, grand-mère, a. f., 36.  
 Grandson, petit-fils, a. m., 36.  
 To grant, accorder, v. a., 11 S.  
 Grapes, raisins, a. m., 4 S.  
 To be grateful for, *savoir gré de*, 54.  
 Gray, gris, a. adj., 84.  
 Great Britain, Grande-Bretagne, 108.  
 Greece, Grèce, a. f., 62.  
 Greek, grec, grecque, adj., 49.  
 Green, vert, a. adj., 8 P., 20, 84.  
 Grocer, grocier, a. m., 18.  
 Ground, terre, a. f., 61.  
 To grow, croître, v. n., 97.  
 To have a grudge (against), *en vouloir (à)*, 24 S.  
 Gravel, gravau, a. m., 14 P.  
 Guard, garde, a. f., 90.  
 To guess, deviner, v. n., 87; I give you three guesses, *je vous le donne en trois*, 27 S.  
 Guilty, coupable, adj., 96.  
 Gun, fusil, a. m., 24 P., 12.

HE.

Habitual, habituel, adj., 97.  
 Hackney-coach, fiacre, a. m., 13 S.

You had better, *vous feriez bien, vous feriez mieux*, 89.  
 To hail, grêler, v. n., 12 S.  
 Hair, cheveu, a. m.; pl., *cheveux*, 44.  
 Half, moitié, a. f., 17.  
 Half demt, e, adj., 71.  
 Hall, salle, a. f., 1 S.  
 Ham, jambon, a. m., 12.  
 Hammer, marteau, a. m., 7 P., 15.  
 Hand, main, a. f., 23.  
 Handful, poignée, a. f., 25 S.  
 Handkerchief, mouchoir, a. m., 10 P., 18.  
 Handle, manche, a. m., 54.  
 Handsome, beau, belle, adj., 5 P., 8.  
 To happen, avenir, advenir, v. n., 96.  
 To happen to be, *se trouver*, v. r., 5 S.  
 Happy, heureux, se, adj., 44.  
 Hard, dur, a. adj., 10 P., 29, 80.  
 Hardly, à peine, 70.  
 Hare, lièvre, a. m., 14 P.  
 Harm, mal, a. m., tort, a. m., 49.  
 Harvest, récolte, a. f., 88.  
 Hat, chapeau, a. m., 17 P., 4.  
 To hate, haïr, v. a., 75.  
 Hatter, chapelier, a. m., 23 P., 40.  
 To have, avoir, v. a., 1.  
 To have need, *avoir besoin*, 83.  
 To have a mind, desire, fancy, *avoir envie*, 67.  
 To have, followed by a past participle, *is faire*, 88.  
 Hay, foin, a. m., 11 S.  
 Head, tête, a. f., 33.  
 Head-dress, coiffure, a. f., 76.  
 Health, santé, a. f., 43.  
 Healthy, sain, e, adj., 53.  
 Heap, tas, a. m., 4 P.  
 Hear, entendre, v. a., 45. To be hard of hearing, *avoir l'ouïe dure*, 99.  
 Heart, cœur, a. m., 11 P., 68; by heart, *par cœur*, 11 S.  
 Hearth, foyer,âtre, a. m., 23 P., 20 S.  
 Heartily, de bon cœur, de bon gré, 67.  
 Heat, chaleur, a. f., 11 S.  
 Heavy, lourd, e, adj., 9 S.  
 Height, haut, a. m.; hauteur, a. f., 14 S.  
 To help one's self, *se servir*, v. r., 2 S.  
 Hemp, chanvre, a. m., 15 P.  
 Hen, poule, a. f., 8.  
 Henry, Henri, a. m., 5 P., 53.  
 Herb, herbe, a. f., 18 S.  
 Hero, héros, a. m., 8 S.  
 Himself, elle-même, 101.  
 Here, ici, adv., 29 P., 12.  
 Here is, here are, *voilà*, 71.  
 High, haut, e, adj., 43.  
 Himself, lui-même, 101.  
 To hinder, empêcher, v., 84.  
 Hinge, gond, a. m., 13 P.  
 Historian, historien, a. m., 8 S.  
 History, histoire, a. f., 18.  
 Hoc, houe, a. f., 57.  
 To hold, tenir, v. n., 28.  
 Hole, trou, a. m., 8 P., 42.  
 At home, à la maison, 95.  
 Honest, honnête, adj., 11.  
 Honey, miel, a. m., 9 S.  
 Honesty, honnêteté, a. f., 14 S.  
 Honor, honneur, a. m., 44.  
 To honor, honorer, v. a., 8 S.  
 Honorable, honorable, adj., 10 S.  
 Hook, crochet, a. m., 5 P.  
 To hope, espérer, v. n., 66.  
 Hope, espoir, a. m.; espérance, a. f., 26 S.  
 Horse, cheval, a. m., 17 P., 8; on horseback, *à cheval*, 58.  
 Horse-shoe, fer à cheval, 15 S.



Hot, *chaud*, a. adj. 29.  
 Hour, *heure*, a. f. 71.  
 House, *maison*, a. f. 11.  
 However, *quel... que; quelque... que; et... que*; 87.  
 However it may be, *quoil qu'il en soit*.  
 However, *cependant, pourtant, néanmoins*, conj., 91.  
 However little, *pour peu que*, 17 S.  
 How, *comment*, adv. 82 P., 55.  
 How far? *quelle distance?* 71; *jusqu'où?* 91.  
 How many? *combien (de)?* adv., 23; for how much? *combien?* 55.  
 How old are you? *quel âge avez-vous?* 72.  
 Humor, *humeur*, a. f. 46.  
 Hundred, *centaine*, a. f. 94.  
 Hunger, *faim*, a. f. 24.  
 Hunt, *chasse*, a. f. 97.  
 To hunt, *chasser*, v. v., 105.  
 Hunting, *chasse*, a. f. 105.  
 To hurry, *presser*, v. a. 9 S.  
 Husband, *marî*, a. m., 55.

## I.

I thank you, *je vous remercie*, 13.  
 Ice, *glace*, a. f. 29.  
 Ice-cream, *glace*, a. f. 16 S.  
 Idea, *idée*, a. f. 17 S.  
 If, *si*, conj., 20 P. If you please, *s'il vous plaît*, 20 P., 18.  
 If, *au cas que, en cas que*, 86.  
 Ignominious, *ignominieux*, *se*, adj., 20 S.  
 Image, *image*, a. f. 6 S.  
 Important, *important*, *e*, adj., 18 S.  
 Incessantly, *sans cesse*, adv., 4 S.  
 Inhabitant, *habitant*, *e*, a. 2 S.  
 Injure, *nuire (d)*, v. n., 89.  
 Ignorant, *ignorant*, *e*, adj., 21 P., 60.  
 Island, *île*, a. f. 7 S.  
 Immediately, *aussitôt*, 76; *immédiatement*, adv., 77.  
 Immortal, *immortel*, *le*, adj., 14 S.  
 It is important, *il importe*, 86.  
 Impossible, *impossible*, adj., 8 S.  
 Imprudence, *imprudence*, a. f., 10 S.  
 Imprudent, *imprudent*, *e*, adj., 13 S.  
 In, *dans*, prep., 29 P., 18.  
 In a moment, *tout à l'heure*, adv., 48.  
 In capacity of, *en*, 18 S.  
 In case that, *au cas que, en cas que*, 86.  
 In order to, *pour*, 51; *afin de*, 14 S.  
 In order that, *pour que, afin que*, 86. In such a manner that, in such a way that, *de façon que, de sorte que, de telle manière que*, 86. In the same manner, *de même, de la même manière*, 97.  
 Inch, *pouce*, a. m., 55.  
 To incommode, *gêner*, v. a., 17.  
 Incredulous, *incrédule*, adj., 67.  
 Indefinite, *indéfini*, 100.  
 Indisposed, *indisposé*, 7 S.  
 Indocile, *indocile*, adj., 104.  
 Industrious, *industrieux*, *se*, *laborieux*, *se*, 74.  
 Infantry, *infanterie*, a. f., 17 S.  
 Inferior, *inférieur*, *e*, adj., 22 S.  
 Infinitely, *infiniment*, adv., 90.  
 To inform, *informer*, v. a., 88.  
 Ingenious, *ingénieux*, *se*, adj., 70.  
 To inhabit, *habiter*, v. a., 68.  
 Ink, *encre*, a. f. 2.  
 Instant, *encrier*, a. m., 70.  
 In like manner, *pareillement*, adv., 68.

Insect, *insecte*, a. m., 11 S.  
 Instantly, *d'insistant, sur le champ, tout de suite*, adv., 41.  
 Instead of, *au lieu de*, 60.  
 To instruct, *instruire*, v. a., 16 S.  
 Instructed, *instruit*, *e*, 58.  
 Instrument, *instrument*, a. m., 64.  
 To intend, *compter*, v. a., 41.  
 To intend to do, *vouloir faire*, 94.  
 Intention, *intention*, a. f., 57.  
 Interest, *intérêt*, a. m., 57.  
 Interestedly, from interest, *par intérêt*, 57.  
 Interesting, *intéressant*, *e*, adj., 70.  
 Interrogative, *interrogatif*, *se*, adj., 17 S.  
 Intervene, *intervenir*, v. n., 96.  
 Intimately, *intimement*, adv., 45.  
 To introduce, *introduire*, v. a., 86; *présenter*, v. a., 86.  
 To intrust, *confier*, v. a., 41.  
 In the mean time, *cependant, en attendant*, 91.  
 In vain, *en vain*, adv.,  
 To be in vain, *avoir beau*, 25 S.  
 To invite, *inviter*, v. a., 7 S.  
 Ireland, *Irlande*, a. f., 62.  
 Irishman, *irlandais*, a. m., 89.  
 Iron, *fer*, a. m., 8 P., 7.  
 Is there? *y a-t-il?*  
 Is to be, *doit avoir*, 73.  
 Italian, *italien*, *ne*, 27.  
 Italy, *Italie*, a. f., 61.  
 Ivory, *ivoire*, a. m., 16 P., 15.

## J.

Jacket, *veste*, a. f., 8.  
 James, *Jacques*, 58.  
 January, *janvier*, a. m., 62.  
 Jealous, *jalous*, *se*, adj., 28 S.  
 Jerome, *Jérôme*, 7 P.  
 Jet, *jet*, a. m., 8 P.  
 Jew, *juif*, a. m., 26 S.  
 Jewel, *bijou*, a. m., 8 P.  
 John, *Jean*, 9 P., 53.  
 To join, *joindre*, v. a., 69.  
 Joiner, *menuisier*, a. m., 23.  
 Jonquil, *jonquille*, a. f., 23.  
 Joseph, *Joseph*, 7 P.  
 Journey, *voyage*, a. m., 87.  
 Joyous, *joyeux*, *se*, adj., 61.  
 Judge, *juge*, a. m., 10 P.  
 Judgment, *jugement*, a. m., 24.  
 Judicial, *judiciaire*, 22 S.  
 Jug, *cruche*, a. f., 85.  
 Juice, *jus*, a. m., 52.  
 June, *juin*, a. m., 63.  
 Julian, *Julien*, a. m., 10 P.  
 Julius, *Julien*, a. m., 10 P.  
 July, *juillet*, a. m., 63.  
 Just, *juste*, adj., 85.

## K.

To keep, *garder*, v. a., 59.  
 To keep a boarding-house, *tenir pension*, 1 S.  
 Key, *clef*, a. f., 10.  
 Kick, *coup de pied*, a. m., 15.  
 To kill, *tuer*, 105.  
 Kind, *genre*, a. m., *sorte*, a. f., *espèce*, a. f., 8 S.  
 To kindle, *allumer*, v. a., 44.  
 King, *roi*, a. m., 1 P., 20.  
 Kingdom, *royaume*, a. m., 48.  
 Kitchen, *cuisine*, a. f., 16.

Knee, *genou*, *e*, pl., a. m., 58.  
 Knife, *couteau*, a. m., 8 P., 5.  
 To knock, *frapper*, v. a., 7 S.  
 Knot, *nœud*, a. m., 11 P.  
 To know, *savoir*, v. a., 53; *connaître*, v. a., 35.  
 I know better, *d'autres*, 26 S.

**L.**

To labor, *travailler*, v. a., 40.  
 Labor, *travail*, a. m., 54.  
 Laborious, *laborieux*, *se*, adj., 104.  
 To lack, *manquer*, v. n., 10 S.  
 It lacks, *il s'en faut*, 23 S.  
 Lady, *dame*, a. f., 6.  
 Lake, *lac*, a. m., 2 P., 37.  
 Lame, *boiteux*, *se*, adj., 58.  
 Lame man, *boiteux*, a. m., 58.  
 Lamp, *lampe*, a. f., 9.  
 Landscape, *payage*, a. m., 19 P.  
 Large, *grand*, *e*, adj., 9 P., 3.  
 Last, *derrière*, *ère*, adj., 10.  
 Last evening, *hier soir*, *hier au soir*, 75.  
 Latch, *loquet*, a. m., 7 P.  
 Late, *tard*, 63.  
 Lately, *dernièrement*, adv., 81; *depuis peu*, adv., 5 S.  
 Latin, *latin*, adj. and a. m., 43.  
 To laugh, *rire*, v. n., 50. To laugh in the face, *rire au nez*, 27 S.  
 Lazy,  *paresseux*, *se*, adj., 25.  
 Lead, *plomb*, a. m., 14 P.  
 To lead, *mener*, v. a., 40.  
 Leaf, *feuille*, a. f., 3.  
 Lean, *maigre*, adj., 42.  
 To learn, *apprendre*, v. a., 43.  
 Learned, *savant*, *e*, adj., 70; *instruit*, *e*, past part., 53.  
 Least, *le moindre*, adj., 70; *le moins*, 57.  
 Leather, *cuir*, a. m., 12 P., 7.  
 To leave, *laisser*, v. a., 41; *quitter*, v. a., 20 S.  
 To leave it to, *en rapporter*, d., 25 S.  
 Left, *gauche*, adj., 53.  
 Leg, *jambe*, a. f., 31.  
 Legislative, *legislatif*, *re*, adj., 22 S.  
 Leisure, *loisir*, a. m., 13 S.  
 To lend, *prêter*, v. a., 26.  
 Length, *long*, a. m., 14 S.; *longueur*, a. f., 14 S.  
 Less, *moindre*, adj., 59; *moins*, adv., 33; *de moins*, 71.  
 Lest, *de peur que*, *de crainte que*, 86.  
 To let, *laisser*, v. a., 41.  
 Letter, *lettre*, a. f., 1.  
 Lettuce, *laitue*, a. f., 31.  
 Library, *bibliothèque*, a. f., 27 S.  
 To lie down, *se coucher*, v. r., 5 S.  
 To lie, *mentir*, v. n., 9 S.  
 Lieutenant, *lieutenant*, a. m., 40.  
 Life, *vie*, a. f., 66.  
 Lightning, *foudre*, a. f., 21 S.  
 Light, *lumière*, a. f., 53.  
 Light, *léger*, *dre*, adj., 90.  
 To light, *allumer*, v. a., 44.  
 Lightly, *légerement*, adv., 7 S.  
 Like, *conforme*, adj., 96; *semblable*, adj., 16 S.  
 To like better, *aimer mieux*, *préférer*, v. a., 51.  
 To my liking, *à mon gré*, 54.  
 Lily, *lis*, a. m., 6 P., 33.  
 Limb, *membre*, a. m., 4.  
 Limit, *borne*, a. f., 21 S.  
 Line, *ligne*, a. f., 45; *cordon*, a. m., 90.  
 Linen, *linge*, a. m., 9 P.; *toile*, a. f., 9.  
 Lion, *lion*, a. m., 13 P., 108.  
 Lip, *lèvre*, a. f., 67.  
 Liquor, *liqueur*, a. f., 59.

To listen to, *écouter*, v. a., 23.  
 Literary, *littéraire*, adj., 106.  
 Little, *petit*, *e*, adj., 8 P.; *peu* (*de*), adv., 15.  
 A little, *un peu* (*de*), 53.  
 Live, *vivant*, *e*, adj., 23.  
 To live, *demeurer*, v. n., 35; *vivre*, v. n., 37.  
 To live on, *vivre de*, 37. Wherewith to live, *de quoi vivre*, 37.  
 Living, *vie*, a. f., 66; good living, *bon vivre*, 61.  
 To load (with), *charger* (*de*), v. a., 32, 72.  
 To lock, *fermer*, *d clef*, 12 S.  
 Lock, *serrure*, a. f., 18 S.  
 London, *Londres*, a. m., 63.  
 Long, *long*, *ue*, adj., 13 P., 15.  
 To long, *tarder*, v. n., 24.  
 Long (in time), *longtemps*, 45, 9 S.  
 Look, *mine*, a. f., 77.  
 To look (appear), *avoir l'air*, 43.  
 To look for, *chercher*, v. a., 21.  
 To look at, *regarder*, v. a., 70.  
 To look as if one would or wished, *avoir l'air de vouloir*, 4 S.  
 Looking-glass, *miroir*, a. m., *glace*, a. f., 37.  
 To lose, *perdre*, v. a., 45.  
 Lot, *sort*, a. m., 65.  
 To love, *aimer*, v. a., 22.  
 Low, *bas*, *se*, adj., 4 P., 49.  
 To lower, *baisser*, v. a., 90.

**M.**

Mackerel, *maquereau*, a. m., 15.  
 Madam, *madame*, a. f., 1.  
 Madness, *folie*, a. f., 4 S.  
 Magnificent, *magnifique*, adj., 21 P., 81.  
 Maid (servant), *servante*, a. f., 11.  
 Mail, *maille*, a. f., 37.  
 To maintain, *soutenir*, v. a., 8 S.  
 Majority (majorité), *la plupart*, a. f., 8 S.  
 To make, *faire*, v. a., 83.  
 To make again, *refaire*, v. a., 62.  
 Malignant, *malin*, *gne*, adj., 61.  
 Mallet, *maillet*, a. m., 22 P.  
 Man, *homme*, a. m., 7 P., 6.  
 Manage, *s'y prendre*, 24 S.  
 To manifest, *manifeste*, v. a., 18 S.  
 Manufacture, *manufacture*, a. f., 19 S.  
 Many, *beaucoup* (*de*), adv., 11 P., 15; *bien* (*du*, *de la*, *des*), 63.  
 Marble, *marbre*, a. m., 14 P.  
 March, *mare*, a. m., 63.  
 To mark, *marquer*, v. a., 17 S.  
 Market, *marché*, a. m., 15.  
 Marriage, *mariage*, a. m., 18 S.  
 Married, *marlé*, *e*, p. part., 13 S.  
 To marry, *marié*, *se marier*, *épouser*, 23 S.  
 Masculine, *masculin*, *e*, adj., 18 S.  
 Mason, *maçon*, a. m., 13 P., 23.  
 Mast, *mât*, a. m., 4 P.  
 Master, *maître*, a. m., 16 P., 23.  
 Master-work, *chef-d'œuvre*, a. m., 89.  
 Match, *allumette*, a. f., 54.  
 Mathematics, *mathématiques*, a. f., 73.  
 Matras, *matelas*, a. m., 81.  
 May, *mai*, a. m., 63.  
 It may be, *il se peut*, 3 S.  
 Mayor, *maire*, a. m., 25 S.  
 Meadow, *pré*, a. m., 9 P.  
 Melon, *melon*, a. m., 4 S.  
 To melt, *fondre*, v. a., 16 S.  
 To mean (signify), *vouloir dire*, 94.  
 Means, *moyen*, a. m., 7 S. To have the means, *avoir les moyens*, 7 S.  
 To measure, *mesurer*, v. a., 16 S.  
 Meat, *viande*, a. f., 2.

Medicine, *médicament*, a. m., 95.  
 To meet, to go to meet, *aller à la rencontre*,  
*au devant de*, 75.  
 To meet (to face) *faire face*, 10 8.  
 To meet with, *rencontrer*, v. a., 100.  
 Melon, *melon*, a. m., 16 P.  
 Member, *membre*, a. m., 16 P.  
 Memorandum, *mémoire*, a. m., 4 P.  
 Memorial, *mémoire*, a. f., 4 P.  
 Memory, *mémoire*, a. f., 20 8.  
 Menagery, *ménagerie*, a. f., 25 8.  
 To mend, *raccommoder*, v. a., 40. [S. 10.  
 Merchant,  *négociant*, a. m., 10;  *marchand*, a.  
 Merit, *mérite*, a. m., 83, 11 8.  
 To merit, *mériter*, v. a., 17 8.  
 Methodist, *méthodiste*, 23 8.  
 Metre, *mètre*, a. m., 78.  
 Middle, *milieu*, a. m., 57.  
 Midnight, *minuit*, a. m., 18.  
 Mile, *mile*, a. m., 57.  
 Milk, *lait*, a. m., 8 P., 2.  
 Milk-pot, *pot au lait*, a. m., 20 8.  
 Mill, *moulin*, a. m., 17.  
 Miller, *moulinier*, a. m., 11 P.  
 Mind, *esprit*, a. m., 84.  
 Minister, *ministère*, a. m., 43.  
 Minute, *minute*, a. f., 78.  
 Mirror, *glace*, a. f., 73; *miroir*.  
 Misery, *misère*, a. f., 2 8.  
 Miss, *mademoiselle*, a. f., 18 P., 4.  
 Mistake, *méprise*, *erreur*, *faute*, a. f., 53.  
 By mistake, *par mégarde*, 55.  
 To be mistaken, *se tromper*, v. r., 98.  
 Mister, *monieur*, a. m., 1.  
 Mistress, *maîtresse*, a. f., 28.  
 Mode, *mode*, a. f., 57.  
 Model, *modèle*, a. m., 8 8.  
 Moist, *humide*, adj., 56.  
 Moment, *moment*, a. m., 72.  
 Monday, *lundi*, a. m., 53.  
 Money, *argent*, a. m., 7 P.  
 Monk, *moine*, a. m., 7 P.  
 Month, *mois*, a. m., 45.  
 Moon, *lune*, a. f., 53.  
 Moonlight, *clair de lune*, 56.  
 More, *plus*, *davantage*, 67; *de plus*, 71.  
 Morning, *matin*, a. m., 89 P., 29; *matinée*, a.  
 Most part, *plupart*, a. f., 80. [L. 57.  
 Motion, *mouvement*, a. m., 58.  
 Motive, *motif*, *mobile*, a. m., 58.  
 Mother, *mère*, a. f., 5.  
 Mother-in-law, *belle-mère*, a. f., 38.  
 To mount, *monter*, v. n., 60.  
 Mountain, *montagne*, a. f., 16.  
 Mouse, *souris*, a. f., 22.  
 Mouth, *bouche*, a. f., 83.  
 To move, *remuer*, v. a., 65; *mouvoir*, v. a., 65.  
 Movement, *mouvement*, a. m., 68.  
 Much, *beaucoup* (de), adv., 11 P., 15; *bien*  
*much*, *boue*, a. f., 56. [de, de la, des], 53.  
 Mule, *mulet*, a. m., 10 P.; *mula*, a. f., 8.  
 Musician, *musicien*, a. m., 40.  
 Must, *devoir*, v., 61.  
 Mustard, *moutarde*, a. f., 27.  
 Mustard-cup, *pot à moutarde*, a. f., 51.  
 Myself, *moi-même*, 93.

## N.

Nail, *clou*, a. m., 8 P., 18.  
 Nail (of an animal), *ongle*, a. m., 106.  
 Name, *nom*, a. m., 85.  
 Napkin, *serviette*, a. f., 12.  
 Narration, *récit*, a. m., 93.  
 Narrow, *étroit*, a. m., 11 P., 43.  
 Nation, *nation*, a. f., 16 8.

Natural, *naturel*, *la*, adj., 4 8.  
 Nature, *nature*, a. f., 57.  
 Nearly, *à peu près*, adv., 95.  
 To be necessary,  *falloir*, v. imp., 57; *être né-*  
*cessaire*, 57.  
 Needle, *aiguille*, a. f., 20.  
 Negative, *negatif*, *ve*, adj., 17.  
 To neglect, *négliger*, v. a., 40.  
 Negligent, *négligent*, a. m., 74.  
 Neighbor, *voisin*, a. m., 20 P., 10.  
 Neither, *ne—ni*, conj., 21; *ni l'un ni l'autre*,  
*Nephew, neveu*, a. m., 23 P., 15. [pron., 25.  
 Nest, *nid*, a. m., 43.  
 Net, *filet*, a. m., 43.  
 Never, (no) *jamais*, adv., 29.  
 New, *neu*, *va*, adj., 53; *nouveau*, 53; *nou-*  
*veau*, *nouvelle*, a. f., 87. [eccl., 43.  
 New Orleans, *la Nouvelle Orléans*, 62.  
 Newspaper, *journal*, a. m., 14.  
 Next, *prochain*, a. m., 45.  
 Next to, *à côté de*, 61.  
 Niece, *nièce*, a. f., 15.  
 Night, *nuît*, a. f., 29.  
 Night before last, *l'avant dernière nuît*,  
 Noble, *noble*, adj., 91. [avant-hier soir, 85.  
 Nobody, (ne) *personne*, 82.  
 Nobody's, *celui de personne*.  
 Noise, *bruit*, a. m., 41.  
 No sooner, *pas plus tôt*, 78.  
 No more, *ne plus* (de), 43.  
 None, no one, *ne—aucun*, 40.  
 No one, *ne—personne*, 82 P., 40.  
 Noon, *midi*, a. m., 78.  
 Nor, *ni*, conj., 21; *nor I either, ni moi non*  
 North, *nord*, a. m., 59. [plus, 20 8.  
 Nose, *nez*, a. m., 15 P.  
 Not, *ne—pas* or *point*, adv., 5.  
 Not yet, *pas encore*, adv., 29.  
 Not at all, *pas du tout*, 84.  
 Note, *billet*, a. m., 23.  
 Nothing, *ne—rien*, 82 P.  
 Nothing else, *rien autre chose*, 59.  
 Novelty, *nouveauté*, a. f., 73.  
 Novel, *nouveau*, *elle*, adj., 49.  
 Novel, *roman*, a. m., 23 8.  
 November, *novembre*, a. m., 64.  
 Now, *à présent*, adv., 83 P., 41; *maintenant*,  
 adv., 72.  
 Nowhere, *nulle part*, adv., 82 P., 40.  
 Number, *nombre*, a. m., 73; *numéro*, a. m., 73.  
 Nut, *noix*, a. f., 11.

## O.

Oak, *chêne*, a. m., 16 P.  
 Obedient, *obéissant*, a. f., 15 8.  
 To obey, *obéir* (à), v. n., 53.  
 Object, *objet*, a. m., 8 8.  
 Obligation, *obligation*, a. f., 91.  
 To be under obligations, *avoir des obliga-*  
*tion*, *obligé*, v. a., 79. [tions, 92.  
 Oblige, *obliger*, a. p. part., 59.  
 To obscure, *obscurcir*, v. a., 24 8.  
 Observation, *observation*, a. f., 104.  
 Obstacle, *obstacle*, a. m., 59.  
 Occasionally, *de temps en temps*, 71.  
 Occupation, *occupation*, a. f., 18 8.  
 Occupied, *occupé*, a. f., 71.  
 To occur, *survenir*, v. n., 96.  
 October, *octobre*, a. m., 63.  
 Odor, *odeur*, a. f., 89.  
 Of course, *cela va sans dire*, *cela s'entend*,  
 Of it, of them, *en*, pron., 82. [35 8.  
 Of the, *du*, m., *de la*, f., *des*, pl., 6.  
 Of whom, *dont*, 41; *de qui*.  
 To offend, *offenser*, v. a., 77.

To offer, *offrir*, v. a., 55.  
 Offer, *offre*, s. f. 75.  
 Officer, *officier*, a. m., 41.  
 Often, *souvent*, adv., 29.  
 Old, *vieux*, *vieil*, m., *vieille*, f., 22.  
 Old age, *vieillesse*, s. f., 14 S.  
 Old man, *vieillard*, a. m., 57.  
 Old woman, *vieille*, s. f., 21 S.  
 On, *sur*, prep., 11 P., 12.  
 On it, *dessus*, adv., 45.  
 On purpose, *exprès*, adv., 56.  
 On the other side, *de l'autre côté*, 85.  
 One, *on*, pron., 49.  
 One's self, *soi*, pron., 51.  
 Union, *union*, a. m., 14.  
 Only, *seulement*, adv., 41.  
 Only, *seul*, c. adj., 41.  
 To open, *ouvrir*, v. a., 55; *éclore*, v. n., 96.  
 Opera, *opéra*, a. m., 68.  
 Opinion, *avis*, a. m., *opinion*, s. f., 8 S.  
 To oppose, *opposer*, v. a., 24 S.  
 Opposite, *vis-à-vis*, prep., 80.  
 Orchard, *verger*, a. m., 55.  
 To order, *ordonner*, v. a., 54.  
 Order, *ordre*, a. m., 8 S.  
 Other, *autre*, adj., 19.  
 Others, *autres*, 49.  
 Out of, *hors*, prep., 64.  
 Over, *de l'autre côté*, 85.  
 It is all over with, *c'en est fait de*, 25 S.  
 To overlook, *donner sur*, 25 S.  
 To overthrow, *renverser*, v. a., 8 S.  
 To owe, *devoir*, v. a., 61.  
 Owl, *hibou*, a. m., 8 P.  
 Ox, *boeuf*, a. m., 11 P.

P.

Pace, *pas*, a. m., 71.  
 Padlock, *cadenas*, a. m., 4 P.  
 Page, *page*, s. f., 5.  
 Pain, *seul*, a. m., 20.  
 Pain, *douleur*, *peine*, *gêne*, s. f., 99.  
 To pain, *faire mal*, v. n., 51.  
 To have a pain in, *avoir mal à*, 51.  
 Painter, *peintre*, a. m., 10 P.  
 Painting, *peinture*, s. f., 12 S.  
 Pair, *paire*, s. f., 12.  
 Palace, *palais*, a. m., 3 P.  
 Pancake, *crêpe*, s. f., 61.  
 Panorama, *panorama*, a. m., 8 P.  
 Pansy, *pensée*, s. f., 35.  
 Pantaloon, *pantalon*, a. m., 9.  
 Paper, *papier*, a. m., 12 P.  
 Parasol, *parasol*, a. m., 14.  
 Parlor, *salon*, a. m., 21.  
 Parrot, *perroquet*, a. m., 7 P.  
 Partner, *associé*, a. m., 55.  
 Party, *partie*, s. f., 78.  
 To pass, *passer*, v. a., 68.  
 To pass over, *traverser*, v. a., 6 S.  
 To pass in spite of, *passer sur le ventre à*, [27 S.]  
 Passion, *passion*, s. f., 68.  
 Passport, *passé-port*, a. m., 25 S.  
 Past, *passé*, c. p. part., 54.  
 Path, *chemin*, a. m., 11 P.  
 Patient, *malade*, a. m., 29 P.  
 Partridge, *perdreau*, a. m., *perdrix*, s. f., 2 S.  
 To pay, *payer*, v. a., 68.  
 To pay attention, *faire attention*, 58.  
 Pea, *pois*, a. m., 1 P.  
 Peach, *pêche*, s. f., 8.  
 Peach-tree, *pêcher*, a. m., 16 P.  
 Pea, *pois*, s. f., 8.  
 Pear-tree, *poirier*, a. m., 24 P., 11 S.  
 Pen, *plume*, s. f., 1.

Pencil, *crayon*, 19 P., 5.  
 Pendulum, *pendule*, s. m., 14.  
 To penetrate, *pénétrer*, v. a., 5 S.  
 Penknife, *couteau*, s. m., 31 P., 32.  
 People, *gens*, *peuple*, s. m., 12, 6 S.; *monde*,  
 Pepper, *poivre*, s. m., 16. [a m., 40.]  
 Pepper-box, *poivrière*, s. f., 39; *boîte à*  
*poivre*, s. f., 19 S.  
 To perceive, *apercevoir*, v. a., 57; *s'aperce-*  
*voir*, v. r., 2 S.  
 Perfectly, *parfaitement*, adv., 45.  
 Perfume, *parfum*, s. m., 12 P.  
 Perhaps, *peut-être*, 58.  
 To permit, *permettre*, v. a., 86.  
 Person, *personne*, s. f., 44.  
 Peru, *Pérou*, s. m., 62.  
 Pewter, *étain*, s. m., 22.  
 Phillip, *Philippe*, s. m., 58.  
 Philosopher, *philosophe*, s. m., 14 S.  
 Phrase, *phrase*, s. f., 88.  
 Physic, *médecine*, s. m., 95.  
 Physician, *médecin*, s. m., 15.  
 Piano, *piano*, s. m., 9 S.  
 To pick up, *ramasser*, v. a., 30.  
 Picture, *tableau*, s. m., 54.  
 Pie, *pâté*, s. m., 78.  
 Piece, *pièce*, s. f., 19; *morceau*, s. m., 43.  
 Pig, *cochon*, s. m., 59.  
 Pigeon, *pigeon*, s. m., 14 P., 7 S.  
 Pile, *tas*, s. m., 4 P.  
 Pin, *épingle*, s. f., 7.  
 Pine, *pin*, s. m., 9 P.  
 Pink, *caillet*, s. m., 4 S.  
 Pious, *pieux*, c. adj., 12.  
 Pirate, *pirate*, s. m., 6 P.  
 Pitcher, *cruche*, s. f., 35.  
 To pity, *plaindre*, v. a., 35.  
 It is a pity, *c'est dommage*, 91.  
 What a pity, *quel dommage*, 22 S.  
 Place, *lieu*, s. m., 11 P., 40; *endroit*, s. m.,  
 40; *place*, s. f., 40.  
 To place, *placer*, v. a., 64.  
 Plain, *plaine*, s. f., 17 S.  
 Plan, *plan*, s. m., 19 S.  
 Plank, *planche*, s. f., 12.  
 Plaster, *plâtre*, s. m., 14 P.  
 Plate, *assiette*, s. f., 8.  
 Play, *jeu*, s. m., 11 P.; *spectacle*, s. m., 59.  
 To play, *jouer*, v. n., 50, 64.  
 To please, *plaire*, v. n., 57.  
 Pleased, *content*, c. adj., 33.  
 To be pleased, *savoir bon gré*, 7 S.  
 Much pleased, *bien aise*, 74.  
 Pleasure, *plaisir*, s. m., 35.  
 To give pleasure, *faire plaisir*, 57.  
 Plow, *charrue*, s. f., 57.  
 Plum, *prune*, s. f., 9.  
 Plum-tree, *prunier*, s. m., 24 P., 11 S.  
 Pocket, *poché*, s. f., 88.  
 Pocket-book, *porte-feuille*, s. m., 81.  
 Pocket-handkerchief, *mouchoir de poche*,  
 Poet, *poète*, s. m., 18 S. [a m., 38.]  
 Poison, *poison*, s. m., 20 P., 22 S.  
 Poor, *pauvre*, c. adj., 11.  
 Pope, *pape*, s. m., 2 P.  
 Porcelain, *porcelaine*, s. f., 7.  
 Portfolio, *porte-feuille*, s. m., 81.  
 Portugal, *Portugal*, s. m., 62.  
 Position, *poste*, s. m., 10 S.  
 Possible, *possible*, c. adj., 65.  
 Post, *poste*, s. m., 8 P.  
 Post, *poste*, s. m., 10 S.  
 Post-office, *poste*, s. f., 10 S.  
 Postpone, *remettre*, v. a., 8 S.  
 Potato, *pomme de terre*, s. f., 9.  
 Poultry, *volaille*, s. f., 23.

Pound, *liore*, a f., 22.  
 To pour, *verser*, v. a., 19 S.  
 Powder, *poudre*, a f., 93.  
 Power, *pouvoir*, a m., 43.  
 Powerful, *puissant*, e, adj., 10 S.  
 Practice, *pratique*, s f., 54.  
 To praise, *louer*, v. a., 14.  
 To pray, *prier*, v. a., 62.  
 Prayer, *prière*, v. f., 20 S.  
 To preach, *prêcher*, v. n., 21 S.  
 Preacher, *prédicateur*, a m., 21 S.  
 Precious, *précieux*, e, adj., 49.  
 To precipitate, *précipiter*, v. a., 25 S.  
 Precisely, *au juste*, e; *précisément*, 96.  
 To prefer, *préférer*, *aimer mieux*, v. a., 51.  
 To prepare, *préparer*, v. a., 18 S.  
 Presbyterian, *presbytérien*, 23 S.  
 Presence, *présence*, e f., 20 S.  
 Present, *présent*, e, adj., 97.  
 Present, *cadeau*, *présent*, a m., 95.  
 To present, *présenter*, *introduire*, v. a., 86.  
 At present, *à présent*, 5 S.  
 Presently, *tout à l'heure*, adv., 43.  
 To press, *presser*, v. a., 20 S.  
 President, *président*, a m., 17.  
 To press, *presser*, v. a., 9 S.  
 To pretend, *faire semblant*, 7 S.  
 Pretense, *prétérêt*, a m., 93.  
 Pretty, *joli*, e, adj., 7 P., 5.  
 To prevent, *empêcher*, v. a., 84.  
 Price, *prix*, a m., 63; at what price, *combien*, [53].  
 Priest, *prêtre*, a m., 21 S.  
 Prince, *prince*, a m., 23.  
 Princess, *princesse*, a f., 23.  
 Principal, *principal*, a m., 16 S.  
 Prisoner, *prisonnier*, a m., 18 S.  
 To proceed (from), *provenir*, v. n., 96.  
 Proclamation, *proclamation*, a f., 108.  
 To produce, *produire*, v. a., 52.  
 Professor, *professeur*, a m., 59.  
 Profit, *profit*, a m., 46.  
 To profit, *profiter*, v. a., 104.  
 Progress, *progrès*, a m., 93.  
 Promenade, *promenade*, a f., 5 S.  
 Promise, *promesse*, a f., 2 S.  
 To promise, *promettre*, v. a., 55.  
 To pronounce, *prononcer*, v. a., 9 S.  
 Proper, *propre*, adj., 96.  
 It is proper, *il est à propos*, 85.  
 Properly, *convenablement*, adv., 27.  
 Property, *bien*, a m., 49.  
 Protestant, *protestant*, e, 21 S.  
 Proud, *fier*, e, adj., 37.  
 To prove, *prouver*, v. a., 86.  
 Provided that, *pourvu que*, 86.  
 Prudent, *prudent*, e, adj., 89.  
 Prudently, *prudemment*, adv., 8 S.  
 Prussia, *Prusse*, a f., 62.  
 To pull, *arracher*, v. a., 81.  
 To punish, *punir*, v. a., 60.  
 Pupil, *élève*, a m. and f., 10.  
 Pure, *pur*, e, adj., 67.  
 Pursu, *bourse*, a f., 28.  
 To put, *mettre*, v. a., 39.  
 To put back, *remettre*, v. a., 8 S.  
 To put to the sword, *passer au fil de l'épée*, [3 S].  
 Pyramid, *pyramide*, a f., 24 S.

## Q.

Quarter, *quart*, a m., 71.  
 Queen, *reine*, a f., 23.  
 Question, *question*, a f., 67.  
 Quiet, *tranquille*, 105.  
 Quince-tree, *coignassier*, a m., 34 P.  
 Quite, *tout-à-fait*, 66.

## R.

Rabbit, *lapin*, a m., 12 P.  
 Race, *race*, a f., 26 S.  
 Radish, *raie*, a f., 32.  
 Railroad, *chemin de fer*, a m., 20 S.  
 Main, *pinie*, v. f., 43.  
 To rain, *pleuvoir*, v. imp., 5 S.  
 It rains, *il pleut*, 42.  
 To raise, *lever*, v. a., 90.  
 Rake, *râteau*, a m., 6 P.  
 Rank, *rang*, a m., 20 S.  
 Rank, *peu civil*, e, adj., 81.  
 Rat, *rat*, a m., 4 P., 22.  
 Rather, *plutôt*, adv., 53.  
 Raw, *crû*, e, adj., 81.  
 To read, *lire*, v. a., 46.  
 Reading, *lecture*, a f., 42.  
 Ready, *prêt*, e, adj., 64.  
 Real, *réel*, e, 23 S.  
 Really, *réellement*, adv., 12 S.  
 To reap, *récolter*, v. n., 11 S.  
 Reason, *raison*, a f., 13 S.  
 To receive, *recevoir*, v. a., 32.  
 To rectify, *rectifier*, v. a., 45.  
 To reckon, *compter*, v. a., 41.  
 To reclaim, *réclamer*, v. a., 16 S.  
 To recognize, *reconnaître*, v. a., 43.  
 To recollect, *se rappeler*, *se souvenir*, v. r., [16 S].  
 Recompense, *récompense*, a f., 51.  
 Red, *rouge*, adj., 26 P., 20.  
 To reduce, *réduire*, v. a., 90.  
 Reed, *roseau*, a m., 7 P.  
 To re-enter, *rentrer*, v. n., 96.  
 Reflective, *réflectif*, e, adj., 43.  
 To refresh, *rafraîchir*, v. a., 6 S.  
 To refuse, *refuser*, v. a., 56.  
 Regularly, *régulièrement*, adv., 13 S.  
 To relate, *raconter*, v. a., 18 S.  
 Relation, *parent*, e, a., 29 P., 12.  
 Relative, *parent*, e, a., 12.  
 To remain, *rester*, v. n., 35.  
 Remedy, *remède*, a m., 70.  
 To remember, *se rappeler*, v. r., 91; *se souve-*  
*nir*, v. r., 92.  
 Remembrance, *souvenir*, a m., 25 S.  
 Repast, *repas*, a m., 106.  
 To repent, *se repentir*, v. r., 92.  
 To reply, *répliquer*, v. n., 9 S.  
 Representative, *représentant*, a m., 6 S.  
 Republic, *république*, a f., 6 S.  
 Reputation, *réputation*, a f., 53.  
 To resolve, *résoudre*, v. 69.  
 Respect, *respect*, a m., 86.  
 To respect, *respecter*, v. a., 98.  
 Rest, *repos*, a m., 88.  
 Resuming, *reprise*, a f., 6 S.  
 To retard, *retarder*, v. n., 5 S.  
 Retreat, *retraite*, a f., 21 S.  
 Return, *retour*, a m., 44.  
 To return (restore), *rendre*, v. a., 24.  
 To return (come back), *revenir*, v. n., 45.  
 To return (turn back), *retourner*, v. n., 89.  
 To have returned, *être de retour*, 45.  
 Revolution, *révolution*, a f., 76.  
 Reward, *récompense*, a f., 52.  
 To reward, *récompenser*, v. a., 60.  
 Ribbon, *ruban*, a m., 15 P., 45.  
 Rice, *riz*, a m., 9 S.  
 Rich, *riche*, adj., 11.  
 Riches, *richesse*, *richesses*, a f., 77.  
 To ride a horse, *monter un cheval*, 106.  
 To ride on horseback, *monter à cheval*, 106.  
 Right, *droit*, a m., 4 S.  
 Right, *droit*, e, adj., 16 S.  
 To be right, *avoir raison*, 34, 70.

Ring, *anneau*, a. m., 7.  
 Ring (of the finger), *bague*, a. f., 7.  
 To ring, *sonner*, v. n., 97.  
 Ripe, *mûr*, a. adj., 10 P., 72.  
 To ripen, *mûrir*, v. n., 81.  
 To rise, *se lever*, v. r., 58.  
 River, *rivière*, a. f., 18.  
 Road, *chemin*, a. m., 43.  
 To roar, *rugir*, v. n., 103.  
 Roast meat, *rôti*, a. m., 16.  
 Roast beef, *bœuf rôti*, a. m., 16.  
 To rob, *voler*, v. a., 63.  
 Robber, *voleur*, a. m., 60.  
 Rock, *rocher*, a. m., 5 P., 71.  
 Roman, *romain*, a. f., 67.  
 Romance, *roman*, a. m., 22 S.  
 Room, *chambre*, a. f., 14.  
 Rope, *corde*, a. f., 15.  
 Rose, *rose*, a. f., 9.  
 Rose-tree, *rosette*, a. m., 24 P.  
 Round, *ronde*, a. adj., 15 P., 42.  
 Ruby, *rubis*, a. m., 10 P.  
 Rule, *règle*, a. f., 44.  
 To run, *courir*, v. n., 57.  
 To run away, *s'enfuir*, v. r., 14 S.  
 Russia, *Russie*, a. f., 62.

S.

Saber, *sabre*, a. m., 14 P.  
 Sack, *sac*, a. m., 2 P.  
 Sacred, *sacré*, a. adj., 18 S.  
 Sad, *triste*, a. adj., 32; *fâché*, a. adj., 89.  
 Saddle, *selle*, a. f., 84.  
 Safety-railing, *garde-fou*, a. f., 21 S.  
 Sail, *voile*, a. f., 97.  
 Sailor, *matelot*, a. m., 5 P., 19.  
 To sail, *sailir*, v. a., 7 S.  
 Salt, *sé*, a. m., 45.  
 To salt, *saler*, v. a., 76.  
 Salt, salted, *salé*, a. adj., 42.  
 Salt-cellar, *salière*, a. f., 5.  
 Same, *même*, a. f., 19.  
 Sand, *sable*, a. m., 17 P.  
 Sardine, *sardine*, a. f., 15.  
 Saturday, *samedi*, a. m., 53.  
 Saucer, *soucoupe*, a. f., 15.  
 Saw, *scie*, a. f., 6.  
 Say, *dire*, v. a., 46.  
 Scholar, *écolier*, a. m., 10; *élève*, 10.  
 School, *école*, a. f., 29.  
 School-mistress, *maîtresse d'école*, 23.  
 Science, *science*, a. f., 16 S.  
 Scotland, *Ecosse*, a. f., 62.  
 Sea, *mer*, a. f., 10; by sea, *par mer*, 7 S.  
 Seamstress, *couturière*, a. f., 23.  
 Secret, *secret*, a. m., 41.  
 Secret, *secret*, a. adj., 41.  
 To see, *voir*, v. a., 42.  
 To seek, *chercher*, v. a., 25 P., 21.  
 To seem, *sembler*, v. a., 86.  
 To seize, *saisir*, v. a., 46.  
 Self, *même*, 41.  
 Self, *soi*, 90.  
 To sell, *vendre*, v. a., 46.  
 Semblance, *semblant*, a. m., 7 S.  
 Senate, *sénat*, a. m., 6 S.  
 To send, *envoyer*, v. a., 26.  
 To send away, *renvoyer*, v. a., 14 S.  
 To separate, *séparer*, v. a., 22 S.  
 September, *septembre*, a. m., 63.  
 Serious, *sérieux*, a. adj., 94.  
 Servant, *domestique*, a. m., 8; *serviteur*, a. m., 5 S.  
 To serve, *servir*, v. a., 4 S.  
 Service, *service*, a. m., 83.

To set about, *s'y prendre*, 24 S.  
 To set out, *partir*, v. n., 41.  
 Several, *plusieurs*, 43.  
 At several times, *à plusieurs reprises*, 6 S.  
 To sew, *coudre*, v. a., 69.  
 Shade, *ombrage*, a. m., 19; *ombre*, a. f., 79.  
 Share, *partie*, a. f., 1; *part*, a. f., 89.  
 To shave, *raser*, v. a., 90.  
 Shawl, *châle*, a. m., 8 S.  
 Sheep, *mouton*, a. m., *brebis*, a. f., 8.  
 To shine, *briller*, v. n., 12 S.; *luisir*, v. n., 12 S.  
 Ship, *vaisseau*, a. m., 7 P.; *navire*, a. m., 24.  
 Shoe, *soulier*, a. m., 28 P., 4.  
 To shoe a horse, *fermer un cheval*, 15 S.  
 Shoemaker, *cordonnier*, a. m., 23.  
 Shop, *boutique*, a. f., 79.  
 Shopkeeper, *marchand*, a. m., 10.  
 Shore, *rivage*, a. m., 70.  
 Short, *court*, a. adj., 8 P., 61.  
 Shot, *corp de fusil*, 24 S.  
 Shoulder, *épaule*, a. f., 53.  
 Shovel, *pelle*, a. f., 57.  
 To show, *montrer*, v. a., 80.  
 To shut, *fermer*, v. a., 44.  
 Sick, *malade*, a. adj., 29 P., 19.  
 Sick man, *malade*, a. m., 26 P., 19.  
 Sickness, *maladie*, a. f., 65.  
 Side, *côté*, a. m., 59.  
 Sight, *vue*, a. f., 43.  
 Sign, *signe*, a. m., *enseigne*, a. f., 10 S.  
 To signify, *vouloir dire*, 94.  
 Silk, *soie*, a. f., 7.  
 Silver, *argent*, a. m., 18 P., 7.  
 Similar, *semblable*, a. adj., 16 S.  
 Simple, *simple*, a. adj., 100.  
 Since, *puisque*, conj., 98; *depuis*, 50.  
 To sing, *chanter*, v. a., 54.  
 Singer, *chanteur*, a. m., 17 P.  
 Singing, *chant*, a. m., 108.  
 Sir, *monseigneur*, a. m., 1.  
 Sister, *sœur*, a. f., 5.  
 Sister-in-law, *belle-sœur*, a. f., 12.  
 To sit down, *s'asseoir*, v. r., 93.  
 Skill, *savoir faire*, 9 S.  
 Skillful, *habile*, a. adj., 55.  
 To be skilled in, *se connaître en* (or *à*), *être connaisseur en*, 11 S.  
 Skin, *peau*, a. f., 43.  
 Sky, *ciel* (*cieux* pl.), 64.  
 Slate, *ardoise*, a. f., 4.  
 Sleep, *sommeil*, a. m., 24.  
 To sleep, *dormir*, v. n., 56.  
 Slightly, *légèrement*, adv., 7 S.  
 Slippery, *glissant*, a. adj., 66.  
 Silt, *fente*, a. f., 42.  
 Slowly, *lentement*, adv., 8 S.  
 Small, *petit*, a. adj., 6 P.  
 Smell, *odeur*, a. f., 39.  
 To smell, *sentir*, v. a., 42.  
 To smoke, *fumer*, v. a., 75.  
 Snow, *neige*, a. f., 73.  
 To snow, *neiger*, v. imp., 12 S.  
 Snuff, *tabac à priser*, a. m., 12.  
 So, *si*, adv., 53.  
 So soon, *si tôt*, 46.  
 So many, *tant*, so many that, *tant que*, 51.  
 So much, *tant*, so much that, *tant que*, 51.  
 So that, *de sorte que*, *de façon que*, *de manière que*, 56.  
 Soap, *savon*, a. m., 12.  
 Society, *société*, a. f., 105.  
 Sofa, *canapé*, a. m., 2 P., 15.  
 Soft, *mou*, *molle*, a. adj., 29.  
 Soldier, *soldat*, a. m., 5 P., 19.  
 To solve, *répondre*, v. a., 69.  
 Some, *du*, *de l'* (m.), *de la* (f.), *des* (pl.),

Some, *quelque*, adj., 32.  
 Some more, *encore*, 43.  
 Somebody, *quelqu'un*, 35.  
 Somebody's, *celui de quelqu'un*, 36.  
 Some one, *quelqu'un*, 35.  
 Something, *quelque chose*, 32 P., 14.  
 Something else, *quelque autre chose*, a. f., 50.  
 Some time, *quelque temps*, 45.  
 Sometimes, *quelquefois*, adv., 29.  
 Somewhere, *quelque part*, adv., 46.  
 So much the better, *tant mieux*, 17 S.  
 Son, *fil*, a. m., 22 P., 6.  
 Son-in-law, *gendre*, a. m., 36.  
 Song, *chanson*, a. f., 54.  
 Soon, *bientôt*, adv., 53.  
 Soon enough, *assez tôt*, adv., 76.  
 Sooner, *plus tôt*, adv., 53.  
 Borrow, *chagrin*, a. m., 56.  
 Sorry, *fâché*, e. 61.  
 Soul, *âme*, a. f., 14 S.  
 Sound, *son*, a. m., 15 S.  
 Soup, *soupe*, a. f., 10.  
 Sour, *aigre*, adj., 20.  
 South, *sud*, a. m., 39.  
 Space, *espace*, a. m., 8 S.  
 Spade, *bêche*, a. f., 9 P., 57.  
 Spain, *Espagne*, a. f., 62.  
 Spaniard, *espagnol*, a. m., 27.  
 Spectacle, *spectacle*, a. m., 17 P., 59.  
 To spill, *répandre*, v. a., 8 S.  
 Spirit, *esprit*, a. m., 84.  
 To split, *fendre*, v. a., 60.  
 Spoke, *rais*, a. m., 8 P.  
 Spoon, *culler*, or *cullière*, a. f., 3.  
 Spot, *tache*, a. f., 50.  
 Spouse, *époux*, a. m., 55.  
 To spread, *étendre*, v. a., 7 S.; *se répandre*, [v. a., 8 S].  
 Spring, *printemps*, a. m., 56.  
 Square, *carré*, e. 42.  
 Squirrel, *écureuil*, a. m., 105.  
 Stable, *écurie*, a. f., 15 P., 30.  
 Star, *étoile*, a. f., 3 P., 97.  
 Stair-case, *escalier*, a. m., 21 S.  
 To be at stake, *y aller de*, 21 S.  
 Star, *étoile*, a. f., 53.  
 State, *état*, a. m., 100.  
 Stature, *stature*, a. f., 26 S.  
 To stay, *rester*, v. n., 41.  
 Stay, *séjour*, a. m., 12 S.  
 To steal, *voler*, v. a., 63; *dérober*, v. a., 80.  
 By stealth, *à la dérobée*, 26 S.  
 Steam, *vapeur*, a. m., 49.  
 Steam-boat, *bateau à vapeur*, a. m., 51.  
 Steam mill, *moulin à vapeur*, a. m., 51.  
 Steel, *acier*, a. m., 16 P., 7.  
 Step, *pas*, a. m., 71.  
 Step-daughter, *belle-fille*, a. f., 36.  
 Step-father, *beau-père*, a. m., 36.  
 Step-mother, *belle-mère*, a. f., 36.  
 Stepson, *beau-fils*, a. m., 36.  
 Stick, *bâton*, a. m., 6.  
 Still, *encore, toujours*, adv., 29.  
 Stocking, *bas*, a. m., 4 P.  
 Stomach, *estomac*, a. m., 67.  
 Stone, *pièce*, a. f., 19.  
 Store, *magasin*, a. m., 29 P., 11.  
 Storm, *orage*, a. m., 43.  
 Stormy, *orageux*, se. adj., 24 S.  
 Story, *étoffe*, a. m., 19 S.  
 Stove, *poêle*, a. m., 83.  
 Straight, *droit*, e. adj., 53.  
 Strange, *étrange*, adj., 54.  
 Stranger, *étranger*, ére, a., 10.  
 Straw, *paille*, a. f., 15.  
 Strawberry, *framée*, a. f., 14.  
 Street, *rue*, a. f., 12.

Strength, *force*, a. f., 74.  
 The strife is who, *c'est à qui*, 24 S.  
 String, *cordon*, a. m., 57.  
 Strong, *fort*, e. adj., 5 P., 57.  
 Studious, *étudieux*, se. adj., 55.  
 To study, *étudier*, v. a., 27.  
 Study, *étude*, a. f., 52.  
 Stupid, *stupide*, adj., 1 S.  
 To style, *traiter* (de), v. a., 27 S.  
 To subdue, *soumettre*, v. a., 59.  
 Subject, *sujet*, a. m., 5 S.  
 Subject, *sujet*, le. adj., 52.  
 Subjunctive, *subjonctif*, a. m., 18 S.  
 To submit, *en passer par*, 26 S.  
 Substantive, *substantif*, a. m., 17 S.  
 To succeed, *parvenir, réussir*, v. n., 67.  
 To succeed in, *venir à bout de*, 26 S.  
 Such, *tel, le*, adj., 59.  
 Suddenly, *tout-à-coup*, adv., 5 S.  
 To suffer, *souffrir*, v. a., 64.  
 Sufficient, *assez, suffisamment*, 51.  
 It is sufficient, *il suffit*, 55.  
 Sufficiently, *suffisamment*, 15 P., 57.  
 Sugar, *sucré*, a. m., 14 P., 2.  
 To suit, *convénir*, v. n., 100.  
 Suitable, *convenable*, adj., 96.  
 It is suitable, *il convient*, 53.  
 Sum, *somme*, a. f., 95.  
 Summer, *été*, a. m., 56.  
 Sun, *soleil*, a. m., 22 P., 39.  
 Sunday, *dimanche*, a. m., 56.  
 To sup, *souper*, v. n., 76.  
 Superb, *superbe*, adj., 22.  
 Supper, *souper*, a. m., 76.  
 To support, *appuyer*, v. a., 95; *contenir*, 8 S.  
 To suppose, *supposer*, v. n., 96.  
 Supposition, *supposition*, a. f., 2 S.  
 Supreme, *suprême*, adj., 23 S.  
 Sure, *sûr*, e. adj., 5 S.  
 Surgeon, *chirurgien*, a. m., 80.  
 To surprise, *surprendre*, v. a., 80.  
 Surprised, *surpris*, e. 74.  
 Swan, *cigne*, a. m., 21 P.  
 Sweden, *Suède*, a. f., 61.  
 Sweet, *doux*, se. adj., 20; *sucré*, e. 59.  
 Sweetened, *sucré*, e. 59.  
 Swollen, *enflé*, e. 49.  
 Swift, *vite*, adj., 49.  
 To swim, *nager*, v. n., 75.  
 Swimmer, *nageur*, a. m., 11 P.  
 By swimming, *à la nage*.  
 Swine, *porc*, a. m., 5 P.; *cochon*, a. m., 59.  
 Switzerland, *Suisse*, a. f., 62.  
 Swollen, *enflé*, e. 49.  
 Sword, *sabre*, a. m., 14 P.; *épée*, a. f., 1 S.  
 Syrup, *sirop*, a. m., 6 P., 61.

## T.

Table, *table*, a. f., 1.  
 Tailor, *tailleur*, a. m., 16.  
 To take, *prendre*, v. a., 43.  
 To take again, *reprandre*, v. a., 52.  
 To take to, *amener*, v. a., 60.  
 To take off, *ôter*, v. a., 41.  
 To take away from, *dérober*, v. a., 80.  
 To take cold, *s'enrhumer*, 2 S.  
 To take place, *avoir lieu*, 77.  
 To take care of, *soigner*, v. a., 55.  
 To take it into one's head, *s'avisier de*, 16 S.  
 To take possession of, *s'emparer*, v. r., 92.  
 To talk, *causer*, v. n., 54.  
 Task, *tâche*, a. f., 60.  
 Taste, *goût*, a. m., 49.  
 To taste, *goûter*, v. a., 25.  
 To taste of, *avoir un goût de*, 43.

Tavern, *auberge, taverne*, a f., 22 S.  
 Tea, *thé*, a m., 2 P., 2.  
 To teach, *enseigner*, v. a., 16 S.  
 To tear, *déchirer*, v. a., 58.  
 Terrible, *terrible*, adj., 103.  
 Than, *que*, before a number, *de*, 72.  
 To thank (for), *remercier (de)*, v. a., 38.  
 Thank God, *Dieu merci*, 15.  
 That, *ce, cet, celle*, adj., *celui, celle*, pron., 25 P.; *cela*, 40; *que*, conj., 45.  
 That which, *celui qui, celui que*, 81 P.  
 That one, *celui-là, celle-là*, 21.  
 That is it, *c'est cela*, 41.  
 That of which, *celui dont, 41; ce dont, 41*.  
 That way, *par là*.  
 That, in order that, *pour que*, 86.  
 The one, *celui, celle*; the ones, *ceux, celles*.  
 The one of, *celui de, celle de*, 13. [25 P.]  
 The ones of, *ceux de, celles de*, 13.  
 The one who, *celui qui, celle qui*, 25 P.  
 The one whom, *celui que, celle que*, 26 P.  
 The one which, *celui qui or que, celle qui or que*, 20.  
 The one of whom, *celui de qui, duquel, dont*.  
 Theater, *théâtre*, a m., 14 P., 63.  
 Theft, *vol*, a m., 6 S.  
 Then, *alors, donc*, 46; and then, *puis*, 11 S.  
 There, *là*, adv., 29 P., 12.  
 There is, there are, *voilà, 71; il y a*, 60.  
 Thereon, *dessus*, adv., 45.  
 Thereunder, *dessous*, adv., 45.  
 Therefore, *c'est pourquoi*, 23 S.  
 These, *ces*, adj., 8.  
 Thick, *épais, se*, adj., 43.  
 Thickness, *épaisseur*, a m., 15.  
 Thief, *voleur*, a m., 60.  
 Thimble, *dé*, a m., 2 P.  
 Thing, *chose*, a f., 14.  
 To think, *penser (à)*, v. n., 40.  
 To think much of, *faire cas de*, 26 S.  
 Third, *tierce*, a m., 93.  
 Thirst, *soif*, a f., 24.  
 Thirty, *trintaine*, a f., 94.  
 This, *ce, cet, cette*, adj., *ceci*, pron.  
 This one, *celui-ci, celle-ci*, 21.  
 This way, *par ici*, 37.  
 Thistle, *chardon*, a m., 17 P.  
 Those, *ces*, adj., 6.  
 Those which, *ceux qui, ceux que, celles qui, celles que*, 20.  
 Though, *bien que*, 86; *encore que, quoique*.  
 Thread, *fil*, a m., 6 P., 41. [17 S.]  
 To threaten, *menacer*, v., 17 S.  
 Throat, *gorge*, a f., 19 S.  
 To throw, *jeter*, v. a., 73.  
 Thumb, *pouce*, a m., 55.  
 Thunder, *tonnerre*, a m., 42.  
 To thunder, *tonner*, v. imp., 12 S.  
 Thursday, *jeudi*, a m., 63.  
 Thus, *ainsi*, adv., 79.  
 Thyself, *toi-même*, 101.  
 To tie, *attacher*, v. a., 99.  
 Tight, *étroit*, a adj., 43.  
 Time, *temps*, a m., 27; *époque*, a f., 20 S.  
 To it, to them, *y*, pron., 39.  
 To the, *au (m.), à la (f.), aux (pl.)*, 16.  
 To the house of, *chez*, prep., 16.  
 Tobacco, *tabac*, a m., 10.  
 Tobacco-box, *boîte à tabac*, a f., 51.  
 To-day, *aujourd'hui*, 32 P., 25.  
 Together, *ensemble*, adv., 66.  
 Toilet, *toilette*, a f., 76.  
 Tolerably, *passablement*, adv., 18 S.  
 Tomato, *tomate*, a f., 22.  
 To-morrow, *demain*, adv., 41.  
 Tongue, *pincettes*, a f., 20 S.

Tongue, *langue*, a f., 45.  
 Too much, *trop, de trop*, 42.  
 Too little, *trop peu, de moins*, 71.  
 Too soon, *trop tôt*, adv., 76.  
 Tool, *outil*, a m., 45.  
 Tooth, *dent*, a f., 54.  
 Tooth-ache, *mal de dent*, a m., 54.  
 Tooth-pick, *cure-dent*, a m., 54.  
 Top, *haut, sommet*, a m., 73.  
 Topsy-turvy, *sans dessus dessous*, 27 S.  
 To touch, *toucher*, v. a., 61.  
 Towards, *vers, envers*, prep., 79, 2 S.  
 Towel, *essuie-maine*, a m., 52.  
 Trader, *marchand*, a m., 17 P.  
 To translate, *traduire*, v. a., 45.  
 To travel, *voyager*, v. n., 64.  
 Traveler, *voyageur*, a m., 40.  
 Good travelling, *bon voyage*, 61.  
 Treasure, *trésor*, a m., 8 S.  
 Tree, *arbre*, a m., 14 P., 15.  
 To tremble, *trembler*, v. n., 84.  
 To triumph, *triumpher*, v. n., 104.  
 True,  *vrai*, a adj., 52.  
 Trunk, *malin*, a f., 4, 97; *tronc*, a m., 24 S.  
 To trust, *faire crédit*, 79.  
 Truth, *vérité*, a f., 91.  
 To try, *essayer*, v. n., 77.  
 Tuesday, *mardi*, a m., 53.  
 Tulp, *tulipe*, a f., 9.  
 Tumbler, *cerre*, a m., 3 P.  
 Turf, *gazon*, a m., 29 P., 84.  
 Turkey, *Turquie*, a f., 62.  
 Turkey, *dindon*, a m., *dinde*, a f., 68.  
 Turn, *tour*, a m., 59.  
 To turn, *tourner*, v. a., 66.  
 Tutor, *précepteur*, a m., 14 S.  
 Twenty, *vingtaine*, a f., 94.

U.

Ugly,  *laid*, a adj., 4 P., 11; *vilain*, a adj., 11.  
 Umbrella, *parapluie*, a m., 20.  
 Uncle, *oncle*, a m., 22 P., 15.  
 Under, *sous*, prep., 29 P.  
 Under it, *dessous*, adv., 45.  
 That is understood, *cela s'entend*, 25 S.  
 To undertake, *entreprendre*, v. a., 49.  
 Unfortunate, *infortuné*, a adj., 44.  
 Unhappy, *malheureux*, a adj., 44.  
 Uniform, *uniforme*, a m., 16 P.  
 Unitarian, *unitaire*, 22 S.  
 United States, *États-Unis*, a m., 68.  
 Unless, *à moins que* (Subj. with *ne*).  
 Unsuitable, *hors de propos*, 27 S.  
 Until, *jusqu'à ce que*, conj., 54.  
 Unwillingly, *contre son gré*, 54.  
 Up-stairs, *en haut*, adv., 103.  
 To use, *se servir*, 2 S.; *user (de)*, v. n., 2 S.  
 Use, *usage*, a m., 83; *emploi*, a m., 97.  
 To be used to, *être fait à*, 93.  
 Useful, *utile*, a adj., 52.  
 Useless, *inutile*, a adj., 91.  
 As usual, *comme d'ordinaire*, 103.  
 Better than usual, *mieux qu'à l'ordinaire*.  
 Usually, *d'ordinaire*, adv., 103. [103.]

V.

Vail, *voile*, a m., 7 P., 90.  
 To value, *faire cas de*, 26 S.  
 To vanquish, *vaincre*, v. a., 79.  
 Vapor, *vapeur*, a f., 49.  
 Veal, *veau*, a m., 6 S.  
 Vegetable, *légume*, a m., 55.  
 Verb, *verbe*, a m., 63.  
 Verdure, *verdure*, a f., 24.



